























*Robert Keayne*



HISTORY

OF

The Military Company of the Massachusetts

NOW CALLED

The (Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company  
of (Massachusetts.

1637-1888.

BY OLIVER AYER ROBERTS,

HISTORIAN OF THE COMPANY.

---

VOLUME I.—1637-1738.

---

BOSTON:  
ALFRED MUDGE & SON, PRINTERS,  
24 FRANKLIN STREET.  
1895.



REF  
UA258  
.A5R7  
SOC SCI

6/18/2003

THIS VOLUME  
IS DEDICATED TO THE  
*Memory of*  
CAPTAIN ROBERT KEAYNE

AND OF HIS TWENTY-THREE COMRADES,  
WHO WERE THE FOUNDERS OF  
THE MILITARY COMPANY OF THE MASSACHUSETTS,  
NOW CALLED  
THE ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY  
OF MASSACHUSETTS.





ARMORY OF THE ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY  
OF MASSACHUSETTS.

FANEUIL HALL, BOSTON,  
November 1, 1895.

*To the Members of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts :*

By votes of the Company passed in 1886 and subsequently, the Committee on Military Museum and Library were instructed to have the history of the Company, from 1637 to 1888, written and printed.

The work was immediately undertaken, and arrangements were made with Major BEN : PERLEY POORE to be the historian. He had made but little progress when his labors were cut short by his sudden death. This sad event was a great disappointment to the committee. Fortunately, however, they found an able successor in Mr. OLIVER AYER ROBERTS, of Melrose, who brought great zeal and ability to the undertaking, and has so far progressed that he has now nearly the whole history in manuscript. It will give the record of about six thousand members, and will probably be comprised in four volumes. The committee have now the pleasure of presenting the first volume, including the period from 1637 to June 1, 1738.

The committee cannot fail to mention another serious loss they experienced, in the death of their first chairman, Captain JOHN LINDSAY STEVENSON.

Captain Stevenson was a firm friend of the Company, through many years rendering it efficient service, and perhaps to him more than to any other is the Company indebted for laying the foundation of the work now so nearly completed.

EDWARD WYMAN, *Chairman.*  
ALBERT ALONZO FOLSOM.  
GEORGE HENRY ALLEN.  
WILLIAM PARKER JONES.  
HENRY WALKER.

WILLIAM LITHGOW WILLEY, *Secretary.*





## P R E F A C E .

---

MR. ZACHARIAH G. WHITMAN, who joined the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1810, did a commendable work in preparing a complete roster of the Company in 1819. This so intensified his interest in matters pertaining to the Company that he wrote its history. He published the first edition of it in 1820; and a second edition, with many additions written by him, was published by a committee of the Company in 1842, just after Mr. Whitman's death. A more complete history was a fond hope of Mr. Francis Brinley (1847), who gathered some material; but death ended his earthly labors before his self-imposed task was hardly begun. His material was kindly forwarded to the compiler of this volume. About 1875, Major Ben: Perley Poore (1848) began a history of the Company; but his prolific pen was laid aside before he had gathered his material for the first half century. The history by Mr. Whitman (1810), and the material gathered by Mr. Brinley (1847) and Major Poore (1848), which came into my possession, have been utilized in this volume. The first six pages are the writing of Major Poore (1848). They are inserted as a fit introduction to the work, and in memory of an earnest, busy, and loyal friend and brother.

The present volume has been prepared under many difficulties, and it does not reach that state of completeness which the writer fondly desired. The total loss of the records of the first sixty years of the Company; the incompleteness of early family and town records; the different spellings of the same name; the identification of a person who lived two hundred years ago, there being two and sometimes more persons of the same name in the same locality, have multiplied the difficulties and chances of error. Such conditions call for wise judgment, and the writer has used the best he had.

An arbitrary system has been followed in the preparation of this volume. Each year, from 1637 to 1738, is complete in itself. The history of each year is commenced by giving the names of the officers of the Company for that year, which is followed by such historic facts as relate to the Company or to its members; then the recruits for the year are named, followed by biographical sketches. The records of the Company (beginning in 1698, page 314) are then quoted, and the account for the year is concluded with a short biographical sketch of the preacher for that year. In this



respect this work differs from all previous written or printed histories of the Company. All the original records of the Company prior to 1738 are printed, under their appropriate years, in this volume. The date inclosed in a parenthesis, following a name, signifies the year when the person named joined the Company.

The compiler is under great obligations to several persons, who have kindly assisted by furnishing biographical data. Their names are given in the notes, as are the names of the most important works consulted. He is under special obligations to the librarians of the New England Historic, Genealogical, and Massachusetts Historical Societies for the privilege of consulting books in those libraries, and to Mr. William H. Whitmore for the Reports of the Record Commissioners of Boston.

All human works are imperfect, and doubtless errors will be detected on these pages, yet the writer hopes that the perusal of this volume will add somewhat to the pleasure of the members of the Company, and increase their interest in, and strengthen their loyalty to, the oldest military company in America.

OLIVER A. ROBERTS.

MELROSE, Nov. 7, 1895.

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

FRONTISPIECE — AUTOGRAPH OF CAPT. ROBERT KEAYNE.

PORTRAIT — OLIVER A. ROBERTS, HISTORIAN OF THE COMPANY.

PHOTOGRAPH OF THE CHARTER . . . . .	facing page	10
PEQUOT FORT . . . . .	" "	31
PORTRAIT — GOV. JOHN WINTHROP . . . . .	" "	47
MEETING-HOUSE OF THE FIRST CHURCH . . . . .	" "	49
DIVING BELL . . . . .	" "	54
MEETING-HOUSE OF THE SECOND CHURCH . . . . .	" "	168
PORTRAIT — THOMAS SAVAGE (1637) . . . . .	" "	170
PORTRAIT — JOHN LEVERETT (1639) . . . . .	" "	172
NORTH BATTERY . . . . .	" "	179
HULL'S COINS, — 1652 . . . . .	" "	193
OLD SOUTH CHURCH . . . . .	" "	211
PLAN OF ARTILLERY FARM AT DUNSTABLE . . . . .	" "	222
PROVINCE HOUSE . . . . .	" "	251
KING'S CHAPEL . . . . .	" "	276
SOUTH BATTERY . . . . .	" "	279
PAPER MONEY . . . . .	" "	288
PORTRAIT — WAIT WINTHROP (1692) . . . . .	" "	290
PORTRAIT — SAMUEL SHRIMPTON (1670) . . . . .	" "	301
PORTRAIT — JOHN WALLEY (1671) . . . . .	" "	315
PORTRAIT — SAMUEL SEWALL (1679) . . . . .	" "	330
PORTRAIT — CHARLES HOBBY (1702) . . . . .	" "	334
PORTRAIT — ADAM WINTHROP (1694) . . . . .	" "	357
PORTRAIT — THOMAS FITCH (1700) . . . . .	" "	363
OLD TOWN-HOUSE . . . . .	" "	372
PORTRAIT — EDWARD WINSLOW (1700) . . . . .	" "	385
PORTRAIT — WILLIAM DUMMER (1702) . . . . .	" "	401
PROFILE — SAMUEL THAXTER (1728) . . . . .	" "	433
PLAN OF FARM AT RUTLAND . . . . .		441
PORTRAIT — NATHANIEL CUNNINGHAM (1720) . . . . .	facing page	445
PORTRAIT — JACOB WENDELL (1733) . . . . .	" "	473
PORTRAIT — RICHARD SALTONSTALL (1733) . . . . .	" "	477
HARVARD COLLEGE IN 1756 . . . . .	" "	482









*Oliver A. Roberts.*

# HISTORY

OF THE

## Military Company of the Massachusetts

NOW CALLED

### The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts.

---

MASSACHUSETTS was colonized by Englishmen, descendants of the victors of Cressy, Poitiers, and Agincourt, who nobly supported the fame of their renowned ancestors. Animated by religious zeal, search of fortune, or desire of fame, they turned from the comforts of their English homes, the love of kindred and friends, and the certain and tried paths of a moderate ambition, to meet on a rock-bound coast with peril in all its forms, intensified by religious hatreds, conflicting claims, and petty jealousies. The spirit of adventure which distinguished them, the patient endurance with which they suffered the most trying privations, their constant exertion of vigilance and presence of mind, and the valor which they displayed in conquering their savage foes and in guarding against invasion by the French on their northern borders, proved that they were worthy descendants of that sea-girt isle. Martial courage thus inherited and displayed proves a nation's strength; combined with industry, moderation, reverence, and good sense in the people, it forms that national character to which is given the prolonged enjoyment of glory and power, and of all the sources of prosperity and happiness.

It is, however, a noticeable fact that the religious and political leaders among the "Pilgrims" of Plymouth Colony and the "Puritans," who were the original settlers on the shores of Massachusetts Bay, were not fighting men. They could make preparations for defence, or direct hostilities; but the utmost indulgence of fanatical conceit, or the most presumptuous confidence in their own judgment, did not prompt them to come to the front when their respective colonies were threatened by savages or Frenchmen. The victorious Captain Myles Standish, of the Plymouth Colony, and the brave Captain Southcot, of Massachusetts Bay, had each seen service in the Low Countries, but they were not among the elect. The first sergeant-major (then the commander's title) of the Suffolk Regiment was Edward Gibbons, a rollicking soldier of fortune, whose life had been an adventurous and a merry one. The first captains of the train-bands in Boston, Underhill and Patrick, who had each served in the Netherlands, and who, on their arrival in 1630, were voted salaries for training their respective commands in the use of arms, could not accommodate themselves to the strict manners of the Puritan school, and after the Pequot War they migrated to the southwestern part of Connecticut, where the Dutch claimed jurisdiction.

Those, however, who had the control of the colonization of Massachusetts made generous preparations for armed defence. The charter given by King Charles on the

18th of March, 1628, authorized the Governor and Company "from tyme to tyme, and at all tymes hereafter, for their special defence and safety, to incounter, expulse, repell and resist by force of armes, as well by sea as by lande, and by all fitting waies and meanes whatsoever, all such person and persons, as shall at any tyme hereafter attempt or enterprize the destruccon, invasion, detriment or annoyance to the said plantation or inhabitants." Before the charter containing this provision had been signed by King Charles, the council of the Company had ordered a supply of arms and of munitions of war. There were "eight peeces of land ordnance for the forte," and an abundance of small arms, viz.: "Two partizans for capten and lieftenant; three drums, to ech two pere of hedds; two ensignes; three halberts, for three sarjants; eighty bastard muskets, with snapances, four ffoote in the barrill without rests; ten ffull musketts, four ffoote barrill, with match cocks and rests; ninety bandeleers for the muskets, each with a bullet bag; one hundred swords and belts; sixty cosletts and sixty pikes; twenty half pikes"; with a supply of powder and ball for the cannon and muskets. A few days later, a contract was entered into "with Mr. Thomas Stecuens, armorer in Buttolph Lane, for twenty armes, viz: coslett, brest, back, culet, gorgett, tases, and head-peece to each, varnished all black, with lethers and buckles, at 17s each armour, excepting four, wch are to bee with close head peeces, and these four armours at 24s apeece, to bee delivered all by the 20th of this monthe; whereof one left nowe for a sample." Another contract was made "with John Gace, of London, turner, ffor forty bandeleers, made of neates leather, broad girdles, each with twelve charges." It was decided in October, 1629, that the ordnance, arms, powder, and munitions, delivered for public use, "bee accompted as pt of the ioynt stock of the company."

The weapons and munitions of war thus provided were promptly issued after they had been received by the colonists, for train-bands were at once organized; and, as new towns were settled, more arms and equipments were procured from London. On the 3d of September, 1634, it was "Ordered, that all the musketts, bandeleros, and rests lately come over this yeare shall be equally divided amongst the seual plantacons, and the townes to have att all tymes soe many in a readynes as a town stocke."

These train-bands were organized like those which had existed in London since the reign of Henry VIII. Originally archers, the English associations gradually adopted pikes and then muskets, while some of them became artillerists. On the 25th of August, 1537, a charter was granted by Henry VIII. to certain subjects belonging to the Fraternity of St. George, as a "Gylde of Artillary of Longbowes, Crosbowes and Handegomes." A piece of ground was set apart for the use of this corps, and it was known as "The Artillery Garden." During the long reign of Queen Elizabeth, important services were several times rendered by the Company in this Artillery Garden, by fitting citizens for the command of the train-bands. In 1598, the Artillery Company, as it was called, was six hundred strong, and in its ranks were all the commanders and commissioned officers of the train-bands and auxiliaries.

King Charles I. recognized the great utility of the Artillery Company by addressing the following warrant to Alderman Humphrie Smith, its commander, dated March 8, 1632:—

"CHARLES R.

"Trustie and well beloved, we greet you well. Whereas we are informed that the worthie and commendable institucon of yor voluntary Company of the Artillerie garden,



hath been soe well pursued by yor industrious and forward endeavors that you are not only become ready and skilfull in the knowledge and use of arms and military discipline, but that, from thence as from a fruitful Nursery, all the trayned bands of our Citie of London and divers of the Companies of the counties adjoining have beene supplied with fitt and able Leaders and Officers whereby our service hath received much advantage and the kingdome in genll a very great benefitt. And being unwilling that a Societie of soe good use unto the publique and of so much safetie and honor to our renowned Citie of London should be dissolved or discontinued as we are given to understand it is in great danger through some distractions wch you have lately suffered about the Election of yor Captaine: We have thought fitt hereby to will you not to be hastie to disband but if ye find that ye are molested needlessly or unjustly, by any, then have recourse to us, and you shall have find such due encouragement as soe commendable a Societie deserves.

"Given att our Court att Newmarkett the eighth day of March, in the Seventh yeare of our Raigne.

"To our trustie and well-beloved Humphrie Smith, Alderman, President of the Company exercising Armes in the Artillerie garden, London, and to the Rest of the Companie."

The officers of the Artillery Company were elected annually by the Court of Aldermen of the City of London, from candidates nominated by the Company, until 1632, when difference having arisen between the Aldermen and the Company, King Charles I. interposed the right of appointing the captain. The Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen were authorized to appoint the civil officers of the Company, viz.: a president, a deputy president, and twenty-four assistants. The military officers were to be chosen and appointed by the Company, viz.: two lieutenants, two ensigns, four surveyors of arms, a clerk, a treasurer, four sergeants, four drummers, a fifer, an armorer, a gunsmith, a cloak-keeper, and a beadle.

The London Artillery Company had, from its organization, annual "feasts," arranged by eight stewards, to which the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of the city of London were invited, and donated the large supplies of wines drank at the table. In 1623, "the Lords of His Majesty's Most Honourable Privy Council" were also invited, and "the Court of Aldermen were pleased, in token of their good respect to the Society, to bestow upon them, towards the charge of the feast, one hogshead of clarett wyne, thirty gallons of sacke, and thirty gallons of Renishe wyne."

It was also customary, certainly as far back as Cromwell's time, to have a sermon preached annually before the Company at St. Paul's, or some other church in the city of London. The officiating clergyman invariably received, by vote, "the thanks of the company and three twenty shilling pieces of broad gold"; and after the sermon came the "feast," at which distinguished invited guests were present.

There was in the latter part of May in each year a "General March," when the Company marched through the city, accompanied by a train of artillery, consisting of six field-pieces and two wagons, and two "General Exercise" days in the latter part of June or August, when the Company marched to Balmes, or to some other place in the suburbs. The sermon and "feast" day occurred usually about the middle of September, and the Company often paraded on "Lord Mayor's Day," in October, to escort the newly chosen chief magistrate to Westminster. In the evening, the officers of the Company supped together, and every file of four men received as rations, "a bottle of sack, a bottle of claret, and a large fowl." If the provisions did not hold out, the files, unprovided for, were to have six shillings in money.

The armorial bearings, originally granted to the Company by Charles I., and subsequently confirmed by James I. and by George IV., have "supporters,"—a privilege generally limited in England to peers of the realm and knights of the royal orders of knighthood,—which give an idea of the uniform and equipments worn at the commencement of the seventeenth century. One of the "supporters" is a pikeman, wearing a helmet and corselet and carrying a pike; the other "supporter" is a musketeer, wearing a helmet and buff-coat, and carrying a musket and rest. Each carries a sword, and wears "plumes of red feathers," in accordance with "the ancient and constant." The crest, an uplifted arm in armor, with the hand grasping a pike, may have suggested the crest of Massachusetts—an uplifted arm in armor, with the hand grasping a sword.

Captain Walter Neale, who was "Captain of the Artillery Garden" from 1635 until 1639 inclusive, had been one of the pioneer settlers of New England. The Council chartered by James I. in 1622, "for the planting, ruling, and governing of New England," conveyed to John Mason the tract of land bordering the sea-coast, and bounded by the Merrimack and Piscataqua rivers, with the proviso that the Governor should be Captain Walter Neale, of London. He sailed in the summer of 1630, with a party of London colonists, and located on the Piscataqua River. Learning from the Indians that there was a country in the interior called "Laconia," with great lakes, where peltries were abundant, he penetrated inland almost to Lake Winnipiseogee, and in after years he made glowing representations of his official management. According to his own statement, he discovered rivers and harbors; exerted himself for the general good of the country by reforming abuses; punished the natives for their cruelties, and compelled them to live in peace, and was able to settle a staple trade of commodities, especially for building ships. But his employers did not find that he had opened the lucrative trade in peltries which they had expected, and he was recalled to London, the Council of New England granting his plantations on the Piscataqua and on the Black Point rivers to others.

Captain Walter Neale, on returning to London, was chosen captain of the "Company of the Artillery Garden," and brought it to greater perfection than it had ever before attained. The city train-bands were furnished with able commanders out of the Artillery Company, and the private soldiers were drilled for the general musters, but the captain complained that he received only fifty pounds a year. In 1638, he endeavored to obtain the appointment of "Muster-Master of the City," but King Charles recommended Captain Fisher, who was accordingly appointed; and in October, 1639, at the King's request, Captain Neale was superseded as commander of the Artillery by Captain Philip Skippen. He then petitioned the King to appoint him marshal in Virginia, in charge of all martial affairs there, with an allowance of twenty shillings per diem, to be paid out of the customs arising from the commodities of the country. Again unsuccessful, Captain Neale once more petitioned the King, a few years later, setting forth his past services, and praying that he might be appointed governor of Massachusetts; but no notice was taken of his application. Indeed, at that time, the governors of Massachusetts were elected annually.

The name and fame of the Honourable Artillery Company of London were transplanted to Massachusetts soon after its colonization, by some of its members, and a junior company was established at Boston, which is the oldest military organization on the American continent. It is recruited, to a great extent, from those who have been active members of the volunteer militia. It elects its officers annually; has its stated spring and fall parades; listens once a year to a sermon preached in a church, which

is followed by a "feast" in Faneuil Hall, with distinguished invited guests, and is jealous of its prerogatives and its traditions.

The history of the Honourable Artillery Company of Old England can be traced through the fierce struggle which has gradually changed the unwritten British constitution from the aspect it wore in feudal times into that form of rational liberty which it now bears, and has made dear old England as young in energy, capability, and progress as she was when the Honourable Artillery Company of London was summoned to the field by Queen Elizabeth, the type of Queen Victoria, as well in the truly English complexion of her character as in the hold she possessed over the hearts of the Anglo-Saxon race.

The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in New England is also a living link between generations, past and present, and has outlived every institution, except the Christian Church and the Public School, that was in existence on the American continent when it was chartered. The members of each of these honorable companies have a right to be proud of their traditions, as the brave and patriotic deeds of one generation become the precious heritage of the next, growing in interest and value as time wears on, and flower after flower is added to the chaplets of honor of the respective companies. The sentiment of antiquity is of more avail than merely to foster feelings of pride or vanity. The consciousness of unstained lineage involves duties as well as privileges, and each member of the two artillery companies should feel more and more, as generations pass away, that his responsibility is greater to his company, to his country, and to himself: that his part is to aim high, act well, and feel —

"The name of every gallant ancestor  
A bond upon his soul against disgrace."

North America became, within a century and a half after its discovery, the adopted home of those Europeans who were disposed to renounce their allegiance to the despotism of crowned heads, sustained by a feudal aristocracy, and to seek for freedom in a New World. Humble navigators had called from the deep a New Spain of greater wealth than the mother country; a New Netherlands of greater commercial importance than the Old; and a New England, which, united with the Virginias, was destined to perpetuate the Anglo-Saxon tongue among a people more numerous than the inhabitants of the fatherland. Pontiffs established boundaries and monarchs granted charters, but the genius of free adventure, crossing the ocean, laid the foundations of the great imperial Republic of the United States of America. New areas were opened to commerce, and new regions to adventure, while a fresh field was offered for experiments in government. The Puritans of Old and of New England established the free governments which the English-speaking race now enjoys and maintains. To use the words of Bishop Warburton: "The interests of liberty were conducted and supported by a set of the greatest geniuses for government that the world ever saw embarked together in a common cause."

The Plymouth Colony was settled in 1620, but the Colony of Massachusetts Bay was not fairly organized until there was a large immigration from England in 1630, headed by Governor John Winthrop. Seventeen ships, equipped at an expense of nearly one hundred thousand dollars, conveyed to the new settlement nearly fifteen hundred emigrants. They brought, in their number, clergymen, physicians, magistrates, military officers, millers, mechanics, and others, possessed of horses, cattle, and other property. They founded a number of towns along the Atlantic coast, each being a miniature republic, with its religious, military, and civil officers.



The principal settlement was called Boston, in memory of that place in Lincolnshire, whence Isaac Johnson and other prominent emigrants came.

Those who seek political advancement by professing to have raised themselves from what they term "the lower ranks of life," have adopted the declaration of Green that the early settlers of Massachusetts were "poor men and artisans." This is an error, as has been proven by those who have thoroughly investigated the social position of the immigrants. They may justly be considered the most remarkable party of colonists, in point of intelligence, firmness of purposes, and an exalted standard of conscience, which ever left their native shores to lead the way in the establishment of great civil institutions. "Poor men and artisans" have not usually the enterprise or means to engage in such undertakings, and to carry them forward to successful completion. Doubtless there were poor men among them, for some had been despoiled of their substance by ecclesiastical and State persecution. They would naturally seek the companionship of "artisans," to assist them in their exploration and settlement of a wilderness; but the great majority of the immigrants were "well-to-do" in the world, and there were some of wealth and high social position.<sup>1</sup>

Governor Winthrop had no sooner landed than he took possession of the government, which Governor John Endicott had undertaken to make a pure theocracy. The settlement at Merry Mount, which had sought to transplant some of the festivities of "Merrie England" to Massachusetts, had been broken up; men of character and ability, like John and Samuel Brown, who would not conform to the strict code established, had been summarily banished, and the cross was cut from the King's colors at Salem, on the ground that it was an emblem of popery. On the arrival of Governor Winthrop, with higher powers, the superseded Endicott humbly recognized his authority, placing himself at the new governor's disposal, "both as to time and place." Governor Winthrop responded with dignified courtesy, but recognized no local authority in his predecessor, whom he addressed as "Mr. Endicott." He visited him at Salem, however, "where they supped on good venison pasty and good beer."

Military distinction and heraldry were the only appendages of monarchical government tolerated in the province of Massachusetts Bay, for the only allegiance recognized was to God and the Commonwealth. The clergy pointed out their narrow road to heaven, and the drill sergeants taught men of dauntless energy how to use weapons for the defence of themselves and their colony. The armorial bearings, emblazoned in water colors and neatly framed, which were the only ornaments in nearly every house, were justified by the declaration in the book of Numbers, that "every man of the children of Israel shall pitch by his own standard, with the ensign of their father's house." It ministered largely to men's pride, without trenching on their purses; it pandered to pomp without taxing prudence, and conferred honor without imposing danger. Tombs and gravestones not unfrequently bore the arms of those who were interred within or beneath, a few of which still remain as memorials of the earliest years of the colony.

<sup>1</sup> "By computation, the *passage* of the persons that peopled New England cost at least ninety-five thousand pound: the transportation of their first small stock of cattle, great and small, cost no less than twelve thousand pound besides the price of the cattle themselves; the provisions laid in for subsistence, till tillage might produce more, cost forty-five thousand pounds; the materials for their first cottages cost eighteen thousand pounds; their arms,

ammunition and great artillery cost twenty-two thousand pounds; besides which hundred and ninety-two thousand pounds the adventurers laid out in England what was not inconsiderable. About an hundred and ninety-eight ships were employed in passing the perils of the seas, in the accomplishment of this renowned settlement; whereof, by the way, but one miscarried in those perils." — *Mather's Magnalia, Hartford Ed., Vol. I., p. 69.*



The colonists lost no time in organizing train-bands, which were supplied with the weapons and equipments sent out from England and were drilled by veteran officers, who were paid for their services. At a Court of Assistants, held at Boston, July 26, 1631, it was "Ordered, that evy first Thursday in evy month there shal be a genall traineing of Capt Vndrhill's company att Boston and Rocksbury, and evy first Friday in evy month there shal be a genall traineing of the remaindr of them who inhabitt att Charlton, Misticke and the New Towne, att a convenient place aboute the Indian wigwams, the traineing to begin at one of the clocke in the afternoon."

Among the distinguished immigrants who came to Boston in 1635, was Sir Henry Vane, a noble-hearted young man, of good education and exemplary character, described by John Milton in a sonnet, beginning, —

"Vane, young in years, but in sage counsel, old."

The Liberals, soon after his arrival, elected him governor, and it was soon apparent that the orthodox portion of the colonists were losing their ascendancy. Mrs. Hutchinson, a woman of rare ability, seconded by her brother, the Rev. John Wheelwright, were the champions of the tolerant views advanced by Governor Vane, and the more zealous Puritans saw that unless they could crush out such liberal ideas, they would be obliged to relinquish their assumed power. Fortunately for the Liberals, among whom were nearly all the military men of the colony, it became evident that the Pequot Indians were negotiating a hostile alliance with the Narragansetts for the extermination of the British settlers along the coast. This threatened war made the Puritans more tolerant than they would otherwise have been, but by a great effort they re-elected Mr. Winthrop as governor, and Sir Henry Vane returned to England, where he subsequently participated in the rebellion, and was beheaded after the restoration of Charles II. Mrs. Hutchinson was tried, convicted of heresy, and banished.

In the Colony Records, Vol. I., pp 207-8, are given the names of those persons who were "seduced and led into dangerous errors" by "the opinions and revelations of Mr. Wheelwright and Mrs. Hutchinson." The "whereas" provides, "that all those whose names are underwritten shall before the 30<sup>th</sup> day of this month of November, deliver in at Mr. Cane's [Robert Keayne's] house at Boston all such guns, pistols, swords, powder, shot, and match, as they shall bee owners of, or have in their custody, upon paine of tenn pounds for every default to bee made thereof," etc.

Fifty-eight are names of persons living in Boston; five in Roxbury; two in Charlestown, and several in Salem, Newbury, and Ipswich. Of the fifty-eight in Boston, the following were or became members of the Artillery Company, viz.: Captain John Underhill (1637), William Aspinwall (1643), Samuel Cole (1637), John Button (1643), Richard Cooke (1643), Richard Fairbanks (1654), Thomas Marshall (1640), John Oliver (1637), John Biggs (1641), Richard Gridley (1658), Zacheus Bosworth (1650), James Johnson (1638), Thomas Savage (1637), John Odlin (1638), Edward Hutchinson (1638), Robert Harding (1637), Richard Waite (1638), Edward Bendall (1638), Mr. Clarke (1638), and Hugh Gunnison (1646), or one third of the entire number. One in Roxbury, Richard Morris (1637); one in Charlestown, James Brown (1638).

On the 7th of October, 1636, there were ten train-bands in Massachusetts, which were officered as follows: Boston, Captain John Underhill (1637), Lieutenant Edward Gibbons (1637), and Ensign Robert Harding (1637); Charlestown, Captain Robert Sedgwick (1637) and Lieutenant Norton (1643); Dorchester, Captain Humphrey

Atherton (1638), Lieutenant Ezekiel Stoughton, and Ensign Nathaniel Duncan (1638); Watertown, Captain William Jennison (1637), Lieutenant George Woodman, and Ensign Richard Kent; Braintree, Captain William Tyng (1638); Cambridge, Captain George Cooke (1638) and Lieutenant William Spencer (1637); Saugus, Lieutenant Daniel Howe (1637) and Ensign Richard Walker (1638); Ipswich, Captain Daniel Denison (1660), Lieutenant Richard Davenport (1639), and Ensign Thomas Whittingham; Lynn, Captain Nathaniel Turner (1637), Lieutenant Daniel Howe (1637), and Ensign Robert Walker; Newbury, Captain John Spencer, Lieutenant Edward Woodman, and Ensign Richard Kent.

Many of these officers had belonged in England either to the Honourable Artillery Company, which had control of the Artillery Garden, or to another military association in London which met at the Military Garden. These two grounds for drill and martial exercises are described in a work entitled "The Artillery and the Military Gardens of London," by Lieutenant-Colonel Elton, who says in his introductory remarks: "The great delight in handling of arms in Military Exercises makes the City of London and the suburbs thereof famous throughout the world, by reason, as I conceive, of those two great Nurseries or Academies of Military Discipline, the Artillery and the Military Gardens, from whence, as out of pure fountains, all other private meetings are derived." There was also the "Martial Yard," at Horseldown, where the train-bands of Southwark used to exercise, and an "Artillery Ground," where the Middlesex and Westminster train-bands were drilled. Other military societies, similar to the Artillery Company, were formed during the reign of Charles I. On the 22d of October, 1625, the captains and trained men of Bristol humbly begged to be allowed to establish "an Artillerie Yarde"; North Yarmouth next applied, on the 10th of January, in the following year, and William Dutton, gentleman, of Chester, asked to be permitted to establish an artillery yard in that city, at his own expense, and to be appointed captain of it. Ipswich applied for a like permission on the 29th of September, 1629, and Nottingham did likewise on the 31st of December in the same year; all of whom were authorized to establish artillery yards, according to their requests.

Recollections of these organizations doubtless prompted twenty-four of the Massachusetts officers, in 1637-8, to form an artillery company in New England, which would serve as a military school, in which the officers of the scattered town companies could acquire uniformity of tactics and drill.

The following list has been prepared from a comparison of the rolls of the Honourable Artillery of London and of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts. It is based on the similarity of names and of the dates of becoming members. It is not intended to assert that all of the following were members of both companies, but, so far as names and dates are concerned, they might have been:—

<i>Names.</i>	<i>Joined the London Co.</i>	<i>Came to America.</i>	<i>Joined A. &amp; H. A. Co.</i>
1 Adams, Thomas . . . . .	March 10, 1639	1643	1644
2 Baker, Richard . . . . .	Jan. 15, 1638	1639	1658
3 Bourne, Nehemiah <sup>1</sup> . . . . .	March 2, 1639	1638	1638
4 Buckley, Thomas . . . . .	Dec. 25, 1680	—	1685
5 Clarke, Hon. Thomas . . . . .	Sept. 13, 1631	1636	1638

<sup>1</sup> Joined the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company first.

<i>Names.</i>	<i>Joined the London Co.</i>	<i>Came to America.</i>	<i>Joined A. &amp; H. A. Co.</i>
6 Clarke, Thomas, Jr. . . . .	May 14, 1633	1641	1644
7 Clarke, William . . . . .	June 23, 1629	1636	1646
8 Clements, William . . . . .	May 22, 1657	—	1662
9 Collicott, Richard . . . . .	1612	1630	1637
10 Davie, Humphrey . . . . .	Aug. 16, 1659	1662	1665
11 Davis, John . . . . .	March 14, 1627	1635	1643
12 Davis, William . . . . .	July 6, 1641	—	1643
13 Evans, Josias . . . . .	June 16, 1642	—	1642
14 Fletcher, Edward . . . . .	May 1, 1627	1639-40	1643
15 Fogg, Ralph . . . . .	Oct. 15, 1622	1633	1644
16 Glover, Thomas . . . . .	Aug. 20, 1622	1630	1642
17 Harrison, John . . . . .	May 5, 1629	—	1638
18 Hasey, William . . . . .	May 30, 1643	—	1652
19 Hawkins, Thomas . . . . .	April 4, 1620	1635	1638
20 Hawkins, Thomas . . . . .	Feb. 26, 1639	1642	1649
21 Hill, John . . . . .	July 28, 1635	1641	1643
22 Hunt, Thomas . . . . .	Sept. 14, 1668	1674	1685
23 Keayne, Robert . . . . .	May 6, 1623	1635	1637
24 Kent, William . . . . .	Sept. 22, 1657	1662	1667
25 Milan, John . . . . .	May 24, 1614	1635-6	1641
26 Morris, Richard . . . . .	Nov. 15, 1614	1630	1637
27 Parker, Richard . . . . .	Nov. 1, 1614	1635-6	1638
28 Perkins, William . . . . .	Oct. 10, 1614	1632	1638
29 Phillips, Henry . . . . .	Sept. 30, 1623	1637	1640
30 Price, Richard . . . . .	May 2, 1643	—	1658
31 Robinson, William . . . . .	July 3, 1621	1636	1643
32 Shaw, John . . . . .	March 21, 1619	—	1646
33 Smith, John . . . . .	Aug. 22, 1637	—	1644
34 Spencer, William . . . . .	1611	1631	1637
35 Stanley, Thomas . . . . .	June 8, 1619	1635	1640
36 Stowe, Thomas . . . . .	June 18, 1620	1634	1638
37 Underhill, John . . . . .	Sept. 27, 1614	1630	1637
38 Walker, Richard . . . . .	May 28, 1622	1630	1638
39 Webb, John . . . . .	June 9, 1631	1635	1643
40 Williams, Robert . . . . .	Aug. 21, 1635	1637	1644
41 Wright, Robert . . . . .	Jan. 22, 1621	—	1643

The veterans accordingly formed a military company in 1637, and petitioned Governor Winthrop for a charter of incorporation, but at first without success. Governor Winthrop says of the original application: "Mo. 12 [1637] Divers gentlemen and others, being joined in a military company, desired to be made a corporation, but the Council considering (from the example of the Prætorian band among the Romans, and the Templars in Europe,) how dangerous it might be to erect a standing authority of military men, which might easily in time overthrow the civil power, thought fit to stop it

betimes; yet they were allowed to be a company, but subordinate to all authority." <sup>1</sup> Another writer, using nearly the same words, adds: "Thus were the chief rulers of the country not only ready to espy, but timely prevent any inconveniency that might in after times arise." It has also been intimated that the Governor and his Council, who had so recently been kept out of power for a year by the adherents of Sir Henry Vane and Mrs. Hutchinson, were unwilling to incorporate a body chiefly composed of those who had supported this revolutionary movement. The reason for this rejection of the petition may appear by the following quotation from Governor Winthrop's History of New England, Vol. I., p. 257: "At this Court [1 mo., 1638] divers of our chief military officers, who had declared themselves favorers of the familistical persons and opinions, were sent for, and being told, that the court having some jealousy of them for the same, and therefore did desire some good satisfaction from them, they did ingenuously acknowledge, how they had been deceived and misled by the pretence, which had been held forth, of advancing Christ, and debasing the creature, etc., which since they have found to be otherwise, and that their opinions and practices tended to disturbance and delusions; and so blessed God, that they had so timely discovered their error and danger to them."

The cause of the Court's jealousy having been removed by the acknowledgments of the chief military officers, the charter of the Military Company of the Massachusetts was soon after granted.

The newly formed Company, however, was permitted to organize and to present the names "of two or three to the Council, to choose a Captain out of them." Robert Keayne was probably selected, as a subsequent order of the Council provides that "Captain Keayne and the Military Company have power to exercise where they please and to make use of so many of the common arms as they need, and a warrant from any of the Council is sufficient for the delivery of them to Captain Keayne or to such as he shall appoint."

The Company did not relax its exertions to obtain the desired charter. It was finally successful, as appears from the following extract from the original Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, under the date of "the 13<sup>th</sup> of the First Month, @ 1638," *i. e.*, March 13, 1638.

"Orders for the Military Company, made by the Governor and Council and confirmed by the General Court.

"Whereas divers Gentlemen and others, out of their care of the publick weal and safety, by the advancement of the military art and exercise of arms, have desired license of the Court to join themselves in one Company, and to have the liberty to exercise themselves, as their occasions will best permit; and that such liberties and privileges might be granted them, as the Court should think meet, for their better encouragement and furtherance in so useful an employment; which request of theirs being referred unto us of the *Standing Council*, we have thought fit, upon serious consideration, and conference with divers of the principal of them, to set down and order herein as followeth:

"*Imprimis.* We do order, that Robert Keayne, Nathaniel Duncan, Robert Sedgwick, William Spencer, Gentlemen, and such others as are already joined with them, and such as they shall from time to time take into their Company, shall be called the Military Company of the Massachusetts.

"2dly. They or the greater number of them, shall have liberty to choose their

<sup>1</sup> Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng., Vol. I., p. 253.







Captain, Lieutenant, and all other officers. Their Captain and Lieutenant to be always such as the Court or Council shall allow of; and no officer be put upon them, but of their own choice.

"3dly. The first Monday in every month is appointed for their meeting and exercise; and to the end that they may not be hindered from coming together, we do hereby order, that no other training in the particular towns, nor other ordinary town meetings, shall be appointed on that day: and if that day prove unseasonable for the exercise of their arms, then the sixth of the same week is appointed for supply. This not to extend to Salem, or the towns beyond, nor to Hingham, Weymouth, Dedham or Concord.

"4thly. They have liberty and power to make orders amongst themselves, for the better managing their military affairs; which orders are to be of force, when they shall be allowed by the Court or Council; and they may appoint an officer to levy any fines or forfeitures, which they shall impose upon any of their own company, for the breach of any such order, so as the same exceed not twenty shillings for any one offence.

"5thly. The said *Military Company* are to have one thousand acres of land, (in some place as may not be prejudicial to any plantation,) to be granted by the Court to some of the said Company, for the use of the present Company, and such as shall succeed in the same; to be improved by them within a time convenient, for providing necessaries for their military exercises, and defraying of other charges, which may arise by occasion thereof.

"6thly. The said Company shall have liberty, at the time before appointed, to assemble themselves for their military exercises, in any town within this jurisdiction, at their own pleasure; *provided always*, that this order or grant, or anything therein contained, shall not extend to free the said Company, or any of them, their persons or estates, from the civil Government and jurisdiction here established.

"JOHN WINTHROP, *Governor*,

"THOMAS DUDLEY, *Dep. Governor*."

Mr. Whitman (1810) states, in the second edition of his History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, that "in the early records of the Company, and transcript made in pursuance of Daniel Henchman [1675], the commander's orders, under date of 1702, is incorporated another article numbered '3d' and inserted between 3dly and 4thly of the Charter as here printed, viz.: 'None of the said Military Company, (except such as shall be officers of any other train-band in any particular town,) shall be bound to give attendance upon their ordinary trainings.' Snow, in his History of Boston, inserts this as an original part of the charter; but he took it from the charter as printed then, for the use of the members, or from their records, rather than looking at the records of the colony. The first By-Laws adopted, 1657, seem to be founded on such an article, but it is presumed none such ever existed. It was a custom adopted rather at the commencement of the Company and so handed down, until, by tradition and use, it became merged or interpolated in the charter. It is, however, an important privilege of the Company, going to exempt all citizens, otherwise liable to duty, from doing such duty in companies, within whose bounds they may reside; and, as such, has always received such construction."

The charter says: —

"Imprimis. We do order, that Robert Keayne, Nathaniel Duncan, Robert Sedgwick, William Spencer, Gentlemen, and such others as are already joined with them," etc.

The number recorded as "already joined with them" in 1637 is twenty-four, including three named in the charter; the name of Nathaniel Duncan not appearing on the roll until 1638. They are as follows: Robert Keayne, Robert Sedgwick, Joseph Weld, Thomas Savage, Daniel Howe, Thomas Huckens, John Oliver, Joshua Hewes, Samuel Cole, Israel Stoughton, John Underhill, Nathaniel Turner, William Jennison, Richard Morris, Edward Gibbons, William Spencer, Robert Harding, Thomas Cakebread, John Holman, Richard Collicot, Joseph Pendleton, Edward Tomlins, Nicholas Upshall, and Edward Johnson.

The above-named founders of the Company merit our first and especial attention. They will be considered in the order in which they signed the roll; but after 1637-8, the members will be briefly sketched, their names each year being arranged alphabetically.

**Captain Robert Keayne** (1637) deserves grateful recognition as the founder of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, and merits its reverential respect and gratitude. His name is first on the roll, and stands first in the charter. He was born at Windsor, England, in the year 1595, and was the son of John Keayne, a butcher. After having served an eight years' apprenticeship with John Heyfield, of Birchinlane, at London, beginning on the 9th of March, 1606, he was admitted to the freedom of the Merchant Tailors' corporation on the 17th of April, 1615. He joined the Honourable Artillery Company of London on the 6th of May, 1623.

Robert Keayne (1637) came in the "Defence" from London to America, in the year 1635, when he was forty years of age; his wife Ann was thirty-eight, and their son Benjamin was sixteen years of age.

"Marriage Licenses Granted by Bishop of London 1598 to 1639. [1617] xviii Junij W<sup>th</sup> daie appeared Robert Kayne of St. Michaell, in Cornehill, London Mrchantayler and a batchelor aged xxiiij<sup>ty</sup> yeres or thereabouts and at his owne gov't and did allege that he intendeth to marie w<sup>th</sup> one Anne Mansfeild maiden aged xxj<sup>ty</sup> yeres or thereabouts the daughter of — Mansfeild late of Henly in the Countie of Buck, gent. dec. long since. And then appeared W<sup>m</sup> Jackson curate of St. Michaelles aforesaid and testified of his owne knowledge that M<sup>rs</sup> — Mansfeild of Henley aforesaide, widdowe mother of said Anne is privie and consentinge to this intended marriage, etc.; St. Michaelle.

"CHRISTENED. — 1618, May 14, Benjamin Kaine, son of Rob<sup>t</sup> and Ann Kaine. 1620, June 15, John Kaine, son of Robert and Ann Kaine. 1622, May 9, Joseph, son of Robart and An Keayne. 1624, Oct. 18, John, son of Robart and Ann his wife.

"BURIED. — 1621, Mar. 27, John Kaine, son of Robt. and Anne Kaine. 1625, Jan. 16, John, son of Robart and Ann Keayne. 1626, Mar. 28 Joseph, son of Robert and Ann Keayne. 1633, Feb. 10, — Mansfield, mother of Mrs. Cane in Bergin (Birching?) Lane."<sup>1</sup>

**Capt. Robert Keayne** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** Winthrop's Hist. New Eng.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1852, 1877, etc.; Boston *Daily Globe*, Dec. 24, 1893, C. W. Ernst; Mem. Hist. of Boston; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; same, Miss. Papers, Vol. X.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"17 July 1635. Theis vnder written names are to be transported to N. England enlarged in the Defence p<sup>r</sup>ed pr Cert. from the ministers and Jus-

tiices of their Conformitie and ht they are no sullyd man — Robert Keayne 40: Ann Keayne 38: Ben. Keayne 16." — *London Records*.

"The first military commander in Braintree was Capt Robert Keayne who was sent from Boston to organize and drill them for proper duty." — *Hist. Braintree and Quincy. Pattee*, 1878, p. 358.

<sup>1</sup> Communicated to Essex Institute *Hist. Coll's*, Salem, April and September, 1891, by Henry F. Waters.



He located as a tailor in a house, which was his shop and his residence, on the southeast corner of State and Washington streets. On that corner, in provincial times, Daniel Henchman (1675) kept his well-known book shop; and in it Henry Knox was brought up. Nicholas Boone kept a book shop on that lot, in the early part of the eighteenth century. Captain Keayne (1637) soon became, by his industry, energy, and capital, a leading colonist. He was orthodox in his religious faith, though not illiberal, and he was a devoted adherent of Governor Winthrop. He became the owner of several pieces of land, by grant and by purchase, one of them being a tract of over three hundred acres at Rumney Marsh, now in the town of Revere. He did not confine himself to the limitations of his trade, but availed himself of every opportunity to make an investment which promised to be profitable. Shrewd and successful, he was soon regarded as sharp at a bargain, and, although one of the leading spirits in town and colony affairs, he was publicly rebuked for his offences. They were, First, Inasmuch "as he was a professor of religion," he should not strive to make money. Second, Inasmuch "as he was a man of eminent ability," he should not strive to make money. Third, Inasmuch "as he was already wealthy, and had but one child," he should not strive to make money. Fourth, Inasmuch "as he came over for conscience' sake," he should not strive to make money. Fifth, Inasmuch "as he had already been warned by church elders against money-making, and had promised with tears, to strive not to do so," he should the more strive not to make money; he should curb his financial ability and turn the guineas away from his own till. The General Court, therefore, sentenced Mr. Keayne (1637) to pay two hundred pounds; but the magistrates regarded the fine as too heavy and the matter was finally compromised by his paying eighty pounds, receiving a respite for the remainder. After the General Court had tried Mr. Keayne (1637), found him guilty of extortionate charges and fined him, the First Church of Boston called him to account. Appearing before the pastor and his fellow-church-members, he acknowledged with tears, as he had done in the court, his covetous and corrupt behavior, and offered as an excuse that he had been misled by adopting as business rules: "1st. That if a merchant lost on one commodity, he might help himself in the price of another: 2nd, That, if through want of skill or other occasion, his commodity cost him more than the price of the market in England, he might then sell it for more than the price of the market in New England."

The Rev. John Cotton, in the next Thursday lecture, reviewed Mr. Keayne's (1637) defence, and cited other false principles of trade, after which he laid down the following business rules: "1st. A man may not sell above the current price: *i. e.* such a price as is usual in the time and place, and as another (who knows the worth of the commodity) would give for it, if he had occasion to use it, as that is called current money which every man will take, etc. 2nd. When a man loseth in his commodity, for want of skill, etc. he must look at it as his own fault or cross and therefore must not lay it upon another. 3rd. Where a man loseth by casualty at sea, or, etc., it is a loss cast upon himself by Providence, and he may not ease himself of it by casting it upon another; for so a man should seem to provide against all providences, etc., that he should never lose: but where there is a scarcity of the commodity, there men may raise their price, for now it is a hand of God upon the commodity, and not the person. 4th. A man may not ask any more for his commodity than his selling price, as Ephron to Abraham, the land is worth so much."

When the church took up the case for decision, an earnest debate is said to have



ensued, some members desiring to have Mr. Keayne (1637) excommunicated, while the majority thought an admonition would be sufficient. Mr. Cotton stated the causes which required excommunication, deducing them from 1st Corinthians v. 11.

"But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such a one no not to eat."

"The point now in question was, whether these actions did declare him to be such a covetous person, etc. Upon which he showed that it is neither the habit of covetousness (which is in every man in some degree), nor simply the act, that declares a man to be such; but when it appears that a man sins against his conscience, or the very light of nature, and when it appears in a man's whole conversation. But Mr. Keayne [1637] did not appear to be such, but rather, upon an error in his judgment, being led by false principles; and besides he is otherwise liberal as in his hospitality and in church communion, etc." In the end, therefore, the church consented to an admonition.

Another absurd clamor raised against Mr. Keayne (1637) has been humorously chronicled by General Henry K. Oliver (1837), who was one of his successors in the command of the military company which he founded. It seems that a curly-tailed specimen of "the swinish multitude" had been found "going at large," in the streets of Boston, and had been "rooting" in premises outside her proper domain. Hungry, vagrant swine are dangerous quadrupeds. To stop annoyance and prevent danger, the beast was impounded in Captain Keayne's sty with a bristly sister, and due notice was given by the town crier that the owner of the vagrant hog might prove property, pay styage, and take the animal to its rightful place. Divers inquirers came, but no claimant. At the end of a year from the time of impounding, during which interval the two had fared well, the captain relegated his own animal to the knife and the pork-barrel. Then there suddenly came forward one widow Sherman, who proved as great a thorn to Captain Keayne (1637) as his bitterest enemy could wish. Widow Sherman proclaimed that she had lost a hog, and that not the living but the slaughtered hog was hers. The whole town was roused into a tumult, and the case, urged on by a rival tradesman, was brought before the elders of the church, who after strict examination and due trial discharged the Captain. Appeal was made by the widow to the civil court, and again the Captain was triumphantly acquitted, recovering costs and forty pounds damages for slander. The widow still pressed her suit, and her case came up in the Great and General Court. It was debated for seven days, at the end of which time, the matter was sent to referees, General Gibbons (1637) and Colonel Tyng (1642), both of whom were members of the Artillery Company. It seems that they most sensibly permitted the thing to die of its own folly, the kind-hearted defendant remitting his right to damages.

Two years after, Captain Keayne (1637) was elected a deputy from Boston, and served as such four of the five next following years, 1645-50,<sup>1</sup> in which station his activity and usefulness were alike conspicuous. This act of his townsmen certainly indicates that he still retained their confidence and unimpaired respect. In fact he was, above contradiction, a most earnest man and practical benefactor, turning his gains into a beneficent direction, and doing as much, if not more, than any other man of his day and locality, for the town, the church, the schools, and the colony. Nor were his enemies

<sup>1</sup> Capt. Keayne was also a member of the General Court during 1638 and 1639, and was chosen speaker of the House of Deputies for the first day of sitting, Oct. 7, 1646.—*Records of Col. of Mass. Bay.*

unwilling to accept his generous donations. He gave fifty pounds for the benefit of the poor identified with the very church which had persecuted him.

Captain Keayne (1637) must have been a man of untiring industry. In addition to his private business and his public duties, he was a regular attendant on the Sunday services and the Thursday lectures, often taking notes of what was said in a short-hand, probably of his own invention. There is in the library of the Massachusetts Historical Society a small volume of these manuscript notes, entitled, "Mr. Cotton our Teacher. His Sermons or Expositions upon the Bookes of the New Testament, 1639." Another "volume contains the substance of expository discourses delivered in the First Church, Boston, on Lord's Day afternoon from 1643 to 1646, by Rev. John Cotton. *Also*, The Substance of a Sermon by the Senior Pastor, Rev. John Wilson, Mo. 2-20-1645. *Like-wise*, The Substance of a Sermon by Rev. Mr. Cobbet — Probably of Ipswich or Boston N. E. Mo. 5-13-1645-afternoon. It is  $7\frac{1}{2} \times 5\frac{1}{2}$  inches, has 482 pages, bound in leather, and once had two brass clasps. In it is written in his own handwriting, 'Robert Keayne of Bost: New England his Booke 1643, price 6*d*.' This second volume is in the Library of the Rhode Island Historical Society, Providence. Each page is closely written."<sup>1</sup>

When the colonists began to see the necessity for having military organization upon which to depend in case of invasion by foreign or native foes, Mr. Keayne (1637), remembering his London training, suggested the establishment of a similar institution in the home of his adoption. Through his superior military knowledge, his expenditures of money and his persistency, he succeeded in establishing the Company upon such a permanent basis that it became one of the solid institutions of Boston. He was a public-spirited and liberal citizen, and his benefactions were large, considering his wealth. He gave two hundred and fifty pounds to Harvard College; a like sum for a town library in Boston, and two hundred and fifty pounds for introducing pure water into his neighborhood. He thus aided the introduction of water, by artificial means, for the use of the people of this peninsula. He was active on the "23rd of the 11th moneth, 1635," "in raying of a new Worke of fortification upon the Forthill," and "at a general meeting of the richer inhabitants," Aug. 12, 1636, he contributed liberally "towards the maintenance of a free school master." He supported with his means and influence every cause that was intended to secure benefits for the people. Not a picture of this "first citizen" has ever been found, after unwearied search; in fact, he died without leaving a trace behind, except his benefactions, as set forth in his last will and testament.

This interesting document, which filled one hundred and fifty folio pages, was "all in his own hand." A transcript of it extends from page 116 to page 264, Vol. I. of the Records of Suffolk County. It is printed in Vol. X. [Document 150-1886] of the Reports of the Record Commissioners of Boston, and occupies fifty-three pages, containing about fifty-one thousand words. The following extracts will give an idea of its style, legacies, and provisions. The original spelling is not preserved: —

"I Robert Keayne, citizen and merchant tailor of London by freedom, and by the good Providence of God now dwelling at Boston in New England in America . . . do therefore now in my health make, ordain and declare this to be my Last Will and Testament. . . .

<sup>1</sup> Letter of Capt. A. A. Folsom (1867).

"First and before all things, I commend and commit my precious soul into the hands of Almighty God : . . . As for my burial I shall not desire any great outward solemnity to be used further than that which shall be decent and civil as becomes Christians : Knowing that extraordinary solemnities can add nothing to the peace or benefit of the deceased, yet having been trained up in Military discipline from my younger years, and having endeavored to promote it the best I could since God hath brought me into this country and seeing he hath been pleased to use me as a poor instrument to lay the foundation of that noble Society of the Artillery Company in this place, that hath so far prospered by the blessing of God as to help many with good experience in the use of their arms and more exact knowledge in the Military Art and hath been a nursery to raise up many able and well experienced soldiers that hath done since good service for their country, therefore to declare my affections to that exercise and the society of soldiers, I shall desire to be buried as a soldier in a Military way."

He then provides for his debts, for an inventory of his estate, and divides the principal part of his property between his wife and son. He sets apart two hundred pounds, that "if any man or woman, young or old, in Old England or New, could justly challenge or make it appear by good proof or reason that I had in anything unjustly wronged or defrauded them, that they might have full satisfaction allowed them. . . .

"I, having long thought and considered of the want of some necessary things of public concernment which may not be only commodious but very profitable and useful for the Town of Boston, as a Market place and conduit, the one a good help in danger of fire, . . . the other useful for the country people that come with their provisions, . . . also to have some convenient room or two for the Courts to meet in both in Winter and Summer, and [al]so for the townes' men and Commissioners of the town, also . . . a convenient room for a Library and a gallery or some other handsome room for the Elders to meet in and confer together. . . . Then in the same building there may be also a room for an armory to keep the arms of the Artillery Company and for the soldiers to meet in when they have occasion."

Captain Keayne (1637) then makes a donation of three hundred pounds for a market-house, one hundred pounds for a "Granere," and books for the beginning of the library. Having provided, by a legacy, for refreshment for the elders when they meet and confer, he continues:—

"And if a convenient, fair room in one of the buildings before mentioned be sequestered and set apart for an Armory and the meeting of the Artillery, if there it be thought convenient or if some other place be provided for that use more convenient, with the officers of that Company's advice, I am not strict for the very place so they have content in it, though yet I think the very heart and securest part of the town (and no out or by place) is the most fit for a Magazine for Arms because of the danger of surprising of them, the place that they now use will be fit, to scour and tend the arms in and the other to lay them up and keep them in, which will be a comely sight for strangers to see and a great ornament to the room and also to the town where the soldiers may arm themselves every time they go to exercise, such a place being provided, I give and bequeath five pounds for the encouragement of that Company to be laid out in pikes and bandoleers for the use of such soldiers of that Company that live in other towns. . . .

"Item I give and bequeath further to this Artillery Company of Boston five pounds more towards the erecting of a platform planked underneath for two mounted pieces of



ordnance to stand upon, a greater and a smaller, with a shed of boards raised over it, to keep them dry and preserve them from sun and weather and this to be raised in the most convenient part in the training place in Boston where it shall be most fit for that use and where at a convenient distance against some hill or rising ground there may be a good butt or kind of bulwark raised of earth that may receive the shot of those pieces and may be free from endangering any that may unexpectedly pass by or behind the butt in case they should overshoot, which butt may be cast up or digged at the bottom of a hill without any charge by the Company themselves, in two or three of their training days and my end in this is, that the Company may be trained up, (or so many of them as desire it) in the use, exercise and experience of the great ordnance as they are in their muskets that they may learne how to traverse, load, mount, level and fire at a mark, &c. which is as needful a skill for a soldier as the exercise of their ordinary arms. I suppose the Country will willingly lend the Company two such pieces for so good a use as this is, if the town itself hath none such to spare and will give them a barrel of powder or two to encourage them, to begin a service that will be so singularly useful for the country, the bullets will be most of them found and saved again if the hill or butt against which they shoot be not so low and narrow that they overmount and shoot aside at random, now as many of that company or others which desire to learn that art of gunnery (so needful for every Captain and officer of a Company to be experienced in) they may enter their names to be scholars of the Great Artillery and to agree that every one that enters his name may give so much for entry and so much a year afterwards as you do at the Artillery which money will serve to lay in provision of powder, shot, spunges, budge-barrels, cannon baskets and some allowance to the Mr. Gunner that shall take pains to instruct them, if there cannot be some skilful and sufficient man found, that will think the honor of the place to instruct such a society in so noble a service recompense sufficient that they have an opportunity not only to exercise their own skill, but to do good to the country and to willing scholars that so thirst after experience as we see the Capt and rest of the officers of the small Artillery do freely expend their time to instruct others in the best skill themselves have attained, and look at it as reward enough that their pains are accepted and the company edified by it, besides there being many ship masters and gunners that resort to this country who have good skill in this art, the Company I doubt not upon their request might have their help sometimes and direction herein and he that is chosen to this place may have the title of the Capt of the great Artillery or Mr. Gunner and there may be a time appointed once in a week or fortnight for the scholars to meet to spend two or three hours, either forenoon or afternoon for their instruction in it. Now all that meet cannot expect to make every one a shot apiece or but one man two shots at one time and the rest may observe as much by the manner of their performing it as if they had done it themselves, and for further encouragement to help on this exercise besides the five pounds given before towards the platform and the other five pounds for pikes, &c. . . .

“I give and bequeath two heifers or cows to the Captain and officers of the first Artillery Company to be kept as a stock constantly and the increase or profit of these cows yearly to be laid out in powder or bullets, &c., for the use of the exercise of the great Artillery, only the stock at no time or the value of it not to be diminished and these to be delivered to the Capt that shall have the command of that company or whom himself and officers shall appoint when the platform and butt is finished, and two



pieces mounted thereon, with all materials thereto belonging fit to exercise with, when a Master or Captain of the great Ordnance is chosen, a convenient company of soldiers entered for scholars as between ten and twenty and all things settled in a good posture for the beginning and continuance of that exercise, but if the Artillery Company shall neglect to accomplish this before expressed above two years after my decease, then these three legacies, viz. both the five pounds and the two cows to be void and to be to the use of my executor, but if the things before mentioned be accomplished and this new company do go on as I desire it may then my will is that the Capt with the consent of the Company may appoint some able man either of the Company or otherwise that shall give bond to my executors or overseers for these two cows or the value of them at the time of delivery that the stock shall be preserved and the increase or benefit of them only to be disposed of for the use of this new Company and if this Company should break off and not continue their exercise then the two cows to be returned to my executor or some of my overseers for his use or the just value that they were worth at the time of their first delivery, now any man that shall have the cows to keep will be willing to give such a bond if the Company order it so, in case that exercise should fall to the ground, for the two first five pounds I desire no bond nor any returns of it though the Company should not continue very long, I would make it my dying request to our first Artillery Company (if there shall be such a Company in being when it shall please God to take me out of this miserable world) many know what my earnest endeavors and desires hath been to promote and encourage what I could since the Lord hath brought me into this country and my desires have not been altogether frustrated for out of this small Company the Lord hath raised up many a well experienced soldier that hath done good service and hath been of good esteem both here and in our native country and therefore my grief is the more to see this sometime flourishing and highly prized Company that when the country grows more populous this company should grow more thin and ready to dissolve for want of appearance but some are weary and thus think they have got experience enough so the most begins to neglect but my request is that the entries, quartridge and fines for late and non-appearance (which last hath been too long neglected) and will not be well with the Company till it be taken up again especially seeing the greatest part of that Company consists now of men in our own town and we never had better nor more constant appearance than when fines were duly taken may be preserved and kept in stock to lay out in powder, arms, bandoleers for the use of the Company and in canvas to make resemblance of trenches, half moons, redoubts, forts, &c., Cannon baskets and such like necessary implements for some special military service that might be performed once or twice a year, which would be a singular help to the ordinary exercise and would add much not only to the encouragement but to the experience both of officers and soldiers in some military exercises which without such helps as these cannot be taught nor performed, and these moneys would be far better employed and to the greater satisfaction and content of the Company in such things than to be wasted and spent in eating and drinking and needless invitations as it hath been a long time both to my own and to the grief and offence of several of the company which hath occasioned some to leave the Company and others unwilling to pay their quartridge, seeing the whole stock is still consumed and the Company rather in debt than otherwise which hath been a chief thing to hinder many other profitable exercises for want of means to bear the charge of them and will in time be the overthrow and dissolution of the Company if it be not prevented,

what hath made the Artillery Company in London so to flourish for so long a time together but the stock of the Company well managed whereby they have done great things and have been able to perform many exercises (though chargeable) both for the delight of all beholders and the great benefit and experience of the soldiers and to the increase of their number, and indeed I had in my purpose several other legacies to have bestowed on this Company for their encouragement and the example of others and have them in a readiness and of some consequence but the small appearance of the Company and the declining of it daily which cannot be but a great discouragement to the Capt and officers that command them, as also to the soldiers what do appear and causes a kind of contempt instead of esteem in those that behold them, makes me fear the final dissolution of it and so all gifts will sink with it and come to nothing hath been the cause of altering my resolution, though I know a skilful commander though he have a body of men but 4 files 6 deep which is but 24 soldiers, yea I would add further, if he have but half so many but two files 6 or 8 deep, with them he may perform such variety of exercises, not only for the postures but the several motions doublings facings counter marches wheelings yea such variety of forms of battles and several kinds of firings and charges as should not only be delightful but very useful and gainful to those that are exercised and not only for two or three training days, but have matter enough to exercise them for several years which I should hardly have believed, did not I know it to be true and have seen it with mine eyes, yet notwithstanding what comfort or credit can a Capt have to go into the field with 6 or 12 soldiers and under the name of an Artillery or Military Company, it would be my rejoicing if there could be any means thought on or used to increase and encourage this Company that is and may be so honorable and advantageous to the whole country, that it may remain and continue still in splendor and esteem increasing and not declining, but all things have their changes."

Captain Keayne (1637) follows this expression of generosity, counsel, fear, and hope, with other legacies. He makes gifts, to the town of Boston, three hundred pounds; to the free school in Boston, fifty pounds; to "our own church," fifty pounds for the relief of the poor; to Harvard College, one hundred pounds, and, conditionally, six hundred and twenty pounds more; to Rev. John Cotton; to his brother-in-law, Rev. John Willson; to Mr. John Willson; to Elders Oliver and Colborne; to Rev. Mr. Norton; to Mr. Bellingham, deputy; to Edward Winslow; to Major-General Gibbons (1637); to his workmen and servants and others, various sums, amounting, probably, to fifteen hundred pounds. Mr. Keayne (1637), in his will, estimates his property at "£4000 or thereabouts," and adds, "it is well known to some that I brought over with me two or 3000 lb in good estate of my own."

The three hundred pounds given to the town of Boston were for a market-place and a conduit, the former to contain "some convenient room or two for the courts" (which had hitherto been held in the meeting-house), "to meet in both summer and winter and so for the Townsmen and Commissioners in the same building, or the like, and a convenient room for a library, and a gallery, or some other handsome room for the elders to meet in; also a room for an armory."

In March, 1656-7, the town selected a committee to consider the "modell of the towne house," as suggested in his will. One hundred and four citizens gave £367 11s., and Captain Keayne (1637), by will, £300 towards the contemplated structure, which was completed in 1658, and occupied the site of what is now called "The Old State

House." Oct. 9, 1667, the Legislature ordered "the necessary full and suitable repair of the Town and Court House in Boston, *founded by the late Captain Robert Keayne*." This building was destroyed in the great fire in Boston, which occurred in the night of Oct. 7, 1711. The library contemplated in Captain Keayne's will was established, and existed probably until 1711.<sup>1</sup>

The conduit, not proving so successful as was expected, was removed in about twelve years. His legacy to the free school was probably applied to what is now called the Public Latin School in Boston, one of the greatest ornaments of the city.

Captain Keayne (1637) died in his own house in Boston on the 23d of March, 1655-6.<sup>2</sup> The inventory of his estate amounted to £2,427 12s. 1d., and his debts and funeral expenses were £274. The will was probated May 2, 1656, but the estate was not finally settled until Jan. 29, 1683, when, both of the executors being dead, letters of administration were granted to Colonel Nicholas Paige<sup>3</sup> (1693) and Anna, his wife, granddaughter of the deceased. His widow, Ann Keayne, married, on the 16th of October, 1660, Samuel Cole (1637).

The burial-place of Captain Robert Keayne (1637) has been patiently sought, but it is not positively known. It is believed that for thirty years (1630-60) what is now called "King's Chapel Burial-Ground" was the only place of burial in the town. In 1645, Thomas Scotto sold to the town the present City Hall lot. It is described in the deed as having the "Burying place toward the west." Aug. 20, 1660, the town "ordered that the old burying place shall nott bee broken up any more withoutt leave of some two of the select men first obtained"; and Nov. 5, 1660, it "ordered, that the old burying place shall bee wholly deserted for some convenient season, and the new places appointed for burying onely made use off." "In the year 1660, two new cemeteries — the North Burial-Ground on Copp's Hill, and the South, or Granary Burial-Ground — were laid out for use. In King's Chapel Burial-Ground, Governor Winthrop was buried in 1649, Rev. John Cotton in 1652, Thomas Oliver in 1658, William Paddy (1652) in 1658, Jacob Sheafe (1648) in 1658, all of whom were intimate friends of Captain Keayne (1637). Therefore it seems reasonable to conclude that Captain Robert Keayne (1637) was buried within the present limits of King's Chapel Burial-Ground.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "[1683] Augt 2d Given David Edwards on ord<sup>r</sup> vnder ye select mens hands to receaue of Elder John Wiswall & Doctr Elisha Cook, 34<sup>ld</sup>. 4s. in mony for severall things he brought from England for ye vse of the Library, by order of Capt Brattle, & is in pte of a greate sune due from them, for Capt Robt Keynes legacie to ye vse of sd Library, as appears fol. 47. . . .

"1694-5 March 11. At a public meeting of freeholders and inhabitants it was voted that the bookes of the Register of Birthes and deathes in the Town of Boston shall be demanded by the Select men in whose hands soever they be and that all Bookes or Other things belonging to the Library and all the goods or Estate belonging to the Town be demanded and Taken care of by the Select men." — *Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. VII., pp. 162 and 220.*

"[1702] August 31" the selectmen "Ordered that Mr. John Barnerd jun. be desired to make a Cattalogue of all the bookes belonging to the Towns Library and to Lodge the Same in ye sd Library." Feb. 28, 1704, it was voted in the Board meet-

ing that Mr. John Barnerd, Jr., having "Set the Towns Library in good order, he is allowed for Sd Service two of those bookes of wch there are in ye Sd Library two of a Sort." — *Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. XI., pp. 26, 37.*

In June, 1713, an advertisement was printed for the purpose of having all books belonging to the town's library "before the late fire" returned to the town treasurer.

<sup>2</sup> "The 26th of the 1st month, 1656, Capt Robert Keyne died. He was a man of good understanding and learning, both in divine, civil and military arts and knowledge. He gave to the town a considerable sum, in his will, towards a town-house and conduit." — *Diary of John Hull (1660).* Boston Records say he died "23d of the 1st mo."

<sup>3</sup> The petition of Nicholas Paige (1693) and Anna, his wife, to administer on Capt. Robert Keayne's estate, Jan. 29, 1683-4, is given in the New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1877, p. 105.

<sup>4</sup> Shurtleff's Topographical and Historical Dis. of Boston; Drake's Hist. of Boston, pp. 99, 100.



"Captain Robert Keayne" (1637), said the Rev. Samuel K. Lothrop, in his bi-centennial sermon, delivered before the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1838, "was one of those men, rare elsewhere, but of whom New England and this city especially, have seen many, who belonging to what is commonly called the middling interest, occupying neither a very exalted nor a very obscure station in society, possessing neither extraordinary wealth nor extraordinary talent, have yet been eminent for their public usefulness, for their high moral worth as men, for their faithful services as citizens. He fostered in his day and generation the most valuable interests of the community, and promoted, by his influence and example, the cause of sound morals, rational piety, social progress, order and happiness. And so long as this Company continues to exist and worth and virtue are honored by its members, so long he will be held in grateful remembrance as an honest man, a faithful citizen, a sincere Christian."

**Robert Sedgwick** (1637), the second signer of the original roll of the Company, was a son of William and Elizabeth (Howe) Sedgwick, and was born in Woburn, Bedfordshire, England, where he was baptized May 6, 1613. He married, in England, Joanna ———, who after his death became the second wife of Rev. Thomas Allen, of Norwich, England, previously of Charlestown, Mass. Mr. Allen's first wife was Ann (Sadler) Harvard, the widow of Rev. John Harvard.

Capt. Sedgwick (1637) and his wife Joanna joined the Charlestown church, Feb. 27, 1636-7, having emigrated to America in 1635. He became a freeman March 9, 1636-7, when he was appointed captain for the town, and the next month was chosen a representative. He was repeatedly re-elected, and served in the General Court sixteen terms. He was engaged in Charlestown in mercantile pursuits. His house fronted on the square near where the Bunker Hill Bank now stands, and his wharves were near the town dock. Mr. Whitman (1810) says, that "Capt Sedgwick [1637] had been a member of the Artillery Company in London," but his name does not appear on the records or roll of the Honourable Artillery. He was probably connected with "the Military Garden of London," an association for improvement in the art of war, distinct from the company above mentioned. Johnson (1637) plainly tells us that Capt. Sedgwick (1637) was "nursed up in London's Artillery Garden."<sup>1</sup>

He was chosen captain of the first train-band in Charlestown, which he drilled every Friday afternoon; he was captain of the Artillery Company of the Massachusetts in 1640, 1645, and 1643; commander at the castle in 1641, and of the Middlesex regiment in 1643. On the organization of the colonial militia, in 1644, he was appointed "Sergeant Major" or commander of the Middlesex regiment. In a pamphlet entitled "Good News from New England," the author says:—

"Prest to oppose haters of peace, with guide  
Of officers, three regiments abide  
In Middlesex, seven ensigns are displayed,  
There disciplined by Major Sedgwick's aid."

**Robert Sedgwick** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** Hist. of Middlesex Co., by D. Hamilton Hurd; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1887, 1888, etc.; Frothingham's Charlestown; Johnson's Wonder-Working Providence; Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng., Savage's Edition.

<sup>1</sup> Robert Sedgwick was "the first Sergeant

Major chosen to order the Regiment of Essex, stout and active in all feats of war, nursed up in London's Artillery garden, and furthered with fifteen years experience in New England exact theory: besides the help of a very good head piece, being a frequent instructor of the more martial troops of our artillery men," etc. — *Wonder-Working Providence, by Edward Johnson* (1637), Ed. 1867, p. 192. "Noble Captain Sedgwick." — *Woburn Records*.



When, in 1645, a king's ship had been captured in Boston Harbor by Capt. Stagg, who had been commissioned by Parliament, the General Court authorized and appointed Sergt.-Major Gibbons (1637), of Boston, and Sergt.-Major Sedgwick (1637), of Charlestown, "to keep the peace in the said towns, and not to permit any ships to fight in the harbor, without license from authority."

Capt. Sedgwick (1637) was associated with John Winthrop, Jr., and other leading colonists, in establishing iron-works at Lynn, in 1643, the first, it is affirmed, on the American continent. Smelting, forging, and casting were carried on for some years, the bog-ore furnishing the raw material; but Hubbard says that soon, "instead of drawing out bars of iron for the country's use, there was hammered out nothing but contention and law-suits." After a lingering existence of forty years, the fire of the forges was finally extinguished, the buildings were razed, and heaps of scoria only remained for vegetation, in the course of years, to convert into grassy hillocks. In other business operations, Capt. Sedgwick (1637) subjected himself to admonition for the same "frailty" which caused his friend, Capt. Keayne (1637), so much persecution by church and state, "taking more than sixpence in the shilling profit"; but he escaped with an admonition.

In 1652, Sergt.-Major Sedgwick was promoted to the rank of "Sergeant-Major General," or commander-in-chief. He held the office for one year, during which time he was actively engaged in improving the discipline and drill of the colonial forces, spending his money freely, whenever and wherever it was needed.

Gen. Sedgwick (1637), attracting the favorable attention of Oliver Cromwell, then Lord Protector of Great Britain, was authorized, with Capt. John Leverett (1639), afterwards Governor, to organize an expedition against New Netherlands, now New York. Cromwell furnished them with three ships and a small body of troops, and authorized them to increase their force by recruits in New England. When, after some delays, they arrived at Boston, the Dutch war was already over, and, before the Massachusetts contingents could be enlisted, news of the peace reached Boston. The commissioners then determined to make Acadia the object of their attack. "It was," says Hutchinson, "a time of peace between the two nations, but the English had good right to the country, and the complaints of the French in Europe could not prevail upon Cromwell to give it up again." The Lord Protector asserted that a sum of money, promised by France in consideration of the cession of Acadia, had never been paid. Gen. Sedgwick's (1637) account of his collecting an expedition is so Cromwellian in its tone that it merits republication. It is dated, "From General Sedgwick [1637] at Charles Town, New England, this 24th September, 1654," and is as follows:—

"I know you cannot but be acquainted with our first business we were designed unto. God did not seem to smile upon us in that business, in many of his workings towards us. But so it fell out, even when we were ready to advance with our forces to the southward, we had countermands as touching that business; we, then, being in a posture of war, and soldiers here listed in pay, attended the other part of our commission against the French, and the fourth of July set sail for *Nantusket* with 3 ships, one *Catch* and about two hundred I and Soldiers of old *England* and New. Our first place designed for was *St. John's Fort*, there we arrived the 15 *Ditto*, and in four days took it in, where we found a gallant Fort, above seventy proper Soldiers, seventeen peeces of Ordnance, besides Murtherers, Stockefowlers and other Ammunition. Having sent away the French and settled our Garrison, we set sail for *Port Riall*, and five days after

our arrival there, took in that Fort, as also a ship of France, that lay under the Fort ; In the Fort, we found Seamen, Soldiers and Planters, about 135 fighting men. Our force with which we landed, and lay intrenched against the Fort was but equal in number ; there was in the Fort twenty peeces of Ordnance, above forty barrels of powder, with other necessaries. Our work being finished there, we set sail for *Penobscout*, and took that in, where we found a small Fort, yet very strong, and a very well composed peece with eight peece of Ordnance one Brass, three murtherers, about eighteen Barrels of powder, and eighteen men in garrison. I am willing to hope God intends a blessing in this affair to the English Nation, and to the Plantations in particular. It's a brave Countrey full of fine Rivers, Airable Pastors, full of Timber, gallant Masts, full of Mines, Coal, Marble, Iron, Lead, and some say, Copper. Many convenient places for fishing, making of Oyl, and good quantities of trade for Beaver and Mous-skins."

Cromwell, who had once thought of emigrating to New England, often expressed a tender regard for the settlers there, and near the close of 1654 he undertook to carry out a plan whereby he might mitigate their trials and hardships by providing homes for them in a more congenial climate where there was a fertile soil. The expedition was repulsed on the island of Hispaniola, but seized the island of Jamaica on the 17th of May, 1655. The troops were soon reinforced by four regiments, one of which was commanded by Gen. Sedgwick (1637), who was immediately detailed to act in the place of Edward Winslow, deceased, as a commissioner to govern the conquered territory. In his first report, he said that he found things "in a sad, deplorable and dejected condition," the soldiers being "so lazy and idle as it cannot enter into the heart of any Englishman that such blood should run in the veins of any born in England." As the original commissioners were all dead, Gen. Sedgwick (1637), in conjunction with the principal military officers, framed an instrument of civil government, constituting a Supreme Executive Council, with himself at its head. Cromwell approved of what he did, and promoted him to the rank of major-general, using every exertion to procure emigrants from Scotland and Ireland for his colony. Gen. Sedgwick (1637) died on the 24th of May, 1656, soon after he received his new appointment. His widow was living in 1667 at Stepney, near London. Their daughter, Sarah, was the second wife of Gov. Leverett (1639). Gen. Sedgwick (1637) and wife, Joanna, had five children, of whom William joined the Artillery Company in 1666, and Robert in 1674. The Book of Possessions (City Document No. 39, p. 2), represents him as owning nine separate pieces of property in Charlestown, containing about forty-eight acres. He was an active citizen, devoted to the interests of the town, superintended the building of the first fortifications in Charlestown, and was one of the most conspicuous persons of his time.

**Joseph Weld** (1637), of Roxbury, whose name stands third on the original roll, was a merchant, and a brother of Rev. Thomas Weld of that place. He was admitted a freeman in 1636 ; was a representative from Roxbury in the General Court, 1636-43 ; was selectman prior to 1643, and was the captain of the Roxbury Company, which in 1636 was included in the regiment of which John Winthrop was colonel and Thomas Dudley lieutenant-colonel. He was chosen ensign of the Artillery Company

**Joseph Weld** (1637). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Mem. Hist. of Boston.

Mr. Weld's (1637) first wife, Elizabeth, came with him from England. She died in October, 1638, and, April 20, 1639, he married Barbara, niece of Edward Clap, of Dorchester.

at its organization in 1638. Whitman (1810) says, that when Capt. Weld (1637) was in London, in 1644, "the wife of La Tour having commenced an action against Capt. Bayley, captain of the ship, which brought her from London by a six months voyage to Boston, and recovered £2000. damages; and the captain having also commenced an action for his freight in which he was unsuccessful, Bayley was persuaded or advised to attach Captain Weld [1637], who was one of the jury who tried the case, together with Stephen Winthrop [1641], the Governor's son, and Recorder of the Court. This being done, they were forced to find sureties in a bond of £4000. to answer him in the Court of Admiralty. Bayley was finally obliged to give over this suit; and then he procured out of Chancery a *ne exeat regnos* (that they should not depart the realm) against them; but the cause being heard they were discharged, Captain Bayley losing his charges and they, theirs. Weld [1637], Winthrop [1641], and Thomas Fowle [1639], the owner of the ship, petitioned the General Court, for indemnity, but in vain."

The homestead of Capt. Weld (1637), containing two acres of garden and orchard, was between the Denison estate and that of Elder Heath. As a recognition of his valuable services in behalf of the colony, he received from the town the valuable estate in West Roxbury known recently as the "Bussey Farm," which he bequeathed to his son. His "services" are indicated in a vote of the General Court, Oct. 1, 1645: "The Court thinks it meet that Mr. Peters and Mr. Weld, being sent over to negotiate for the country, having been long absent, desire they may understand the Court's mind that they desire their presence & speedily return."

During the four months' detention, "it being winter," of Mrs. Ann Hutchinson, previous to her being driven into exile, for her unorthodox opinions, she was in the custody of Capt. Weld (1637), at Roxbury.

Capt. Weld (1637) died while in command of the Roxbury train-band, Oct. 7, 1646, leaving a widow, Barbara, and an estate inventoried at £2,028 11s. 3d., no inconsiderable sum in those days. He was buried in the old burying-ground on Eustis Street. His widow became the second of four successive wives of Anthony Stoddard, who joined the Artillery Company in 1639.

**Thomas Savage** (1637), tailor, of Boston, was the fourth signer of the roll of the Artillery Company, and he would undoubtedly have been named in the charter, had he not been involved in the movement headed by his mother-in-law, Mrs. Ann Hutchinson. For this, he, with other officers who were her adherents, were disarmed by order of the General Court until they recanted.

Major Thomas Savage (1637), son of William, was born at Taunton, England, in 1606, and came to Boston in the "Planter," in April, 1635. He was admitted a freeman in May, 1636. Having married Faith, the daughter of William and Ann Hutchinson, in the following year, he was classed among the adherents of his mother-in-law, was disarmed, and obliged to retire for a time into Rhode Island. On his return, he became the first orderly sergeant of the Artillery Company, with which he was thenceforth prominently identified. He had, by his first wife, seven children, viz.: Habijah (1665), Thomas (1665), Hannah, Ephraim (1674), Mary, Dyonisia, and Perez. His first

**Thomas Savage** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847; Bridgman's King's Chapel Burial-Ground; Mather's Magnalia;

Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Savage's Winthrop; Mem. Hist. of Boston; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.



wife died Feb. 20, 1652, and, the 15th of the September following, he married Mary, daughter of Rev. Zachariah Symmes, of Charlestown. By his second wife, he had Sarah, Richard, Samuel, Samuel 2d, Zachariah, Ebenezer (1682), John (1694), Benjamin (1682), Arthur, Elizabeth, and Elizabeth 2d. He resided at the corner of Fleet and North streets, and his tailor's shop was at the lower end of Cornhill, now Washington Street.

Major Savage (1637) represented Boston in the General Court in 1654-7, 1659-62, 1677, and 1678, or ten years; Hingham in 1663, and Andover in 1671, presiding as speaker in 1659, 1660, 1671, 1677, and 1678. He was an assistant in 1680 and 1681, and held other positions in church and state. In 1669, he was one of the founders and members of the Third Church (Old South), and subscribed liberally towards the establishing of a free school in Boston.

It was in the military affairs of the colony that Major Savage (1637) was especially prominent. In the war for the subjugation of King Philip, the chief of the Wampanoags, he was commissioned as major of the Massachusetts forces under Major-Gen. Denison (1660), whose instructions to Major Savage (1637) concluded as follows: "And in case the Lord should discuell ye General so as to take him of the service, you shall take charge and command of all according to the commission given him." Major Savage (1637) had under his especial command the troops of Capt. Paige (1693) and the foot companies of Cpts. Henschman (1675), Prentice, and Moseley (1672), numbering in all about three hundred men. The commissary stores provided included "2000 weight of Biskit, 40 barrels of pease in casks, 10 barrels of Pork, 10 kintalls of drye fish, 1 hogshhead of Rumme, 6 jars of oyle, 4 barrels of Raisins, 1 barrel of sugar, 1 hogshhead of salt and a quarter cask of wine." Provision was also made of powder, shot, flints, and "50 bushels of Indian corn parched and beaten to make nocake," "with 300 small bags for each man to carry nokake." When the expedition reached the Wampanoag villages at Mount Hope, they were found deserted, King Philip and his warriors, conscious of their inability to cope with the whites, having retreated into the Narragansett country, when a peace was proclaimed. The troops returned to Boston and were there disbanded, Major Savage (1637) resuming the care of his business.

King Philip was soon again on the war-path, and he persuaded the different tribes to engage in hostilities under his direction, the Dutch supplying them with arms and ammunition. The frontier settlements were broken up, and military skill and courage could avail but little against the tactics of a skulking foe. In the spring of 1675-6, Major Savage (1637) was again commissioned as commander of the Massachusetts troops, his instructions closing with these words, "Thus committing you to God desiring his presence with & protection over you, wee Remaine." That year King Philip was killed in the famous "Swamp Fight," and it was estimated that during the summer upwards of two thousand Indians were killed or taken prisoners. The colonists, during the same time, lost twelve captains and more than six hundred men; twelve towns were entirely ruined, and six hundred houses were burned, nearly a tenth part of all in New England.

Major Savage (1637), during the remainder of his long and useful life, was a prominent member of the Artillery Company, in which he did duty for forty-five years, and he lived to see it increase and flourish beyond the most sanguine expectations, when he aided in its first establishment. He was junior or second sergeant in 1639; senior or first sergeant in 1640; lieutenant in 1641 and 1645, and was captain in 1651, 1659,



1668, 1675, and 1680, occupying that office the last time after he was seventy-three years of age. Nor was this all. "Five [six] of Major Savage's sons," says Whitman, "were members, and their posterity have many of them not only followed the military example of their ancestor, but have succeeded to his military honors. The same badge of commander, 'a leading staff' or 'pike,' which was five times graced by the hand of Major Savage [1637], has been transferred by the Chief Magistrate of the Colony, or Province, to a son once, to a grandson once, to another grandson three times and to a great grandson once, in addition to the 'half pike' he twice bore as Lieutenant, which each" of the above-mentioned descendants "bore before he was elected as commander. Although the standard was not entrusted to his care as 'Ensign' yet several of his descendants have had charge of it."

Major Savage (1637) died Feb. 15, 1681-2,<sup>1</sup> aged seventy-five years, and was interred in the burial-ground now adjacent to King's Chapel. His will, dated June 28, 1675, "the day he marched to the war," and proved Feb. 23, 1681-2, appointed John Hull (1660) and Isaac Addington (1652) "overseers," and his sons, Thomas (1665), Ephraim (1674), and Ebenezer (1682), executors. The inventory of his estate, including several parcels of land, amounted to £3,447 8s. 7d., and his debts to £644 8s. 6d. Included in the inventory was a "Scotch Boy," valued at £14.

An elegy was published "On the sudden and much Lamented Death and Expiration of that Worthy, Grave, Pious, and Every way accomplished Hero, Major Thomas Savage Esq'r."

Snow, in his *History of Boston*, p. 143, describes a colonial mansion, which Mr. Whitman quotes as describing Mr. Savage's home:—

"We find in the principal houses a great hall, ornamented with pictures and a great lantern, a velvet cushion in the window-seat, which looks into the garden. On either side is a great parlor or study. These are furnished with great looking-glasses, Turkey-carpet, window-curtains and valance, pictures and a map, a brass clock, red leather-back chairs, and a great pair of andirons. The chambers are well supplied with feather-beds, warming-pans, and every other article that would now be thought necessary for comfort or display. The pantry is well filled with substantial fare and dainties, prunes, marmalade, and Madeira wine. Silver tankards, wine cups, and other articles of plate, are not uncommon; the kitchen is completely stocked with pewter, copper and iron utensils."

**Daniel Howe** (1637), of Lynn, was the fifth signer of the roll of the Artillery Company. His name is spelled "Haugh" on some of the Company's old records, but he had been commissioned as Daniel Howe, in 1630, as lieutenant of a train-band at Lynn, commanded by Richard Wright, which had two iron cannon called "sakers"; and he appears as Daniel Howe (1637), "owner of sixty acres of upland and meadow," in the Lynn Book of Possessions. He, as Daniel Howe (1637), also held several town offices. He was admitted a freeman in 1634, and was a representative from Lynn to the General Court in 1636 and 1637. In April, 1636, he was commissioned by Gov. Vane as lieutenant-commander of "the trained band in Sagus," as

**Daniel Howe** (1637). AUTHORITIES: Lewis's Hist. of Lynn; 250th Anniversary of the Settlement of Lynn; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company.

<sup>1</sup> "Major Savage's grave stone in the chapel

ground says — 'Died February 15, 1681-2.' — *Whitman's Hist.*, p. 38.

"1681. Feb. 15. Major Thomas Savage one of ye lay-magistrates dyed aged 76. He died Suddenly. — *Bradstreet's Journal*.

that part of Lynn where he resided was then called. May 17, 1637, he was transferred to be second in command of the "Castle at the island," and in November following was "enjoyed to traine the Company at Linn."

He was probably a husbandman, yet he ploughed the deep, for he was the master of a vessel which in 1640 conveyed a colony of forty families, who found themselves "straightened" in Lynn, to Scout's Bay, on the western part of Long Island, where they purchased land of Mr. James Forrett, agent of Lord Stirling, and agreed with the Indians for their right to ownership. On receiving information of this, the Dutch laid claim to that part of the island, on account of a previous purchase from the Indians, and they sent men to take possession by setting up the arms of the Prince of Orange, on a tree. The emigrants from Lynn, disregarding the claims of the Dutch, cut down the trees and began to build. Lieut. Howe (1637) took down the Prince's arms, and instead thereof an Indian drew a very "unhandsome" face. This conduct highly incensed the Dutch Governor, William Kieft, whom Mr. Irving in one of his humorous works has characterized by the appellation of "William the Testy," but whom Mr. Hubbard calls "a discreet man." On the 13th of May, the Governor sent Cornelius Van Ten Hoven, the secretary, the under-sheriff, a sergeant, and twenty-five soldiers, to break up the settlement. On arrival, they found eight men (with a woman and an infant), who had erected one cottage and were engaged in building another. Six of the men were brought before the Governor. They were examined under oath, then put into prison, where they remained until an answer was received to the letter written in Latin, which the Dutch Governor sent to the Governor of Massachusetts. To this Mr. Winthrop replied, in the same language, that he would neither maintain the Lynn people in an unjust action nor suffer them to be injured. On the reception of this reply, the Dutch Governor liberated the men, after they had signed an agreement to leave the place. They accordingly removed more than eighty miles, to the eastern part of the island, where they purchased land of the Indians, and planted a town, which, in remembrance of the place in England from which they originally sailed, they called Southampton. Lieut. Howe (1637) subsequently moved to New Haven, Conn., where he died.

Lieut. Howe (1637) was elected to the office of lieutenant of the Company in 1638. Savage's edition of Winthrop gives a copy of Lieut. Howe's commission as lieutenant of the Lynn train-band. It is probably a sample of commissions issued in those days, and is as follows:—

"1636, 16th 4th mo.

"To Lieutenant Howe, of Sagus, and to the military officers and company there :

"Whereas we have formerly given you command of the trained band in Sagus, we do hereby require you to see them duly exercised according to the orders of the court, and we do also require you, the military company there, that you diligently attend with your complete arms, at such times and places as your said Lieutenant shall appoint, and that all you, the officers and soldiers of the said company, be obedient to all such commands as by authority of this place or order from us you shall receive from him, so you may be well trained and fitted for such future service as you may be called unto ; hereof not to fail.

"HENRY VANE, *Governor*,  
"JO. WINTHROP, *Deputy*."

**Thomas Huckens, or Huckins** (1637), the sixth signer of the roll of the Artillery Company, had lived in or near Boston, but settled early at Barnstable. Thomas Hutchins is mentioned by Hutchinson as being one of the assistants elected in England on the 13th of May, 1628. Probably he came to America soon after. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1639. Having moved to Barnstable, he married, in 1642, Mary Wells, by whom he had several children, and among them was Mary, who married Samuel Storrs, the progenitor of the Storrs family in America.<sup>1</sup> Mary (Wells) Huckens died July 28, 1648, and Nov. 3 following, Mr. Huckens (1637) married Rose, widow of Hugh Hillier, of Yarmouth. The late Rutherford B. Hayes, of Ohio, Ex-President of the United States of America, was a descendant of Ensign Thomas Huckens (1637).

Ensign Huckens (1637) was a member of the board of selectmen, in Barnstable, eight years; represented that town in the Colonial Court eight years; a grand jurymen in 1655; was licensed to retail wine and strong water, March 1, 1653, and was licensed as an innkeeper, June 1, 1663. He was appointed collector of the excise duty, June 5, 1667, and collector of ministers' rates, June 7, 1670. He was elected a member of the Council of War in Plymouth Colony, June 5, 1671; was auditor of colony accounts in 1669, 1670, and 1672; and in the expedition against the Indian Fort, in what is now Kingston, R. I., in December, 1675, he was commissary of the Plymouth Colony forces.

He was one of the number who went to England, and under the command of Col. William Rainsburrow (1639) fought in the army and cause of Parliament. More fortunate than some of his comrades, he returned to America.

He perished at sea, with his son Joseph, Nov. 29, 1679.

**John Oliver** (1637), the seventh signer of the original roll of the Artillery Company, son of Elder Thomas Oliver, came in the "William and Francis," March 9, 1632, from London, and arrived at Boston, June 5 next following, being then sixteen years of age. Thomas Oliver and family came from Bristol, England. The Elder died June 1 1658, "being ninety years old."

John Oliver (1637) united with the First Church in Boston in 1633, and became a freeman May 14, 1634. His father settled in Boston on what is now Washington Street, opposite the head of Water Street. That was John Oliver's first home in Boston. He married Elizabeth, daughter of John Newgate, of Boston, by whom he had five children, only two of whom grew up. One of these, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1680. Four sons of Elder Thomas Oliver were members of this Company; John joined it in 1637; James, in 1640; Peter, in 1643, and Samuel, in 1648.

John Oliver (1637) was a member of the General Court in 1637 and 1638,—a colleague of Capt. Keayne (1637), and consequently a member when the charter of the Company was granted. He was junior sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1638, and senior sergeant in 1639. His business was probably that of surveyor, as in his will he refers to his "geometrical instruments. In 1641, "the 26th of the 5 moneth," "Our

**Thomas Huckens** (1637). AUTHORITIES: Plymouth Colony Records; Savage's Winthrop; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848; Notes of Barnstable Families, Vol. II., Barnstable, 1890.

**John Oliver** (1637). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Winthrop; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1849, 1858, and 1865; Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

For his will, made 25(6) 1641, proved 11(7) 1647, see New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1849, p. 266.

There was another John Oliver, either a brother or a nephew of Elder Thomas, in Boston, afterward of Newbury. It is difficult to discriminate between them. In the Appleton Memorial, the will of John (1637) is assumed to be that of John Oliver, of Newbury. The latter died in Newbury in 1642.

<sup>1</sup> Genealogy of Storrs Family.



brother John Oliver is chosen Treasurer for the Towne, and to keep the Towne's booke." He served as a selectman of Boston from 31st of 3d mo., 1641, to 26th of 10th mo., 1645. He determined to enter the ministry, and graduated at Harvard College in 1645.

Early in 1640, "a motion was made by such as have farms at Rumney Marsh, that our Brother Oliver may be sent to instruct their servants, and to be a help to them because they cannot many times come hither, nor sometimes to Lynn, and sometimes no where at all."—*Kane's MSS., quoted Savage's Winthrop, Vol. I., p. 395.*

He instructed the settlers at Rumney Marsh but two years, for he died April 12, 1646. Hull (1660) wrote of him, "Died, April 12, 1646, Mr. John Oliver, one of chosen parts, endued with a variety of able gifts for the generation; but God took him away in his youth, to the saddening of very many godly hearts and threatening of the rising generation."

A malignant fever prevailed among the colonists in the spring of 1646. "It swept away some precious ones amongst us, especially one Mr. John Oliver, a gracious young man, not full thirty years of age, an expert soldier, an excellent surveyor of land, and one who, for the sweetness of his disposition and usefulness through a public spirit, was generally beloved and greatly lamented."

Elizabeth (Newgate) Oliver married, March 14, 1648-9, Edward Jackson, of Cambridge. She died Sept. 30, 1709, aged ninety-two years.

**Joshua Hewes** (1637), or **Hughes**, the eighth signer of the roll of the Artillery Company, came to America, the church records say, "a single man," about September, 1633, probably in the ship "Griffin." He settled in Roxbury on his arrival, and was admitted a freeman March 4, 1633-4. He married (1) Oct. 8, 1634, Mary Goldstone, of Watertown, who died Aug. 23, 1655; and (2) Feb. 11, 1657, Alice, widow of John Crabtree, of Boston. He was granted two hundred and eighty-eight acres in Roxbury, and in December, 1644, liberty was "graunted to Jasper Rawlines to make use of a rood of upland for the making of Bricks at the Easterne end of Sargeant Hues (1637), his Corne field neere Rocksbury gate."—*Boston Records*, 1634 60. The "gate" was at the old boundary between Roxbury and Boston.

Joshua Hewes (1637) was the original owner of the estate opposite Vernon Street, where the famous Greyhound tavern stood. He was a merchant of activity and wealth, and "held many responsible trusts both public and private." In 1641, he represented Roxbury in the General Court; was lieutenant of the Roxbury train-band; was sent with two others in March, 1648, to inquire about the complaints against Gorton's Company at Warwick, over which Massachusetts wished to have jurisdiction, and he was engaged in the settlement of Wickford, whither he removed in 1662. He returned to Boston in May of the year next following, and died Jan. 25, 1675-6, aged sixty-six years. He was senior, sergeant and assistant clerk in the Artillery Company in 1638; first sergeant in 1653, and ensign in 1654.

**Joshua Hewes** (1637). AUTHORITIES: Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"Joshua Hues came into the Land a single man; about the 7<sup>th</sup> month of the year 1633, & joyined to the church about halfe a yeare after, his wife

being the daughter of ——— Gouldstone came the next summer & aboade at Watertowne, where she was adjoyined to the church: & in the 8<sup>th</sup> month 1634 he married her, and she was then recommended to our church. . ."—*Rev. John Eliot, in Roxbury Church Records, printed in Vol. VI., Reports of Boston Rec. Com.*



Mr. Drake, in his *History of Roxbury*, p. 162, says, "Quite recently an old gravestone was dug up by workmen excavating for the post-office extension in Post-Office Square, upon which was this inscription: 'Here lyeth y<sup>e</sup> Body of Joshua Hewes aged 66 years. Departed this Life y<sup>e</sup> 25 day of January 1675.'"

**Samuel Cole** (1637), the ninth signer of the roll of the Artillery Company, immigrated to New England with Winthrop in 1630, and was made a freeman in October of that year. In March, 1633-4, he opened the first "ordinary," or inn, in Boston, on the west side of what is now Merchants Row, midway between State Street and Faneuil Hall. Miantonomah, the Indian chief, was entertained there by Gov. Vane in 1636, and among the guests of the following year was Lord Ley, Earl of Marlborough, who declined the proffered hospitality of Gov. Winthrop, saying, "that he came not to be troublesome to any, and the house where he was, was so well governed that he could be as private there as elsewhere." Longfellow, in his *John Endicott*, makes Samuel Cole (1637) say:—

"But the Three Mariners is an orderly house  
Most orderly, quiet and respectable.  
And have I not  
King Charles' Twelve Golden Rules, all framed and glazed,  
Hanging in my best parlor?"

"Samuell Cole and his wife Anne (dead since)" are recorded Aug. 27, 1630, as members of the First Church in Boston. He was a selectman of Boston from 1653 to 1657 inclusive. "13 of 10" 1652, "Mr. Samll Cole" with two others, "wear Chosen for to receive the severall Sums of mony which any in this Towne will underwrit towards the mayntinance of the president and fellowes or pore Scollers of Hervert Colledge."<sup>1</sup>

He brought a wife, Anne, from England, but she soon died. How many children they had is uncertain. His second wife was widow Margaret Green. In a deed made by Samuel Cole, Oct. 26, 1653, there is no wife's signature, but in another, dated Dec. 25, 1658, his wife, Margaret Cole, makes her mark, "M." His second wife having died, he married, Oct. 16, 1660, Ann, the widow of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637). His will, dated Dec. 21, 1666, was proved Feb. 13, 1667.

He was a special assessor in 1634, was one of those disarmed by order of the General Court in November, 1637, and must have been one of those who recanted. He was also one of the "richer inhabitants" who contributed to the maintenance of a free schoolmaster, Aug. 12, 1636.

In the list of freemen, he has the prefix "Mr."; we may therefore infer he was a highly respectable man. He is the first member of the Company who appears without a military title prefixed.

**Samuel Cole** (1637). AUTHORITIES: Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1861 (will); Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Landmarks of Boston.

"Samuel Cole set up the first house for com-

mon entertainment." — *Winthrop's History of New England*, Vol. I., p. 125.

In May, 1638, Samuel Cole (1637) and Robert Long (1639) were fined by the General Court "20<sup>s</sup> each for selling beer at 2<sup>d</sup> a quart." — *Colony Rec.*

<sup>1</sup>Second Report of Boston Rec. Com., p. 113.





PEQUOT FORT.

**Israel Stoughton** (1637), the tenth signer of the original roll, was one of the first English emigrants who settled the town of Dorchester, where he was admitted a freeman in 1633. He was one of the representatives from Dorchester to the General Court in 1634 and 1636, and was an assistant from 1637 to 1644 inclusive, serving as the latter when the charter of the Artillery Company was granted. He was the first captain of the Dorchester train-band in 1636, and in 1637 was selected by lot as the leader of an expedition sent by Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and Connecticut, against the Pequot Indians. Before his arrival, Capts. Mason and Underhill (1637) had carried one of the Pequot strongholds by storm, slaughtering nearly all the inmates. The survivors were sent into the West Indies to be sold into slavery, or experienced a similar fate in Boston. He resigned his office of captain May 13, 1640, and in October of the following year was chosen sergeant-major of Col. Winthrop's regiment. He resigned this place Oct. 17, 1643.

Edward Everett said, in his oration in Dorchester, July 4, 1855, that Col. Israel Stoughton (1637) was "a citizen of energy and public spirit. Unlike modern legislators, who, without distinction of party, are accused of looking out for the loaves and fishes for themselves, worthy Col. Stoughton provided them for others. He built the first tide-mill for grinding corn, and established the first weir for taking fish in the colony." Israel Stoughton (1637) had liberty granted "to build a mill, wear and bridge over Naponsett River and is to sell alewives he takes there at five shillings the thousand." — *Col. Rec.*, I., 114.

He was elected captain of the Artillery Company in 1642, and in 1644 he went to England, ostensibly "about his private occasions," but he was commissioned soon after his arrival as lieutenant-colonel in Rainsburrow's Parliamentary regiment. He died at Lincoln, in England, in 1645, having made a will in London, July 17, 1644, which was proved in Boston in 1646, by which he gave three hundred acres of land to Harvard College.

"Col. Stoughton was among the leading and influential men in the early period of the colony. He gave great offence to the Court, in 1634, by the publication of a book wherein he affirmed the power of the Governor to be but ministerial, and otherwise opposed and slighted the power of the magistrates. He was called to account for the offence, and although he had the modesty to confess his fault, and desired that the book might be burned, he was disabled for three years from bearing any public office." — *Farmer*. His disability was overlooked or removed, for in December, 1636, he was again deputy, and was chosen assistant the following spring. In his will, he names his sons: Israel (1645), the eldest; William (Har. Coll., 1650), who presided as chief justice at the trials of the witches, and John. There were several daughters — names not mentioned.

**John Underhill** (1637), the eleventh signer of the original roll of the Artillery Company, was an Englishman who had seen service in the Netherlands and had been brought over by Winthrop, in 1630, "to train the people in military discipline." He

**Israel Stoughton** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853-1878; Mather's *Magnalia*, Vol. II.; Winthrop's *Hist. of New Eng.*, Vol. I.; *Hist. of Dorchester*, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Whitman's *Hist. A. and H. A. Company*.

A letter of Col. Stoughton's (1637), in regard to the Pequot difficulty, is given in Winthrop's *History*, Savage's Ed., Vol. I., pp. 479-481, written at Pequid "2d day of the 6th week of our warfare," probably Aug. 14, 1637.



was a member of the First Church in Boston, and was admitted a freeman May 18, 1631. His wife Helena joined the church Dec. 15, 1633. He was one of the selectmen of Boston in 1634, and the same year a member of the General Court. In 1636 he organized the Boston train-band, which he exercised every Tuesday afternoon, on the Common or in connection with the Roxbury train-band, on a training-field which was the eastern portion of the triangle bounded by what are now Washington, Eustis, and Dudley streets. Capt. Underhill never held any office in the Artillery Company, probably because he was principally engaged in Indian wars or on account of his religious and irreligious troubles. He was a typical trooper, fond of a glass of spirits, a pipe of tobacco, and the society of the gentler sex, and although he was a member of the First Church, he was a sad reprobate, only tolerated because of his military experience.

Capt. Underhill (1637) was one of the sympathizers with the doctrine of Mrs. Hutchinson, and, being banished from Boston, he took refuge in Dover, N. H. There he obtained the appointment of Governor.<sup>1</sup> He soon became involved in a religious controversy and returned to Boston, where, while making a confession of his manifold sins, he was made "to sit on the stool of repentance in the church, with a white cap on his head." This scene of humiliation occurred on the 3d of August, 1640, when, we are told, "he came again to Boston, and on a lecture day, after the sermon, in presence of the congregation, standing upon a form, in his worst clothes, without a band, a foul linen cap pulled close to his eyes," he, who was so fond of "bravery of apparel," with deep sighs and abundance of tears, laid open his wicked course, his adultery, his hypocrisy, his persecution of God's people, and especially "his pride and contempt of the magistrates." He justified all the punishments imposed upon him, and dwelt with great pathos on the terrors of excommunication; how he had lost all his pretended assurance, being delivered over to the buffetings of Satan, and the horrors of despair. "He spoke well," says Winthrop, an eye-witness of the scene, "save that his blubberings interrupted him, and all along discovered a broken and contrite heart."<sup>2</sup>

Capt. Underhill (1637), after his restoration to church communion and the removal of the penalty of banishment, removed to Stamford, Conn., where he was appointed an assistant justice, and was a delegate from that town to the General Court which met at New Haven in 1643.

On the breaking out of the war between the Indians and the New Netherlands, Capt. Underhill (1637), whose former residence in Holland had made him familiar with the Dutch language, was appointed to command a military force, which distinguished itself by its bravery and by its barbarities, reviving at Greenwich, in February, 1644, the horrors of the Pequot massacre.

Capt. Underhill (1637) next removed to Flushing, on Long Island, where, in 1653, he had some agency in detecting and exposing the intrigues of the Dutch

**John Underhill (1637).** AUTHORITIES: Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1892; Mem. Hist. of Boston; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Wood Sketch of Long Island.

He wrote a "Short Story" of his services in the Pequot War, entitled "News from America," which was printed in London in 1638 and reprinted in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll. VI.

<sup>1</sup> In 1638, Capt. Underhill (1637) succeeded Burdett as "governor" at Dover, who in turn was succeeded by Thomas Roberts, the emigrant, of Dover, the ancestor of the Roberts family in New England.

<sup>2</sup> The particulars of Capt. Underhill's offences, trial, etc., are given in Winthrop's History; in Farmer's Belknap, p. 23, *et seq.*, and a long extract therefrom is given in Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842, p. 47, *et seq.*

treasurer. In 1665, he was a delegate from the town of Oyster Bay to the Assembly, holden at Hampstead by Gov. Nicholls, who appointed Underhill (1637) undersheriff of the North Riding of Yorkshire, or Queen's County. "In 1667, Matinenoc Indians gave him one hundred and fifty acres of land, which have remained in the family ever since and are now in possession of one of his descendants that bears his name." Capt. Underhill is supposed to have died at Oyster Bay, in the year 1672.

**Nathaniel Turner** (1637), the twelfth signer of the original muster-roll of the Artillery Company, lived on Nahant Street, Lynn, and owned the whole of the Sagamore Hill. He applied to be admitted a freeman, Oct. 19, 1630, but did not take the oath until July 3, 1632. He was a representative from Lynn in the first seven sessions of the General Court; was a member of the first County Court at Salem, in 1636, and was appointed, in 1633, captain of the Saugus train-band, which he commanded during the Pequot War in 1636-7. His house took fire from a defective oven-flue, on the night of Jan. 10, 1636, and, with its contents, was destroyed.<sup>1</sup>

In 1638, Capt. Turner (1637) sold his land on Sagamore Hill to Mr. Edward Holyoke, and removed, with other Massachusetts Bay families, to Quinnipiac, in Connecticut, where the settlement of New Haven was founded. He was one of the seven members who organized the first church there, and he was appointed in 1639, in connection with Rev. Mr. Davenport and four others, to "have the disposing of all house lots, yet undisposed of about this towne, to such persons as they shall judge meete for the good of the plantation; and that none come to dwell as planters here without their consent and allowance, whether they come in by purchase or otherwise."

In 1640, Capt. Turner (1637), as agent for New Haven, made a large purchase of land on both sides of the Delaware River, sufficient for a number of plantations. The purchase was made chiefly with a view to trade, though the establishment of Puritan churches was also an end much desired. Trading houses were erected, and nearly fifty families were sent out. In all fundamental matters, the Delaware colonies were to be under the jurisdiction of New Haven. In the same year, he made the purchase for the town, from the Indian Sagamore, Ponus, of the tract of land which is now the town of Stamford. He gave for the whole, "twelve coats, twelve hoes, twelve hatchets, twelve knives, two kettles and four fathom of white wampum." In a sale to the people of Wethersfield, a short time after, the tract was valued at thirty pounds sterling.

Neither the land speculations at New Haven nor the trade upon the Delaware were successful, and the Dutch at New Netherlands menaced the Connecticut colony. Hoping to retrieve their fortunes by foreign trade, the colonists sent to Rhode Island, and had a ship built, which, when completed, they freighted and placed under the command of Capt. Lamberton. Capt. Turner (1637), with five other citizens, sailed for England in this vessel in January, 1647, and she was never heard of afterward. Gov. Winthrop informed us that, in June, 1648, the apparition of a ship was seen under full sail moving up the harbor of New Haven, a little before sunset, on a pleasant

**Nathaniel Turner** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** Harper's New Monthly Magazine, 1885, p. 777; Savage's Gen. Dict; Savage's Winthrop; Lewis's Hist. of Lynn; 250th Anniversary of the Settlement of Lynn; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

<sup>1</sup> 11 mo. 10, 1636, "Capt. Turner's house in Sagus took fire by an oven about midnight and was burned down, with all that was in it, save the persons." — *Savage's Winthrop*, Vol. I., p. 254.

afternoon, and, as it approached the shore, it slowly vanished. This was thought to have a reference to the fate of Capt. Lamberton's ship. The following epitaph was written in memory of Capt. Turner (1637) : —

“ Deep in Atlantic cave his body sleeps,  
While the dark sea its ceaseless motion keeps,  
While phantom ships are wrecked along the shore,  
To warn his friends that he will come no more !  
But He, who governs all with impulse free,  
Can bring from Bashan and the deepest sea,  
And when He calls our Turner must return,  
Though now his ashes fill no sacred urn.”

**William Jennison** (1637), of Watertown, was the thirteenth signer of the original roll of the Artillery Company. He had been a resident of Bermuda. He was admitted a freeman May 18, 1631, and was one of the first planters who located under Sir Richard Saltonstall at Watertown, a frontier settlement, whose train-band was placed by the General Court under the command of Capt. Patrick, who had served in the Netherlands in the Prince of Orange's guard, and received a salary for drilling the company weekly. The captain, not being able to accommodate himself to the strict manners of the Puritan school, soon removed from its strict discipline to Greenwich, Conn., where he had an altercation with a Dutchman, who drew a pistol and shot the captain dead on the spot. William Jennison (1637) was, in 1631, appointed ensign in Capt. Patrick's company, and on the return of the former from an expedition against the Pequot Indians, in 1636, to avenge the murder of a settler named Oldham, he was appointed captain.<sup>1</sup> He was selectman, 1635 to 1642, and 1644; representative to the General Court, 1634 to 1642, and 1645, and therefore was a deputy, a colleague of Capt. Keayne (1637) when the charter of the Artillery Company was granted. He was dismissed from the General Court, Oct. 2, 1645, “being to goe for Virginia.”

Capt. Jennison (1637) was probably at heart loyal to the King, during the Civil War. At the meeting of the court, held in July, 1644, “Capt Jenyson, Captain of the military company in Watertown, an able man, who had been there from the first settling of that town, having a year before, (being then a Deputy) in private conference, questioned the lawfulness of the Parliament's proceeding in England, was sent for by the Deputies, and examined about it, and afterward before the magistrates. He ingenuously confessed his scruple, but took offence, that being a church member, and in public office, he should be openly produced merely for matter of judgment, not having been first dealt with in private, either in a church way or by some of the magistrates, which seemed to some of the Court to have been a failing. The Court was unwilling to turn him out of place, having been a very useful man, &c., yet not seeing

**William Jennison (1637).** AUTHORITIES: Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Bond's Watertown; Hist. A. and H. A. Company, by Whitman.

“Oct. 17, 1633, Ensign Jennison went as pilot in the ‘Thunder’ to Bermuda, and returned June 1, 1634.” — *Savage's Winthrop*.

<sup>1</sup> John Oldham, of Watertown, “became a distinguished trader among the Indians, and in 1636 was sent to traffic with them at Block Island. The Indians got possession of Oldham's vessel, and

murdered him in a most barbarous manner.’ In August following, ninety men were sent off to find and punish the savages. One of the commanders was William Jennison. He acquired glory enough from that campaign to be made a captain, the next month of March.” — *Hist. of Middlesex Co., by D. Hamilton Hurd, Vol. III., p. 380.*

In the testimony concerning the will of John Loveran, the justice's name is spelled both ways — William Jennings and William Jennison. — *See N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1849, p. 79.*



how he might be trusted, being of that judgment, yet professing that he was assured that those of the Parliament side were the more godly and honest part of the kingdom, and that though, if he were in England, he should be doubtful whether he might take their part against their prince, yet, if the King or any party from him should attempt any thing against this Commonwealth, he should make no scruple to spend estate and life and all in our defence against them; he was dismissed to further consideration; and the Court being broken up, he came soon after to some of the magistrates, and told them that this questioning in the Court had occasioned him to search further into the point, and he was now satisfied that the Parliament's cause was good, and if he were in England he would assist in defence of it."

In 1645, Capt. Jennison (1637) sold his fifty-acre homestead, in Watertown, on the north side of Mount Auburn Street, between Common and School streets, to Rev. John Knowles, and in 1651 returned to England. Robert Jennison, brother of William (1637), acting as attorney for the latter, conveyed, in 1657, "estate of William Jennison," of Colchester, Essex Co., England.

**Richard Morris** (1637), of Roxbury, whose name was the fourteenth on the original roll of the Artillery Company, is supposed to have been baptized in Waltham Holy Cross Abbey in England, on the 8th of December, 1595, and to have served in the English army in the Low Countries. He came over in the company of Gov. Winthrop, and took the oath of a freeman May 18, 1631. "Richard Maurice [1637] and his wife Leonora" were recorded as members of the First Church, Aug. 27, 1630. He was representative from Roxbury to the General Court in 1634 and 1635. Richard Morris (1637) was appointed ensign in the Boston train-band, commanded by Capt. Underhill (1637), March 4, 1632. Winthrop states that, in November of the same year, Morris, "taking some distaste to his office, requested the magistrates that he might be discharged of it, and so was, whereby he gave offence to the congregation of Boston, so as, being questioned and convinced of sin in forsaking his calling, he did acknowledge his fault, and, at the request of the people, was by the magistrates chosen Lieutenant to the same Company, for he was a very stout man and an experienced soldier."

In March, 1635, he became lieutenant-commander of the fort which had been erected on Castle Island, for the seaward defence of Boston, succeeding Capt. Nicolas Simpkins (1650) and Edward Gibbons (1638). It was agreed, however, that he should "receive ten pounds a year from Roxbury as long as he lay at the Castle and did service to the town of Roxbury"; he therefore continued to drill the train-band of that town.

About two months after Lieut. Morris (1637) took command of the Castle, an incident occurred which troubled the Massachusetts authorities as much as the cutting of the cross from the King's colors by Endicott. "The ship 'St. Patrick,'" writes Mr. J. F. Morris, of Hartford, Conn., a descendant of Lieut. Morris, "came into Boston harbor, flying the King's colors. Lieut. Morris, who presumably reasoned that if it was unlawful to use the cross in ensigns on land, it could not be lawful on the water, brought the 'St. Patrick' to, and made her strike her colors. Capt. Palmer, her master, complained to the authorities of the act of the commander of the Castle as a flagrant

**Richard Morris** (1637). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Savage's Gen. Dict.;

Whitman's Hist. A. and A. Company, Ed. 1842; Records of Rhode Island.



insult to his flag and country. The 'St. Patrick' belonged to Sir Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford, Lord Deputy of Ireland, once an advocate of the liberal cause, but which he had deserted, becoming a companion of Archbishop Laud and a strong supporter of the absolutism of King Charles. Arbitrary and despotic as he was known to be, policy dictated the necessity of avoiding the enmity of one so high in influence with the King, and the complying with any demand which Capt. Palmer might make as amends for the alleged insult to his flag and country. Lieut. Morris [1637] was summoned before the magistrates, and in the presence of Capt. Palmer was told that he had no authority to do as he had done (as the fort showed no flag), and was ordered to make such atonement as Capt. Palmer should demand. The captain was lenient, and only required of the lieutenant an acknowledgment of the error on his ship, 'that so all the ship's company might receive satisfaction, and lest Lord Deputy Wentworth should be informed that we had offered discourtesy to his ship which we had never offered to any before.' Lieut. Morris [1637] submitted to this demand and all parties became quieted.

"In about a fortnight after this event, the ship 'Hector,' Capt. Ferne, arrived in Boston. Some Boston people went on board. The mate of the ship, one Miller, who probably had heard of the event just related, not seeing the King's colors hoisted at the fort, denounced all the people as rebels and traitors. Henry Vane had just been elected governor. He sent for the captain of the ship and informed him of the matter. The captain promised to deliver the mate to the authorities. The marshal and four sergeants were sent to the ship for him, but the captain not being on board the crew would not deliver him up. The captain himself then went and brought the mate to the Court, where his language was proved by two witnesses, and he was committed. The matter so excited the crew of the ship that the captain, in order to pacify them, requested the release of the mate and promised to bring him before the Court again. The next day his request was granted and at the appointed time the mate was produced in court. Then in the presence of the captains of all the ships in the harbor, the mate acknowledged his offence and signed a paper to that effect, and was discharged. These occurrences troubled the authorities lest reports should be carried to England that they had rebelled, and that the contempt shown to the King's colors was positive proof of the charge. In order to counteract such representations, Gov. Vane called together the fifteen captains and asked them to frankly state their feelings and opinions in regard to the matter, and if they were offended, to state what satisfaction they required. They answered that if, on their return to England they should be enquired of as to what colors they saw here, they should state the facts, and that they should like to see the King's colors flying at the fort.

"Gov. Vane was scarcely twenty-three years of age when he arrived in this country. He early became popular, and before he had been a year in the Colony was chosen governor. His father at this time was comptroller of the King's household and possessed power and influence. At the time of his election there were fifteen large English ships in Boston Harbor, which joined in the congratulations of the people by firing salutes. New regulations for the shipping were necessary, and the governor had been conferred with as to their necessity and the way to bring them about. The governor, though young in years, was old in the art of diplomacy. He had accompanied his father on missions to foreign courts, and become an adept in managing men. He invited the captains to dine with him, and, at the table, skilfully obtained their com-

pliance with the needed regulations. This was only a few days before the affair of the mate of the 'Hector.' When the governor called the captains together for the purpose of getting their views in regard to the colors, their memories of the dinner had not yet passed away and they were still in an amiable mood and were disposed to allow the matter to pass off as smoothly as possible. When they advised that the King's colors should be hoisted at the Castle, they were told that the authorities had no King's colors. Two of the captains then agreed to present them to the fort. The authorities, unwilling to give up their prejudices, yet seeing the necessity of compliance, replied, that for their part they were fully persuaded that the cross in the ensign was idolatrous, and for that reason, they might not use it in their ensign, but as the fort was the King's, and maintained in his name, his own colors might be spread there. The governor accepted the colors from Capt. Palmer of the 'St. Patrick' and promised that they should be set up at Castle Island.

"A conference had been held the day before the meeting with the captains, in which the point of difference had been discussed. The standing council, consisting of the governor, Mr. Dudley, and Mr. Winthrop, was present and also Mr. Cotton. The governor, Mr. Cotton and Mr. Dudley expressed the opinion that the colors might be used on the fort. Mr. Winthrop and others did not concur in the distinction. Mr. Winthrop, in his account of the matter, says, 'The governor and Mr. Dudley being two of the council, being persuaded of the lawful use of the colors, might use their authority to set them up. Yet others not being so persuaded and being doubtful, could not join in the act; yet would not oppose it.' On the 16th of June, Gov. Vane, with Mr. Dudley's consent, gave orders to Lieut. Morris [1637] to hoist the King's colors on Castle Island, when the ships passed by, doubtless the same colors which he ordered to be struck when the 'St. Patrick' entered the harbor.

"The reason given for allowing the flag to fly on the Castle — that 'the fort was the King's, and maintained in his name,' was singular in view of the fact that its erection was ordered by the Court for the express purpose of defence against the King's measures which they feared. In March, 1637, Winthrop states 'the Castle Island being found to be very changeable to maintain the garrison there, and of little use, but only to have command of ships which would come hither with passengers, etc., there was a committee appointed to dispose of the ammunition there.' This shows that the colony continued to manage the affairs of the fort without reference to the King."

When that gifted and strong-minded woman, Mrs. Hutchinson, appeared on the stage of Massachusetts politics and shook the young colony to its base, Lieut. Morris (1637) favored her principles and cause, and signed the famous petition. The consequence was that he, with his associates in belief, was publicly disarmed on the 20th of November, 1637; but he recanted and was permitted to become one of the founders of the Artillery Company. On the 6th of September, 1638, "he had leave to depart" the Colony Records say, "(having offended in subscribing the petition of remonstrance), being advised to forbear meddling with our people in the matters of opinion, lest he be further dealt with, and was advised not to sit down within our limits, and was wished to warn the rest not to sit down within our limits."

Lieut. Morris (1637), thus gently expelled from the colonial limits, retreated in June, 1639, to Exeter, N. H., where he joined Mr. Wheelwright, Mrs. Hutchinson's brother, and on the 4th of October, 1639, he signed what is known as the Exeter compact. In the division of the land, he received thirty-three acres, the largest

quantity any of the company received, except Mr. Wheelwright; but his stay in Exeter was short, for, in 1641, he went to Rhode Island and was admitted a freeman at Aquiday, afterward Aquidneck.

In 1642, Lieut. Morris (1637) was chosen captain of the train-band at Portsmouth, R. I. Although he had been banished from Massachusetts, the authorities of this colony appear to have had confidence in him, because when the Aquidneck people sent to Boston for a barrel of powder, they were told they could have it "provided Lieut. Morris [1637] gave caution that it should be used for the defence of the island by advice of the Governor and Deputies."

In 1659, Lieut. Morris (1637) removed from Portsmouth, across the river to Pocasset, in Plymouth Colony, the General Court of that colony having granted him a neck of land called Nunnaquaquatt, upon condition that he should submit himself to that colony, and be ready to do such duty as would be required of him as an inhabitant, and that "he should have no contention with the Indians and resign to the Court all other lands which he has purchased or lodged claims to, and shall have no interest in any other land." His stay in Plymouth Colony was very brief, for the next year he was back at Portsmouth again, and in October of the same year was chosen commissioner to the General Court for Portsmouth.

July 2, 1647, the General Court met at Newport, and it was voted, "Whereas Captain Richard Morris presented a petition to this court of the great charges he hath been at in house, rooms and findings of fyre and candles for the Gen. Court for many years past, and finding that for about four or five years he hath had no satisfaction, being to the end of this present Court doe order, that he shall have Tenn pounds paid him of the Gen. Treasury." It seems from the above that when the court assembled in Portsmouth it met at Lieut. Morris's (1637) house. He probably moved to Newport, for the record of the General Court states: "June, 1672. The Gen. Court met at Captain Morris [1637] house in Newport."

**Edward Gibbons** (1637), whose name was the fifteenth on the original roll of the Artillery Company, was one of the youngest members of the immigration in 1630, and he first settled in Charlestown. It was not long, however, before he found his way to Mount Wollaston, now Quincy, which a London lawyer, named Morton, had called Merry Mount. The latter set up there a May-pole, on which occasion he broached a cask of wine and a hogshead of ale, and held a high revel. Scottow tells us that young Gibbons was not vicious, although he had but little taste for the Puritan austerities. He had heard much about the formation of the church at Salem, and attended its service. On this occasion, the historian continues, "The testimony which the Lord of all the earth bore unto it was sufficiently memorable, by a saving work upon a young gentleman of quality, who afterwards was the chieftain and flower of the New England Militia, and an eminent instrument both in church and commonwealth." Mather says, "He was a

**Edward Gibbons** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Winthrop; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Mather's Magnalia; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Mem. Hist. of Boston; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, for inventory of his estate; Johnson's Wonder-Working Providence; Suffolk Deeds, Lib. I., p. 7; Melrose, Mass., *Reporter*, May 23, 1890.

1654. "Another such like Providence befell us this year, upon the 9<sup>th</sup> of December, at two o'clock in the morning, — the death of Major-Gen Edward Gibbons; a man of an excellent spirit for the public good and the crown of the military affairs in this Commonwealth." — *John Hull's Diary*.



very gay young gentleman," but nevertheless he was so affected by the ordination services of Rev. Messrs. Higginson and Shelton that he wished then and there to unite with the Salem church. Mr. Higginson and his colleague, "who were well pleased with the relation which he gave [of] himself, advised that he should defer his wish for a time." He afterwards located himself in Boston, where he was admitted a member of the First Church, and engaged in mercantile pursuits with great success. He was admitted a freeman, Oct. 19, 1631, and served the town in various offices, becoming very popular. He was made lieutenant of the train-band in Boston, when it was organized in 1636, and succeeded Capt. Underhill (1637) as its commander. His dwelling-house and stores were on the corner of the present Washington Street and Adams Square. He was one of the most enterprising merchants of his day in Boston, trading in furs with the French posts in Acadia. It is also noticeable that he was never implicated in the heated controversies and angry schism of his time, thus securing public favor and escaping popular censure. He was the predecessor of Richard Morris (1637) in command at Castle Island; was selectman of Boston from 1639 to 1647; a deputy to the General Court, 1634, 1636, from 1638 to 1645 inclusive, and 1647, and an assistant from May, 1650, until his death in 1654.

In 1636, Capt. Gibbons (1637) and John Higginson were sent as ambassadors to treat with Canonicus that justice might be done to those who were guilty of the murder of Oldham. The ambassadors were received and treated with great pomp and state. "They arriving, were entertained royally, with respect to the Indian manner. Boiled chestnuts is their white bread, and because they would be extraordinary in their feasting they strove for variety, after the English manner, — boiled puddings made of beaten corn, putting therein great store of blackberries, somewhat like currants. They having thus nobly feasted them, afterwards gave them audience in a State House, round, about fifty feet wide, made of long poles stuck in the ground, like your summer houses in England, and covered round about and on the top with mats, &c." In November, 1639, the General Court ordered "that Capt. Gibbons should trayne the band at Weymouth," and in 1646 "at Hingham."

In 1643, Capt. Gibbons (1637) was one of the committee appointed on behalf of Massachusetts, to receive and treat with the commissioners from the colonies of Plymouth, Connecticut, and New Haven. This convention of commissioners was composed of the leading men of the several colonies, whose consultations resulted in the formation of the Articles of Confederation or Congress of New England, which met annually for years and conduced essentially to the union, peace, and prosperity of these infant States.

When the Massachusetts Militia was first organized in 1644, Capt. Gibbons (1637) was made sergeant-major, or commander, of the Suffolk County regiment, and in July, 1645, he was placed in command of the joint colonial expedition against the Narragansets.

In 1649, he succeeded John Endicott as sergeant-major-general, or commander-in-chief, and held the office for three years. Speaking of his election as sergeant-major, Johnson observes: "The first chosen to the office was Major Gibbons, a man of resolute spirit, bold as a lion, being wholly tutored up in New England discipline, very generous and forward to promote all military matters; his forts are well contrived and batteries strong and in good repair, &c. His great artillery well mounted and cleanly kept, and his own Company are very complete in arms and many of them



disciplined in the *Military Garden* [meaning the Military Company of the Massachusetts, which was thus called after the parent organization in London] besides their ordinary trainings." In 1641, he was "appointed to see the laying of the ordnance in Boston, that they might not be spoiled." Gen. Gibbons (1637) had undoubtedly received a military education in England, or such veterans as Standish, Atherton, Leverett, Mason, and Seely would never have served under him in subordinate capacities. He was one of Keayne's (1637) associates in forming the Artillery Company, and was its commander in 1639, 1641, 1646, and 1654. One of his grandsons, Lieut. William Gibbons, was admitted a member of the Artillery Company in 1691, and one of his great-grandsons, Mr. John Gibbons, was admitted in 1711. Whitman adds, "Col. Daniel L. Gibbons [1810] was undoubtedly a descendant."

Gen. Gibbons (1637), having been unsuccessful in his business ventures, losing large sums by the Chevalier La Tour, of Acadia, received from Lord Baltimore, whose brother, Mr. Calvert, was Governor of Maryland, "a commission offering him land in Maryland to any of ours that would transport themselves thither, with free liberty of religion, and all other privileges which the place afforded, paying such annual rent as shall be agreed upon." The offer was not accepted, nor did he remove thither.

Four years after the formation of the New England Confederacy, Gov. Winthrop wrote to the Governor of Canada, proposing free trade between the colonies. In 1650, Gabriel Druilletes, one of the Jesuit fathers, was sent to New England to negotiate upon the subject. In his narrative of his visit, he speaks of the hospitable entertainment of Gov. Endicott, at Salem; of Gov. Bradford, at Plymouth, and of his spending the night with Rev. John Eliot, at Roxbury. He also says that in Boston he was the guest of Major-Gen. Gibbons (1637), who "gave me the key of a room in his house, where I might in all liberty pray and perform the exercises of my religion, and he besought me to take no other lodgings while I remained at Boston."

Gen. Gibbons died in Boston, on the 9th of December, 1654, while commander of the Artillery Company. His will was proved in January, 1654-5, at Boston.

**William Spencer** (1637), the fourth person named in the charter, and the sixteenth on the original roll, resided in Cambridge, at the northeast corner of Mount Auburn Street and Brattle Square, where he was a merchant. He was admitted freeman March 4, 1632-3; was selectman in 1635, and a representative to the General Court from Cambridge, then called "Newtown," from 1634 to 1637 inclusive. He was one of the committee to frame a code of laws, and was lieutenant of the first train-band in Cambridge, commanded by Capt. George Cooke (1638), in 1636. He was doubtless then advanced in years. In 1639, he moved to Hartford, where he was selectman, deputy, and one of a committee to revise the laws of the colony, and died there in 1640. The fact that his name was associated with those of Keayne, Duncan, and Sedgwick, proves that he must have been a man of note in the colony. "Thus it appears," says Whitman, after having given sketches of the before-mentioned four charter members, "that the charter was given to four persons, one in each of the principal towns in the county with their associates, and may serve to correct a mistaken idea prevalent, that the Military Company of the Massachusetts, in its origin or progress, has been confined to Boston."

**William Spencer** (1637). AUTHORITIES: Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company Ed. 1842.

**Robert Harding** (1637), the seventeenth signer of the original roll, came over from England in 1630 with Gov. Winthrop, and his name appears as the eleventh subscribed to the covenant signed at Charlestown, Aug. 27, 1630, by those who afterwards became the First Church of Boston. He was admitted a freeman May 18, 1631. In October, 1634, John Coggan (1638) was elected sergeant "in place of Harding now in Virginia," but he returned before 1636, when he was chosen ensign of the train-band under Capt. Underhill (1637) and Lieut. Gibbons (1637).

Robert Harding (1637) was, as others, disarmed for his heterodoxy by order of the General Court in 1637. He doubtless was one of those who recanted, as he was received back into the church, and permitted to join the Artillery Company. He was elected a member of the first board of selectmen of Boston, Sept. 1, 1634, and was re-elected in March, 1637, and continued to serve until 1640, except one term of six months. At this latter date, his love for the anabaptistic doctrine again triumphed, and he left Boston for Aquiday, R. I., where he became an assistant in 1641. In November, 1646, he returned to England, and in 1651 was a merchant in London.

He married, May 18, 1631, Philippa Hammond, "widdow," who came over to New England in the same ship with him. Her name is the fortieth on the membership list of the First Church. Capt. Harding (1637) married, second, on the 17th of October, 1645, Esther Willis, of Hartford.

**Thomas Cakebread** (1637), of Watertown, was the eighteenth signer of the original roll of the Artillery Company. He became a freeman May 14, 1634. He was a proprietor in Watertown in 1636-7, in Dedham in 1637, and in Sudbury in 1639. In Mr. Haven's address, 1836, he is called "a renowned soldier of Watertown," and he was "invited to be at the head of the military affairs in Dedham." He signed the town covenant of Dedham, and was considered an efficient man, for, "11<sup>th</sup> of 3<sup>d</sup> mo. 1637," a committee was appointed to treat with him in regard to managing the military affairs of the town, and soon after was admitted a townsman. In 1637, he married Sarah, daughter of Nicholas Busby.

He removed from Dedham to Sudbury soon after, for a grist-mill was erected by Thomas Cakebread (1637) in the spring of 1639, in that part of Sudbury now called Wayland. In consideration of his building the mill, he was given forty acres of upland adjoining the mill, and "a piece of meadow downwards and a piece of meadow upwards" — sixteen to twenty acres. Also there were given him thirty acres of meadow and forty acres of upland.

The Colony Records state that, in 1642, "Ensign Cakebread was to lead the Sudbury company." He died in that town Jan. 4, 1643-4. His widow, Sarah, married Sergt. John Grout, who took charge of the mill property.

**John Holman** (1637), of Dorchester, the nineteenth signer of the original roll of the Artillery Company, was one of the emigrants from the English counties of Dorset and Devon, who came in the advance ship of the Winthrop fleet, and, landing at

**Robert Harding** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660.

**Thomas Cakebread** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:**

Bond's Watertown; Dedham Records; Hudson's Hist. of Sudbury; Hist. of Middlesex Co., by D. H. Hurd.

**John Holman** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.

Mattapan, called it Dorchester. He is mentioned in Pyncheon's papers as a collector of furs, in 1633, at Dorchester. In 1634, his residence was "by the Rock." He was selectman in 1636-7 and 1642. He was ensign of the first military company in Dorchester, under Capt. Israel Stoughton (1637) and Lieut. Nathaniel Duncan (1638). He was concerned in navigation, and left a good estate. In his later years, he seems to have lived on Adams Street. In 1637, the town gave Mr. Holman (1637) twenty acres of upland, "next to Mr. Hutchinsons." He probably died in 1652, for his will was probated on the 10th of June of that year.

**Richard Collicott** (1637), of Dorchester, whose name is the twentieth on the roll of the Artillery Company, was born in England in 1603, and was admitted a freeman March 4, 1632-3. He was a sergeant in the Pequot War, selectman of Dorchester in 1636-7 and 1641; was a deputy to the General Court in 1637, and a member of Mr. Warham's church, Dorchester. He is also mentioned, in 1633, as a collector of furs. In 1634, he had leave to build two houses, one near "the burying-ground" (Indian), and the other "without the pale." In October, 1636, acting as a trustee for the town, he received the grant from Cutshumaquin of the whole territory of Unquety, Milton, including forty acres for himself, conferred by the town, which, in the July previous, gave him six other acres. He represented the Dorchester church at the Cambridge Synod, held in 1637, for the trial of Mrs. Ann Hutchinson. His fur trade probably brought him into much intercourse with the Indians, with whom he had great influence, which was called into use by Eliot in his endeavors to Christianize them. In 1645, he accompanied Atherton's (1638) expedition to Narragansett.

It was doubtless on a fur-trading expedition to Maine, in 1648, that the remarkable providence mentioned by Winthrop occurred to Mr. Collicott (1637). He was somewhat identified with Maine, for he was elected to represent Falmouth in the General Court in 1669, and Saco in 1672. His residence in Dorchester was near the corner of Cottage and Pleasant streets. He appears to have resided in Boston in 1651, and in Milton in 1664.

His first wife, Joanna, died Aug. 5, 1640, and by his second, Thomasin, who survived him, he had five children, the youngest of whom, Bethia, married, July 21, 1692, Rev. Daniel Gookin as his second wife. He moved again to Boston a few years before his death, which occurred on the seventh day of July, 1686. He was buried on Copp's Hill.

**Joseph Pendleton** (1637), the twenty-first signer of the original roll, left no trace, as yet found, except the following:—

In 1651, Joseph Pendleton, of Boston, witnessed the will of Robert Turner, who joined the Artillery Company in 1640.

Mr. Savage suggests that Joseph may have been a son of Major Bryan Pendleton (1646). Major Pendleton's will (New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., Vol. III., p. 122) clearly implies that the major had but one son, whose name was James.

**Edward Tomlins** (1637), of Lynn, the twenty-second signer of the original roll of the Artillery Company, came in the fleet with Winthrop; was an Englishman by birth, and a carpenter by trade. He was one of the original settlers of Lynn, and received

**Richard Collicott** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Hutchinson's Hist., II., 515; Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Bridgman; Spark's Biography of Eliot; Records of the Col. of

Mass. Bay; Hist. of A. and H. A. Company, by Whitman (1810).

"[1686] July 9 [Friday]. Mr. Richard Collicott buried." — *Seawall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 144.



considerable grants of land, including Tomlins Pond, "sixty feet above the ocean." He was admitted a freeman May 18, 1631. In 1633, he built the first mill in Lynn, — but not on Strawberry Brook, as Whitman asserts, — and erected several large wooden bridges in different towns. He was a deputy in the first General Court in the colony in 1634, and for seven terms afterward, during one of which the charter of the Artillery Company was granted. His son Edward came from England in 1635, aged thirty, and returned to London in 1644, and in 1679 was in Dublin. In 1640, Edward, Sr. (1637), went with a party of emigrants from Lynn, led by Rev. Abraham Pierson, to Long Island, but he returned in 1641. He was arraigned for expressing opinions against singing in churches, but he retracted, and was discharged "the 1<sup>st</sup> of the 4<sup>th</sup> month, 1641."

In 1634, he was appointed by the General Court keeper of "ordinances, powder and shott," and was authorized to impress men to build gun carriages; and, in 1637, was chosen cannoneer at the Castle.

In 1643, he was sent by the General Court, of which he was that year a member, with Humfrey Atherton (1638), to visit the Indians at Gorton's Plantation, Warwick, R. I., where, we are told, he "catechized them." The same year he was appointed clerk of the writs in Lynn, where he probably died.

**Nicholas Upshall** (1637), of Boston, the twenty-third signer of the original roll of the Artillery Company, sailed from England on the 20th of March, 1630, in the largest vessel of Winthrop's fleet, the "Mary and John," with other emigrants from Dorsetshire. They founded the town of Dorchester, where he was empanelled as a juror in September, 1630. Under the colonial charter, applicants "could become members of the corporation, and this membership made them freemen. They then could vote for assistants; subsequently, they were allowed to vote for Governor, and were themselves eligible to the office of assistants. Members of the company had the exclusive right of suffrage, were members of the General Court, and owned the public and undivided land." It was determined on the day that Nicholas Upshall (1637) became a freeman, Oct. 19, 1630, that none should thereafter be made freemen who were not church members. This act reduced the government at once to a theocracy. Nicholas Upshall (1637) was a member of the church in Dorchester.

He also appears on the town records as a grantee of land there, in 1633, and was the first bailiff and rater in Dorchester in 1634. "It is ordered by the town of Dorchester," April 17, 1635, "that Nicholas Upshall and Matthew Grant [an ancestor of Gen. U. S. Grant] shall p'ceed in the measuring of the great lotts as they have begun."

Nicholas Upshall (1637) was licensed as innkeeper in the town, in the years 1636, 1637, and 1638. "It is ordered," June 27, 1636, by the town, "that Nicholas Upshall shall keep a house of entertainment for strangers." He was selectman in 1638 and 1642. In 1637, he was a member of the jury of "Life and Death"; *i. e.*, of a coroner's jury, or jury as distinguished from the grand jury.

On the 7th of December, 1641, Nicholas Upshall (1637) joined with other persons

**Edward Tomlins** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Lewis's Hist. of Lynn; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Winthrop; Records of Mass. Bay.

**Nicholas Upshall** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, 1861 (will),

1880 (the latter being illustrated with pictures of the gravestones of Nicholas and Dorothy Upshall); Bridgman's Copp's Hill Burial-Ground; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Drake's Gen. Dict.



in a grant of land to Dorchester, for the establishment and support of a free school. In the language of the deed, the grant was "for and Towards the maintenance of a free schoole in Dorchester aforesayed for the instructinge & Teachinge of Children and Youth in good literature & Learninge." In the year 1639, a vote had been passed by the town taxing the proprietors of said land for the same purpose. The town, the proprietors, and the grantors in the above deed, were substantially the same persons. The historian of Dorchester believes this to have been "the first provision for a free school in the world by a direct tax or assessment on the inhabitants of a town." Nicholas Upshall (1637) removed to Boston in 1644, and, with his wife Dorothy, was admitted on the last Sunday of July in that year, by recommendation of the Dorchester church, to the church in Boston. He was, however, a large property holder in Boston before his removal, for, in 1637, he owned the land from the northeast side of Richmond Street, and from Hanover Street to the sea. He became noted as the keeper of the "Red Lyon Inn," "at the corner of Red Lyon Lane and the Town street next the Sea." His wharf, near by, was bordered by what is now called Richmond Street, and is covered by Fulton and Commercial streets. The Red Lyon Inn was regarded as the best "ordinary" in Boston, and the host was becoming quite wealthy when his sympathies were excited by the persecutions of the Quakers.

When the General Court, in 1656, passed an act against the Quakers, it was ordered that it be publicly proclaimed, with beat of drum, in different places in Boston. One of these places was in front of the Red Lyon Inn, and Nicholas Upshall (1637), hearing the act read before his own door, said "that he did look at it as a sad foreboding of some heavy judgment to fall on the country." On the following morning, he was called before the court and charged with having expressed his disapprobation of the law against the Quakers. He, "in much tenderness and love," warned the magistrates to take heed lest they should "be found fighting against God." In the New England Tragedies, his words are thus expressed in verse:—

"I testify against these cruel laws!  
Forerunners are they of some judgment on us;  
And in the *love* and *tenderness* I bear  
Unto this town and people, I beseech you,  
O Magistrates, take heed, lest ye be found  
As fighters against God."

A fine of twenty pounds was exacted from him, Gov. Endicott saying, "I will not bate him one groat." He was also banished, to depart in thirty days, including four in prison, and was fined three pounds more for not attending worship after banishment.

An exile and a wanderer, Nicholas Upshall (1637) sought refuge in Rhode Island, and on his return to Boston, in about three years, he was thrust into prison. Because "many Quakers & others affected to that sect" visited him in his confinement, he was removed to Castle Island, "there to remain vpon his own charge." His wife and family petitioned for his release, and, in 1662, he was moved, by order of the court, "ovt of prison forthwith to ye house of John Capen [1646]," in Dorchester, "provided he does not corrupt any with his pernicious influences," or does not teach "the diabolical doctrines and horrid tenets of the cursed sect, the Quakers."

Mr. Upshall (1637) resided at Mr. Capen's (1646) from 1662 until his death, Aug. 20, 1666, "aged 70 years." He and his wife, with their friend Copp, were buried in

that part of Copp's Hill Burial-Ground appropriated for people of color, where their gravestones still remain. His property inventoried, after deducting debts, £543 10s., no inconsiderable property in those days. His friends, "the Quakers," were remembered by him in his will.

**Edward Johnson** (1637), of Charlestown, whose name is the twenty-fourth and last in the list of founders of the Artillery Company, came to New England with the Winthrop immigration from the parish of Herne Hill, in Kent County, England. He was admitted a freeman May 18, 1631. Not long after, he returned to England; but came back in 1636 or 1637, bringing with him his wife Susan, seven children, and three servants, and settled at Charlestown. His possessions there were two dwelling-houses, with garden plots, "on the south side of mill-hill," "butting South upon Charles River," and about two hundred acres of land. In 1642, he removed to what was at first called Charlestown Village, but which was soon organized as a town and called Woburn.

Capt. Johnson (1637), who had evidently received a military training, was the captain of the first train-band of Woburn, and was captain in the Middlesex Regiment at the organization of the militia in 1644. He was ensign of the company commanded by Capt. George Cooke (1638), with Humfrey Atherton (1638) as lieutenant, on the expedition, in 1643, for the arrest of Samuel Gorton and his followers, who had established an independent settlement in the Indian country. After enduring a siege in their block house for several days, Gorton and his men surrendered, and were taken to Boston, where they were brought before Gov. Winthrop "in a military order, viz., the soldiers being in two files, and after every five or six soldiers, a prisoner." The soldiers, after having delivered their prisoners to the civil authorities, saluted the Governor with "three vollies of shot, and so departed to the inn where he had appointed some refreshing to be provided for them above their wages." These "wages" were ten shillings, or about two dollars and a half a week, the soldiers to victual themselves. "Very liberal," says Winthrop; "as is needful in such commonwealths as desire to be served by volunteers."

Capt. Johnson (1637) took such an active part in establishing the church in Woburn that some have supposed he was a clergyman; but he was not, although it is possible he might have officiated occasionally as a ruling elder. He was the town clerk of Woburn for thirty years, and represented that place in the General Court from 1643 to 1672, with the exception of 1648, serving as speaker of the House of Deputies for a short time in 1655.

When the revolution in Great Britain restored King Charles II. to his father's throne, Capt. Johnson (1637) was appointed by the General Court, with Gen. Gookin (1644), Mr. Danforth, Major Lusher (1638), and Capt. Hill (1647), a committee in relation to sending Messrs. Bradstreet and Norton (1643) as agents to England. This committee met at the Anchor Tavern, in Boston, Jan. 4, 1662, to adopt measures and hasten the journey of their agents. The subject was very important, considering that by the temporizing policy of the Massachusetts colonists, as it respects the King and Parliament, they had everything to apprehend on the restoration. They had prudently

**Edward Johnson** (1637). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847; Hurd's Hist. Middlesex Co., Vol. I., p. 337; Drake's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. III.; Savage's

Ed. of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Mem. Hist. of Boston; Records of Mass. Bay; Sewall's Hist. of Woburn.

and cautiously acknowledged Oliver Cromwell and the Parliament, but from 1656 to 1660 they were silent, and abstained from saying or doing anything that would give offence to either party, and they had declined to acknowledge Richard Cromwell as Protector. Their instructions, address to the King, and letters to divers lords, are preserved in Hutchinson's Collections. Capt. Johnson (1637) was one of the four to whom the original charter and a duplicate of it were delivered for safe keeping in 1664. The Colonial Records give frequent evidence of his public services and the confidence he enjoyed from the people of Massachusetts.

Capt. Johnson (1637) is best known as the author of the *Wonder-Working Providence of Zion's Saviour in New England*, the original edition of which was printed in London in 1654. This first published history of the planting of Massachusetts is written in military style, "rude in speech," and laudatory of the spiritual, material, and martial condition of the colony. "The Lord has been pleased," the captain tells us, "to turn all the wigwams, huts, and hovels the English dwelt in at their first coming into orderly, fair, and well-built houses; well furnished, many of them, with orchards filled with goodly fruit-trees and garden flowers." The military organization of the colony is graphically described by Capt. Johnson (1637). "None are exempt," he says, "except a few timorous persons that are apt to plead infirmity if the church choose them not as deacons, or they cannot get to serve some magistrate or minister; but, assuredly, the generality of this people are very forward for feats of war, and many, to further this work, have spent their time and estates." Each soldier was required to keep constantly by him "powder, bullets, and match." "There are none chosen to office in any of these bands but such as are freemen, supposed to be men endued with faith in Jesus Christ"; whereupon the captain adds this weighty caution: "Let all people know that desire the downfall of New England, they are not to war against people only exercised in feats of arms, but men, also, who are experienced in the deliverances of the Lord from the mouth of the lion and the paw of the bear. And now, woe be to you; when the same God that directeth the stone to the forehead of the Philistine guides every bullet that is shot at you, it matters not for the whole rabble of anti-Christ on your side, the God of armies is for us, a refuge high; Selah!"

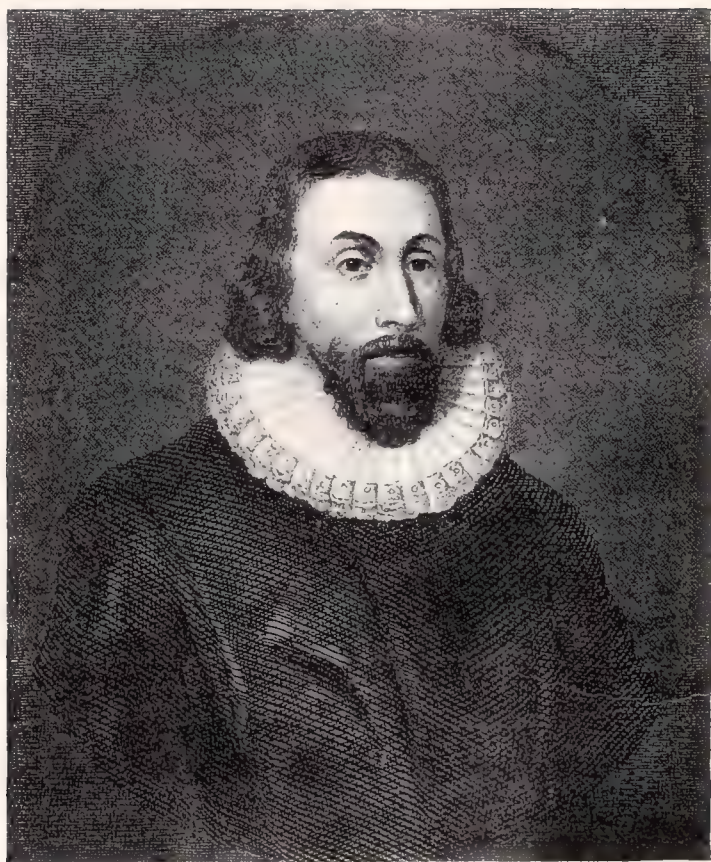
Capt. Johnson (1637) died at Woburn on the 23d of April, 1672, leaving a widow, Susanna, five sons, and two daughters. His estate was large and valuable, including lands at Herne Hill and other places in England, which he bequeathed to several of his grandchildren. William Johnson, his third son, succeeded him as a representative to the General Court, and was an assistant in 1684, and when Sir Edmund Andros arrived.

Of the twenty-four men who signed the original roll of the Artillery Company prior to June 1, 1638, and who are entitled to a permanent place in its history, several had served in the war of the Netherlands, and all but three held military commissions under the government of Massachusetts Bay. That the Artillery Company was a Massachusetts Bay, and not merely a Boston, organization, is shown not only by its name but by the residences of its original members, of whom ten belonged in Boston, three in Dorchester, three in Lynn, three in Roxbury, two in Watertown, two in Charlestown, and one in Cambridge.

Four of the twenty-four held the office of assistant; three were speakers of the House of Deputies; seventeen were members of the General Court; sixteen were selectmen; two were major-generals; one was a colonel; one, major; eight, captains; four,







*Go: wmt hop:*

lieutenants; three, ensigns; two, sergeants (either before or during their membership in the Company), and three are unknown as to military positions.

Gov. John Winthrop, the founder of Massachusetts, to whom the Military Company of the Massachusetts was indebted for its charter, merits recognition in this volume. He was the peer of other leading colonists in character, while he was their superior in social position, in mental endowments, in education, and in administrative ability. The military veterans, invited by him to emigrate to the New World, always received his protection; and he gave to some of them, and their associates, the charter of the Artillery Company against the protests of some of his Council, who feared that, like the Prætorian Band among the Romans, an organization of military men might easily, in time, overthrow the civil government.

His Journal of the Transactions and Occurrences in the Settlement of Massachusetts and the other New England Colonies, from the year 1630 to 1644, is invaluable. It contains much relative to the founders of the Artillery Company, and the public affairs of the time in which they were participants.

The "Military Company of the Massachusetts," as the Artillery  
**1638-9.** Company was first called, was organized at Boston on the first Monday in June, 1638. In the afternoon, between the hours of three and four, there was a great earthquake,<sup>1</sup> the precursor of many rain-storms on election days. The officers elected on that day, in accordance with the second article of the charter, were all charter members: Robert Keayne (1637), captain; Daniel Howe (1637), lieutenant, and Joseph Weld (1637), ensign. There were two sergeants, — John Oliver (1637) and Joshua Hewes (1637). The clerk was John Johnson (1638), and the drummer, Arthur Perry (1638).

The captain in those days, as his "duties" were laid down in the Book of Discipline, was expected "to be a good posture man himself, that when he sees any of his souldiers handling their arms in an indecent and slovenly manner, he may the better reprove them for the same. And although many Captains regardeth them not, but leaveth them to be instructed by the inferiour officers; yet it is a great deal of honour to him, when his souldiers shall be taught by himself, they more cheerfully and confidently marching along with him, when as they perceive that he is thoroughly knowing in all things belonging to his charge. His place of marching with his company, is some six foot before the first division of muskettiers; but if his company be drawn up, he is either upon a stand, or upon the march, to be on the head of the Pikes, six foot before the Ensign."

"He that is a Lieutenant to a Company," said the Book of Discipline, "ought to be a good and able souldier and well to understand the duty of a captain, assuming no

<sup>1</sup> "(4). 1] [*i. e.*, June 1, 1638]. Between three and four in the afternoon, being clear, warm weather, the wind westerly, there was a great earthquake. It came with a noise like a continued thunder or the rattling of coaches in London, but was presently gone. . . . It shook the ships, which rode in the harbor, and all the islands. The noise and the shakings continued about four minutes." — *Winthrop's Journal*, Vol. I., p. 265.

"1638. The 1<sup>st</sup> of the 4<sup>th</sup> month, about noon, was a very great and general earthquake. The vessels upon the river, and the goods that were in the said ships, moved much. Many upon the land could scarcely stand upright." — *John Hull's Diary of Public Occurrences*.

authority unto himself, but in the absence of his captain he is to see all such orders executed. He is to instruct the souldiers in the use of their arms and sometime for their ease, he may command every File-leader to draw forth his File, and to show them their postures. By which means he shall do such good service to his captain, that when he shall exercise them himself, he may find them more apter and readier to fulfil his commands; at which time the Lieutenants ought to be in the Reer, and to see all things there truly executed according to the captains orders."

"An Ensign," said the Book of Discipline, "in the absence of his Captain and Lieutenant, is Commander-in-Chief of the company and ought to march upon the head of the same, leading them with a Half-pike. His Captain and Lieutenant being present, and upon a stand, his colours ought to rest upon his side, being held by his right or left hand, and unfurled; upon the march his colours ought to be shouldered, taking up the corner end of them in his right hand, and to let them be half-flying; the Pikes and muskets all conforming unto the same posture. Marching through a city, for the more grace, his colours may be wholly flying, being advanced and held up by his right hand, or resting upon his right side. He ought to be a proper man, grave, valiant and discreet and to be well skilled in the Postures of the Pikes; in this respect he leads them, and they expect from him to be taught the Postures thereof. He ought to be well skilled in all the lofty Figures of displaying of the colours above the head, and to make use of them according to discretion and command; which is not only a healthful exercise to his body, but also most becoming to him, or any other Gentleman or commander whatsoever, that shall sometimes make use of the same; although condemned through sloth and ignorance by others, who will not take the pains to learn it."

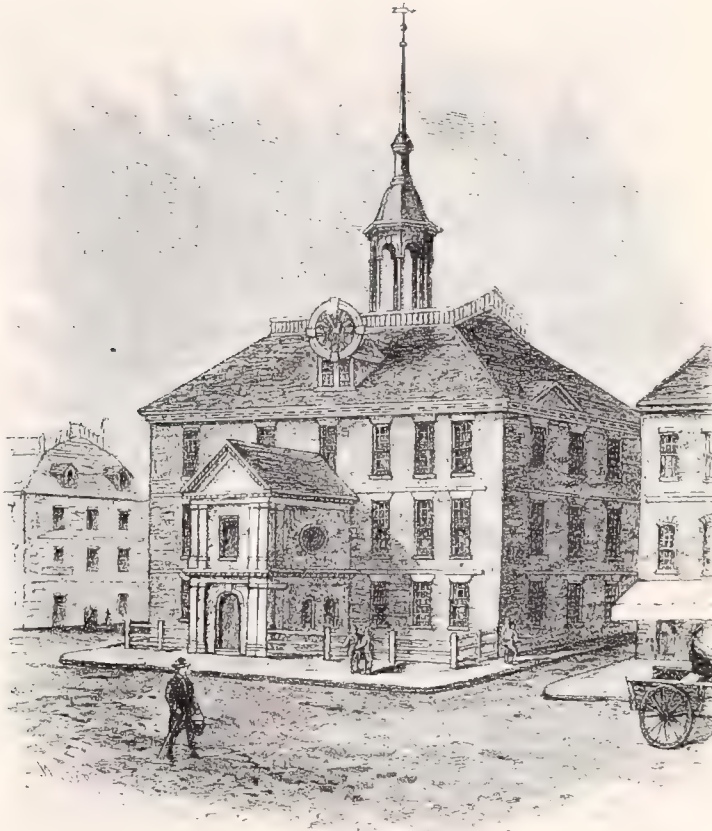
"A Clerk of a company," said the Book of Discipline, "ought to be very just and honest; his chiefest duty is to keep the Muster-Roll, and to have it ready upon all occasions for the entering of his men upon the Muster-Roll and Pay-bill. He is many times intrusted to receive the service money of the company and pay such monies unto the souldiers as shall be ordered him from his Captain to pay."

The Book of Discipline also laid down the duties of a barber-surgeon, although it does not appear that the Artillery Company ever had one. It says, "In every company there ought to be a Barber for the trimming of the souldiers' hair and beards, who ought likewise to have some skill in chirurgery, that when the souldiers are upon the guards, when imminent danger may be, they may then be at hand, to be ready in the absence of the chyrugion of the regiment to bind up and dress the hurt and wounded men."

The drummer, Arthur Perry (1638), was an important personage in the town as well as in the Company. There were no newspapers then; indeed, the first printing-press in Massachusetts was not brought from England and set up at Cambridge until the following year; and the drum-beat summoned the faithful to church and to the weekly lectures, besides summoning the military to their colors for drill and parade. The "ear-piercing fife," noted by Shakespeare, was banished from the English army after his time, and was not restored until 1747, having been neglected for more than a century in England and in the American colonies. When the Artillery Company paraded, the color was displayed early in the morning from the vicinity of the market, after which the drummer, accompanied by a sergeant, beat "to the colors" along the water side to Winnisimmet Ferry, and then back along what is now Hanover Street to what is now Tremont Street, then a cart-path leading along the edge of the commons where cows were pastured.







MEETING-HOUSE OF THE FIRST CHURCH, 1713-1808.

As the members of the Company assembled, there was, doubtless, a lack of uniformity in their costume, but a similarity in arms and equipments. The orders sent to England, and the inventories of the deceased, show that the head-covering of men-at-arms, at that period of New England's history, was a steel morion or helmet, without a visor, but with check pieces and a long scarlet plume; and a cuirass and back-plate worn over a buff coat, — not a garment of buff-colored cloth, as later writers have conjectured, but a coat with long skirts, made of thick, well-tanned leather, — as impervious to an Indian arrow as were the morion and cuirass. Long cavalry boots were much worn by foot-soldiers, who often had to march through prickly vines and briers.

The muskets, which were large and heavy, were fired by match rope, which had been soaked in a solution of saltpetre, so that it burned slowly. The equipments were ponderous, consisting of "fourquettes," or forked rests, upon which the muskets were rested when discharged;<sup>1</sup> "bandoleers," or cases, each holding one charge of powder, hanging from a broad shoulder-belt; priming horns; match cases; ball pouches, and short swords. The captain carried a "leading-staff," which is now the badge of the commander of the British company, the lieutenant carried a half-pike, and the ensign bore the standard. There was no adjutant, and the sergeants carried halberds, which were then the distinctive weapon of that grade. The arms now called espontons, or spontoons, were then unknown.

Calling the roll, by the senior sergeant, is a ceremony which has not been much changed during the past two hundred and fifty years. We read in "Henry VI." how Justice Shallow called the roll of Falstaff's command: "Thomas Wart?" "Here, sir." "Francis Feeble?" "Here, sir." In one of Beaumont and Fletcher's plays, a sergeant called the roll: "Willis Hamerton, pewterer?" "Here." "George Greengoode, poulterer?" "Here."

The roll having been called, prayer was offered, and the Company then marched to the meeting-house of the First Church, which in 1638-40 stood on State Street, near (now) Congress Street — "its roof was thatched, its walls were mud." Subsequently, until 1808, the First Church worshipped in a meeting-house on the site of the late Joy Building. This was a barn-like edifice of wood, its massive timbers visible within. The pulpit was a towering structure, surmounted by a sounding-board, and immediately in front of the pulpit, facing the congregation, was a pew for the deacons.

The clergyman, Rev. John Wilson, the first pastor of the colony, was a brother-in-law of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637). There is a tradition that Rev. Mr. Wilson preached the Artillery sermon of 1638. If the tradition be true, he wore a black gown with white cambric bands, and a bag wig. He opened the services with an invocation, followed by a selection from the Scriptures, and then announced the number of a versified psalm. This was read, one line at a time, by a deacon, and each line was successively sung by the congregation, in lugubrious and discordant tones. Mr. Wilson then offered prayer, — probably a long one, — all the people standing. Next, he turned the hour-glass, which was on a stand at the side of the pulpit cushion, and, having announced his text, proceeded to read his discourse.

After the religious services, it is probable that the Artillery Company, following the example of the mother organization, marched to the Three Mariners, kept by mine

<sup>1</sup> Gustavus Adolphus was the inventor of cartridge boxes, and he also had the weight of muskets so reduced that the "fourquettes," or rests, could be dispensed with.

host Samuel Cole (1637), or to the Blue Anchor Tavern, which was near the site of the present *Globe* office, and enjoyed a good dinner. Unfortunately, no account of one of these early Company dinners has been preserved; but it is known that the market of Boston was at that time well supplied with bear-meat, venison, birds, fish, etc.

Boston was, in the early days of the Company, the principal seaport town in North America, untrammelled as yet by a custom-house, and the flags of the maritime nations waved at her wharves. She exported lumber, dried codfish, salted mackerel, beef, pork, tallow, tar, and turpentine to the West Indies, receiving in return rum, sugar, and molasses. She sent dried codfish, pipe-staves, and beeswax to Portugal and Madeira, receiving therefrom choice wines; fish and oil were shipped to the Carolinas, and tar, pitch, and turpentine returned; she exported to the mother country dried codfish, tar, turpentine, lumber, spars, whale oil and bone, deerskins, furs, etc., receiving in return Holland gin, strong beer, and merchandise of every description.

When the dinner was over, Capt. Keayne (1637), and his immediate successors, probably followed the example of the captains of the train-bands, when on parade, and marched at the head of his command down the main street, now called State Street, but which then was not known as King Street. It was the principal thoroughfare of the town, and was paved with cobble-stones, which sloped down from the houses on either side to a gutter in the middle of the highway, but without sidewalks.

Some of the houses were of brick, with tile or slate-covered roofs, but the larger portion of the houses in the town were of unpainted wood, with huge chimneys in the middle, small windows, and shingled roofs. At the head of the street was the market-place, and facing it, on the opposite side of the highway leading from Charlestown Ferry to Roxbury, was the meeting-house of the First Church, occupying the site of the present Brazier Building, with the whipping-post and stocks. Also opposite to the church were the tailor's shop and dwelling of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637). The way thence to the training-field, or Common, was through Prison Lane, now Court Street, and then along a cart-path, now Tremont Street.

The training-field, or Common, was originally granted to William Blackstone by the General Court, on the 1st of April, 1633, "to enjoy forever." The next year Blackstone sold the land to the town of Boston, retaining the orchard of six acres, on a part of which his house was built. "After which purchase," says a deposition, taken years afterwards before Gov. Bradstreet, "the town laid out a place for a training-field, which ever since and now is used for that purpose and for the feeding of cattle." In 1638, an effort was made to get possession of this land through the General Court, and a committee was appointed to supply men "that want land, and have deserved it." This was in March, and in September following a committee was appointed to take the names of all who demanded land of them; this to apply only to the first planters. The order of the Court of Assistants in regard to land was made on the 19th of May, 1629, and under the following clause the Common would have been lost to us but for Gov. Winthrop:—

"And if within ten days after their arrival, and demand made by any particular adventurer, in the common stock, or his servant for him, the same be not so allotted, then each man, being an adventurer, is hereby permitted free liberty to build in any place where himself shall think most convenient, provided that if the platt of ground whereon the town is intended to be built, be set out, that it be publicly known to be intended for that purpose, that then no man shall presume to build his house anywhere else, with the right to fence in half an acre for every £50. adventured in the common



stock, unless a greater or less proportion had been previously determined on by the Governor and Council." Under the above clause, some of "the then inhabitants, of the inferior sort," thought to get possession of the Common.

When the first seven men were chosen, Dec. 11, 1634, Gov. Winthrop tells us in his Journal that they chose by papers, *i. e.*, by ballot; or, in plain English, secretly. This is the first use of the ballot mentioned in the records of the town meetings. It was intended to be done secretly, and but for Gov. Winthrop's refusal to serve upon such an election as was carried by a voice of two, we now, instead of our Common and Beacon Hill, would probably have had another Fort Hill, as it was before it was levelled. The question was finally settled "Att a Meeting this day [March 30, 1640], of Mr. John Winthrop, Governor, Capt. Edward Gibbon [1637], Mr. William Colbron, Mr. William Ting [1638], Mr. John Cogan [1638], and Jacob Elyott." "Also agreed upon that henceforth there shall be noe land granted eyther for houseplott or garden to any person out of the open ground or Comon Feild which is left between the Centry Hill and Mr. Colbron's end; Except 3 or 4 Lotts to make up the streete from bro. Robte Walkers to the Round Marsh."

If the traditions handed down from generation to generation have been correctly transmitted, then the Company has invariably followed one custom. It chose its officers for the ensuing year by ballot. The Governor was then escorted to the Common, when the retiring commander directed several evolutions, and then took his leave of his officers and men. The old officers, one by one, surrendered their badges to the Governor, who bestowed them upon the new officers, and, afterwards, the new captain received the halberds of the retiring sergeants, which he immediately gave to their successors.

The Governor was then escorted to his residence, and the newly-elected officers treated the Company to punch, made of old West India and New England rum, Havana sugar, and "lemons or limes for souring."

Fifty-seven new members were recruited in the year 1638-9 (each of whom was vouched for by two members); their names were as follows: James Astwood, Humfrey Atherton, John Audlin, William Ballard, Edward Bendall, Walter Blackborne, Nehemiah Bourne, James Browne, Thomas Cheesholm, Thomas Clarke, John Coggan, George Cooke, William Cutter, Nathaniel Duncan, Philip Eliot, — Femys, William French, John Gore, Samuel Green, Stephen Greensmith, Samuel Hall, John Harrison, Thomas Hawkins, Valentine Hill, John Hull, Edward Hutchinson, James Johnson, John Johnson, Benjamin Keayne, Eleazer Lusher, Thomas Makepeace, John Moore, Edward Mitchelson, Abraham Morrill, Isaac Morrill, David Offley, Abraham Palmer, William Parke, Richard Parker, William Perkins, Arthur Perry, Robert Saltonstall, Robert Saunders, Robert Scott, Ralph Sprague, Richard Sprague, John Stowe, Thomas Stowe, Thomas Strawbridge, William Tyng, Hezekiah Usher, Richard Waite, Richard Walker, John Whittingham, William Wilcox, John Winchester, and Edward Winship.

**James Astwood** (1638), of Roxbury, arrived, with his wife, Sarah, from England in May, 1638, and was admitted to be a freeman May 22, 1639. In the earliest list of the

**James Astwood** (1638). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853 (will), 1854 (inventory), 1855 (settlement of estate); Hist. of Second Church of Boston, by Chandler Robbins; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Drake's Gen. Dict.

"James Astwood he arrived at N. E. in the yeare 1638, the 3<sup>d</sup> month he brought a young child wch was buried here. . . . He was dismissed to ye new Ch at Boston." — *Roxbury Church Records*, by Rev. John Eliot.



inhabitants of Roxbury, James Astwood (1638) is recorded as possessing twenty-eight acres of land. His barn, house, and four acres of land, were west of Stony Brook and south of Heath Street, and between the estates of Capt. Isaac Johnson (1645) and Philip Eliot (1638). In 1647-8, James Astwood (1638) removed to Boston, and, in 1650, became one of the founders of the second, or Old North, church. On its records, his name is given as Ashwood. He bought, in 1646, of Robert Parker, a lot indicated in the (printed) Book of Possessions, in Boston, as "H. 28," and March 1, 1651, was granted liberty by the selectmen "to wharf before his property to low-water mark." March 8, of the same year, he was elected constable. His will was made in September, 1653, and was probated Oct. 13 next following.

**Humfrey Atherton** (1638) was born in Preston, England, where he married Mary Wales, and came to America with the second emigration, 1635, in the "James," from Bristol, with his wife and their three children. He was admitted a freeman May 2, 1638, and signed the covenant of the Dorchester church. He was a selectman in Dorchester for thirteen years, between 1638 and 1660; represented the town nine years in the General Court; was chosen an assistant in 1654,—and annually thereafter until his death,—and speaker of the House of Deputies in 1653. He early showed a taste for military affairs. He was captain of the Dorchester train-band at its organization in 1644, and became commander of the Suffolk Regiment in 1649, by the promotion of Major Gibbons (1637) to be major-general of New England militia. Sergt.-Major Atherton (1638) continued in that position until he succeeded Gen. Daniel Denison (1660), in 1661, as major-general. The latter position he held at the time of his death, which occurred Sept. 17, 1661.

Uniting with the Artillery Company in 1638, he became senior sergeant in 1642, ensign in 1645, lieutenant in 1646, and captain in 1650 and 1658.

In 1643, he was sent with Edward Tomlins (1637), of Lynn, by the General Court, to treat with the Narraganset Indians, "and questioned them on the ten commandments." In 1644, he returned to the same district, with Capts. Johnson (1637) and Cooke (1638), to arrest and try Samuel Gorton for heresy. He seems to have had great skill in his treatment of the Indians, with whom his public duties brought him in frequent contact. He manifested much humanity and sympathy for their ignorance and degraded condition, but exercised great energy and decision of character when necessary. Johnson says: "Although he be slow of speech, yet he is downright for the business—one of a cheer-spirit and entire for the country." He is also said to have been "a man of courage and presence of mind, for when he was sent with twenty men to Pessacus, an Indian sachem, to demand the arrears to the colony of three hundred fathom of wampum, Pessacus put him off for some time with dilatory answers, not suffering him to come into his presence. He finally led his men to the door of the wigwam, entered himself, with pistol in hand, leaving his men without, and, seizing Pessacus by the hair of his head, drew him from the midst of a great number of his attendants, threatening,

**Humfrey Atherton** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, 1878, 1881; Savage's Winthrop; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Johnson's Wonder-Working Providence of Zion's Saviour.

"[1661] Sept. 16, being a training day for horse and foot, Major-Gen. Atherton riding home, his

horse threw him. He was taken up speechless and senseless, and so continued from six o'clock till one o'clock in the morning, and died . . . Sept. 20. His corpse attended to the grave with ten foot-companies, and the country troop from Boston to Dorchester."—*Diary of John Hull* (1660).

if any of them interfered, he would despatch them. Pessacus paid what was demanded, and the English returned in safety."

He named his children singularly, viz.: Jonathan, Rest, Increase, Thankful, Hope, Consider, Watching, and Patience.

The death of Major-Gen. Humfrey Atherton was a serious loss. His energy of character and firmness in all cases when great decision was required made him a strong pillar in the youthful settlement. There is no doubt his death occurred on the 17th of September, 1661, instead of the 16th, as inscribed on his monument—probably soon after twelve o'clock at night of the 16th. Blake says, "He was killed by a fall from his horse at ye So. end of Boston as he was coming homewards (I think in ye evening), his Horse either Running over or starting at a Cow that lay down in y<sup>e</sup> way."

His epitaph, on the gravestone in Dorchester, is worthy of being preserved, viz.:—

"Here lies our Captain, and Major of Suffolk was withal  
A goodly magistrate was he, and Major General.  
Two troops of horse with him here came, such love his worth did crave,  
Ten companies of foot, also mourning, marched to his grave.  
Let all, who read, be sure to keep the truth, as he has done;  
With Christ he now is crowned; his name was Humfrey Atherton."

His estate, besides a farm of seven hundred acres, inventoried £838. His will was proved Sept. 27, 1661, and in 1662 his property was divided among his widow and children.

**John Audlin**, or **Odlin** (1638), was born in 1602, "an ancient dweller of the Town of Boston," and lived on what is now Washington Street, between Bedford and Essex. In January, 1637, he was allotted eighty-four acres at Rumney Marsh, which he sold Dec. 24, 1638, for £29 8s. He was a cutler, and was disfranchised in November, 1637, for his sympathy with Mrs. Hutchinson's teachings. His name is the one hundred and thirty-ninth on the register of the First Church. His deposition in regard to "Blackstones Sale of his Land in Boston" is printed by Shurtleff, Description of Boston, p. 296. He was armorer of the Artillery Company from 1644 to 1673.

John Audlin (1638) died in Boston, Dec. 18, 1685, aged eighty-three years.

**William Ballard** (1638), of Lynn, with wife, Eliza, and two children, came in the "James" from London, in 1635, aged thirty-two years. He lived on the Boston road, a little west of Saugus River. He was admitted a freeman May 2, 1638, and the same year was a member of the Quarterly Court, at Salem. He moved to Andover, and died July 10, 1689. His widow, Grace, died April 27, 1694.

**Edward Bendall** (1638), of Boston, with wife, Ann, who died Dec. 25, 1637, probably came with Winthrop in 1630. He was admitted a freeman May 14, 1634. His children were named Freegrace (1667), Reform, Hopedfor, Moremercy, and Restore.

**John Audlin** (1638). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1887, p. 265; Snow's Hist. of Boston, p. 50.

"Friday, Dec. 18, 1685. Father John Odlin dies; one of the very first inhabitants of Boston. The oldest save the Governor."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., pp. 112, 113.

"Satterday, Dec. 19, Father Jn<sup>o</sup> Odlin buried in the first Burying place [corner Tremont and

School streets]."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 113.

**William Ballard** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, p. 183.

**Edward Bendall** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Reports of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1682; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng., Savage's Ed.; Records of Mass. Bay.

The last four were born of his second wife, Mary —, of Roxbury. His business property, consisting of a stone house and warehouse adjoining, was just west of Change Avenue, and facing Faneuil Hall Square. The dock, where Faneuil Hall now stands, was then used as a cove for shipping. It was the centre of mercantile business, and was called Bendall's Dock, afterward Town Dock. It was from the shore in front of his warehouse that, in December, 1637, he was permitted to run a "ferry boat to Noddle's Island," and to the "ships riding before the town." He also owned a house and garden, two acres, at the corner of the present Tremont Row and Tremont Street.

He was a man of uncommon enterprise, projecting and using successfully a diving-bell. The "Mary Rose" was "blown up and sunk with all her ordnance, ballast, much lead and other goods." "The court gave the owners above a year's time to recover her and free the harbor, which was much damnified by her; and they having given her over, and never attempting to weigh her, Edward Bendall [1638] undertook it upon these terms, viz.: if he freed the harbor, he should have the whole; otherwise, he should have half of all he recovered. He made two great tubs, bigger than a butt, very tight, and open at one end, upon which were hanged so many weights as would sink it to the ground. (600 wt) It was let down, the diver sitting in it, a cord in his hand, to give notice when they should draw him up, and another cord to show when they should remove it from place to place, so he could continue in his tub near half an hour, and fasten ropes to the ordnance, and put the lead &c. into a net or tub. And when the tub was drawn up, one knocked upon the head of it, and thrust a long pole under water, which the diver laid hold of, and so was drawn up by it; for they might not draw the open end out of water for endangering him, &c." Savage adds, in a note: "If the diving-bell had by ingenious and philosophical men been earlier invented, I doubt if any instance of its successful application before this can be found."

He was a member of the First Church, and was disarmed in 1637 for sympathy with Mrs. Hutchinson. In 1649, he was appointed, by the General Court, collector of customs and registrar of horses intended for exportation.

Edward Bendall (1638) and James Penn "did bind themselves as sureties for the fine of Stephen Greensmith" (1638), who was censured and fined for disrespectful language concerning the clergy. He died in 1682, and letters of administration on his estate were granted May 2 of that year.

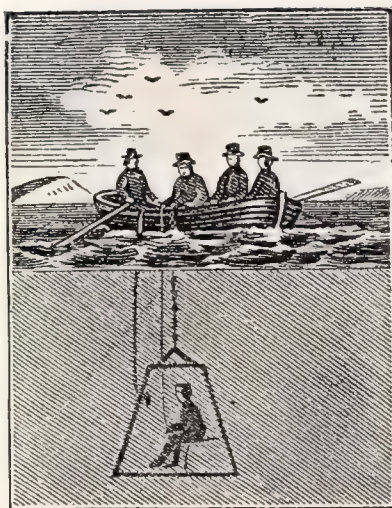
**Walter Blackborne** (1638) (Savage says Blackburne) owned property in Boston in 1640, but prior to that time a Mr. and Mrs. Blackborne are recorded as members of the church in Roxbury. His house was on Washington Street, nearly opposite the head of Milk Street. He was made a freeman May 22, 1639, and on the "22<sup>d</sup> of the 1<sup>st</sup> month," 1640, he gave the power of attorney to his wife, Elizabeth, "beinge now intended to goe for owld England in the Shipp called the Desire." In 1641, Elizabeth Blackborne sold the house and garden to Francis Lyle (1640), who served in the double capacity of barber and surgeon.

**Nehemiah Bourne** (1638) arrived in America in 1635, a member of the "second emigration." Savage says he resided in Charlestown in 1638. He and his wife were

**Walter Blackborne** (1638). AUTHORITIES: throp's Hist. of New Eng., Savage's Ed.; Suffolk County Records, II., 195 and 211; Drake's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**Nehemiah Bourne** (1638). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, 1873; Win-

Dict.



DIVING BELL





admitted into the Dorchester church in 1639. He was a "ship carpenter"; removed to Boston in 1640, and became a freeman June 2, 1641. In the winter of 1643-4, having a taste for military affairs, he accompanied Col. Stoughton (1637) to England, and became a major in Rainsburrow's regiment, of Cromwell's army. After the death of Col. Stoughton (1637), Major Bourne (1638) returned to his family; but again went to England, Dec. 19, 1646. He was in England in 1655 and also in 1661. When he went to England in 1646, his vessel was armed with "one drake from Dorchester, a drake and a sacre from the Castle and two sacres from Boston," which were loaned to him; all to be returned by June 10, 1647.

He next appears, March 2, 1649-50, in command of the great frigate, at Woolwich, carrying two hundred and fifty men. Sept. 26, 1650, he was in command of the frigate "Speaker," two hundred and seventy men and fifty-two guns. In May, 1652, Capt. Bourne (1638) was appointed "rear admiral of the fleet of the Parliament of the Commonwealth of England, and captain of the ship 'St. Andrew,' of sixty guns." In January, 1652-3, he became commissioner for the navy, and had charge of refitting and victualling the vessels. He afterward was connected with the militia of the county of Kent, but at the time of the Restoration fled to the Continent, and remained there for some years.

His wife, Hannah, died June 18, 1684, and was buried on the south side of Bunhill Fields Burial-Ground, where the ancient and honorable admiral was also buried in the year 1691. His will, dated Feb. 11, 1690-91, was proved May 15, 1691.

**James Browne** (1638), of Charlestown, a glazier, married (1) Judith Cutting and (2) Sarah Cutting. He was admitted a freeman in 1634. His name is the sixty-first on the roll of the First Church in Charlestown. A remonstrance, signed by Charlestown men, was presented to the General Court, against the banishment of Rev. John Wheelwright. The document was held to be seditious, and the signers were called to an account. Ten of them acknowledged their "sin," but James Browne (1638) and one other refused to recant; whereupon the constables of Charlestown were ordered to disarm them unless they acknowledged their error, "or give other satisfaction for their liberty." In 1640, he was granted a part of Lovell's Island on condition "that he set up a stage and follow a trade of fishing there."

About 1660 he moved to Newbury, and afterward to Salem, where he died Nov. 13, 1676, aged seventy-one years.

**Thomas Cheeseholm**, or **Chisholm** (1638), of Cambridge, 1635, was admitted a freeman March 3, 1636. He had a wife, Isabel, but they left no posterity. The first person licensed by the General Court, Sept. 8, 1636, "to keepe a house of intertainment at Newe Towne" was Thomas Cheeseholm (1638), a deacon of the church, and afterwards steward of Harvard College. He was also licensed "to draw wine at Cambridge," May 13, 1640. His dwelling-house was on a lot at the northwest corner of Dunster and Winthrop streets, adjoining the lot on which the first meeting-house was erected in Cambridge. The first church edifice and the first tavern in Cambridge stood side by side. He was by profession a tailor, and died at his residence, as above, Aug. 18, 1671.

**James Browne** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. I.; Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates, Vol. I.; Third Report, Boston Rec. Com.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853 (will).

**Thomas Cheeseholm** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Hist. of Cambridge, by Rev. Lucius R. Paige; Mass. Col. Records, Vol. I., p. 180; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Thomas Clarke** (1638) was of Dorchester in 1630. He commenced his career in that town, but was prominently connected later with Boston. He retained his property in Dorchester until his death, and gave by will to the town, £20 for its poor. His farm, which he retained, as above, was situated on the south side of Jones's Hill. He sustained a high reputation for integrity and independence. He was admitted a freeman in 1638, and the same year joined the Dorchester church. He was selectman in 1641 and 1642. He removed his residence and business to Boston in 1644 or 1645, in company with other prominent Dorchester settlers, whose names are recorded among the founders of the Old North Society, in 1650. Mr. Clarke's (1638) name is perpetuated by the name of a street and a wharf, at the north part of the city. He commanded the Suffolk Regiment in 1651, and the same year was chosen deputy from Boston. He was continued in that office eighteen years, five of which he was speaker of the House. He was elected assistant in 1673, and held that office until his decease, March 13, 1683. He was a successful merchant, and owned several estates. In 1678, his shop goods inventoried £756, and six pieces of real estate were estimated at £1,395. In 1672, he succeeded Major Lusher (1638) as sergeant-major.

In 1658, when the sanguinary law was passed condemning Quakers to death, he was one of the two deputies who entered their dissent against the law. When the commissioners of Charles II., in 1665, arrived in Boston, and threatened to annul the Massachusetts charter, on account of the sympathy of the people for the Revolution, that instrument was placed in the hands of Major Clarke (1638) and three others, for safe-keeping. He was sent, with Mr. Pynchon, to New York, to represent the Bay Colony at the transfer of Manhatoes from the Dutch to the English authorities, which was done Aug. 27, 1664.

On the 30th of September, 1666, "Mrs. Clarke, the wife of Capt. Thomas Clarke [1638], of Boston," had the offence charged against her, before the church in Dorchester, "of her reproachful and slanderous tongue against the Honored Governor Richard Bellingham; and other lying expressions." After several meetings, "she, manifesting no repentance," was excommunicated.

Upon the division of the Suffolk Regiment, in 1680, Boston constituted the First Regiment, under Col. Clarke (1638); that part of Suffolk County now Norfolk was created a new regiment, under William Stoughton. Major Clarke (1638) was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1639 and 1651, and captain in 1653 and 1665. He made his will in May, 1680, and it was proved March 22, 1683. "He was buried," says an old almanac, "March 19th, 1683, with military honors."

At a church meeting in Dorchester, April 29, 1683, "John Minot came forth voluntarily and acknowledged his sin in being too much overcome with drinking on the day of Major Clarke's funeral." Dr. T. M. Harris supposes Major Clarke (1638) to be one of three brothers, — Bray, Joseph, and Thomas, — of Dorchester, 1630, commemorated in an epitaph on a gravestone in that town: —

"Here lie three Clarks, their accounts are even,  
Entered on earth, carried up to heaven."

**Thomas Clarke** (1638.) **AUTHORITIES:** Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; First and Fourth Reports of Boston Rec. Com.; Savage's

Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Records of Mass. Bay.

**John Coggan** (1638), of Boston, who has the distinction of being the "father of Boston merchants," lived on the opposite corner of State and Washington streets from Capt. Robert Keayne (1637). Below Mr. Coggan (1638), and on the next lot, Rev. John Wilson, the first minister in Boston, a brother-in-law of Capt. Keayne (1637) and the preacher of the first election sermon before the Artillery Company, resided. Crooked Lane, from State Street to Dock Square, ran through Mr. Wilson's land, and was, therefore, called Wilson's Lane. It is now the extension of Devonshire Street. John Coggan (1638) was admitted a freeman Nov. 5, 1633, and opened the first shop in Boston, March 4, 1633-4, on the above-named corner, which he purchased of Mr. Wilson. His first wife, Ann Coggan, joined the church in Boston in July, 1634. His second wife, Mary, dying on the 14th of January, 1651, he married, on the 10th of March following, Mrs. Martha, the widow of Gov. Winthrop, the ceremony being performed by John Endicott, Governor. She had previously been the widow of Thomas Coitmore (1639). In January, 1635, for the raising of a new fortification on Fort Hill, Mr. Coggan (1638) loaned five pounds to the town, and was made treasurer of the fund; and Aug. 12, 1636, he subscribed the same amount as Capt. Keayne (1637), twenty shillings, at a meeting of the richer inhabitants, for the maintenance of a free-school master. He was a selectman of the town in 1634, 1639, and 1640, and was on a committee with Samuel Cole (1637), Dec. 15, 1652, to receive money for the support of the president, fellows, or poor scholars, at Harvard College. Besides other property, he owned in Boston a half acre on the corner of Beacon and Tremont streets, opposite King's Chapel. He was an early and liberal donor to Harvard College, and died April 27, 1658, leaving a large estate. His daughter, Elizabeth, married Joseph Rock (1658).

**George Cooke** (1638), of Cambridge, arrived in Boston from London, in the ship "Defence," in 1635, with an elder brother, Joseph (1640). In the ship's clearance, at the custom-house, he is called, with others, servants of Roger Harlakenden, who also settled in Cambridge. This was doubtless done to deceive the custom-house officers, and assure their emigration. George Cooke (1638) was born in 1610, and became a freeman March 3, 1636. Immediately upon his arrival, in connection with his brother, he purchased a large number of houses and lands of those who were about removing to Connecticut. He was selectman in 1638, 1642, and 1643; deputy, or representative, in 1636 and from 1642 to 1645, — five years, — and was speaker of the House in 1645. While a member of the House he was frequently placed on important committees, especially in relation to military affairs. In 1645, he was elected one of the reserve commissioners of the United Colonies. In 1636, he was appointed captain of the first train-band in Cambridge, and had William Spencer (1637) for his lieutenant. He retained that office at the organization of the militia in 1644. At the formation of a company in Middlesex, May 14, 1645, he was placed at the head of it. He commanded the Artillery Company in 1643, and, while its captain, was sent by the court, with Humfrey Atherton

**John Coggan** (1638). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1855, 1856, 1877; Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. I.; Hist. of Dorchester; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660.

March 4, 1633, "John Coggan, merchant [set up] the first shop." — *Winthrop's Journal*, Vol. I., p. 125.

"John Coggan mar Mrs Martha Winthrop 10: 1: 1651." — *Suffolk Co. Files*.

**George Cooke** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Hist. Middlesex Co., Vol. III., pp. 174, 177; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847.



(1638), Edward Johnson (1637) and forty soldiers, to Patuxet, near Providence, in Rhode Island, to arrest "Samuel Gorton and his company"; which they did, and brought the prisoners to Boston. Winthrop gives a long detail of the military pomp and ceremony on their return.

Near the close of 1645 he returned to England, became a colonel in the army of Parliament, and was "reported to be slain in the wars in Ireland, in 1652."

Suits were instituted by the family for the possession of his property in America, and Oct. 5, 1652, the County Court empowered "Mr. Henry Dunster [1640] and Mr. Joseph Cooke [1640] to improve the estate of Col. George Cooke [1638], deceased, for the good of Mary Cooke, the daughter of said Col. George Cooke [1638], deceased, and also to dispose of the said Mary Cooke, for her education, as they shall apprehend may be for her best good."

Col. Cooke (1638) probably resided on the northerly corner of Brighton and Eliot streets, in Cambridge.

**William Cutter** (1638), a brother of Richard Cutter (1643), was a resident of Cambridge in 1636, and was admitted a freeman April 18, 1637. He had a grant of land in Cambridge in 1648, and owned and occupied the estate at the southwest corner of Dunster and Winthrop streets. He soon returned to England, and, in 1653, resided at Newcastle-upon-Tyne; at which date he empowered Edward Goffe, Elijah Corlett, and Thomas Sweetman, of Cambridge, and Robert Hale (1644), of Charlestown, to collect debts due him in New England. He probably died without children, for Richard Cutter (1643), six days before his own death, deeded, June 10, 1693, to his son William, a house and lot in Cambridge, describing the premises as "formerly the right and proper estate of William Cutter [1638], my brother, deceased, and from him descended to me as my lawful right of inheritance."

**Nathaniel Duncan** (1638) was the second person named in the charter, but did not sign the roll until 1638. He was one of the early settlers in Dorchester, where he was a merchant. He appears in the town records as a grantee of land in 1633 and 1637, selectman of the town from 1635 to 1645, one of the six who first signed the church covenant with Mr. Mather, was admitted a freeman in 1635, removed to Boston in 1645, and resided on State Street, in the house next to Capt. Keayne's (1637). He joined the Old North Church in Boston in 1655, was a vote commissioner in Boston in 1646, and he represented the town for several years in the General Court. He was lieutenant of the first train-band organized in Dorchester, in 1636, and was afterwards its captain. He never held any office in the Military Company of the Massachusetts, probably on account of his advanced age, as he does not appear to have held any position in the colonial militia when it was reorganized in 1644. Johnson says, "He was learned in the Latin and French tongues, and a very good accountant; whereupon he was called to the place of auditor-general for the country." His son, Nathaniel Duncan, Jr., was admitted into the Artillery Company in 1642, and his son, Peter Duncan, was admitted in 1654.

**William Cutter** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge.

**Nathaniel Duncan** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Drake's Hist. of Boston; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Re-

port of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Records of Mass. Bay.

At the Quarterly General Court held Sept. 1, 1635, appeared the first grand jury of the country, "who presented above one hundred offences, and, among others, some of the magistrates." Of this court was Capt. Nathaniel Duncan (1638), from Dorchester. Capt. Duncan (1638) was also a member of the court which banished Mrs. Hutchinson in 1637, and disfranchised Capt. Underhill (1637). The same court disarmed her sympathizers, who were ordered "to deliver their arms at Capt. Keayne's [1637] before the 30th of November, under penalty of ten pounds for every default."

March 12, 1638, the General Court voted: "Natha Duncan, of Dorchester, is licensed to sell wine and strong water"; and in 1645 he was elected by that body auditor-general of the province.

By the following order, it appears that Dorchester did its share in 1664, in fortifying Castle Island: "20 of the 3 mo. 1664. It is ordered by a major vote of the town, that the raters shall make a rate of one hundred pounds towards the fortification of Castle Island, and providing powder, and shot and other for the great guns; to be delivered into the hands of Nathaniel Duncan [1638] and Humfrey Atherton [1638], overseers of the work, who are to be accountable to the town for the disposing of it."

Capt. Nathaniel Duncan died about 1668.

**Philip Eliot** (1638), of Roxbury, came to America in April, 1635, in the "Hope-well." His name is not in the custom-house list, though those of his wife and children are. They were from Nazing, England, the seat of the family. He was admitted a freeman May 26, 1636, and was a deacon of the church of which his brother, Rev. John Eliot, the apostle to the Indians, was pastor. He represented the town in the General Court for four years, from 1654 to 1657. He resided in Roxbury, west of Stony Brook and south of Heath Street, having for his nearest neighbors James Astwood (1638) and Isaac Johnson (1645). Between 1636 and 1640, he is recorded as being the possessor of three hundred and thirty-three acres of land. The most northerly resident of these three mentioned, "his house, barn and houselot of three acres on Stony River, east" was Philip Eliot (1638). He "was a right godly and diligent person, who used to accompany" his brother, Rev. John, in his work among the Indians. The Rev. John Eliot left this record concerning his brother Philip (1638) in the records of the "Church at Roxborough": "Philip Eliot [1638] he dyed about the 22<sup>d</sup> of the 8<sup>t</sup> month: 57. he was a man of peace, & very faithful, he was many years in the office of a Deakon w<sup>h</sup> he discharged faithfully. in his latter years he was very lively usefull & active for God, & his cause. The Lord gave him so much acceptanc in the hearts of the people y<sup>t</sup> he dyed under many of the offices of trust y<sup>t</sup> are usually put upon men of his rank. for besides his office of a Deakon, he was a Deputy to the Gen. Court, he was a Comissioner for the govnm<sup>t</sup> of the town, he was one of the 5 men to order the prudential affairs of the town; & he was chosen to be Feoffee of the Publick Schoole in Roxbury."

He died Oct. 22, 1657.

— **Femys** (1638). On the oldest list of officers of the Company, as lieutenant in 1640, appears the name "Capt. — Femys." Mr. Whitman adopted the name

**Philip Eliot** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Report of Rec. Com., Vol. VI., Roxbury; will in New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854.

— **Femys** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Report of Rec. Com., Boston, 1630-1699, p. 52; Savage's Gen. Dict. (Vermaes); see will of Alice Femace, New Eng. Gen. and Hist. Reg., 1854.

William, adding, "He might be one of those who became early discontented and therefore returned to England."

The pronunciation sounds like Fermase, Fermace, or Formais. Mark Fermace was of Salem in 1638; was admitted to the church there Sept. 22, 1639, and became a freeman May 13, 1640, when the name is spelled Formais. Savage says, he was probably a son of widow Alice Vermaes, whose daughter Abigail was admitted to the church in Salem in 1640, and married Edward Hutchinson (1638) after being the widow of Robert Button, of Boston. Alice, then of Boston, died Feb. 9, 1655-6, and Edward Hutchinson (1638) was named her executor; but Mark is not mentioned, nor her other son, Benjamin, implying they had previously died. Her name as attached to her will is Alice Fermace. Mark Fermace being a brother-in-law of Edward Hutchinson (1638), who was very active in the affairs of the Company, gives much probability to the supposition that Capt. Femys was really Mark Fermace.

**William French** (1638), of Cambridge, came from England with Col. George Cooke (1638) and Joseph Cooke (1640), both of whom settled in Cambridge. On the roll of the Company it is simply, "Lieut. French." Whitman decided it meant "Lieut. (Thomas) French (Jr)." Thomas French, Jr., was not made a freeman until 1674, was never a member of the First Church, nor is anything given of him except that he was in Ipswich in 1638. The sketch of Lieut. Thomas French, Jr., given in Whitman's History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, edition of 1842, is an outline of Thomas French, of Boston, who moved to Ipswich in 1639, and died there that year, therefore could not have been ensign of the Company in 1650. Neither Thomas, Jr., of Ipswich, nor Thomas of Boston is found to have been in military service.

Lieut. French of the Artillery Company is probably the William French (1638) of Cambridge, who came to America with the two Cookes (1638 and 1640), who settled in the same town with them, and was a military man. He was a tailor, and, having arrived in 1635, became a freeman March 3, 1636, on the same day as his two friends above mentioned. He became a lieutenant in the military company at Cambridge, and resided on the westerly side of Dunster Street, about midway between Harvard Square and Mount Auburn Street. He bought that estate in 1639, and sold it to William Barrett, June 10, 1656. About 1653, he removed to Billerica, and was the first representative from that town, 1660 and 1663. He wrote a tract, entitled, "Strength out of Weakness," written in the interest of the instruction of Indians. It was published in London in 1652. He died, when holding the office of captain of an artillery company in Billerica, Nov. 20, 1681, aged seventy-eight years. He was junior sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1643, first sergeant in 1646, and its ensign in 1650.

**John Gore** (1638), of Roxbury in 1635, became a freeman April 18, 1637. A correspondent of the Boston *Transcript*, over date of May 3, 1867, writes: "John Gore [1638], who fled from the persecutions in England, is said to have been the first of the name who emigrated to New England. He landed at Boston, and thence took up his residence at Roxbury. Going over Boston Neck, Mrs. Gore was carried by two men, as

**William French** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge.

**John Gore** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; W. H. Whitmore's Genealogy of Gore

Family; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Report of Rec. Com., Boston, Vol. VI.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, 1877.



the ground was wet and swampy. Arriving at Roxbury, the men stopped with their fair burden on a small hill, when Mrs. Gore, who was much fatigued, exclaimed, 'This is Paradise,' and the spot was thenceforth named 'Paradise Hill.' " John Gore (1638) and wife, Rhoda, had ten children, of whom two were sons, viz., John and Samuel, from whom Capt. John Gore (1743), Lieut. Stephen Gore (1773), Samuel Gore (1786), and Lieut. Christopher Gore (1814), were descended.

John Gore (1638), the emigrant, a farmer, who joined the Artillery Company in 1638, was clerk of the Company in 1655, and he died, June 2, 1657. The old Gore homestead, described in the book of "Houses and Lands" as containing four acres, west of Stony River, bounded on the way leading to the landing-place and tide-mill, was on the southwest side of Tremont Street, just beyond the railroad crossing, and extended to Parker Street. A brick block now covers the site of the Gore house, which was taken down in 1876. The name is perpetuated by Gore Avenue, which traverses a part of the original estate.

**Samuel Green** (1638), of Cambridge, son of Bartholomew, of Cambridge, probably came over with his father in 1632. He was admitted to be a freeman March 4, 1635, and became a printer. He was town clerk from 1694 to 1697, and clerk of the writs from 1652 until a late period, if not to the end of life. He is principally celebrated as a printer, the conductor of the Cambridge printing-office about half a century, and the ancestor of a very numerous race of printers. Mr. Green (1638) took charge of the press in Cambridge about 1649. Isaiah Thomas, in his *History of Printing*, gives a catalogue of books published under Mr. Green's (1638) superintendence, among which were the Indian New Testament, 1661, the Indian Bible, 1663, and a second edition of the same, six years in press, completed in 1685. He was deeply interested in military matters. He served as sergeant in the expedition against Gorton, in September, 1643; was appointed ensign in 1660, lieutenant in 1686, and was commissioned captain in 1689, when seventy-five years old, which position he seems to have held until his decease. Before 1638, his father, Bartholomew, had moved to the southwest corner of Ash and Brattle streets, and Capt. Samuel Green (1638) resided later on the northerly side of Mount Auburn Street, between Holyoke and Dunster streets. The latter homestead passed out of the hands of the family in 1707.

Of Capt. Samuel Green (1638), it was stated, in an obituary notice of his son, Bartholomew, printed in the Boston *News-Letter*, Jan. 4, 1733, "This Capt. Green was a commission officer of the military company at Cambridge, who chose him for above sixty years together; and he died there, Jan. 1, 1701-2, aged eighty-seven, highly esteemed and beloved both for piety and a martial genius. He took such great delight in the military exercise, that the arrival of their training days would always raise his joy and spirit; and when he was grown so aged that he could not walk, he would be carried out in his chair into the field, to view and order his company."

**Samuel Green** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Paige's *Hist. of Cambridge*; Savage's *Gen. Dict.*; Isaiah Thomas's *Hist. of Printing*.

Whitman, in his first edition of the *History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company*, gives

the first name of Mr. Green as Richard, but "upon slight information." In the second, he substitutes John therefor. For this latter, though the given name is wanting on the roll, we have substituted Samuel as by far the more probable.



**Stephen Greensmith** (1638), of Boston, in 1636 was a freeman. He is mentioned in the town records of Boston, Oct. 17, 1636. At the General Court, "1<sup>st</sup> mo. 9<sup>th</sup>, 1636," "one Stephen Greensmith, for saying that all the ministers, except A. B. C. (Cotton, Wheelwright, and, as he thought, Hooker) did teach a covenant of works, was censured to acknowledge his fault in every church and fined £40." His sentence also required sureties in £100. In the Addenda of Winthrop, "[1637] 7<sup>th</sup>, 25, James Penn and Edward Bendall [1638], did bind themselves, their heirs and executors, to pay unto the Treasurer, within three months, £40, for the fine of Stephen Greensmith [1638]." Savage observes, "Marks are drawn across this paragraph, but it is evident that it was designed by the author to express the discharge of the obligation; for in the margin is written, 'paid by £20 in wampum and £20 by debt to Robert Saltonstall [1638].'" Whitman observes, "He must have been a man of some note, if we consider his sureties. He appealed to the King, but the court in all cases disallowed appeals, and he was committed until sentence be performed. Alas! how cruel is ecclesiastical bondage! This man had no money—for he paid his fine by strings of Indian beads, and contracting a debt to the benevolent Saltonstall [1638], who probably lent him or advanced the remainder to liberate him from prison." Savage says, "Stephen Greensmith [1638] was more than once prosecuted for freedom of speech."

**Samuel Hall** (1638), of Ipswich in 1636, was in this country in 1633. Late in the latter year, he went with Oldham and others on an exploring expedition to the westward, and having discovered the Connecticut River, or, as it was then called, the "Fresh River," returned from the wilderness in January, 1634. He went to England in the latter year, and returned in the spring of 1635, "aged 25," in the ship "Elizabeth and Ann." After some years he went home again, and died in 1680 at Langford, near Maldon, Essex County, England.

**John Harrison** (1638), originally of Boston, settled in Salisbury in 1640, and returned to Boston in 1641 or 1642. Gleaner, in the *Boston Transcript* of July 31, 1855, informs us that "the first rope-maker in Boston was John Harrison, A. D. 1642." His rope-walk or "rope-field," ten feet ten inches wide, is now covered by Purchase Street, beginning at the foot of Summer Street. Thus the range of lots on High Street used to extend to the water, separated, however, into two parts by Harrison's rope-walk, "or more recently by Purchase Street. In 1736, it became the property of the town," and, having been acquired by purchase, was called Purchase Street. Harrison (1638) probably made the cordage for the "Trial," the first ship built in Boston. He had a monopoly of the rope-making business until 1662, when John Heyman, of Charlestown, was permitted by the selectmen to set up posts for making fish-lines only. Mr. Harrison (1638) objected, appealed to the selectmen, got a decision in his favor, and the permit to Mr. Heyman was withdrawn. He was admitted a freeman June 2, 1641, and, with his wife, joined the First Church in February, 1644. Their daughter Ann married John Marion, who joined

**Stephen Greensmith** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Samuel Hall** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng., Savage's Ed.; Felt's Hist. of Ipswich.

"Hall and the two others, who went to Con-

necticut November 3 [1633], came now home, having lost themselves and endured much misery. They informed us, that the small-pox was gone as far as any Indian plantation was known to the west, and much people dead of it, by reason whereof they could have no trade."—*Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.*, Vol. I., p. 123.

the Artillery Company in 1691. Richard Gridley (1658) owned the land from Fort Hill north to Summer Street, and as Gridley's land lay on three sides of Harrison's lot, it is probable that Mr. Harrison (1638) purchased his "rope-field" of Richard Gridley (1658).

**Thomas Hawkins** (1638), of Dorchester, was a shipwright in London. He had a grant of land at Charlestown, in 1636, though then living in Dorchester, where he remained several years. He became a freeman May 22, 1639, and in that year was deputy for Dorchester. He lived on Rock (now Savin) Hill, near the fort built in 1633, and where "y<sup>e</sup> great guns" were mounted in 1639. He was a large landholder, owning a piece of ground at Bass Neck, now the southerly part of Harrison Square. His farm was in that part of Dorchester now Quincy, at the Farm Meadows, and adjoined the Newbury farm. Hawkins's Brook, a small stream named for him, crosses Columbia Street. He removed to Boston in 1643, and in 1644 was colleague deputy from Boston, with Edward Gibbons (1637). He was jointly concerned with Gen. Gibbons (1637) in helping La Tour, and commanded about seventy men, who joined in the expedition under him as commander-in-chief, in 1643. He would not gratify La Tour by breaking neutrality and fighting D'Aulnay, but gave his men leave to volunteer, which some did, and burnt his mill and some standing corn, after which they returned safely to Boston with his ships, bringing four hundred moose-skins and four hundred beaver-skins.

In 1645, Capt. Hawkins (1638) built at Boston the famous ship "Seafort," of four hundred tons, "and had set her out," says Winthrop, "with much strength of ordnance and ornament of carving and painting, etc." He was cast away on the coast of Spain, but returned to England, and "being employed in a voyage the next year, was cast away at the same place."

Capt. Thomas Hawkins (1638) was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1642 and 1643, and captain in 1644, "being the only instance," says Whitman, "known of the like in the Company."

He died about 1648. His widow, Mary, married, June 26, 1654, Capt. Robert Fenn, and Feb. 27, 1662, Henry Shrimpton. His inventory, taken July 26, 1654, speaks of a house, barn, and one hundred and eighty acres of land in Dorchester, "over the water," valued at £257; house and land at Boston, £200; one half of ship "Peregrine," in England, £75, etc.; total inventory, £900. His son Thomas joined the Artillery Company in 1649. Capt. Thomas Hawkins (1638) bought a lot of Edward Bendall (1638), upon which the former is supposed to have built the house which became known as the "Old Ship Tavern," or "Noah's Ark," corner of North and Clark streets, and stood until 1866. Capt. Hawkins's ship-yard, where the "Seafort" was built in 1645, was on the opposite water front. The Memorial History of Boston says of him: Capt. Hawkins was "a busy, restless ship-builder, who owned a ship-yard near his house, made many voyages, was cast away three times, and, at length, as if determined to show that he was not born to be hanged, lost his life by shipwreck. In the apportionment of his estate, 'his *brick*

**Thomas Hawkins** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist.; Hist. of Dorchester, by Dorchester Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, 1854, 1855, 1879; Drake's Landmarks of Boston.

In November, 1648, Winthrop writes his son that "news is received from England by Capt

Hawkins's ship (God being pleased to send him [Hawkins] to heaven by the way)." His will is recorded in Suffolk Records, III., 101.

The contract between La Tour and Capt. Edward Gibbons (1637) and Capt. Thomas Hawkins (1638), dated June 30, 1643, is recorded in the Suffolk Registry of Deeds.

house and lands' were set out to his widow, from whom indirectly it passed to one John Viall, or Vyal, by whom it was kept as an inn, or ordinary, as far back as 1655. It was in a room in this inn that Sir Robert Carr, the royal commissioner, assaulted the constable, and wrote the defiant letter to Gov. Leverett [1639]. The house was built of English brick, laid in the English bond; it had deep, projecting jetties, Lutheran attic windows, and floor timbers of the antique triangular shape; it was originally two stories high, but a third story had been added by a later occupant. A large crack in the front wall was supposed to have been caused by the earthquake of 1663, 'which made all New England tremble.' "

He had one son, Thomas (1649), and five daughters. Of these latter, Elizabeth was the second wife of Adam Winthrop (1642), and after his decease she married, May 3, 1654, John Richards (1644); Abigail, for her third husband, married, Nov. 28, 1689, Hon. John Foster, and Hannah married Elisha Hutchinson (1670).

**Valentine Hill** (1638), of Boston in 1636, a merchant, was admitted to be a freeman May 13, 1640, and on June 12, 1640, was ordained a deacon of the First, or Boston, Church. He was a man of great public spirit, and in 1641 was a grantee, with others, of the Town, or Bendall's, Dock. He was elected selectman of Boston, Dec. 6, 1641, and served until March 18, 1647. His residence in Boston was on Washington Street, opposite the present Boston *Globe* office. He sold it, just prior to his moving to Dover, to Capt. William Davis (1643). It was probably in a building on this site that the first number of the Boston *News-Letter* was published, April 24, 1704. In 1643, the General Court incorporated a "company of adventurers," consisting of Mr. Valentine Hill (1638), Capt. Robert Sedgwick (1637), Mr. William Tyng (1638), treasurer, Mr. Franc Norton (1643), Mr. Thomas Clarke (1638), Joshua Hewes (1637), and William Aspinwall (1643), to extend the trade of Boston into new parts.

Valentine Hill was of Dover, N. H., about 1649, and represented that town in the House of Deputies from 1652 to 1655 inclusive, and in 1657. His second wife was Mary, daughter of Gov. Theophilus Eaton, of New Haven. He died in 1661.

**John Hull** (1638), of Dorchester, a blacksmith, was one of the first settlers of that town. He was admitted to be a freeman Aug. 7, 1632; had a share in the division of the Neck lands in 1637, and also in other divisions of land in Dorchester. He is styled captain, but was never captain of the Artillery Company. John (1638), of Dorchester, was a brother of Robert, of Boston, who also was a blacksmith. The latter, Robert, was the father of John Hull (1660), of Boston, the goldsmith and mint-master. John Hull (1660) of Boston is believed to have served his time with John (1638) of Dorchester. The latter was a deputy for Dorchester in 1634, was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1652, and died July 28, 1666, aged seventy-three years.

**Edward Hutchinson** (1638), son of William and Ann (Marbury) Hutchinson, of Lincolnshire, England, born about May 28, 1613, is called "Jr.," to distinguish him from his uncle. He came over before his parents, while a single man, in 1633, with

**Valentine Hill** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Reports of Rec. Com., Boston, 1634-1660; Mem. Hist. of Boston; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853; Wentworth Genealogy.

**John Hull** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. of Dorchester, by Dorchester Antiq. and Hist. Soc.



Rev. John Cotton, his uncle, Edward Hutchinson, and other prominent persons. He became a member of the First Church Aug. 10, 1634, and on the 3d of September next following was admitted to be a freeman. Mr. Hutchinson (1638) married (1), Oct. 13, 1636, Catherine Hamby, of Ipswich, England, who died about 1650-1, and (2) Abigail Vermaies, widow of Robert Button. He had by the first wife seven, and by the second four, children. Elisha, his eldest son, joined the Artillery Company in 1660. Thomas Savage (1637) married Faith, a sister of Edward, Jr. (1638). The latter was junior sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1641, lieutenant in 1654, and captain in 1657. He was deputy for Boston in 1658.

Edward Hutchinson, Jr. (1638), was disarmed in 1637, for supporting the views of his mother, Mrs. Ann Hutchinson, and, in 1642, was sent with John Leverett (1639) on an embassy to the Narraganset Indians. He commanded a company in the expedition into the Nipmug country, at the commencement of King Philip's War, in 1675, under the command of Thomas Savage (1637), his brother-in-law. Edward (1638) was wounded in an engagement with the Indians, four or five miles from Brookfield, on the 2d of August, and died of his wounds at Marlboro, Aug. 19, 1675, aged sixty-two years. His remains were buried in that town. "Thus he, who, with his mother, was persecuted, poured out his blood in the service of that uncharitable country."

"To his honor, he entered his dissent against the sanguinary law of 1658, for punishing the Quakers with death on their return to the colony after banishment."

**James Johnson** (1638), of Boston in 1635, a glover, was admitted to be a freeman May 25, 1636. His wife, Margaret, died March 28, 1643, and he afterward married Abigail, a daughter of Elder Thomas Oliver, and sister of John (1637), James (1640), Peter (1643), and Samuel Oliver (1648). He became a member of the First Church in Boston, April 10, 1636, and was a deacon thereof in 1655. James Johnson (1638) owned a piece of upland and marsh, which he sold, in 1662, to Thomas Hawkins (1649), and subsequently, having passed through several hands, it became, in 1743, the property of Dr. William Douglass. When Dr. Douglass died, in 1754, mention is made of his mansion house in Green Dragon Lane, which was a passage in the direction of the present Union Street, and upon which his house abutted. Ten years later, the sister of Douglass conveyed it to the Lodge of St. Andrew, A. F. and A. M., and it afterwards became celebrated as the Green Dragon Tavern. Mr. Johnson (1638) also had a garden on Tremont Street, between Winter and West, which in the early part of this century constituted a part of the celebrated "Washington Gardens." He once owned the marsh, corner of what is now Batterymarch Street and Liberty Square, where, in 1673, was

**Edward Hutchinson** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1865, 1866; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist.; Mather's Magnalia; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660.

May 28, 1659, "in answer to the request of the troopers lately raised in the counties of Essex, Suffolk and Middlesex, for the Courts confirmation of their officers, the Court judgeth it meet to allow and confirm Edward Hutchinson to be their Captain." — *Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. IV., Part I., p. 369.*

Oct. 7, 1674, "in answer to the motion of Capt Edward Hutchinson that he might lay down his

captain's place of the Three County Troop, the Court grants his request." — *Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. V., p. 17.*

"[1676] Sept. 26, Tuesday, one ey'd John, Maliompe, Sagamore of Quapaug, General at Lancaster &c Jethro (the father) walk to the gallows. One ey'd John accuses Sag. John to have fired the first at Quapaug, and killed Capt. Hutchinson [1638]." — *Sewall's Diary, Vol. I., p. 22.*

**James Johnson** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Mem. Hist. of Boston; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1877; and see will of Thomas Oliver, New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854.



situated the Blue Bell Tavern, the name of which in 1692 was the Castle Tavern. Other property belonging to James Johnson (1638) is defined in the introduction to the Memorial History of Boston.

From the Records of the Town of Boston, 1634-60, as printed by the commissioners, it appears that James Johnson (1638) was called sergeant in 1643, "lift" in 1652, and captain in 1656. Grants of land from the town were made to him in 1636, 1637, and 1638.

Feb. 27, 1642, James Johnson (1638), with others, received permission of the selectmen to use land "neare James Davis, his house," "for the watering of their leather." James Davis's house was on the north side of Milk Street, at the shore. In 1660, the liberty granted to James Johnson (1638) and others, leather-dressers, was revoked unless a rental of forty shillings per annum was paid to the town. In 1643, his name is associated with those of the foremost in the Artillery Company. Jan. 8 of that year, at a "general towns-meeting," it was agreed "that the Fortification begun upon the Fort Hill, and a worke for that end some where about Walter Merryes' Point shall be raised, For the ordering of which Capt. Keayne [1637], Capt. Hawkins [1638], Ensigne Savage [1637], Sergt. Hutchinson [1638], Sergt. Johnson [1638], and Sergt. Oliver [1637]" were chosen. On the 18th of March, 1644, the above mentioned, with Capt. Gibbons (1637), were appointed by the town, to see that the work which the town has to do at the Castle is completed, at the expense of the town. James Johnson (1638) was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1644, and lieutenant in 1658.

**John Johnson** (1638), of Roxbury, came, probably, in the fleet with Winthrop, bringing his wife, Margery, and several children. Margery Johnson was buried June 9, 1655, and Mr. Johnson (1638) married (2) Grace, widow of Barnabas Fawer. He became a freeman May 18, 1631, was a deputy at the first General Court in 1634, and for fifteen years afterwards; consequently, was a member the year the charter of the Artillery Company was granted. He was appointed surveyor-general of arms and ammunition in 1644. He was a constable in Roxbury, chosen Oct. 19, 1630, and in July, 1632, and was one of the founders of the church in Roxbury, of which Rev. John Eliot was the first pastor.

Mr. Drake thus describes his estate: "Upon the westerly side of the street [Roxbury], beginning at the boundary line, was John Johnson's estate of eight acres, including the 'house, barn, and houselot on the back side of his orchard, and buildings lying together, with liberty to inclose the swamp and brook before the same, not annoying any highway.'" He kept a tavern in Roxbury Street, and was a man of great esteem and influence. He was one of the embryo parliament of 1632, "for every town chose two men to be at the next court, to advise with the Governor and Assistants," etc. Of this earliest meeting of representatives of the people were John Johnson (1638), of Roxbury; Robert Wright (1643), of Lynn; Edward Gibbons (1637) and Abraham Palmer (1639), of Charlestown, and William Spencer (1637), of New Town (Cambridge). He was the person designated by the General Court as "Goodman Johnson," to whom the arms of the Roxbury adherents to Mrs. Ann Hutchinson were to be delivered. He was appointed, with one Woodward, Sept. 6, 1638, "if he can spare the time, or another to be got in [his]

**John Johnson** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Drake's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1855 (will), 1879.

room, to lay out the most southermost part of Charles River, and to have five shillings a day a piece."

Under date of Feb. 6, 1645, Winthrop says, "John Johnson [1638], the Surveyor General of Ammunition, a very industrious and faithful man in his place, having built a fair house in the midst of the town, with divers barns and outhouses, it fell on fire in the day time, no man knowing by what occasion, and there being in it seventeen barrels of the country's powder, and many arms, all was suddenly burnt and blown up, to the value of four or five hundred pounds, wherein a special providence of God appeared, for, he, being from home, the people came together to help and many were in the house, no man thinking of the powder till one of the company put them in mind of it, whereupon they all withdrew, and soon after the powder took fire and blew up all about it, and shook the houses in Boston and Cambridge, so as men thought it had been an earthquake, and carried great pieces of timber a good way off, and some rags and such light things beyond Boston meeting house. There being then a stiff gale south, it drove the fire from the other houses in the town (for this was the most northerly) otherwise it had endangered the greatest part of the town. This loss of our powder was the more observable, in two respects: 1st. Because the court had not taken that care they ought, to pay for it, having been owing for divers years. 2d. In that, at the court before, they had refused to help our countrymen in Virginia, who had written to us for some for their defence against the Indians, and also to help our brethren of Plimouth in their want." At this fire the first book of records of the town of Roxbury was destroyed.

He died Sept. 30, 1659. In his will of same date, proved Oct. 15 next following, he gives his dwelling-house and lands to his wife during her life, and after "unto my five children, to be equally divided, my eldest son having a double portion therein, according to the Word of God."

He was clerk of the Artillery Company from 1638 to 1640 inclusive.

**Benjamin Keayne** (1638), of Boston, only son of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), of Boston, founder and first commander of the Artillery Company, was born in London, and at the age of sixteen years came to America with his parents, in the "Defence," in 1635. He was admitted to be a freeman Sept. 6, 1639, having married, before June 9, 1639, Sarah, daughter of Gov. Thomas Dudley. They had one daughter, Hannah. Savage says, "He lived a short time in Lynn," was active in the military, and became senior sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1641. About 1644, having made "an unhappy and uncomfortable match," as his father calls it in his famous will, Benjamin (1638) returned to London and repudiated his wife. "This union, with other unfavorable circumstances," says Savage, "perhaps compelled the son to return to the land of his fathers." He entered the service of the great Protector, and served as major in Col. Stephen Winthrop's (1641) regiment, which was engaged in active service under the Earl of Manchester. He died in England in 1668, having made his will and signed it in Glasgow in 1654.

Feb. 18, 1639, Benjamin Keayne (1638) was granted "a great lot at Mount Wollaston," and Jan. 27, 1640, two hundred acres additional "at the Mount." In the colonial

**Benjamin Keayne** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist.; Suffolk Deeds, Vols. I. and II.; Records of

Mass. Bay, Vol. IV., Part 2; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company.

records, Benjamin Keayne (1638) has the prefix of respect, and, as no aspersions against him are on record, it is probable that his life was darkened and made sorrowful by an unfortunate marriage. Letters from him, written to his "Worshipful, honored father Thomas Dudley," and to "Mr. John Cotton," dated London, 1646 and 1647, are given in the Records of Suffolk Deeds, Liber I, pp. 83, 84. The property owned by Benjamin Keayne (1638) in Lynn is defined in the book last mentioned, pp. 111, 112, and 147.

Sarah (Dudley) Keayne was disciplined by the church in November, 1646, and was excommunicated in October, 1647. She was sadly degraded, and after the repudiation seems to have lived with one Pacey. Who he was, his given name, residence, or calling, are alike unknown. Gov. Dudley and Capt. Robert Keayne (1637) give us no information, though both mention her in their wills.

Capt. Keayne (1637), in his will, says, "My minde & will further is that whatsoever I have given in this my will to my Grandchild Hannah Keayne as hir legacy & portion, whether it be the first three hundred pounds or any other gift that may befall hir out of my estate by vertue of this my will be so ordered & disposed that hir unworthy mother (sometimes the unnaturall & unhappy wife of my son, that proud & disobedient daughter-in-law to my selfe & wife) M<sup>rs</sup> Sarah Dudley now Sarah Pacey may have no part or benefit in or by what I have thus bestowed upon her daughter."

It is recorded in Boston Town Books: "September 25, 1654, Mr. John Floyd is hereby fined five shillings for Receiving Mrs Pacey into his house as inmate"; also, "April 27, 1655, Mis[tress] Pacy is admitted an inhabitant, provided M<sup>r</sup> Bradstreet, or John Johnson (1638) and William Parkes (1638) of Roxbury give security to save the towne from all charges that may arise by her."

Sarah (Dudley) (Keayne) Pacy died Nov. 3, 1659, when her estate, as by inventory sworn to by Capt. James Johnson (1638), was less than ten pounds. It was given by the court to her daughter, Hannah Keayne.

Hannah, the only child of Major Benjamin Keayne (1638), was well provided for by her grandfather, Capt. Robert Keayne (1638), who appointed guardians to assist his wife "to dispose of her for her future education unto some such wise and godly mistress or family, where she may have her carnal disposition most of all subdued and reformed by strict discipline; and also that they would show like care and assist in seasonable time to provide some fit and godly match proportionate to her estate and condition that she may live comfortable and be fit to do good in her place, and not to suffer her to be circumvented or to cast away hers, upon some swaggering gentleman or other, that will look more after the enjoyment [of] what she hath, than live in the fear of God and true love to her." Hannah Keayne, granddaughter of Capt. Robert (1637), was married Dec. 11, 1657, by Gov. John Endicott, to Edward Lane, a merchant from London. In Suffolk Deeds, Liber III., p. 77, is given an instrument called "Articles of Agreement had mad Concluded vpon by and betweene Anna Keayne Widdow late wife of Cap<sup>t</sup> Robert Keayne of Boston m<sup>r</sup>chant, and . . . Edw<sup>d</sup> Lane of Boston aforesaid m<sup>r</sup>chant (who is shortly to marry with Anna Keayne Grandchild to the Late Robert Keayne and Anna his wife) in Reference to the said Anna Keayne the Elder her surrendering vp in Open Court hir executrix ship to the said last will and Testament of the said Robert Keayne to the said Edward Lane," etc. This agreement was duly signed Nov. 28, 1657. Edward Lane came from London to Boston in 1656, aged thirty-six, having bought, in 1651, an estate in Boston of Capt. Robert Harding (1637). Edward and Hannah (Keayne) Lane had



two children, Ann and Edward, the former dying in infancy. In 1663, he sold his property in Malden, and died soon after.<sup>1</sup> Edward Lane, Jr., born 1662, became Edward Paige, and died in Leyden, and was buried there. His grave was discovered by Rev. Dr. Dexter.

Nicholas Paige (1693) came from Plymouth, England, to Boston, in 1665. He soon after married Hannah, widow of Edward Lane, and daughter of Benjamin Keayne (1638). He was a prominent citizen, active in military matters, and in 1695 was captain of the Artillery Company. His wife, the granddaughter of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), seems not to have improved upon the generous bequests and earnest advice of her anxious grandparent. She inherited a large share of her mother's weakness and wickedness; was indicted, and after disagreement by the jury, was, at the General Court in May, 1666, found "guilty of much wickedness"; but great lenity was extended toward her, for, having confessed her offences, she was discharged. She died, June 30, 1704,<sup>2</sup> and her husband survived her twelve and a half years.

The General Court was not unmindful of the generosity of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637):—

"BOSTON, this — day of february 1674.

"Whereas, y<sup>e</sup> Generall Court of this Massachusetts Colony gave unto y<sup>e</sup> late M<sup>rs</sup> Anne Cole, y<sup>e</sup> Relict & Executrix of y<sup>e</sup> late Cap<sup>t</sup> Robert Keayne, five hundred acres of land, as they did also five hundred acres<sup>3</sup> to M<sup>rs</sup> Anna Lane, y<sup>e</sup> Grandchild of y<sup>e</sup> late Robert & Anne Keayne, as in consideration in y<sup>e</sup> Records is exprest, John Wilson, Pastor of y<sup>e</sup> church at Medfield, Nephew to y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Anna Cole, formerly Keayne, doth depose & say y<sup>t</sup> in a short time after y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> five hundred acres was layed out unto his above-mentioned Aunt, & confirmed to hir by the s<sup>d</sup> Court, as their records may appeare, his s<sup>d</sup> aunt M<sup>rs</sup> Anne Cole, formerly Keayne, not once only but seuerally times, Spake to him & desired him to take notice & remember y<sup>t</sup> she had given and did give her above mentioned farme to her Nephew, John Mansfield, y<sup>e</sup> son of y<sup>e</sup> late M<sup>r</sup> John Mansfield, hir onely Brother y<sup>t</sup> dyed lately at charlestowne, & y<sup>t</sup> he should have at his owne dispose foreuer & y<sup>t</sup> he perceiued his s<sup>d</sup> aunts mind, (on) such was intent & solicitous about it & further saith not.

"M<sup>r</sup> John Wilson & Edward Weeden made oath to the testimony above written, feeb 11, 1674-5

"Before us—

"EDWARD TYNG

"WILLIAM STOUGHTON."

<sup>1</sup> May 7, 1659, Edward Lane sold to Robert Turner (1643) a part of "Capt Keaynes Orchard," between Milk and State streets, back from Washington.

<sup>2</sup> "June 30, 1704. As the Governor sat at Council Table 't was told him Madam Paige was dead. He clap'd his hands, and quickly went out, and returned not to the Chamber again; but ordered Mr. Secretary to prorogue the Court till the 16th of August, which Mr. Secretary did by going into the House of Deputies. James Hawkins certifies us Madam Paiges death; he was to make a Tomb.

"July 2d, Lord's Day. Madam Page is buried from her own house where Mrs. Perry is Tenant, between 6 and 7 p. m. Bearers Lt. Govr. Povey, Usher, Sewall, Addington, Col. Phillips, Foxcroft; Rings and Scarves. The Govr. his Lady and fam-

ily there. Note By my order, the diggers of Mm. Paiges Tomb dugg a Grave for Lambert he was laid in the old burying place."—*Sewall's Diary*.

The Governor mentioned by Judge Sewall was Joseph Dudley (1677), son of Gov. Thomas Dudley, consequently was uncle to "Mrs. Paige."

Mrs. Paige resided at the corner of State and Washington streets, on the site of the present office of the Boston & Maine Railroad.

Robert Keayne (1637) says in his will, concerning his granddaughter, "I know her father will have a good Estate & having yet no other child but she, will be able to give her more than she will deserve."—*See Boston Book of Possessions, 2d Report, 2d Part, p. 79. "Keayne's Garden."*

<sup>3</sup> Granted, 1659-60, in consequence of Capt. Keayne's liberal donations to the country.



**Eleazer Lusher** (1638), of Dedham in 1637, a husbandman, became a freeman March 13, 1639. He was elected a representative in 1640, and for the twelve years following. In 1662, he was chosen an assistant, and was continued in that office until his decease, Nov. 13, 1672. He was made captain of the military company in that town, when the militia was reorganized in 1644, and succeeded Gen. Humfrey Atherton (1638) as sergeant-major of the Suffolk Regiment in 1656, which office he also held at the time of his decease. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1644 and 1645, ensign in 1646, and its lieutenant in 1647. Johnson (1637), in his *Wonder-Working Providence*, says of Major Lusher, "He was one of a nimble and active spirit, strongly affected to the ways of truth—one of the right stamp, and pure metal, a gracious, humble and heavenly minded man."

Dedham was settled in September, 1635; but little progress was made until July, 1637, when John Allin, the minister, Major Lusher (1638), and ten others, bringing recommendations, were at the same time admitted townsmen, and they gave a more decided character to the place. Major Lusher (1638) was one of the founders of the first church there, and long continued one of their chief town officers. "He maintains," says Mr. Worthington, "an eminent rank among the founders of the town." "He was a leading man all his lifetime, and directed all the most important affairs of Dedham. The full and perfect records which he kept, the proper style of his writings, above all, the peace and success of the plantation, which had the wisdom to employ him, are good evidences of his merit, and that his education had been superior to that of all other citizens, the minister excepted."

He was an influential and useful member of the House of Deputies. When Charles II. was restored to the English throne, great fears began to be entertained in the colony that its charter and liberties might be violated by the new administration. In 1662, a large committee was appointed to consider the perilous state of affairs then existing, and advise the General Court in the measures to be adopted. Major Lusher (1638), with other leading spirits of the Artillery Company, were on that committee, and safely guided the colony between the King and the Protector. He was also one of the commissioners, with Mr. Danforth and John Leverett (1639), selected to repair to Dover and allay the discontent and settle the differences; which resulted in success.

His death is noticed in the church records, as quoted in Mr. Dexter's *Century Sermon*: "Maj. Eleazer Lusher, a man sound in the faith, of great holiness, and heavenymindedness, who was of the first foundation of this church, and had been of great use (as in the Commonwealth, so in the church) especially after the death of the reverend pastor thereof, (Allin) departed this life Nov. 13th, 1672." He gained the name of the "nimble-footed Captain." The following saying was repeated frequently by the generation which immediately succeeded Major Lusher:—

"When Lusher was in office, all things went well;  
But how they go since, it shames us to tell."

This applied particularly to town affairs, and especially to the schools, which are said to have degenerated.

His will, dated Sept. 20, 1672, was proved Jan. 28, 1672-3. His widow died very soon after; and, at her death, the property was inventoried, Feb. 6, 1672-3, at £507 19s. 11d.

**Eleazer Lusher** (1638). AUTHORITIES: *Savage's Gen. Dict.*; *Records of Dedham*; *Dedham Register*; *Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company*.

**Thomas Makepeace** (1638), of Dorchester, was one of the so-called second emigration, which occurred in 1635. Sept. 25, 1637, the selectmen of Boston agreed that "Mr. Thomas Makepeace [1638] shall have a houseplott and gardingplace." He located on Hanover Street, near Court. In 1638, he bought, in the town of Dorchester, a house and land of John Leavitt, who had moved to Hingham. Mr. Makepeace (1638) married for his second wife, in 1641, Elizabeth, widow of Oliver Mellows. He was a man of prominence, and had the prefix "Mr."; but these did not prevent his being brought before the court (1638), perhaps at the instigation of the clergy. That body labored and decided, "Mr. Thomas Makepeace [1638], because of his novel disposition, was informed, we were weary of him, unless he reforme." He was an early friend<sup>1</sup> of free schools, and was one of those citizens of Dorchester who agreed to a direct tax for the support of a free school in that town. In 1641, he was one of the patentees of Dover, N. H., and signed the petition to come under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. In 1654, he was in the Narraganset expedition against the Indians. At this time he was about sixty-two years of age.

In 1664, William Stoughton bought the real estate of Thomas Makepeace (1638) in Dorchester, and the latter took up his residence in Boston. His dwelling-house was on the corner of Hanover and Elm streets, supposed to be the one John Underhill (1637) surrendered to Mr. Makepeace (1638) in 1639. His will was dated June 30, 1666, and he died at Boston in January or February, 1666-7, his will being presented for probate March 8, 1666-7.

**Edward Mitchelson** (1638), of Cambridge, came to New England in 1635. In 1639, he bought of Major Simon Willard the estate at the southeast corner of Dunster and Winthrop streets, where he probably resided until Oct. 29, 1650, when he bought the estate of Major Samuel Shepard (1640), on the southerly side of Harvard Square, extending from Holyoke Street to Bow Street, which was thenceforth his dwelling-place. In 1637, he was appointed marshal-general of the colony, which office, similar in many respects to that of high sheriff, he held through life. The fees and his "stipend" of ten pounds per year were established by the General Court in November, 1637. Savage states that "he had the sad office of executing the Quakers."

In April, 1668, a stated salary was fixed, instead of fees: "The Court, on weighty reasons moving them thereunto, having by their order, this Court, disposed of the annual recompense of Edward Michelson [1638], Marshal General, to the public use and advantage, judge it necessary to provide for so ancient a servant of this Court some comfortable maintenance instead thereof, that so no discouragement may rest upon him, do therefore order, that the said Marshal General Edward Michelson [1638] shall be allowed and paid £50 per annum out of the Country Treasury, in lieu thereof, by the

**Thomas Makepeace** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, 1861 (will), 1876; Hist. of Dorchester, by Dorchester Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Second Report of Boston Rec. Com.; Court Records, Vol. I., p. 240, quoted in Savage's Winthrop.

**Edward Mitchelson** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"Mr. Mitchelson held the office of Marshal-General until 1681 when he died and was succeeded by his son-in-law John Green." — *Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. I., p. 217.*

"Tuesday, March 8, 1680-1. Mr Edward

Mitchelson, Marshall-general is Buried." — *Sexall Papers, Vol. II., p. 14.*

<sup>1</sup> Other citizens of Dorchester, members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, who united with others in support of its early school, were Israel Stoughton (1637), Nathaniel Duncan (1638), Thomas Hawkins (1638), John Holman (1637), William Blake (1646), William Clarke (1646), Humfrey Atherton (1638), Roger Clap (1646), Hopestill Foster (1642), Jeremiah Howchin (1641), Richard Baker (1658), John Capen (1646), Nicholas Upshall (1637), Thomas Jones (1643), Richard Collicott (1637).

Treasurer for the time being." Mr. Mitchelson (1638) died March 7, 1680-1, aged seventy-seven years. His daughter, Elizabeth, born Aug. 29, 1646, married Theodore Atkinson, Jr., son of Theodore Atkinson (1644). Theodore, Jr., a sergeant in Capt. Davenport's (1639) company at Narragansett, was killed by the Indians in the great fight of Dec. 19, 1675. His widow, Elizabeth (Mitchelson) Atkinson, married, Nov. 15, 1676, Capt. Henry Deering (1682).

**John Moore** (1638), of Cambridge, was admitted to be a freeman Dec. 8, 1636. About 1637 he bought of Humphrey Vincent, who had removed to Ipswich, a house and garden on the southerly side of Winthrop Street, between Dunster and Brighton streets, together with sundry lots of land. He was a constable in 1639, and owned the above estate as late as 1642.

**Abraham Morrill** (1638), of Cambridge, in 1632 came, perhaps, in the "Lion," with his brother Isaac (1638). In 1635, he resided on the westerly side of Brighton Street, near the spot occupied by the old Porter Tavern. He removed, with the original proprietors, to Salisbury, where, in 1650, only four men were taxed for more than he. He probably moved to Salisbury in 1641, as in that year a house-lot was granted him on the "Green" (East Salisbury). Jan. 25, 1642, sixty acres of land were granted to him and Henrie Saywood, to build a "corn-mill." No other mill was to be built so long as this one ground all the corn the people needed. This mill was situated at what is now called the "Mills," Amesbury. He is believed to have moved from the "Green," and owned and occupied a house on Bailey's Hill, Amesbury, a most sightly place, taking in the sinuous Merrimack from Pipe-Stave Hill to Deer Island, while, at its foot, among the ancient elms, nestle the hamlets of "Point-shore," so called. The cellar of his house is still visible. He was a blacksmith by trade, and so many of his descendants having chosen that art, the family has been humorously called "of the Tubal Cain fraternity."

He married Sarah Midgett, sister of Thomas Midgett, the ship-builder. By her he had seven children, at least. In the inventory of his estate are included four guns and blacksmith's tools.

"The death of Abraham Morrill," Mr. Merrill says, in his History of Amesbury, "one of the most prominent men of the old town, may with propriety be mentioned here [1662], as his descendants have largely helped to people the town. He died previous to Oct. 14, when his will was proved. He was among the first to settle the new territory, and his house-lot was near the residence now occupied as a parsonage at East Salisbury."

He died at Roxbury while on a visit to his late brother's home, June 20, 1662. His estate inventoried £507.

Whittier, in his poem to Quaker Morrison, makes the latter say:—

"Ensign Morrill and his son,  
See the wonders they have done."

The family of the ancient trainer, Abraham Morrill (1638), through every generation have been noted for their enterprise, whether in iron, fish, cloth, nails, coasting vessels,

**John Moore** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Abraham Morrill** (1638). AUTHORITIES:

Savage's Gen. Dict.; Merrill's Hist. of Amesbury; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854.



farming, or trade. In the business history of Salisbury and Amesbury, the ancient and honorable soldier of the Artillery Company and his numerous descendants have made a most noble record.

**Isaac Morrill** (1638), brother of Abraham (1638), born in 1588, came to America, with his wife and two daughters, in the "Lion," arriving here Sept. 16, 1632. He settled in Roxbury, and was admitted to be a freeman March 4, 1633. His homestead in Roxbury was on the Dorchester road, between Washington and Warren streets. He was a blacksmith, and Mr. Drake says, "One of his two forges belonged in 1720 to his great-grandson, Samuel Stevens, the grandfather of Joseph Warren."

Drake, in his History of Roxbury, thus refers to Isaac Morrill, and the Roxbury train-band: "Among the distinguishing traits of our ancestors was their attention to military affairs. Arms were a common possession. Those of Isaac Morrill [1638], of Roxbury, hung up in his parlor, were, a musket, a fowling-piece, three swords, a pike, a half-pike, a corselet, and two belts of bandoleers. All males between sixteen and sixty were required to be provided with arms and ammunition. The arms of private soldiers were pikes, muskets, and swords. The muskets had matchlocks or firelocks, and to each one there was a pair of bandoleers or pouches for powder and bullets, and a stick called a 'rest,' for use in taking aim. The pikes were ten feet in length, besides the spear at the end. For defensive armor, corselets were worn, and coats quilted with cotton.

"The train-band had not less than sixty-four, nor more than two hundred men, and twice as many musketeers as pikemen, the latter being of superior stature. Its officers were a captain, lieutenant, ensign, and four sergeants. The commissioned officers carried swords, partisans or leading staves, and sometimes pistols. The sergeants bore halberds. The flag of the colony bore the red cross of St. George in one corner, upon a white field, the pine-tree, the favorite emblem of New England, being in one corner of the four spaces formed by the cross. Company trainings were ordered at first every Saturday, then every month, then eight times a year. 'The training to begin at one of the clock of the afternoon.' The drum was their only music."

The Auchmuty estate, of fourteen acres, on the old turnpike, and the "fox holes," so called, containing twenty-six acres, were parts of the Isaac Morrill (1638) estate.

In the Roxbury Land Records, Sixth Report of the Boston Record Commissioners, Isaac Morrill's (1638) is the seventh property enumerated, consisting of "two houses, two forges, one barn with out housing and two orchards and a swamp," and ten lots of land, including "fox holes" and "smithfeild."

According to the Roxbury Church Records, "Isaac Morell [1638] an aged brother," died Dec. 21, 1661.

**David Offley** (1638), of Boston, is mentioned in the town records, June 1, 1638, when he was permitted to buy Samuel Wilbore's house and garden-plot; and again, Sept. 30, 1639, when Mr. David Offley (1638) was granted "a great Lott at Muddy River, for 15 heads," implying a very large family. The Boston Book of Possessions locates his homestead on the south side of Essex Street, the third lot east from Washington, which extended south to the cove. In 1643, he removed to Plymouth.

**Isaac Morrill** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1857.

**David Offley** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's

Gen. Dict.; 4 Mass. Hist. Coll., Vol. II., p. 119; Plymouth Colony Records, Vol. II.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660.



There is but one reference to Mr. Offley (1638) in the Plymouth Colony Records, viz.: "Whereas Mr. David Offley did by warrant sumon Thomas Payne, of Yarmouth, to appeare here to answeare to a suite, and had neither entred action against him nor appoynted any to psecute for him, but onely to vex the said Payne, & put him to charges, the Court doth order and award the said David Offley to pay the said Thomas Payne xij<sup>s</sup> according to the rate of ij<sup>s</sup> p day for vj dayes."

**Abraham Palmer** (1638), of Charlestown, a merchant from London, who there joined the company of the patentees of Massachusetts in 1628, was the last signer of the instructions sent to Gov. Endicott on the 30th of April, 1629. He gave fifty pounds to advance the interests of the enterprise, and, in 1629, he himself embarked for America, probably with Higginson and the Spragues (1638), arriving at Salem in June, and early in the next July removed with about one hundred other persons, including Ralph and Richard Sprague (1638), from Salem to Charlestown.

He was one of the founders of the First Church in Charlestown, Aug. 27, 1630 (which became the First Church in Boston), and was admitted to be a freeman May 18, 1631. He was a member of the first assembly of representatives, in 1634, and also of the next four assemblies. In 1637, during the Pequot War, twelve Charlestown men, under Sergt. Abraham Palmer (1638), rendered efficient service in Capt. Mason's company, and, in 1638, he began the compilation of the Charlestown Book of Possessions, which was printed as the Third Report of the Boston Record Commissioners. His homestead consisted of "Three Acres of land by estimation, more or less, scituate and lying in the high feilde, butting to the north and east upon mistick river, . . . with A Dwelling house and other aptinances thereunto belonging." He also possessed thirteen other pieces of land. He was town clerk in 1638, and faithfully served his townsmen in civil and military positions.

Winthrop, under date of June 18, 1636, wrote: "We granted Mr. Palmer [1638], a demiculverin in exchange for a sacre, of Mr. Walton's, which was ready mounted at Castle Island, being, by the opinion of Mr. Pierce and some others, better for us than the demiculverin. We had 100 wt of shot, and some wires and sponges into the bargain."

In 1652, he sailed in the "Mayflower," of Boston, for Barbadoes, on a business venture, with Edward Burt. He died there in 1653, and Lieut. Thomas Lathrop (1645) was appointed administrator of Mr. Palmer's (1638) estate.

**William Parke** (1638), of Roxbury, eldest son of Robert Parke, of New London, Conn., in 1649, "whose barn was the first place of worship" in the latter town, came to America in the "Lion," arriving at Boston in February, 1630. He was one of the founders of the Roxbury church, in July, 1632, and for many years a deacon; was representative in 1635, and for the thirty-two following years was frequently a selectman, and held other important trusts, both public and private. Edward Johnson (1637),

**Abraham Palmer** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.

**William Parke** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sixth Report of Boston Rec. Com.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury.

"William Parke, he came to N. E. in the 12th month, 1630, a single man, & was one of the first in the church at Rocksborough; he afterwards married Martha Holgrave, the daughter of — Holgrave of Sale [Salem?]." — *Rev. John Eliot's Record of Church Members.*

in his Wonder-Working Providence, calls him "a man of pregnant understanding very useful in his place, and one of the first in the church of Roxbury."

He died May 11, 1685, aged seventy-eight years, being, as expressed in his will, "old and weake of body but of perfect understanding, according to the measure received." He had no sons, but two daughters, into whose hands, and those of his grandchildren, his large property passed after his decease. The Weld estate was originally the property of Deacon William Parke (1638). His property is narrated in Roxbury Land Records, the sixth volume of the Report of the Boston Record Commissioners.

**Richard Parker** (1638), of Boston, a merchant, was in Boston in August, 1638, but the date of his arrival is not known. He was admitted to be a freeman June 2, 1641; was allowed to be an inhabitant of Boston Sept. 30, 1639; had a grant of "four hundred acres at the Mount, besides the hundred acres given to the Wharf, Feb. 24, 1639," which was afterwards, June 29, 1640, cancelled, and five hundred acres were granted him "upon Monotacott River, next to Benjamin Keayne's farm." He held several minor town offices prior to 1651, when he was elected selectman, at the close of which term of service his name disappears from the records. The Book of Possessions locates the lot of Richard Parker (1638) as on the water-line west of Sudbury Street.

**William Perkins** (1638), of Roxbury, son of William and Catherine Perkins, of London, England, was born Aug. 25, 1607, and came to America in the "William and Francis," leaving London March 9, 1632. In March, 1633, with the illustrious John Winthrop, Jr., and eleven others, he began the settlement of Ipswich. He was admitted a freeman Sept. 3, 1634, and in the list of estates of inhabitants in Roxbury, made out between 1636 and 1640, he is recorded as possessing twenty-five and a half acres of land. The Perkins farm passed, about 1712, into the possession of Samuel Curtis. The street north of Jamaica Pond, leading to Brookline, called in early times Connecticut Lane, was named Perkins Street in honor of William Perkins (1638). He married, in Roxbury, Aug. 30, 1636, Elizabeth Wooten. In 1643, he removed to Weymouth, and was representative for that town in 1644. He was early identified with the militia, and became captain in 1645, about which time he removed probably to Gloucester, as his daughter, Mary, was born there, May 17, 1652. In naming "the residents, or proprietors of the soil," in Gloucester, between 1633 and 1650, Richard Eddy, D. D., records a "Capt. Perkins." He also says, in his sketch of Gloucester, in the History of Essex County, p. 1305, "A year later [1650], William Perkins removed from Weymouth to Gloucester, and became the 'teaching elder.' He remained five years, when he removed to Topsfield." Savage says, "Mr. Perkins preached from 1651 to 1655, and became the second minister of Topsfield."

Sidney Perley, in the History of Essex County, says, "In 1640, he [Mr. William Perkins] visited his native country, but soon returned, and preached to a small band of worshippers living in Weymouth. He removed to Gloucester in 1646, and preached there from 1650 to 1655, when he came to Topsfield. Here, after preaching till 1663,

**Richard Parker** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Drake's Hist. of Boston; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**William Perkins** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Hist. of Essex Co., by Hamilton Hurd, Vol. I., p.

566, Art., Ipswich; same, Vol. II., Art., Topsfield; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury, p. 403; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., Vol. X., pp. 211, 212.

he spent the remainder of his life in the calm pursuits of husbandry. Among the early settlers of the town, he was probably the most accomplished person. He was a scholar [but where he was educated does not appear], and a man of business, — a farmer, a clergyman, a soldier, and a legislator." In 1661 and 1664, when lands "on the south side of the river," in Topsfield were divided, "m<sup>r</sup> perkins" or "m<sup>r</sup> william perkeings" is recorded as receiving a share. He died in Topsfield, May 21, 1682, aged seventy-four years.

**Arthur Perry** (1638), of Boston in 1638, a tailor, came to America in 1635 or 1636, and was admitted a freeman May 13, 1640. By wife, Elizabeth, he had six children, all born in Boston, among whom was Seth, born March 7, 1639, who joined the Artillery Company in 1662. Arthur Perry (1638) died Oct. 9, 1652.

Arthur Perry (1638), long known as the town drummer, was an important personage in the embryo city, as in the absence of church bells he called the people to their meeting-houses for worship on Sundays, and for the lectures on Thursdays. Also, he proclaimed the laws, gave notice of town meetings, auction sales, the departure of vessels, and advertised rooms for rent, children lost and found, and new importations of dry and other goods.

It is in connection with this public duty that he is mentioned several times in the Records of the Town of Boston, 1634-60. His name is first mentioned in those records Dec. 10, 1638, when the selectmen, of whom Capt. Robert Keayne (1637) was one, agreed with Arthur Perry (1638) that he should be allowed, yearly, for his drumming to the Company upon all occasions, the sum of £5,<sup>1</sup> to be paid by the town. Feb. 28, 1641, he was paid £4 10s. "for his service in drumming the last yeare," and Sept. 25, 1643, he was paid £9 for drumming "this last yeare and halfe." He was remunerated by the town for his continued services July 29, 1644, Dec. 2, 1644, and is mentioned the last time Sept. 29, 1645, when he was paid £5 "for last yeares service in drumming, ending on the last of sixt month last past, and thirty shillings for drumheads." To guard against the liability of being without a "drummer," "It is agreed betweene the select men on the Townes behalfe, and Hugh Williams [1644] and George Clifford:" at a general town meeting, Nov. 27, 1643, "That Nathaniel Newgate [1646], Apprentize to the said Hugh Williams [1644] and George Clifford [1644] aforesaid, shall doe all Comon service in druming for the Towne on trayning dayes and watches, The sayd George for these three yeares next ensuing, and the said Nathaniel for these foure yeares next ensuing, in Consideration whereof the Towne will be at the charges of their learning skill in druming.

"It's further agreed with Arthur Perry [1638] that he shall give his Best diligence in Teaching the sayd George Clifford [1644] and Nathaniel Newgate [1646] in all the skill and use of the drum needfull to all common service in military Affayres, in consideration whereof he shall have foure pounds payd to him within six mo: next ensuing."

On the 29th of July, 1644, "The Constables of this Towne are appointed to pay foure pounds ten shillings unto Arthur Perry [1638], part of seaven pounds due to him for his service in Druming until the first day of the first month last past, and for teaching the use of the drumme according to agreement made with him on 27 of 9, 1643."

**Arthur Perry** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Records, 1634-1660.

<sup>1</sup> Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. I., p. 510 (note), says his pay was to be £2 per year.



According to the Records of the Town of Boston, on the 25th of November, 1639, the town voted: "Our brother Arthure Pury [1638] hath leave to sell his house and garding to Silvester Saunders"; and Dec. 30, 1639, he was granted a great lot for seven heads at the Mount; also, Feb. 24, 1639-40, the selectmen granted him a "housplott" in Boston.

His residence was on School Street, nearly opposite the present City Hall, and he owned other property in the town. He was drummer for the Artillery Company from 1638 to 1651.

**Robert Saltonstall** (1638), brother of Richard, and second son of Sir Richard, was born about 1614, and came to America in 1630, with Gov. Winthrop. He was the superintendent of his father's interests in this country, and owned large estates in Connecticut, as well as in Massachusetts. Robert (1638) was at Windsor, Conn., in 1640-2. He pursued the profession of the law, as his name is found as an advocate in the courts of justice, and at a session of the General Court, "1 mo. 1647-48," "Mr. Robt Saltonstall is fined five pound & is debarred from pleading in other mens causes in any Corte of justice, except himself have real interest therein." Savage says, "He allowed Francis Stiles to lead him into great useless expense from which both suffered inconvenience to their dying day." Robert Saltonstall (1638) was never admitted a freeman, probably because he was not disposed to conform to the rigid discipline of the Puritan church. He was energetic and enterprising, active in public matters, as well as attending to the large interests of his father. He was also a petitioner, in 1641, for Dover to come under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. He died unmarried, in July, 1650, and his will, of June 13, was proved Aug. 15 of that year.

**Robert Saunders** (1638), of Cambridge from 1636 to 1652, removed to Boston, and then to Dorchester, where he died. Letters of administration on his estate were granted March 13, 1682-3.

He was admitted to be a freeman May 23, 1639, and lived in Cambridge, on the southeast corner of Mount Auburn and Dunster streets. He was admitted to be an inhabitant of Boston May 30, 1653.

In 1661, his name is given in the tax-list of Dorchester, and in 1670-1, March 13, Robert Saunders (1638) was appointed "to keepe the key of the pound till the Select men take further order." In 1677, the selectmen granted him "fower load" of wood, and his needs in his advanced age were further supplied by the town of Dorchester.

**Robert Scott** (1638), of Boston, became a member of the First Church Dec. 15, 1633, then a "servant to our bro. John Sandford." He probably, therefore, came over with Winthrop, and was admitted a freeman Dec. 6, 1636. He died in February, 1654. He had a "great lot for twelve heads" granted him at the Mount, Feb. 19, 1637-8, and,

**Robert Saltonstall** (1638). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853 (will), 1879; Bond's Watertown; Suffolk Deeds, Liber I.; Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. II., p. 133; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"Mr Robt Saltonstall is fined 5 shs for presenting his petition [to the General Court] in so small and bad a peece of paper." — *Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. II., p. 76.*

**Robert Saunders** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Bond's Watertown; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Robert Scott** (1638). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, for inventory of his estate; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660.



in 1640, two hundred acres additional, without allowance for "rockienes or swampe." In 1649-50, he is called in the Town Records, "Sergaint," and in 1652-3, "Ensign." His house was near State Street, between Congress and Devonshire, and fronted on the court, east of the original first meeting-house, on which Isaac Addington (1652), the colonial secretary, lived at a later time. His garden extended south on Pudding Lane, now Devonshire Street. He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1645.

**Ralph Sprague** (1638), son of Edward Sprague, a fuller of Upway, County Dorset, England, is said by Felt, in his *Annals of Salem*, to have come to America in the ship "Abigail," with Mr. Endicott, leaving Weymouth June 20, and arriving at Salem Sept. 6, 1628. "After Mr. Endicott arrived at Naumkeag [Salem], he commissioned Messrs. Ralph, Richard and William Sprague and others to explore the country about Mishawum, now Charlestown. Here they met with a tribe of Indians, called Aberginians. By the consent of these, they commenced a plantation." He and his wife Joan were members of the First Church, Boston, but, with thirty-one others, were dismissed Oct. 14, 1632, "to enter into a new church body at Charlestown." He was a brother of Richard Sprague (1638), and father of Richard (1681). He became a freeman Oct. 19, 1630, and was the first person chosen to the office of constable at Charlestown, in 1630. He was active in military matters, and successively became sergeant in 1634, ensign in 1646, lieutenant in 1647, and captain. He represented Charlestown in the General Court in May, 1635, and afterwards, — in all for nine years, — being a deputy when the charter of the Artillery Company was granted.

He was one of the first selectmen of Charlestown, chosen Feb. 10, 1634. His homestead, consisting of one acre of "earable land, . . . with a Dwelling house upon it and other aptinances," was situated "at the east end of the comon, butting south and west upon the highway," having Mystic River on the northeast. The Charlestown Land Records, p. 53, describe twelve (1638) different pieces of real estate as the possession of Ralph Sprague.

He died in November, 1650.

**Richard Sprague** (1638), of Charlestown, third son of Edward, of Upway, England, came over with his brother Ralph (1638), and with him moved from Salem to Charlestown. He is in the list of the members of the First Church, and was admitted a freeman May 18, 1631. With his wife, he was dismissed therefrom in October, 1632, to form a new church at Charlestown.

In 1637, he was an adherent of Mr. Wheelwright, and signed the remonstrance against the proceeding of the court; but, on expressing his regret, his signature was erased. He was active in military matters, and one of the leading citizens of the new town. Mr. Everett, in his address commemorative of the bicentennial of the arrival of Winthrop at Charlestown, in speaking of the three brothers, Ralph (1638), Richard (1638), and William Sprague, says they were "the founders of the settlement in this

**Ralph Sprague** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Felt's *Annals of Salem*; Frothingham's *Hist. of Charlestown*; Wyman's *Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown*; Winthrop's *Hist. of New Eng.*, Savage's Edition; Hurd's *Hist. of Middlesex Co.*; *Mem. Hist. of Boston*; Savage's *Gen. Dict.*; *Third Report, Boston Rec. Com.*; *Genealogy of Sprague Family*.

**Richard Sprague** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Frothingham's *Hist. of Charlestown*; Wyman's *Genealogies and Estates, Charlestown*; Felt's *Annals of Salem*; Hurd's *Hist. of Middlesex Co.*; Savage's *Gen. Dict.*; *Third Report, Boston Rec. Com.*; *Mem. Hist. of Boston*; *Genealogy of Sprague Family*.

place," and "were persons of character, substance and enterprise: excellent citizens; generous public benefactors; and the heads of a very large and respectable family of descendants." Richard Sprague (1638) was a captain of the Charlestown train-band, and represented that town in the General Court in 1644, and from 1659 to 1666. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1652, ensign in 1659, and lieutenant in 1665. He died, Nov. 25, 1668. His will of Sept. 15 preceding, names his wife, Mary, but no children of his own. The sons of his brother Ralph are mentioned in it. He gave to Harvard College thirty ewes, with their lambs. This was among the earliest donations to that college. His homestead in Charlestown consisted of "three acres of earable land, . . . with a dwelling house and other aptinances," situated "in the east feilde, butting southwest and west upon the streete way, bounded on the southeast by gravell lane." The Charlestown Land Records, p. 41, describe thirteen different pieces of real estate in Charlestown as the possession of Richard Sprague (1638). He bequeathed his sword to his brother William, of Hingham, which, in 1828, was in the possession of his descendants.

**John Stowe** (1638), of Roxbury. The Roxbury Church Records, written by Rev. John Eliot, say, "John Stow, he arrived at N. E the 17<sup>th</sup> of the 3<sup>d</sup> month [May] and 1634. he brought his wife & 6 children." The records mention his wife, "Elizabeth Stow, the wife of John Stow [1638], she was a very godly matron, a blessing not only to her family but to all the church & when she had lead a christian conversation a few years among us, She dyed & left a good savor behind her." He was admitted a freeman Sept. 3, 1634, and his wife died, or was buried, Aug. 21, 1638. He represented Roxbury at both sessions of the General Court held in 1639, and he died Oct. 26, 1643. He was granted one hundred acres of land in 1642, for writing [transcribing] the laws of the colony.

The church records doubtless refer to Mr. Stowe (1638) in the following, quoted from the Boston Record Commissioners' Report, Vol. VI., p. 171: "Month 8 day 26 [1643], Goodman Stone [Stowe], an old Kentish man dyed, he was not of the Church, yet on his sick bed some had some hopes of him."

John Pierpont married Thankful, daughter of John Stowe (1638), and bought, probably of the heirs, the Stowe homestead on Meeting-House Hill, as recorded in Roxbury Land Records, p. 99. From this family sprung the Connecticut Pierponts: John Pierpont, poet and clergyman, and Edwards Pierpont, formerly minister to England. Sarah Pierpont, granddaughter of John and Thankful (Stowe) Pierpont, became the wife of the eminent Jonathan Edwards. Thomas Stowe, son of John Stowe (1638), joined the Artillery Company in 1638.

**Thomas Stowe** (1638), of Braintree, was the eldest son of John Stowe (1638), of Roxbury. He was born in England, and came to America with his parents in 1634. He married, Dec. 4, 1639, at Roxbury, Mary Griggs, and soon after removed to Concord, where he was admitted a freeman in 1653. He removed thence to Middleton about 1654. He died, probably, early in 1684, as the inventory of his estate was returned to the Probate Court, Feb. 23 of that year.

**John Stowe** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sixth Report, Boston Rec. Com.

"John Stowe, for selling shot to an Indian, not

knowing the law, is respited" by the court. — *Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. I., p. 312.*

**Thomas Stowe** (1638). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. of Braintree.

**Thomas Strawbridge (1638).**

**William Tyng** (1638), of Boston, merchant, elder brother of Edward Tyng (1642), came to New England, probably in the ship "Nicholas," of three hundred tons, chartered by himself at London, arriving at Boston July 3, 1638. He became a member of the First Church March 3, 1639, and was admitted to be a freeman ten days later. He was a selectman of Boston from 1639 to 1644 inclusive, treasurer of the colony from May 13, 1640, to Nov. 13, 1644, and representative for Boston during 1639, 1640 to 1643, and 1647, — in all, six years. He lived afterward in Braintree, was captain of a military company there, and represented that town in the General Court in 1649, 1650, and 1651. He died Jan. 18, 1652-3. His daughter, Elizabeth, married Capt. Thomas Brattle (1675), and her sister, Ann, married Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Charlestown, who preached the Artillery election sermon in 1663. Elizabeth (Tyng) Brattle died, as we are told by Judge Sewall, in a sudden and surprising way. Judge Sewall was present at her house at a great wedding of his cousin, Daniel Quincy, with Ann Shepard, her niece, when Mrs. Brattle suddenly expired.

Capt. William Tyng (1638) lived on Washington Street, where, a few years ago, it turned into Dock Square, covering the foot of Brattle Street, now Adams Square. Here he had what is described as "house, garden, close, great yard, and little yard before the hall window." A part of this lot fell to his daughter, Elizabeth Brattle, wife of Thomas (1675). Subsequently it passed through the possession of Mr. Mumford to the Quakers, for the site of a meeting-house. The inventory of Capt. Tyng (1638) is given in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, 1876. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1640. He was one of the commissioners from Massachusetts Colony who established the confederation of the New England Colonies in 1643. Savage says, "The titles of several of his books show an estimable curiosity in the possessor." Johnson speaks of him as "being endued by the Lord with a good understanding — sometime Treasurer of the country."

**Hezekiah Usher** (1638), of Cambridge, March 14, 1639, when he became a freeman, resided, in 1642, at the northeast corner of Dunster and Winthrop streets, Cambridge. About 1645, he removed to Boston, where his son John is recorded as dying in December, 1645. He was representative from Billerica from 1671 to 1673 inclusive, and died May 14, 1676. His tomb is in the chapel burial-ground, now the property of the Francis family.

Isaiah Thomas, in his *History of Printing*, Vol. II., p. 409, says, "Hezekiah Usher was the first bookseller in English America, of whom I can find any account." One of his daughters, perhaps Elizabeth, married Col. Samuel Shrimpton (1670), and another, Sarah, married Jonathan Tyng (1670). His son Hezekiah joined the Artillery Company in 1665, and another son, Col. John, in 1673. He was one of the founders, and a member, of the Old South Church, second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1657, first sergeant in 1663, and its ensign in 1664. The inventory of his estate amounted

**William Tyng** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Rec. Com., Boston, 1634-1660; Josselyn's *Voyages*; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1876; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Hist. of Braintree.

**Hezekiah Usher** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1869; Mem. Hist. of Boston; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 104; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Thomas's Hist. of Printing.



to more than fifteen thousand pounds. Capt. Hull (1660), in his contemporary diary, says, "14<sup>th</sup> Mr. Hezekiah Usher [1638] died, a pious and useful merchant."

In the winter of 1657-8, Mr. Usher (1638) went to England as the agent of the commissioners of the united colonies, and bought, with money furnished by the London Corporation, a press, several fonts of type, and other printing materials. The new press was set up in 1659, and was given in charge of Samuel Green (1638), and in 1661 the New Testament in the Indian language was "finished, printed and set forth." Hezekiah Usher (1638) was the agent of the society for propagating the gospel among the Indians.

He was much interested in town matters, held several subordinate positions, but was elected selectman in 1659, and was continued in that office eighteen years, until his decease. He lived on the north side of State Street, opposite the market-place, or old State House, having purchased a part of the estate which had formerly belonged to Rev. John Wilson, the first minister in Boston, brother-in-law of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637).

Feb. 10, 1676, Lancaster was laid in ashes by the Indians, and about fifty people killed or carried into captivity. Among the latter was Mrs. Mary Rowlandson, who, in a narrative of her captivity, which she afterwards published, says, "The twenty pounds, the price of my redemption, was raised by some Boston gentlewomen and Mr. Usher [1638], whose bounty and charity I would not forget to make mention of." Mrs. Rowlandson, after a captivity of eleven weeks and five days, arrived in Boston May 3, 1676.

**Richard Waite** (1638), of Boston, a tailor, joined the First Church Aug. 28, 1634, and became a freeman March 9, 1637. He served as a sergeant in the Pequot War, and for that service received a grant of three hundred acres of land. In November, 1637, for his adhesion to the party of Mrs. Hutchinson, he was compelled to surrender his arms to Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), and in January, 1639, was subjected to the censure of the church for "purloining" a portion of buckskin leather to make gloves, and was "cast out." His next child, born in July following, was named Return (1662), possibly because the father returned loyally to the First Church. He was sheriff of the colony in 1653, and the next year was entrusted as a messenger to the Indians. The questions propounded or sent by the messengers, Sergt. Waite (1638) and Sergt. John Barrell (1643), together with the answers of the sachems thereto, are given in Drake's Book of the Indians of North America, Book II., p. 75, *et seq.* Again, in 1668, he bore a complaint to the Indians from the government of Massachusetts, which may be read on page 85 of the above-mentioned history. For this messenger service, they were allowed by the colony three shillings a day.

His will was proved in 1680.

**Richard Walker** (1638), of Lynn in 1630, became a freeman March 14, 1634. In the first-mentioned year, a military company was formed in Lynn, of which Richard Wright was appointed captain, Daniel Howe (1637) lieutenant, and Richard Walker (1638) ensign. The last named became a lieutenant in 1646, and a captain in 1652.

**Richard Waite** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1870, 1877; Report of Rec. Com., Boston, 1634-1660; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. III.; New Eng. Magazine, January, 1886; Drake's Book of the Indians of North America.



In Hurd's History of Essex County, Vol. I., p. 292, we are told the above-mentioned company "was provided with two iron cannon." In 1631, there was a report that some Indians intended an attack on Lynn, and Walker (1638), with a suitable number, was detailed for the night guard. He at one time, while on duty, had an arrow, shot from among some bushes, pass through his coat and "buff waist-coat," and afterwards another arrow was shot through his clothes. It being quite dark, after a random discharge or two of their muskets, the guard retired. The next morning the cannon was brought up and discharged in the woods, and nothing more came of the attack. After that the people of Lynn suffered little or no molestation. It is of him that Edward Johnson (1637), of Woburn, speaks:—

"He fought the Eastern Indians there,  
Whose poisoned arrows filled the air,  
And two of which these savage foes  
Lodg'd safe in Captain Walker's clothes."

He was representative for Lynn in 1640, 1641, 1648, and 1649. He was blessed with a most vigorous constitution, for he lived until May 13, 1687, when he died at the age of ninety-five years.

**John Whittingham** (1638), of Ipswich in 1637, was a son of Baruch, and grandson of William Whittingham, the distinguished reformer in the English Church, who, having been exiled in the time of Mary, was recalled in the reign following, and rewarded with the deanery of Durham. It is said that the latter married a daughter of John Calvin. John Whittingham (1638) came from near Boston in Lincolnshire, England, and married Martha Hubbard, a sister of Rev. William, an early historian of New England. He was ensign of the train-band in Ipswich in 1644, and lieutenant in 1645. May 14, 1645, he was one of the petitioners to the General Court, with Mr. Bradstreet, Capt. Daniel Denison (1660), and others, for the formation of the Military Company of Ipswich, Newbury, Rowley, Salisbury, and Hampton. The petition was granted. He died in the early part of 1649. His will was proved March 27 of that year.

**William Wilcox** (1638), of Cambridge, was admitted to be a freeman May 25, 1636, and died in that town Nov. 28, 1653. He married Mary Powell, Jan. 22, 1650, and resided on the southerly side of Brattle Street, near Ash Street. He probably had no children, as none are mentioned in his will, and he devised his whole estate to his wife so long as she remained his widow; upon her death or marriage it was to be distributed, but not to any by the name of Wilcox.

**Richard Walker** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1877; Lewis's Hist. of Lynn; Records of Mass. Bay.

"In 1631, Richard Walker of Lynn, as he was upon watch, about midnight, was shot at by an Indian, and the arrow passed through his clothes. He gave an alarm, and a small cannon called a culverin, was discharged, and nothing further was heard of an enemy."—*Notes on Indian Wars in New England*.

"[1687] May 16, Monday. . . . this day Capt Walker, a very aged planter, buried at Lin."—*Sewall's Papers, Vol. I., p. 177*.

**John Whittingham** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, 1851, 1857, 1873.

**William Wilcox** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge.

**John Winchester** (1638), of Hingham in 1636, came to America the year before, in the ship "Elizabeth." He had a grant of land in Hingham in 1636, and was admitted to be a freeman March 9, 1637. He married, Oct. 15, 1638, Hannah Sealis, of Scituate. He took an active part in the military troubles in Hingham in 1644-5, for which he was fined, but was subsequently released therefrom. Soon after 1650 he moved to Muddy River, now called Brookline, and died there, April 25, 1694, aged seventy-eight years.

**Edward Winship** (1638), of Cambridge in 1635, became a freeman March 4 of that year. He was one of the most active and energetic citizens of that town for many years; was commissioned by the General Court, May 26, 1647, ensign of the Cambridge company; became lieutenant of the militia in 1660; selectman for fourteen years, between 1637 and 1684, and representative in 1663, 1664, and from 1681 to 1686, — in all, eight years. He died Dec. 2, 1688, aged seventy-five years. He bought, in 1638, an estate containing nearly three acres, at the easterly corner of Brattle and Mason streets, and extending through to the Common.

His daughter, Joanna, born Aug. 1, 1645, became greatly distinguished as a teacher of youth. The tombstone of this maiden school-mistress still stands in the ancient cemetery, bearing the following inscription: —

"Here lyes the body of Mrs Joanna Winship aged 62 years, who departed this life November the 19th, 1707.

"This good school dame  
No longer school must keep  
Which gives us cause  
For children's sake to weep."

**Rev. John Wilson**, who is believed to have preached the sermon before the Artillery Company in 1638, was born at Windsor, England, in 1588. His father was a clergyman, and his mother a niece of the Archbishop of Canterbury. He was educated at the University of Cambridge. Having been several times suspended, or silenced, for non-conformity, he came to New England in 1630, with John Winthrop, arriving at Salem on the twelfth day of June. He settled at Charlestown, where, with others, July 30, a church was formed. This was afterwards known as the First Church in Boston, to which place most of the members removed. Mr. Wilson was chosen teaching elder.

In 1631, he returned to England, but came back to America the next year. July 3, 1632, he took the freeman's oath. Nov. 22, 1632, he became pastor of the First Church, and held that relation until his decease, Aug. 7, 1667. He visited England again in 1634, and, returning, arrived in Boston Oct. 3, 1635, in company with Mrs. Wilson. During the Pequot War, he was appointed by lot to act as chaplain of the expedition.

Rev. Richard Mather preached the funeral sermon at the decease of Mr. Wilson, taking as his text, "Your fathers, where are they? and the prophets, do they live for ever?"

**John Winchester** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Hist. of Hingham, by George Lincoln; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. III., p. 80.

**Edward Winship** (1638). **AUTHORITIES:** Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Rev. John Wilson.** **AUTHORITIES:** Mather's Magnalia; Sprague's Annals of the American Pulpit; Hist. of the First Church, Boston; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Eliot's Biog. Dict.

"7th 6m 67. About two of ye clock in ye

Morning, my honoured Father, Mr John Wilson, Pastour to ye church of Boston, aged about 78 years & an half, a man eminent in Faith, love, humility, self-denyal, prayer, soundnes of minde, zeal for God, liberality to all men, esp'ly to ye s'ts & ministers of Christ, rested from his labors, & sorrowes, beloved & lamented of all, and very honourably interred ye day following." — *Roxbury Church Records* (written by Rev. Samuel Danforth, who married Mr. Wilson's daughter Mary).

1639-40. The officers elected were Capt. Edward Gibbons (1637), captain; Capt. Thomas Clarke (1638), lieutenant; Thomas Hucken (1637), ensign. The sergeants were John Oliver (1637) and Thomas Savage (1637); the clerk, John Johnson (1638), and the drummer, Arthur Perry (1638).

The Company was undoubtedly formed in accordance with the regulation established by Major Henry Tellier, of the "London Military Garden," for "The Way and Manner of Drawing Up a Company," viz.: "When the Drums are beating about the town, and in several places make Proclamation, (as by order from their Captain) for all Gentlemen Souldiers that are under his command, to repair unto his Randevous, unto such a place, and at such an hour; then it must be the immediate care of every Officer under his command, punctually at that hour and place, thither to repair, for the more encouraging of the souldiers as they shall come in, and not to stir themselves from thence, without some order from their Captain, for fear of giving bad examples unto others. And when they shall perceive some considerable number of men to come in, the Sergeants then may take advice of their Lieutenant and Ensign, which of them they will appoint out to draw forth the Muskettiers, and which the Pikes, and whom they shall make the right hand File-leader of the Muskettiers, and who shall be the left; and again who shall be the Leader of the right hand File of Pikes, and who shall be the left: For these four, being such remarkable places of Honour unto the knowing Souldier, that special care must be had in placing deserving men to be there. Now it is, or ought to be the discretion of every Lieutenant, and Ensign, (as being commissioned Officers) to resolve the Sergeants herein, that they may with more alacrity go on to draw the rest up between; and so to order unto each of them their particular duties, as to carry equal pains in drawing forth the files. Therefore in respect that for the most part in every company, they have three Sergeants, two of them ought to take charge in drawing forth the Muskettiers, (being helpt by the advice of their Lieutenant,) and the other to draw forth the Files of Pikes, being assisted in counsel by their Ensign: for at such times the Officers ought not to be idle, and to stand gazing upon each other; but everyone, according to his particular place and relation, should be very active and assisting to each other."

The tactics and drill of the Artillery Company, when it was first organized, were undoubtedly those of the Low Countries, which had just been adopted in England. The artillery was heavy, and could be moved only with considerable difficulty, and the members of the Company were divided into pikemen and musketeers. The masses of pikemen, formed in accordance with the ancient systems of the phalanx, were flanked by the musketeers. Sometimes the two wings of musketeers were advanced until their rear ranks were on the same alignment as the front rank of the pikemen; on other occasions, the musketeers were drawn up all around the square, of which the pikemen formed the centre.

No evidence of the use of pikes by the Artillery Company has been handed down. There was no occasion to resist calvary when fighting Indians. The men were armed and equipped as musketeers, and were formed in four ranks, as was directed in The Compleat Body of the Art Military, by Lieut.-Col. Richard Elton.

Each musketeer was to be provided with a musket, priming wire, worm, scourer, and bullet-mould, a rest, bandoleers, a sword, one pound of powder, twenty bullets, and two fathoms of match rope. The musket was a matchlock, the cock holding by a screw, and the burning match rope was applied to the powder in the pan. Muskets were generally large and heavy, and a forked staff, or rest, was required to support them when



presented to fire. The staff, or rest, had a crotch or crescent at the top, and a sharp iron at the bottom to fasten it in the ground. Musketeers carried their powder in little wooden, tin, or copper cylindrical boxes, each containing one charge; twelve of these boxes were fixed to a belt two inches wide, worn over the left shoulder, and the boxes and belt were called bandoleers. Usually the primer containing the priming powder, the bullet-dog, and priming-wire were fastened to the leather belt. These, and the little long boxes hung upon the belt, made much rattling. This belt, with its dangling appendages, had some resemblance to a string of sleigh-bells.

"Military organization was at first the only social distinction in the infant colony, for while all acknowledged allegiance to God and to the Commonwealth, there were no forms in religion, no nobility in the government. The clergy pointed out their narrow road to heaven, and the drill-sergeants taught men of dauntless energy how to use weapons for their self-defence while on earth. The early confederation of the United Colonies of New England, for mutual military self-defence against savage foes and French invaders, finally resulted in independence."

Twenty-one members were added to the Company in 1639-40, viz.: John Allen, Samuel Bennett, Richard Brackett, — Bridemore, Robert Child, Thomas Coitmore, Richard Davenport, Thomas Fowle, John Greene, Walter Haines, John Leverett, Robert Long, John Musselwhite, Thomas Owen, Herbert Pelham, William Rainsburrow, Henry Saltonstall, Robert Sampson, Anthony Stoddard, Robert Thompson, Francis Willoughby.

**John Allen** (1639), of Charlestown, came over probably in the "Abigail," in 1635, aged thirty years, with wife, Ann, from Kent County, England. He became a member of the church May 22, 1641, and was admitted a freeman on the second day of the next June. In 1640, he had a wife Sarah. In 1657, he was the richest man in the town. He was representative from 1668 to 1674 inclusive, and in 1668 was captain of the Charlestown company.

For services rendered the colony, Capt. Allen (1639) was granted, in 1668, one thousand acres of land by the General Court; the same year he was appointed a commissioner on import duties; in 1669, one of a committee to prevent the exportation of coin, and also, with James Russell (1669), was authorized to collect the contributions for his Majesty's fleet at Barbadoes.

He died March 27, 1675. Judge Sewall (1679) calls him a brother of Rev. Thomas Allen.

**Samuel Bennett** (1639), of Lynn, was a carpenter by profession, but he worked in the iron mills at Lynn. He came in the "James," in 1635, from London, aged twenty-four years. He owned a large farm at Rumney Marsh, now Chelsea. A pine forest in the northern part of the town still retains the name of "Bennett's Swamp." He resided

**John Allen** (1639). AUTHORITIES: Budington's Hist. of First Church, Charlestown; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.

**Samuel Bennett** (1639). AUTHORITIES: Lewis's Hist. of Lynn; Hurd's Hist. of Essex Co., Art., Lynn; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660.

"In 1644" Mr. Bennett (1639) "was presented by the Grand Jury as 'a common sleeper in time of exercise,' and fined two shillings and sixpence."

"There was a law forbidding the sale of commodities at too great a profit. For a breach of this law, he appears to have once or twice suffered prosecution," and the court refused to remit the fine.

"In 1671, he sued John Gifford, former agent of the iron-works, and attached property to the amount of four hundred pounds, for labor performed for the company." — *Hurd's Hist. of Essex Co., I.*, 293.



in the western part of Saugus, and when the towns were divided the line passed through his land, eastward of his house, and afterwards he was called an inhabitant of Boston. He was indicted at the Quarterly Court at Salem, July 5, 1645, for saying, in a scornful manner, he "neither cared for the town, nor any order the town could make." Mr. Bennett (1639) was a surveyor of highways at Rumney Marsh in 1657, and April 24 of that year he, with Edward Hutchinson (1638) and John Tuttle (1644), was ordered to "goe the bound line between Malden and Rumney Marsh and Lin and Rumney Marsh."

**Richard Brackett** (1639), of Boston in 1632, probably a brother of Peter (1648), was a member of the First Church in Boston, and was admitted a freeman May 25, 1636.

Drake, in his picture of Spring Lane, as he recalls the first settlers visiting the spring, concludes, "And grim Richard Brackett, the jailer, may have laid down his halberd to quaff a morning draught." He was appointed keeper of the prison Nov. 20, 1637. He sold, in 1638, to Jacob Leger, a house with a garden on Washington Street, midway between the present West and Boylston streets.

Dec. 5, 1641, he, with his wife, Alice, was dismissed by the Boston church to join the church in Braintree, where he was ordained deacon July 21, 1642. He was town clerk for many years, third captain<sup>1</sup> of the town militia, and a deputy in 1655, 1665, 1667, 1671, 1672, 1674, and 1680. Oct. 15, 1679, he was appointed to join persons in marriage in the town of Braintree, and to administer oaths in civil cases.

Capt. Brackett (1639) died in Braintree, March 5, 1691.

— **Bridemore** (1639). In the oldest roll of the members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, it is plainly, "Mr. — Bridemore." Nothing concerning him has been discovered.

**Robert Child** (1639), of Boston, physician, came from Northfleet, Kent County, England, and was bred at Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, England. He received the degrees of A. B. in 1631, and of A. M. in 1635, and was made a Doctor of Medicine at Padua. He resided for a short time at Watertown, and was one of the petitioners for the grant of the town of Lancaster in 1644. In October, 1645, he purchased a large tract in Maine, known as the Vines Patent. The next year he greatly alarmed the government of Massachusetts by presuming to petition Parliament for an enlargement of privileges.<sup>2</sup> He was

**Richard Brackett** (1639). **AUTHORITIES:** Hist. of Braintree; Savage's Gen. Dict.

Feb. 24, 1639, the selectmen voted, "There is leave granted to our brother Richard Brackett to mowe the Marsh lying in the Newfield, which he hath usually mowen, for the next Summer time." — *Report of Boston Rec. Com.*, 1634-1660.

**Robert Child** (1639). **AUTHORITIES:** Mem. Hist. of Boston; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Winthrop's Hist. of New England; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hutch. Coll., 211; Wilson's New England Salamander Discovered; New England's Jonas Cast Up at London.

This name is spelled Chidley on the original roll, and the name is so spelled in Col. Rec., Vol. I.: "Mr Chidley for confederating and concealing," was fined £13 6s. 8d. It is often spelled Childe in early books.

<sup>1</sup> "On the request of Capt Richard Brackett, being aboue seventy-three yeare of age, & infirmi-

tjes of age vpon him, hauing desired formerly, & now also, to lay downe his place as cheife military commander in Braintry, the Court grants his request." — *Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. V.*, p. 459.

<sup>2</sup> The principal point of the petition was, "that civil liberty and freedom might be forthwith granted to all truly English, and that all members of the Church of England or Scotland, not scandalous, might be admitted to the privileges of the churches of New England."

The synods of 1657 and 1662 practically adopted this view.

There were eight persons who joined in this petition, of whom the following were members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, viz., Dr. Robert Child (1639), Samuel Maverick (1658), Thomas Fowle (1639), David Yale (1640).

Winthrop relates, Vol. II., p. 322, that after Dr. Child (1639) had arrived in London he met Francis Willoughby (1639) on the Exchange, and

fined and confined; his study was broken open, and papers taken away, and every hindrance was placed in his way to prevent his going to England to present his petition to Parliament; but at last he did present it, and was unsuccessful. The General Court of Massachusetts issued a declaration against him, a portion of which was that he was a bachelor. In 1647, he went home, did not return, and probably died in England, Oct. 27, 1647, the General Court ordered, that, whereas Dr. Child (1639) owed a fine of fifty pounds to the country, which was unpaid, and he had gone out of the jurisdiction, and whereas he had stock (four hundred and fifty pounds) in the iron-works, therefore the attorney-general was given power to sell so much of said stock as would yield the fifty pounds due to the country.

**Thomas Coitmore** (1639), of Charlestown in 1636, was a brother of Elizabeth, who married William Tyng (1638). Thomas (1639) was admitted a freeman May 13, 1640, was selectman of Charlestown, 1640-2 inclusive, and representative to the General Court in 1640 and 1641. In 1644, he was proposed as the commander of the fort at Castle Island. He was an enterprising merchant, and went on several voyages to distant lands. In 1642, he sailed master of the "Trial," the first ship ever built in Boston. He was lost on a voyage to Malaga, by shipwreck on the coast of Spain,<sup>1</sup> Dec. 27, 1645. His inventory was £1,266 9s. 7d. His wife, by whom he had two sons, was Martha, daughter of Capt. Rainsburrow (1639). Upon the death of her husband, Thomas Coitmore (1639), she married Gov. Winthrop<sup>2</sup>; and after his decease she married, March 10, 1651, John Coggan (1638). After his decease in 1658, "she wished to be married again," as related by Rev. John Davenport, and, it is said, "poisoned herself for her ill success."

The homestead of Thomas Coitmore (1639) in Charlestown, and twelve other pieces of real estate which he owned, are described in Charlestown Land Records, as printed by the Boston Record Commissioners, Vol. III., p. 20.

**Richard Davenport** (1639) came with Gov. Endicott in the "Abigail," in September, 1628, from Weymouth, Dorset County, England, and landed at Salem. He was born in 1606; was admitted a freeman Sept. 3, 1634; a deputy from Salem in 1637, and resided in that town until 1642. He was ensign of the Salem train-band in October, 1634, when his friend Endicott cut out the red cross in the national ensign, and in admiration of that act he named a daughter, born that year, "Truecross." He held the same office, ensign, when, with Underhill (1637), Turner (1637), and Jennison (1637), he

in talking about New England, the doctor "railed against the people, saying that they were a company of rogues and knaves." Mr. Willoughby (1639) replied that he who talked so was a knave, whereupon the doctor gave him a box on the ear. They were separated by friends. To restore peace, Dr. Child (1639) was ordered to give five pounds to the poor of New England, to apologize in the full Exchange, and to promise never again to speak evil of New England men.

**Thomas Coitmore** (1639). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1880; his will is in same, 1853; the inventory in same, 1854; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng., Savage's Edition; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.

**Richard Davenport** (1639). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850; Drake's

Indians of North America, Book III., p. 75; Felt's Annals of Salem; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Records of Mass. Bay.

Oct. 19, 1652, Capt. Davenport (1639) was appointed one of the guardians of Adam Winthrop, "the orphan, of about five yeares of age," who joined the Artillery Company in 1692.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Frothingham says he was drowned "on the coast of Wales."

"A right godly man and expert seaman," writes Winthrop; "dearly beloved." "A good scholar and one who had spent both his labor and estate in helping on this wilderness work," writes Edward Johnson (1637).

<sup>2</sup> The marriage contract, with an inventory of her goods and chattels, is given in the Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, Vol. II., pp. 234-236.

went in Gov. Endicott's expedition against the Indians, to revenge the murder of Mr. Oldham. In 1636, he was lieutenant of the first volunteer train-band, under Capt. Denison (1660), in Ipswich, where it is probable he resided a short time. He was a military man of distinction in the first settlement of the colony, and was engaged in many enterprises against the Indians, yet he never held any office in the Artillery Company, probably on account of his absence on public duty.

Lieut. Davenport (1639) was wounded in a battle with the Pequots in 1637, and in the same year was directed by the General Court to receive the arms of Mr. Wheelwright's friends in Salem. The first settlers in and near Boston built a fort for their defence in July, 1634. It had walls of earth, and was afterwards called Castle William, now Fort Independence. Capt. Nicholas Simpkins (1650) was the first commander, Edward Gibbons (1637) the second, Lieut. Richard Morris (1637) the third, and Robert Sedgwick (1637), in June, 1641, was the fourth. In 1643, the mud walls having gone to decay, the fort was rebuilt with pine-trees and earth, under the superintendence of Capt. Richard Davenport (1639), who was appointed to command it. When that decayed, which was within a little time, there was a small castle built of brick, which had "three rooms in it—a dwelling room below, a lodging room over it, and the gun-room over that, wherein were six guns, called sacker guns, and over it upon the top three lesser guns." Such was its condition July 15, 1665, when "God was pleased to send a grievous storm of thunder and lightning, which did some hurt in Boston," says Capt. Roger Clap (1646). Capt. Davenport (1639), weary by severe duty, had retired in a room separated from the powder magazine by a thin board partition, and while asleep was killed by a flash of lightning, no material damage being done to the Castle.<sup>1</sup>

His son, Nathaniel, was a captain in King Philip's War, and was killed in the Great Fort fight, Dec. 19, 1675. The command of the Company then devolved on Lieut. Edward Tyng, Jr. (1668). His grandson, Hon. Addington Davenport, joined the Artillery Company in 1692.

**Thomas Fowle** (1639), of Boston, came from England before 1635, and was a merchant, whose home estate, consisting of a house and garden, was situated at the north corner of Essex and Washington streets. He was admitted to be a freeman Sept. 7, 1639, and joined the First Church in Boston March 26, 1643. He served as selectman of Boston, with Gov. Winthrop, in 1645 and 1646. In 1644, "30<sup>th</sup> of 10 mo." he is called in the Boston Town Records, "Tho: Fowle, Gent." In 1639, the "27<sup>th</sup> of the 11 mo.," he was granted six hundred acres "at Rumney Marsh," which in 1650 were owned by Samuel Bennett (1639). He is supposed to have moved to Braintree, at least he owned property there. Whitman says Mr. Fowle "figures as a man of much notoriety in Winthrop, having on account of his liberal sentiments, been a constant thorn to the civil and ecclesiastical rulers of the colony." In Boston, he had the agent

**Thomas Fowle** (1639). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Mem. Hist. of Boston; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company.

<sup>1</sup> "1665. July 15. There was a dreadful thunder [and] lightning . . . And at ye Castle it wounded 3 or 4 men In so much that they cryed out some houres after, some that yir tooes, others yt their legs were falling off, and ye Captain of the Castle, Mr

Richard Davenport, a man of a choice and excellent sp't, having bin hard at work, was layd down upon his bed in ye Castle, there being but a Wainscot betw. ye bed & ye Magazine of Powder, the lightning came in at ye window & smote ye Captain on ye right eare so yt it bled, bruised his flesh upon his head, wounded & burnt his breast & belly, & stroke him dead that he never spoke more; but it pleased God ye powder escaped ye fire." — *Kewbury Church Records*.



of D'Aulnay, in the troubles of La Tour, to lodge at his house, and his ship was seized at London for damages by the La Tour party. In 1646, he was earnest for an extension of liberties, was heavily fined, and went to England in disgust in November, 1646.

The seizure of the ship, when Joseph Weld (1637) and Stephen Winthrop (1641) were arrested, has heretofore been mentioned, page 24. In 1646, Mr. Fowle (1639), with Dr. Child (1639), John Smith, and David Yale (1640), "petitioned to Parliament, complaining of the distinctions in civil and church estate here, and that they might be governed by the laws of England"; — this petition cited that they, "free born subjects of England, were denied the liberty of subjects, both in church and commonwealth, themselves and their children debarred from the seals of the covenant, except they would submit to such a way of entrance and church covenant, as their consciences could not admit, and take such a civil oath, as would not stand with their oath of allegiance, or else they must be debarred of all power and interest in civil affairs, and were subjected to an arbitrary government and extra judicial proceedings," etc. A petition was presented to the General Court by them, but the consideration thereof, as well as a law to permit non-freemen to vote, was deferred to another session. Mr. Fowle (1639) also, with Gen. Sedgwick (1637) and others, petitioned for the abrogation of the laws against Anabaptists and the tax on new-comers, which was also unsuccessful.

On the eve of his departure for England, after having been fined and imprisoned for the above-mentioned petition, he was stayed again at Gov. Winthrop's warrant, as also Dr. Child (1639), said "to be the chief speaker," who said "they did beneath themselves in petitioning us," and appealed to England. The hearing was continued with much spirit and acrimony. "In conclusion, Fowle [1639] and one Smith were committed to the Marshal for want of sureties, and the rest were enjoined to attend the Court when they should be called. So they were dismissed and Mr. Fowle [1639] found sureties before night." The trial proceeded, and in the subsequent pages of Winthrop we may find the long-contested argument, pro and con. Dr. Child (1639) was fined fifty pounds and Mr. Fowle (1639) forty pounds, "for persisting thus obstinately and proudly in their evil practice." They were offered to have their fines remitted, if they would but acknowledge their fault; but they remained obstinate. Their appeal was received, but refused acceptance and was not permitted to be read in the court. "Surprise," says Savage, "almost equals our indignation at this exorbitant imposition; for in this very year Fowle [1639] was associated with Winthrop as one of the Selectmen of Boston. All these petitioners but Maverick [1658] left the country, I believe."

In 1648, Mr. Fowle (1639) is thus spoken of by Gov. Winthrop: "For God had brought him very low, both in his estate and reputation, since he joined in the first petition." Whitman adds: "There is no reason to attribute it to a judgment of God; it is far more easy to account for his becoming poor by losses at sea, heavy fines, imprisonment, delays, expenses," etc.

**John Greene** (1639), of Charlestown, came in the "James" from London in 1632, and arrived June 12, with his wife, Perseverance (Johnson), three children, a servant, and Joseph Greene, a relative. He joined the church in Charlestown, March 29, 1633; was afterward an elder of that church, the first and only one it ever had, and became a freeman April 1, 1633. In the town records he is called "Sergeant." He was town

**John Greene** (1639). **AUTHORITIES:** Wyman's Gen. and Estates of Charlestown; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown; Savage's Gen. Dict.



clerk from 1646 to 1658, selectman from 1646 to 1657 inclusive. His dwelling-house, on a lot of three-quarters of an acre, was situated at the west end of the Common, "bounded on all sides by the common." His property in Charlestown is described in Charlestown Land Records, as printed by the Boston Record Commissioners, page 50. His will of April 21, 1658, names his wife Joanna. She was his second wife, the widow of John Shatswell, of Ipswich, who brought him a large estate. Mr. Greene (1639) died April 22, 1658. His tombstone, now broken and defaced, near Harvard's monument, once bore this inscription:—

"MEMORIAL OF YE JVST IS BLESSED.

"Here lyeth ye body of Mr. John Greene, born in London in Old England, who married Perseverance, the daughter of [Rev. Francis] Johnson, in Amsterdam, by whom he had 6 children, with whom and 3 children he come to Charlestown, in New England, in 1632, was rvlng elder in ye church, and deceased April 22, 1658, leaving behind 2 sons and one daughter, viz. John, Jacob, and Mary, who erected this Monvment to the memory of him and his wife, their father and mother."

**Walter Haynes** (1639), of Sudbury, was one of the first proprietors of that town. He, with his wife, Elizabeth, and three children under sixteen years of age, embarked in the ship "Confidence," of London, for America, leaving Southampton April 24, 1638. Mr. Haynes (1639) is recorded as being fifty-five years of age. He is called a "Lennen Weaver," from Sutton, Mandifield, in the county of Wilts, England. He was admitted a freeman May 13, 1640; was appointed commissioner in Sudbury, in 1640, "to end small businesses"; clerk of the writs in 1641-5; represented the town of Sudbury in the General Court in 1641-4, 1646, 1648, and 1651, and was one of the selectmen of that town for ten years. "Mr. Haynes," says the historian of Sudbury, "was probably one of the first grantees to erect a house on the east side of the river, which was probably the 'Haynes Garrison.'" It stood until 1876, when it was taken down. Descendants of Walter Haynes (1639) were: Capt. Aaron Haynes, who commanded a Sudbury company that marched to Concord, April 19, 1775; Dea. Josiah Haynes, who was slain in that fight,

**Walter Haynes** (1639). **AUTHORITIES:** Hudson's Hist. of Sudbury; Savage's Gen. Dict.

This name is given in the oldest record book as "Mr. — Haines." Mr. Whitman (1810) concluded it was Walter Haynes, of Sudbury. It might have been Gov. John Haynes, of Connecticut. It does not seem possible to decide which became a member of the Company.

**John Haynes** arrived in America in the ship "Griffin," Sept. 3, 1633, coming from Copford Hall, in Essex, England. He became a freeman May 14, 1634, was elected an assistant in 1634 and 1636, and governor in 1635. May 2, 1637, he removed to Hartford, Conn., was elected the first governor of that colony in April, 1639, and continued to hold that office every second year afterward until his decease, March 1, 1654.

He seems to have been interested in military affairs. Sept. 25, 1634, he was appointed by the General Court "to ouersee the amunicon house, to be builte att Newe Towne"; May 6, 1635, was appointed a commissioner of military affairs, and Dec. 13, 1636, was made colonel of the Middlesex Regiment.

He was married first in England. His two eldest sons remained in England, and took part in the civil war; another son, by his first wife,

returned to England. His second wife was Mabel, sister of Roger Harlakenden, by whom he had four children. While in Cambridge he resided on the westerly side of Winthrop Square, his lot extending from Mt. Auburn Street to Winthrop Street.

"His great integrity and wise management of all affairs so raised and fixed his character in the esteem of the people of Connecticut that they always, when the Constitution would permit, placed him in the chief seat of government, and continued him in it until his death."

June 5, 1638, Gov. Haynes came to Boston with Unkus, the Monahagan sachem, and thirty-seven men, to consult in regard to Indian affairs. — See *Winthrop's Journal*, Vol. I., p. 265.

Toward the last of May, 1639, Gov. Haynes, of Connecticut, visited Boston again, with Rev. Mr. Hooker, and coming into the bay, staid near a month. They came to renew the treaty of confederation with the Massachusetts Bay Colony. Gov. Haynes was therefore in Boston the first Monday in June, 1639, at which time he may have joined the Artillery Company.

**John Haynes.** **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Trumbull's Hist. of Conn.; Bridgman's Pilgrims of Boston.

at the age of eighty, and Joshua Haynes, who was killed at Bunker Hill. Sergt. Walter Haynes — for he is so called on the town records — was prominent in all town matters, and, with Brian Pendleton (1646), was active in founding a church and erecting the first meeting-house in Sudbury. He died Feb. 14, 1665.

**John Leverett** (1639), of Boston, was a son of Thomas Leverett, the ruling elder of the First Church, who resigned his office of alderman of the borough of Boston, England, just previous to his sailing from London, and arrived, Sept. 4, 1633, at Boston, Mass. John Leverett (1639), born July 7, 1616, came over with his parents, Rev. Mr. Cotton, Mr. Haynes (1639), afterward governor, and other eminent persons, in the "Griffin." He joined the First Church July 14, 1639, when Rev. Mr. Cotton, the spiritual teacher of his boyhood, was pastor, and was admitted a freeman May 13, 1640. "No man in our country," says Savage, "ever filled more important offices, nor with happier repute."

He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1641, junior sergeant in 1642, senior sergeant in 1643, lieutenant in 1648, and was elected commander three times, viz.: in 1652, 1663, and 1670. He is called "Sergeant" Sept. 27, 1642, in the Records of Massachusetts Bay; was appointed captain under Sergt.-Major Gibbons (1637), Aug. 12, 1645, to take the field against the Narraganset Indians; in 1652 was captain of a troop of horse, and the same year the South Company in Boston chose him as its captain. In 1662, he was granted one thousand acres of land in consideration of his services to the colony, and five hundred more in 1671. May 23, 1666, he was voted "thanks" by the General Court, and one hundred pounds as a gratuity, for his care and pains in completing the batteries of Boston and mounting the great artillery. In 1663, he was chosen major-general of the colony, and held that office ten years.

He was concerned in trade with Gen. Gibbons (1637), wherein several ships and cargoes were lost. Ten thousand dollars were lost by the wrecking of one vessel. He was appointed one of the commissioners to the Dutch Governor of New York, and was made commander of the forces contemplated to be raised in 1653, in case of war with the Dutch. He was also captain of a troop of horse in Cromwell's service, in 1656.

He seems to have spent most of his life in the service of the colony, for he was chosen deputy for Boston in 1651, 1652, and 1653, and again, 1663, 1664, and 1665. He was speaker of the House part of the year 1651, and also in 1663 and 1664. In 1665, he was chosen from the House of Deputies to be an assistant, and was continued in that office until 1670. He was elected deputy-governor in 1671 and 1672, and governor from 1673 to 1678, and died March 16, 1679, while holding that office. May 28, 1679, the General Court appropriated one hundred pounds towards the interment of his remains.

Mr. Leverett (1639) went to England in 1644-5, and was appointed a captain in the regiment of Col. Rainsburrow (1639), but soon returned to Boston. In August, 1676, the King, Charles II., conferred the order of knighthood upon him. He suppressed that title, or the knowledge of it, during life; his previous republican employments, and the genius of our colonial government, made him wisely conceal it. He was in England at the Restoration, advocating the interest of the colony, which may have

**John Leverett** (1639). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Histories of Harv. Coll.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Reports of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660, 1660-1701;

Bridgman's Pilgrims of Boston; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850, 1851, 1876; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Records of Mass. Bay, 1640-1679.

made his talents and influence known to the King, who afterwards, when Mr. Leverett (1639) was in his highest colonial dignity, honored him.

He was one of the four persons to whom, in 1664, the patent, or first charter, was delivered by the General Court, to be kept safe and secret, together with a duplicate. They were directed to dispose of them as might be safest for the country. The other three persons were Gov. Bellingham, Capt. Thomas Clarke (1638), and Capt. Edward Johnson (1637).

His son, Hudson, joined the Artillery Company in 1658, and his grandson, John, in 1704; and several other of his descendants have been members of the Company. His will and codicil are dated March 15, 1678 9, wherein he names his grandson, John (1704), "to be brought up to learning." His son, Hudson (1658), the father of John (1704), was given a double portion. He left, also, six daughters, and had a very large landed estate. His mansion-house, during the life of his father, Elder Thomas, was at the southeast corner of Court Street, and his father's, which he afterwards occupied, with a garden on the east side of the original site of the old or first meeting-house, had State Street on the north and the marsh of Mr. Winthrop on the south. That part of Congress Street north of Water Street was called Leverett's Lane for many years, in remembrance of the father and his son. The disease of which he died was the stone, as appears by an interleaved almanac of that year. His picture, representing him in the military costume of that day, with sword, collar, gloves, etc., is preserved in the Essex Historical Library, at Salem, Mass. That society possesses his sword, and other relics. Another portrait of the good old man, in civil attire, with a mild and benignant expression of countenance, adorns the State House of Massachusetts.

"The Governor, under the old Charter," says Hutchinson, "although he carried great porte (so does the Doge of Venice), yet his share in the administration was little more than any one of his Assistants. The weighty affairs of the war, and the agency, during his administration, conducted with prudence and steadiness, caused him to be greatly respected. . . . His funeral was splendid, as appears by the order of procession, and was not unlike that of royalty in England."

He was sent, with Edward Hutchinson (1638), on an embassy to Miantonomoh, sachem of the Narragansets, in 1642. He also had a military command under Gen. Sedgwick (1637) in expelling the French from Penobscot, in 1654. He also served as a commissioner, with Lusher (1638) and Danforth, to repair to Dover, N. H. Harvard College Records, "3<sup>d</sup> mo. 10<sup>th</sup> day, 1649," contains the paper drawn up by the Governor and magistrates, against "long hair." The following is the preamble: "Forasmuch as the wearing of long hair, after the manner of ruffians and barbarous Indians, has begun to invade New England, contrary to the rule of God's word, which says it is a shame for a man to wear long hair, as also the commendable custom generally of all the godly of our nation, until within these few years," etc. "He wore long hair, but is the first Governor that is painted without a long beard. He laid it aside at Cromwell's court."

"Order of march at the funeral of Gov. Leverett [1639], who died 16<sup>th</sup> March 1678 and was buried the first day of the next year, 25<sup>th</sup> March, 1679. —

"Mr. John Joyliff, Mr. James Whitcomb, Mr. William Tailer [1712], Mr. Richard Middlecot — to carry each a Banner Roll at the four corners of the Hearse.

"To march next before the Hearse, as followeth :

"Mr. Samuel Shrimpton [1670], or in his absence, Capt. Clap — to carry the Helmet.



"Mr. John Fairweather — to carry the Gorget.

"Mr. E. Hutchinson [1670] — Brest.

"Mr. Charles Lidget [1679] — Back.

"Mr. Sampson Sheafe — one tace.

"Mr. John Pinchon — one tace.

"Mr. Dummer [1671], in case.

"Capt Nich. Paige [1693] — One Gauntlet, Capt J Carwin — one Gauntlet.

"Lt. Edw. Willys — the Target. Capt. Edw Tyng [1668] — the Sword.

"Mr. Hezekiah Usher [1665] — one Spur. Mr Peter Sargeant — one Spur.

"Capt William Gerrish, to lead the Hearse per the Racis — and Return Waite [1662] (as Groom) per the headstall.

"Mr. Lynde [1658], Mr. Saffin, Mr. Rock [1658], N. Green — to carry Banners mixt with the Banner Roles above."

The names mentioned above clearly indicate the prominence given to the Artillery Company in the funeral honors of its late commander, Major-Gen. Sir John Leverett (1639).

Gov. Leverett's (1639) second wife, who outlived him many years, was a daughter of Major-Gen. Sedgwick (1637). She became a member of the First Church Oct. 12, 1656, and died Jan. 2, 1704, having arrived at the age of seventy-four years. She was buried on the 8th of January, and Rev. Cotton Mather preached her funeral sermon.

**Robert Long** (1639), of Charlestown, came from Dunstable, England, in the "Defence," in 1635, at the age of forty-five years, bringing his wife, Elizabeth, and ten children. He had been an innholder at Dunstable, Bedford County, England, where Rev. Zechariah Symmes, of Charlestown, Mass., had formerly preached. He was an innkeeper in Charlestown, and his house was situated "on the south of Mill hill — his houselot being bounded by the market place, meeting house lane and High Street." He was licensed Sept. 3, 1635, "to keepe a house of intertainment att Charles Towne for horse and man." In 1640, Charlestown chose him to sell wine, and the General Court approved the choice. Dec. 11, 1648, Robert Keayne (1637) and James Penn, deputies of the General Court, and in behalf of said court, signed articles of agreement with William Phillips (1644), Robert Long (1639), Hugh Gunnison (1646), William Hudson (1640), and Robert Turner (1640), vintners, by which the latter had the exclusive right to sell and retail all kind of wines in Boston and Charlestown for five years, by paying to the treasurer of the jurisdiction of Massachusetts one hundred and sixty pounds yearly, in current money. He owned, according to the Book of Charlestown Land Records, twelve other pieces of real estate, containing above one hundred and fifty acres. He died Jan. 9, 1664.

"The Great House, first used as the official residence of the Governor, was purchased in 1633, by the town, of John Winthrop and other gentlemen, for £10, and used as a meeting-house until it was sold, for £30, to Robert Long [1639] in 1635, when it became a tavern or 'ordinary,' sometimes known as the 'Three Cranes' from its sign. It stood wholly in the market-place, in front of the building lately the City Hall, at the corner of Harvard Street. The tavern was kept by Mr. Long [1639] and his descendants till 1711, when it was sold to Eben Breed, in whose family it remained until the land was bought by the town to enlarge the Square after the Revolution."

**Robert Long** (1639). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. I; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown; Records of Mass. Bay.



**John Musselwhite** (1639), of Newbury, yeoman, came in the "James" in 1635 from Southampton. He is called, in the custom-house records, "of Longford," Wilts County, England. He was first of Ipswich, and became a freeman March 22, 1639. He is named in the division of lands in Newbury, March 17, 1642, and Jan. 11, 1644. He died Jan. 30, 1671, leaving property to one sister and two brothers in Beaverstock, Wiltshire, England.

**Thomas Owen** (1639), of Boston in 1639, when he joined the Artillery Company, and in 1641, when he escaped from the Boston jail. Whitman recites the story from Winthrop, Vol. II., p. 51: "Owen [1639] was in Boston jail, for notorious suspicion of adultery. He was sentenced 'at a Quarter Court at Boston, 7th of 7th mo. 1641, for his adulterous practices [and] was censured to be sent to the gallows with a rope about his neck, and to sit upon the ladder an hour, the rope's end thrown over the gallows, and so to return to prison.' Sarah Hale, wife of William Hale, his paramour, was sentenced to the like, and after to be banished. Several men and women, who were concerned in his escape to Noddles Island, especially Maverick [1658], were severely fined. Owen [1639] also was fined £20, and if not paid in a week, to be severely whipped. Among other things, Hale, the husband, was admonished to take heed of the like concealment. Seven of the persons censured have the title or prefix of respect. This suspicion must therefore have originated among the better sort of people."

**Herbert Pelham** (1639), of Cambridge, came over in 1638, bringing his daughter, Penelope, after he had befriended the cause of the colony as a member of the company in London for ten years. He was educated at Magdalen Hall, Oxford, graduating in 1619, when he was eighteen years of age. By profession a lawyer, he is called "gent," and Gov. Hutchinson says, "He was of that family which attained the highest rank in the peerage one hundred years ago, as Duke of Newcastle."

He settled in Cambridge, and resided at the northwest corner of Dunster and South streets, the same estate having been previously occupied by Gov. Thomas Dudley and by Roger Harlakenden. The widow of the latter became the second wife of Herbert Pelham (1639). He was a freeman in 1645, selectman and commissioner of the United Colonies the same year, and assistant from 1645 — when Col. Stoughton (1638) had gone to England — to 1649 inclusive. In the latter year he returned to England, and resided at Buer's Hamlet, in Essex County. He was a commissioner of the United Colonies in 1645 and 1646, and was intrusted with much important public business. He also was the first treasurer of Harvard College, chosen Dec. 27, 1643, and the second person named in the act incorporating the Society for Propagating the Gospel among the Indians in 1649. Another incorporator of this society was Major Robert Thompson (1639).

Edward Johnson (1637) styles him "a man of courteous behaviour, humble and heavenly-minded." He was one of the Company in England in 1629, and contributed to the common stock one hundred pounds. The year following his settlement at Cam-

**John Musselwhite** (1639). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Coffin's Hist. of Newbury.

**Thomas Owen** (1639). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng. Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay.

"Thomas Owen, Boston, Ar. Co. 1639, imprisoned, 1641, perhaps unjustly, for Samuel Maverick befriended him." — *Savage's Gen. Dict.*

"Thomas Owen for escaping out of prison, was fined 20 pounds to be paid within a week or to be severely whipped." — *Records of Mass. Bay.*

**Herbert Pelham** (1639). AUTHORITIES: Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hurd's Hist. Middlesex Co.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1864, 1879; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng. Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company.

bridge his house was burned down, from which he and his family narrowly escaped. Winthrop calls the discovery of the fire, by a neighbor's wife, who heard her hens making a noise at midnight, and awakened her husband, "a special providence of God."

After his return to England, he became a member of Parliament, rendered frequent and important services to the colony, and died in June, 1673, being buried "in County Suffolk, July 1."

After his return to England, he might have again visited this country, if the extract from the *Boston News-Letter*, Aug. 19, 1826, quoted in Whitman's (1810) *History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company*, be true. It says, "This gentleman was one of the early settlers in Cambridge, prior to 1660, and a large proprietor to the first division of the lands there, in 1665. A few acres of it were called Pelham's Island. Subsequently he made larger purchases of real estate, and permitted the poorer people to cut off the original growth of timber on one hundred acres of it. He must have been considered as holding high rank in society; for his son Edward, who graduated at college in 1673, was placed at the head of his class; and this same son inherited all his estate in the then colony of Massachusetts. He returned to England before 1672, for his will was dated, in January of that year, at Ferrer's, in Buer's Hamlet, in the County of Essex, where he died. His will was proved at London, in March, 1676. Some of his posterity are citizens of the United States, at this day."

**William Rainsburrow** (1639), of Charlestown in 1639, in which year he joined the Artillery Company, had, the next year, property in Watertown. He probably intended to live in America, for he purchased, in the first year of his residence here, the old meeting-house, as Mr. Budington, in the *History of Charlestown*, p. 195, has shown; but he returned to England before the civil war, in which he acquired distinction. He was related to Gov. John Winthrop by marriage. Col. Rainsburrow's sister, Judith, married Stephen (1641), a son of Gov. John Winthrop.

On his return to England, he was appointed to be captain of a troop of horse intended for Ireland, and also governor of Worcester. He was highly favored by Cromwell, and was appointed colonel of a regiment in the Parliament's service, with Israel Stoughton (1637) as lieutenant-colonel, Nehemiah Bourne (1638) as major, John Leverett (1639) as captain, and William Hudson (1640) as ensign,—all of whom were citizens of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts. He was assassinated in Ireland, Oct. 29, 1648.<sup>1</sup> His daughter, Martha,

**William Rainsburrow** (1639). AUTHORITIES: *Savage's Gen. Dict.*; *Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.*; *Records of Mass. Bay, II.*; *Clarendon's Hist. of Rebellion*; *Bond's Watertown.*

<sup>1</sup> Samuel Adams Drake, in his *New England Legends and Folk-Lore*, tells the story of the "Death of Rainsburrow. Col. Rainsburrow (1639) was repeatedly promoted by Cromwell, and at the immediate storming of Bristol, commanded a brigade. How well he planned and fought the Protector tells in an official letter. For his bravery, the Earl of Fairfax deputed Col. Rainsburrow (1639) as one of the officers to receive the surrender of the place; and Cromwell appointed him as one of the commissioners to treat with the King.

"When the insurrection preceding the second civil war broke out, Rainsburrow [1639] was in command, and on board the English fleet. He is there called Admiral Rainsburrow [1639]. The sailors embracing the Royalist side put the admiral ashore,

and, going to London, entered upon his last service in Yorkshire. At the head of the Parliament army, he established his headquarters at Doncaster, near Pomfret. The Royalists planned the surprise and capture of Rainsburrow [1639]. Twenty-two picked men, well mounted, under the Royalist Capt. Paulden, passed through the besiegers lines into Doncaster undiscovered. Four troopers forced an entrance into the colonel's lodgings. Rainsburrow [1639] was arrested; brought out of his house, and ordered to mount a horse, which stood ready saddled. The colonel, at first, seemed willing to mount, but, on reflection for a moment, he determined to fight his four enemies. The colonel's lieutenant was slain while endeavoring to assist his superior officer. Though wounded and bleeding, the fight waged fiercely until one of the party run his sword through his body, when the brave Gen. Rainsburrow [1639] fell dead upon the pavement of the courtyard."

was married three times: (1) Thomas Coitmore (1639); (2) Gov. John Winthrop; (3) John Coggan (1638).

"The Great House," in Charlestown, once occupied by Robert Long (1639) as an inn, was used by the Charlestown church, Oct. 14, 1632, for a place of meeting. In 1636, another building was occupied by that congregation, but its precise location is not known. The *Memorial History of Boston*, Vol. I., p. 394, says, "November 26, 1639, William Rainsborough bought the old meeting-house for £100, which was used towards paying for 'the new meeting house newly built in the town on the south side of the Town Hill.'"

**Henry Saltonstall** (1639), of Watertown, youngest son of Sir Richard Saltonstall, was born in England, and came to America, probably with his father, in 1630. He graduated in the first class in Harvard College in 1642, and therefore must have become a member of the Company before he entered, or while a student there. He went to England and thence to Holland with his father, in 1644, Sir Richard being ambassador from England at that time. It was during this visit that a portrait of Sir Richard was painted by Rembrandt. Henry studied medicine, and in October, 1649, received the degree of M. D. from the university in Padua, and June 24, 1652, a degree at Oxford, England. He and William Stoughton, chief-justice, son of Israel Stoughton (1637), were, by order of Parliament, created fellows of the New College, Oxford, England.

**Robert Sampson** (1639), of Boston in 1630, son of John and Bridget (Clopton) Sampson, came in the same ship with Gov. Winthrop, who calls the former "cousin," in a letter to his wife. Mr. Sampson's (1639) mother was a sister of Gov. Winthrop's second wife. Savage says that Robert Sampson's "family was ancient in the rank of knights, residing at Sampson's Hall, in the parish of Kersey, near Groton."

He probably returned to England soon after becoming a member of the Company. He was one of the sureties for Mr. David Yale, when he joined the Company in the year 1640.

**Anthony Stoddard** (1639), of Boston in 1639, a linen-draper, joined the First Church Sept. 28, 1639, was admitted a townsman the 26th of August preceding, and became a freeman May 13, 1640. His first wife was Mary Downing, of Salem, a niece of Gov. Winthrop; his second wife was the widow of Capt. Joseph Weld (1637), of Roxbury. She died in 1654, and he married Christian —, after whose decease he married Mary, widow of Major Thomas Savage (1637). The remark of Sewall (1679) in his *Diary* seems to be true, — Anthony Stoddard was "the ancientest shop-keeper in town."

He was a man of great influence in Boston. As early as 1641 he was a constable. Winthrop (Vol. II., p. 39) relates a story of the constable's scruple to obey the Gov-

**Henry Saltonstall** (1639). *AUTHORITIES*: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1879; Bond's Watertown; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Robert Sampson** (1639). *AUTHORITIES*: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng., Vol. I., p. 445, Appendix.

**Anthony Stoddard** (1639). *AUTHORITIES*: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851; Report of Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.

"[1686-7] March 16, About 1, a'clock Mr. Anthony Stoddard dyes, was the ancientest shop-keeper in Town." — *Sewall's Papers*, Vol. I., p. 170.

"May 31, 1660, Capt Edward Johnson [1637] Mr. Anthony Stoddard [1639] and Deacon William Parkes [1638] were nominated and appointed a committee to officiate as Surveyors Generals of the country's ammunition." — *Records of Mass. Bay*.



ernor's warrant to take Francis Hutchinson into custody for freedom of remarks, called "insolence." He held that office until 1644, and March 18, 1650, was chosen recorder of the town of Boston, being succeeded in that office by Thomas Savage (1637) on "16th of 1st mo., 1651." He also represented Boston in the General Court in 1650, 1659, 1660, 1666, and for eighteen successive years afterwards.

Nov. 27, 1639, he was granted one hundred acres of land at Mount Wollaston, and Feb. 31, 1641, he was chosen, with three others, "to Trade with the Indians according to the Order of the General Court." In 1643, as constable, it became his duty to pay Arthur Perry (1638) for his services as drummer for the town, also from 1647 to 1652 inclusive. March 9, 1656-7, at a general town meeting, it was ordered that "Capt. Savage [1637], Mr. Stoddard [1639], Mr. Houchin [1641], and Mr. Ed. Hutchinson, Sr., are chosen a committee to consider of the modell of the towne house, to bee built," etc. He was also rate commissioner or assessor in 1661. He died March 16, 1686-7.

Mr. Whitman (1810) relates, concerning Mr. Stoddard's (1639) scruples of 1641, that he was required to take a person — Francis Hutchinson — into custody at one of the courts in Boston till the afternoon, "and said withal to the Governor — Sir, I have come to observe what you did; that if you should proceed with a brother otherwise than you ought, I might deal with you in a church way. For this insolent behavior he was committed, but being dealt with by the elders and others, he came to see his error, which was, that he did consider that the magistrate ought not to deal with a member of the church before the church had proceeded with him. So, the next Lord's day, in the open assembly, he did freely and very affectionately confess his error, and his contempt of authority: and being bound to appear at the next court, he did the like there to the satisfaction of all. Yet, for example's sake, he was fined 20 shillings, which, though some of the magistrates would have it much less, or rather remitted, seeing his clear repentance and satisfaction in public, left no poison or danger in his example, nor had the Commonwealth or any person sustained danger by it."<sup>1</sup>

He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1642, 1644, 1646, 1648, and was third sergeant in 1650.

**Robert Thompson** (1639), of Boston in 1639, was a man of wealth and distinction in London, where, Savage thinks, he married a sister of Gov. Hopkins, of Connecticut. In 1639, though probably a transient resident in Boston, he bought the old edifice of the First Church, and the lot on which it stood on State Street, for one hundred and sixty pounds. He was a strong friend of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, and for services rendered this country he was granted five hundred acres of land. In Hutchinson's Collection are some letters of his which reveal his good disposition and wise judgment. He and Francis Willoughby (1639) were trustees of the famous will of Edward Hopkins. In 1639-41 he was one of the sureties for seven members of the Company.

**Robert Thompson** (1639). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Suffolk Deeds, III., 386.

<sup>1</sup> "7th 7mo 1641. Anthony Stoader, confess-

ing his fault in his unfitting speech to the Governor, in affronting of him, is fined 13<sup>4</sup>t." — *Records of Mass. Bay.*



**Francis Willoughby** (1639), of Charlestown, Aug. 22, 1638, called by Hutchinson, "a gentleman from England," was a son of William Willoughby, who was "a colonel of the city" of London. Francis Willoughby (1639) was a native of Kent, and had been for some time commander of a vessel. He joined the First Church in Charlestown, Oct. 10, 1639, and became a freeman May 13, 1640, from which time till his death he "was constantly engaged in public service." He was representative from Charlestown in 1642, 1646, and 1649; was chosen assistant in 1650, 1651, and 1664; was elected deputy governor in 1665, and held that office until his death, April 3, 1671, when Gen. John Leverett (1639) succeeded him.

In 1641, he, with others, invested largely in real estate in Charlestown, and built warehouses and wharves, and "prayed the court" to appoint fixed charges for wharfage, portorage, and storage. His wharves were on each side of the ferry ways, and his shipyard on the site of the Fitchburg Railroad depot, or on Warren Avenue, where, in 1641, he was engaged in building a ship.

He went to England in 1651, and remained nearly eleven years. In 1652, he was appointed commissioner of the navy for Portsmouth, and in 1658-9 was a member of the British Parliament.

In 1662, when it was desired by the General Court of Massachusetts Bay to congratulate King Charles upon his restoration, a letter was written to Herbert Pelham (1639), Nehemiah Bourne (1638), Francis Willoughby (1639), and others, in London, asking them to supply the commissioners, upon their arrival, with such funds as they might require on account of the colony.

His widow, Margaret, married, Feb. 8, 1675, Capt. Laurence Hammond (1666), of Charlestown. Francis Willoughby (1639) left a large estate, for those times, being estimated at over four thousand pounds.

He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1643. The Artillery Company doubtless joined in the funeral honors which were paid on the 7th of April to Deputy-Gov. Francis Willoughby (1639).

---

**1640-1.** The officers elected were: Robert Sedgwick (1637), captain; Capt. Femys (1638), lieutenant; William Tyng (1638), ensign; senior sergeant, Thomas Savage (1637); junior sergeant, Francis Cosen (1640); clerk, John Johnson (1638). Capt. Sedgwick (1637) was one of the founders of the Artillery Company, very active and useful in its interests. It was believed that he had been a member of the present organization in London, until, on a careful examination of its rolls, his name could not be found there. It is probable that Capt. Edward Johnson (1637) confounded the Artillery Garden with the Military Garden. "These Nurseries or Academies of Military Science," as they are styled by Lieut.-Col. Alton, a contemporary writer, were noted as having produced many good officers. "The Military

**Francis Willoughby** (1639). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1876, 1880; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown; Wyman's Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Vol. II.; Hurd's Hist. Middlesex Co., Vol. I.; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"1671, April, Mr Francis Willoughby, Deputy Gover. of the Massachusetts Colony dyed. He desired to be buried one foot deep and to have ye

top of his grave plain, only covered with the turfs of grass." — *Bradstreet's Journal*.

Eleven foot companies were in attendance at his funeral, "with the doleful noise of trumpets and drums, in their mourning posture, three thundering volleys of shot discharged, answered with the loud roaring of the great guns, rending the heavens with noise at the loss of so great a man." — *Noadiah Adams*.

Garden," he continues, "is famous for the great improvement of divers worthy persons of quality daily resorting, whose excellent skill in military exercises hath raised many of them to high preferment here at home and to places of honorable command abroad. The Captains-in-Chief of these academies are Major General Skippon and Major Henry Tellier, which latter was the first that ever showed in the Military Garden, (of which I am a member,) the marching of the souldiers in a regimental way."

The new members recruited in 1640-1 were : Joseph Cooke, David Courtney, Francis Cosen, Wentworth Day, Henry Dunster, Daniel Fisher, Joshua Fisher, John Friend, John Gutteridge, William Hudson, John Humfrey, John Hurd, Thomas Lechford, Lawrence Litchfield, Henry Looker, Francis Lyall, Thomas Marshall, James Oliver, Ralph Ory, Henry Phillips, Samuel Shepard, Christopher Stanley, Robert Turner, David Yale.

**Joseph Cooke** (1640), elder brother of Col. George Cooke (1638), came in the "Defence" in 1635, aged twenty-seven years. They were from Earl's Colne, in Essex, and there enjoyed the spiritual teaching of Rev. Thomas Shepard, who came in the same ship. Joseph (1640) and his brother George (1638) were registered as servants to Roger Harlakenden. The position was assumed as a disguise to enable them to leave England more easily. Even their teacher and friend, Rev. Thomas Shepard, embarked under a fictitious name and character, being styled "John Shepperd, husbandman."

These brothers became prominent citizens. Joseph's residence was on the east side of Holyoke Street, near Holyoke Place, in Cambridge. Connected with his house were several acres of land, extending northerly to Mount Auburn Street, and southerly and easterly to the marsh ; besides which, he owned several other houses and lots. He was admitted a freeman March 3, 1636, and was selectman of Cambridge from 1635 to 1645, except two years ; town clerk from 1635 to 1641 ; local magistrate from 1648 to 1657, and representative from 1636 to 1641. He also was a military man, for when his brother George (1638) had gone to England, "the Court think meet," says the record, "to desire Mr. Joseph Cooke [1640] to take charge of the Company in the absence of the Captain, and till the Court shall take further orders." He had charge of the Cambridge company from October, 1645, to November, 1647. Oct. 5, 1652, the County Court empowered "Mr. Henry Dunster [1640] and Mr. Joseph Cooke [1640] to improve the estate of Col. George Cooke [1638], deceased, for the good of Mary Cooke, his daughter," etc. Joseph Cooke (1640) went to England in 1658, and in 1665 was residing at Stannaway, Essex County, at which time he conveyed his homestead, and several lots of land, to his son. It is not known that he returned to America.

**David Courtney** (1640). The name Courtney is very plainly written on the oldest roll in the possession of the Artillery Company, but the authorities do not appear to mention it.

**Francis Cosen, or Cozens** (1640). This name does not appear on the old roll of the Company, but it has been inserted because, in the list of "Names of the officers of the Artillery Company . . . collected Sept 6 1680, by Nat. Barnes, Sec.," the name Francis Cosen appears in the list of officers for 1640-1. Mr. Cosen (1640) was "junior sergeant" in that year, and after his name and grade follow, in the same line, the words "Sergt. ffriend," implying that Sergt. John Friend (1640) acted as junior sergeant during a part, if not all, of the year.

**Joseph Cooke** (1640). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge.

**Wentworth Day** (1640), of Boston in 1640, has the prefix of respect on his admission to the church, Sept. 22 of that year.

April 26, 1641, "Our brother Mr Wentworth Day hath graunted unto him 100 acres of land for his greate Lott at Muddy River out of a parte of that land which was appoynted for the Comune." "He was a surgeon," Savage says, "at Cambridge," and is honored by Rev. Mr. Hale, of Beverly, in his tract on Witchcraft, as saving, in 1652, "a woman charged with the horrid offence." Probably he returned home, for one with his unusual name was, in 1658, fined and imprisoned, as one of the "fifth monarchy men," and for disturbing the reign of Oliver Cromwell. In 1661, he was living in London, and had a legacy in the will of Edward Shrimpton.

**Henry Dunster** (1640), Boston and Cambridge, was a son of Henry Dunster of Balehault, England. He came over in 1640, and resided for a short time in Boston, on the north corner of Court and Washington streets. Dec. 13, 1641, the Cambridge records refer to Mr. Dunster's barn and the town spring near by. The barn stood on the northerly side of Brattle Street, near Church Street. In 1649, the town gave him four hundred acres of land. He was a member of the Cambridge church, and was admitted a freeman June 2, 1641. He was educated at Magdalen College, in the University of Cambridge, receiving his degrees in 1630 and 1634. He was elected president of Harvard College, Aug. 27, 1640, and resigned that office Oct. 24, 1654. Subsequently he preached in Scituate, and died there in February, 1659; but, as specially directed in his will, he was buried in Cambridge.

**Daniel Fisher** (1640), of Dedham, son of Anthony and Mary Fisher, of Dedham, was born at Syleham, Suffolk County, England, about 1620. He was a brother of Anthony (1644), and a cousin of Joshua (1640). He was admitted into the Dedham church in 1639. The record is as follows: "Daniel Fisher who appeared to be a tender hearted & hopeful, Christian young man, as also divers of ye y<sup>t</sup> had long knowne him testified & so was easily and gladly received." He became a freeman May 13, 1640, and married, Nov. 18, 1641, Abigail Marriot, of Cambridge. He died Oct. 8, 1683, and his widow followed him upon the eleventh of the same month.

Mr. Fisher (1640) was "learned in the law," captain of militia, selectman of Dedham in 1650, and for thirty-two years representative to the General Court, from 1658 to 1682, — excepting two years, — town clerk, town surveyor, clerk of the writs, speaker of the House of Deputies three years, and in 1683, the year of his decease, was elected to the office of "assistant." In 1658, he is called in the colony records, "Sergeant";

**Wentworth Day** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Henry Dunster** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Life of Henry Dunster, First President of Harvard College, by Rev. J. Chaplin, D. D., 1872; Life of the same, by Samuel Dunster, 1876; Histories of Harvard College; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1873.

**Daniel Fisher** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Dedham Records; 250th Anniversary of Dedham, p. 65; Dedham Hist. Reg., 1892, p. 187, *et seq.*; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

Lydia Fisher, daughter of Capt. Daniel (1640) was born in Dedham July 14, 1652. In 1671, she

went to Hadley into the family of Rev. John Russell, where for a year or more she waited upon the regicides, Whalley and Goff, who fled to this country to escape the wrath of Charles II. (See Palfrey's Hist. of New Eng., Vol. II.; Dedham Hist. Reg., Vol. III., p. 117, Vol. IV., p. 20; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1862; 250th Anniversary of Dedham, pp. 66, 209.)

Mr. Worthington says, in the last-named book, "The place where the Regicides were then concealed was known to but few persons in the whole Colony, and Lydia Fisher deserves to be remembered as a woman who not only kept a simple secret, but a great colonial secret."



in 1673, he was promoted from ensign to captain of the Dedham company. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1655.

A list of the duties he discharged, and of the various positions on committees, etc., which he held, are set forth in detail in the Dedham Historical Register, Vol. III., p. 187, *et seq.* His residence in Dedham was on what is now Lowder Street, on the estate owned by Mrs. Rodman.

In February, 1681, Randolph, the agent of King James in the colony, exhibited articles of high misdemeanor against a "faction" (so called by Randolph) in the General Court, to the lords in council. Among these men thus selected to be the victims of royal indignation was Capt. Fisher (1640). June 14, 1682, Randolph wrote to the Earl of Clarendon that a *quo warranto* had issued against the colony charter, and that a warrant had been sent out to carry Thomas Danforth, Samuel Nowell, Daniel Fisher, and Elisha Cook to England, to answer for high crimes and misdemeanors, and intimates that the prosecution which his papers and evidence would support would make their faction tremble.

"Capt. Fisher [1640] was speaker of the House at this time, and was, we must believe, a man of great influence therein, otherwise he would not have been so much noticed at the British court. Indeed, in such a time, his high spirit and resolute mind would not permit him to be a timid and wavering man. He lived not to witness the capture of Sir Edmund Andros, and the other associates of his tyranny, at Fort Hill, in April, 1689, and an end put to their oppressions by that event. But it must be remembered that he contributed much to cherish that firm spirit of resistance, which produced that change, and which early taught what a brave and united people might do. Many of his descendants have inherited his high and patriotic spirit. I relate one anecdote, which illustrates the character of this family, and the spirit of the times. It was told me by the Hon. Ebenezer Fisher, of this town, late one of the Council, a descendant of Capt. Fisher. When Sir Edmund was captured on Fort Hill, by the Bostonians, he surrendered, and went unarmed to Mr. Usher's [1638] house, where he remained under guard for some hours. When the news of this event reached Dedham, Capt. Daniel Fisher [born in 1650], the son of the proscribed patriot, then dead, — a stout, strong man, possessing his father's hatred of the tyrant, and his resolute spirit, — instantly set out for Boston, and came rushing in with the country people, who were in such a rage and heat as made all tremble again. Nothing would satisfy the country party but binding the Governor with cords, and carrying him to a more safe place. Capt. Fisher was seen among the crowd, leading the pale and trembling Sir Edmund by the collar of his coat from the house of Mr. Usher [1638], back to Fort Hill. History has informed us of this incident in that revolution, but it has never informed us who took the lead of the country people, and who had the honor of leading the proud representative of a Stuart Prince, the oppressor of the colony, through the assembled crowd, and placing him in safe custody at the fort."

Capt. Fisher (1640) "was likewise much employed in the various affairs of the town. Did any enterprise require a hardy and skilful agent, he was the man most likely to be selected. In 1663, he, with another, went through the wilderness in search of a tract of good land, which a vague rumor had hinted was about twelve miles from Hadley. He had the honor of being sent an ambassador to King Philip, to negotiate a treaty for his lands at Wrentham."

The late distinguished Fisher Ames was descended maternally from him.



**Joshua Fisher** (1640), of Dedham, son of Joshua, first cousin of Anthony (1644) and of Daniel (1640), was baptized at Syleham, England, April 2, 1621. He came to Dedham in 1637, and joined the Dedham church in August, 1639. He was admitted a freeman May 13, 1640. He married, (1) Nov. 15, 1643, Mary Aldis, of Dedham, who died Sept. 3, 1653, and, (2) Feb. 16, 1654, Lydia, widow of Samuel Oliver (1648), of Boston. He died at Dedham, Aug. 10, 1672, and his widow died Feb. 2, 1683.

Mr. Fisher (1640) was very active in town matters. He was town clerk four years, and selectman twenty-one years. He was licensed by the General Court, Oct. 20, 1658, "to sell strong water to relieve the inhabitants, being remote from Boston, for one year." His tavern was near the present junction of High and Court streets, in Dedham, to the keeping of which his son, Capt. Joshua, succeeded. The inventory of his estate shows that he was surveyor, apothecary, and innholder, and he was likewise "a maker of artistic maps."<sup>1</sup>

In 1642, the town granted him a lot of eight acres, and another of six acres, and the next year an additional lot. From the colonial archives of Massachusetts Bay we learn that in 1648 he was appointed lieutenant of the military company in Dedham, and usually after this time he is styled "Lieutenant," and when he is not, his name is connected with some survey that identifies his individuality. In 1649, he petitioned for relief from the excise of wines; in 1650 was appointed by the General Court to run the line between Sudbury and Watertown; in 1653, 1662, 1663, 1664, 1666, 1667, 1668, 1671, and 1672, was elected deputy to the General Court; in 1656 was appointed to lay out Mr. Alcock's land, also Mr. Bradstreet's eight hundred acres; in 1664, the General Court granted him three hundred acres of land for surveying the south line of the patent of Massachusetts Bay, next to Plymouth; in 1666, he settled the controversy between Mr. Z. Gold and Gov. Endicott, as to land bounds, and laid out Gov. Endicott's farm, on Ipswich River; in 1667 was appointed, with others, to lay out the town of Mendon; also to lay out Dedham's eight thousand acres, near Hadley. In 1670, the General Court ordered a further survey of the line between Massachusetts and Plymouth, and Oct. 11, 1670, the bill, forty shillings, of Lieut. Fisher (1640), for doing the same, was paid to his children. The survey was reported to the General Court May 15, 1672, and Lieut. Fisher (1640) died in August of that year.

From the records of Dorchester, we learn that Lieut. Fisher (1640) was employed to run the line between Dedham and Dorchester; in 1670, to run the line from "Blue Hill" to Plymouth; in 1661, Dorchester paid him for a new map of the town, and in 1670, for a second revised map. The Dedham records show that, in 1649, he was deputed, and undertook to make, a true plat of the outmost lines of the town.

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1648.

The honorable positions accorded him by the town, the military, and the Commonwealth, prove that he was a sagacious, capable, and active man, in whom his own and the adjoining towns had perfect confidence.

**Joshua Fisher** (1640). **AUTHORITIES:** Dedham Records; 250th Anniversary of Dedham, pp. 66, 193; Dedham Hist. Reg., 1891, 37; 1892, 191; Mass. Col. Archives; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

The tavern, fronting on High Street, passed from Capt. Joshua to his daughter Mary, wife of Dr. Nathaniel Ames, Sr. On the death of his wife, in 1737, and of his son, in 1738, Dr. Ames

inherited the property. He married, Oct. 30, 1742, Deborah Fisher, who was the mother of Fisher Ames, known in history. The tavern was called the Ames Tavern until the Revolution, when it became known as Woodward's Tavern, and was taken down in 1817. It was the birthplace of Fisher Ames. — See *Dedham Hist. Reg.*, Vol. II, p. 37.

<sup>1</sup> Hon. Charles Levi Woodbury's MSS.

**John Friend** (1640) was of Salem in 1637; but in 1640, "30<sup>th</sup> day of the 1<sup>st</sup> moneth," Boston Records say, "John Friend, Carpenter, now dwelling in this Towne, is to be allowed to be an Inhabitant thereof."<sup>1</sup> In 1654, he is again recorded in Salem as a carpenter. He is named in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., III., 159, in connection with the Pequot War.

His removal to Boston was perhaps occasioned by his obtaining work at Cambridge. In the History of Harvard College, by Josiah Quincy, it appears that John Friend (1640) was one of the carpenters who worked on the first college building. His name occurs several times in the treasurer's reports, as being paid for his labor. In 1639, he made a donation in work to the college of £7 8s.; the same year discounted £10 on his bill, and made another donation of £3 10s. He was a sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1640.

His will was dated Jan. 4, 1656, in which year he died, probably at Salem.

**John Gutteridge** (1640) (Goodridge), of Boston in 1640, was a tailor. He became a member of the church Jan. 29, 1642, and a freeman May 18 of that year. He was admitted to be a townsman in Boston, Jan 31, 1641-2. By his wife, Prudence, he had a son, born in Boston, Oct. 1, 1642.

**William Hudson** (1640), of Boston, was admitted a freeman Oct. 12, 1640. "Before the birth of his daughter, Hannah," March 12, 1644, he went to England and served as ensign in the company of John Leverett (1639), under Israel Stoughton (1637), Rainsburrow's (1639) regiment, in the Earl of Manchester's army, on the side of Parliament. He became tired of the service and returned home. His return may have been hastened "by a sad business which fell out this year [1645] in Boston," an account of which is given in Winthrop's History, Vol. II., p. 249, and is quoted by Whitman in his History of the Artillery Company, second edition, p. 105. According to the Boston Records, "April 2, 1638, William Hudson [1640], called 'the Younger,' was granted a lot at Muddy River for 3 heads; July 2, 1639, Richard Carter carpenter may buy a house and ground of William Hudson [1640] the Younger, next Thos Oliver's new house plot; condition, inoffensive carriage; March 30, 1640, he was allowed by the General Court to keep an ordinary, and was elected a surveyor at Boston in 1647." He sold his house and garden, on Washington Street, between West and Boylston streets, to Richard Carter, in 1639. By Boston Records, City Doc. 46, p. 94, it appears that William Hudson (1640) owned property at the corner of "Hudson's Lane now Elm Street." This was known as the "Castle Tavern," and Hudson (1640) and his wife Anne conveyed it, in 1674, to John Wing (1671).

The two hundred soldiers to be raised in Massachusetts in 1664, for the Dutch

**John Friend** (1640). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1852; Quincy's Hist. Harv. Coll.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Gutteridge** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660.

**William Hudson** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847,

1879, 1880; King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Savage believes that John Friend (1640) was at Saybrook, Conn., prior to his being at Salem. His opinion was probably based upon the following paragraph in a letter of Gov. Winthrop to his son John, Governor of Connecticut, over date of "10 of the 4. 1636": "I pray deliver this letter enclosed to John Friend, and if he pay you the money, deliver him his bill, (which is here also enclosed;) if not, I pray return it to me."

expedition, were to be commanded by Capt. Hugh Mason and Capt. William Hudson (1640). William Hudson (1640) was appointed a commissioner to King Philip, at Taunton, in 1670, in company with William Davis (1643) and Thomas Brattle (1675).

William Hudson (1640) was a lieutenant in a militia company in Boston, in 1654, captain of the same in 1661, fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1646, third sergeant in 1647, second sergeant in 1650, first sergeant in 1651, ensign in 1653, lieutenant in 1656 and 1660, and captain in 1661.

Administration on his estate was granted Sept. 9, 1681, to Col. Samuel Shrimpton (1670). Bridgman describes the gravestone of Capt. William "Hutson," in King's Chapel Burial-Ground. At the top, it bears representations of "cross-bones" and an "hour glass"; under them respectively the words "*Memento mori*" and "*Fugit hori*," and beneath are the following words: "*Memento esse mortalium*. Here lyeth buried ye body of Capt William Hutson aged 67 years departed this life December ye 6, 1680."

**John Humfrey** (1640), of Lynn, was "a gentleman of great merit for his services and affection to our country in its first attempts." At the second meeting of the Massachusetts Company in London, in 1629, he was chosen deputy governor, but did not come over before July, 1634.<sup>1</sup> The company's interest demanding that he should remain in England, Thomas Dudley was chosen to serve in his place, and came over with Winthrop in 1630. Expecting the arrival of Mr. John Humfrey (1640), he was chosen assistant in 1632 and 1633, and on and after his arrival, until 1642. He was bred a lawyer, and married Susan, daughter of the third Earl of Lincoln. When Mr. Humfrey (1640) came over he brought not only his wife and children, but, says Winthrop, "more ordnance, muskets and powder."

He was one of the six original purchasers of Massachusetts Bay, March 19, 1627, from the Council of Plymouth. A royal charter was necessary. This passed the seals March 4, 1628-9. The annual election of officers under the charter took place on the 13th of May, 1629, when the governor, deputy governor, and assistants were chosen, Mr. Humfrey (1640) being the fifth assistant named. Mr. Endicott, who had been designated, April 30, 1629, as governor of the plantation, had already arrived at Salem on the 6th of September preceding. His instructions, dated London, April 30, 1629, were signed by the members of the Company of the Massachusetts Bay, including Mr. Humfrey (1640), who was elected deputy governor in 1629.

On his arrival, he settled in Lynn. His residence was on the east side of Nahant Street, and overlooked the sea, Nahant, and the beach. He owned land in Swampscott, granted him in 1632 and in 1635; he had another five hundred acres in what is now Lynnfield, including the little pond still known as Humfrey's Pond. He was admitted a member of the Salem church Jan. 16, 1638. In 1641, the General Court made him a grant of two hundred and fifty pounds, probably on account of his having had his house, barn, hay, etc., burned in 1640. The servant by whose carelessness it occurred was severely punished, being doomed to serve his master twenty-one years, without wages.<sup>2</sup>

**John Humfrey** (1640). *AUTHORITIES*: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1877; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. of 1842; Savage's Winthrop, Vols. I. and II.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston *Commercial Gazette*, Aug. 31, 1826; Lewis's Hist. of Lynn.

<sup>1</sup> "[July, 1634.] Mr. Humfrey [1640] and the lady Susan, his wife, one of the Earl of Lincoln's

sisters, arrived here." — *Savage's Winthrop*, Vol. I., p. 160.

<sup>2</sup> "Henry Stevens, for firing the barn of his master, Mr. John Humfrey [1640], he was ordered to be servant to Mr. Humfrey for 21 years from this day, towards recompensing the loss." — *Records of Mass. Bay*, I., 295, Nov. 1, 1640.



At the General Court held April 2, 1641, it was ordered that John Humfrey (1640) be "Sergeant-Major General." He was, therefore, the first person who held that office, and none other is mentioned until the organization of the militia in 1644, when Thomas Dudley was chosen to that office by the Legislature. He was appointed in 1636, with Capt. Nathaniel Turner (1637), to lay out the bounds of Ipswich. His eldest son, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1641. He returned to England Oct. 26, 1641, and died in 1661. Gov. Winthrop says, "Among the chief was John Humphrey, Esq., a gentleman of special parts of learning and activity, and a godly man, who had been one of the first beginners in promoting of this plantation and had labored very much therein. He, being brought low in his estate, and having many children, and being known to Lords of Providence [Isle], and offering himself to their service, was accepted to be the next Governor."

During his official terms as assistant, Mr. Humfrey (1640) was granted two tracts of land, — one in "Marble Head" and one in Saugus; was appointed to divide the land in Ipswich, and to lay out Mr. Dunster's farm; was one of the committee on military affairs; a commissioner concerning the will of William Paine, Sr., and was appointed to hold courts in Salem and Saugus.

Mr. Lewis, in his History of Lynn, portrays at length the character of Mr. Humfrey (1640). He says, "He was a native of Dorchester, England, — a lawyer and a man of considerable wealth and good reputation: an original patentee of the colony and treasurer of the Company. . . . It is not improbable that he experienced a secret chagrin at seeing the young and uninformed Henry Vane promoted to the office of Governor, above one whose years, knowledge, and services entitled him to precedence. It is probable, likewise, that his affection for his wife, whose hopes were in the land of her nativity, had some influence in determining his conduct. Living so far from the elegant circles in which she had delighted, and having lost the sister (Lady Arbella) who might have been the companion of her solitude, the Lady Susan was weary of the privations of the wilderness, the howling of wild beasts, and the uncouth manners of the savages, and had become lonely, disconsolate, and homesick. She had been the delight of her father's home, and had glittered in all the pride of youth and beauty, in the court of the first monarch in Europe [but] was now solitary and sad, separated by a wide ocean from her father's home. . . . What the misfortunes and disappointments of Mrs. Humfrey had begun, her importunities completed. He sold the principal part of his farm to Lady Moody and returned to England with his wife on the 26th of October, 1641. . . . The misfortunes which afterward befell some of his children, inflicted a wound on the heart of the affectionate father from which he never recovered."

**John Hurd** (1640), of Boston, was a tailor, admitted, with his wife, Mary, to the First Church July 7, 1639, and to be a freeman May 13, 1640.<sup>1</sup> "A great lot at the Mount" was granted him July 29, 1639, one house lot Feb. 24, 1639-40, and another Jan. 31, 1641-2. John Leverett (1639) granted to John Hurd (1640) a house lot in exchange for a lot in the New Field. This property of Hurd's (1640), including house

**John Hurd** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1865; see the Diary of John Hull, p. 193, with note quoting the Records of the First Church.

<sup>1</sup> "John Hord, tailor having served Mr William Hutchinson in this Town divers years is allowed to be an inhabitant." — *Boston Records*, March 25, 1639.



and garden, was situated about midway between Summer and Bedford streets, on Washington Street, and was mortgaged by Mr. Hurd (1640) in 1649, to Gov. Dudley, for twenty-three pounds. John Hurd (1640) died Sept. 23, 1690.

**Thomas Lechford** (1640), of Boston, a lawyer from Clement's Inn, London, came over in 1637. He was the first attorney who emigrated to New England. He found it difficult to earn his bread. "Attorneys were discountenanced, though not actually forbidden, and a prisoner or suitor might plead his own cause, or a friend might appear for him, but not for a fee. Lechford, for going to a jury and pleading with them out of Court was debarred from pleading any man's cause hereafter unless his own, and admonished not to presume to meddle beyond what he shall be called to by the Court."

At a court held Dec. 1, 1640, "Mr. Thomas Lechford [1640], acknowledging he had overshot himself, and is very sorry for it, promising to attend to his calling, and not to meddle with controversies, was dismissed." He tried to maintain himself as a scrivener, but obtained little employment, and his doctrinal positions were prejudicial to his success. "I am kept," he wrote, "from the Sacrament and all place of preferment in the Commonwealth, and forced to get my living by writing petty things which scarce finds me bread; and therefore sometimes I look to planting of corn, but have not yet here an house of my own to put my head in, or any stock going." Having become thoroughly discouraged, he returned to England in 1641, in the same ship with Hugh Peter, Thomas Welde, and John Winthrop, Jr.

In 1642, he issued in London a pamphlet of forty pages, entitled "Plain Dealing or Newes from New England." He gives therein minute accounts of methods in Massachusetts Bay, such as conducting elections, trials, etc. The forms of trial which so much concerned him, he thus describes: "Twice a year, in the said great Quarter Courts, held before the General Courts, are two grand juries sworn for the jurisdiction, one for one Court and the other for the other; and they are charged to inquire and present offences, reduced by the Governor, who gives the charge, (generally) under the heads of the ten commandments. Matters of debt, trespass, and upon the case, and equity, yea, and of heresy also, are tried by a jury, which, although it may seem to be indifferent, and the magistrates may judge what is law and what is equal, and some of the chief ministers inform what is heresy, yet the jury may find a general verdict, if they please; and seldom is there any special verdict found by them, with deliberate arguments made thereupon, which breeds many inconveniences. The parties be warned to challenge any juryman, but because there is but one jury in court for trial of cases, and all parties not present at their swearing, the liberty of the challenge is much hindered, and some inconveniences do happen thereby. Juries are returned by the Marshal; he was at first called the Beadle of the Society. Seldom is there any matter of record, saving the verdict, many times at random taken and entered, which is also called the judgment. The parties in all cases speak themselves, for the most part; and some of the magistrates, where they think cause requireth, do the part of advocates, without fee or reward."

Hutchinson calls him "a discontented attorney," and adds, "He left England about the year 1637, being dissatisfied with the ecclesiastical government, and having

**Thomas Lechford** (1640). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Hist. A. and H. A. Company,

Ed. 1842; Hutchinson's Hist. of New Eng.; Records of Mass. Bay, I., 294; Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. I.

made himself obnoxious by his opposition to Episcopacy. When he came to New England, he found every church-member a bishop; and not inclining to become one himself, he could not be admitted a freeman among them. The court took advantage of an offence of another nature, his going to the jury and pleading with them out of court, and debarred him from pleading any man's cause besides his own. He became in England, a zealous Episcopalian." Mr. Cotton says that Mr. Lechford (1640) died soon after he published his book.

**Lawrence Litchfield** (1640), of Barnstable, whence he removed after 1643, and, in 1646, is found in Scituate. He died in Scituate in 1650. He was sent to Boston to study the art of war, that he might command an offshoot of the Barnstable train-band about to swarm in a new location, at Sippican, on the south shore. He settled in Barnstable, near what is now called the "Great Pond," and adjoined to the estate of Gov. Hinckley. Mr. Litchfield (1640) is believed to be the progenitor of the families in New England of this name.

**Henry Looker** (1640), of Sudbury. On the oldest roll-book this name is spelled Lucar. He was admitted to be a freeman May 10, 1643. He sustained a loss of one hundred pounds by the attack of the Indians on Sudbury, April 21, 1676. Families by the name of Loker have lived within the ancient limits of Sudbury since the time of its settlement, dwelling, for the most part, in the territory now Wayland.

**Francis Lyall** (1640), of Boston in 1638, was a barber-surgeon, admitted to be an inhabitant of the town Aug. 7, 1638. He joined the First Church Sept. 29, 1639, and became a freeman May 13, 1640. The house and garden of Francis Lyle, or Lyall (1640), which he bought in 1641 of the widow of Walter Blackborne (1638), were on (the present) Washington Street, nearly opposite the head of Milk Street. Previous to this, March 25, 1639, leave was granted to "Brother Valentine Hill [1638] to build a fitting-house and a shopp upon the house plott which he hath bought that was our brother Mr William Aspinwalls [1643] and to let it to Francis Lysle [1640] Barber." This place was on State Street, opposite Merchants' Exchange.

Mr. Lyall (1640) went to England with Leverett (1639) and others, to serve in the cause of Parliament, and became surgeon in the life-guard of the Earl of Manchester. "He returned, like most of his townsmen, to New England in 1645," says Mr. Savage; but Winthrop, II., 245, states that "three of them went to England again about the end of this year, but came back again and settled themselves here, all save the surgeon."

Surgeon Lyall (1640) was in Boston, Aug. 12, 1645, for in the Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, after the appointment of Capt. Leverett (1639) to be captain in an expedition against the Narragansets, it says: "The Cort conceive that Mr Loyall, the surgeon, lately come out of that impliment [employment] of the Earle of Manchester, in England, may be fit to be sent forth with our present forces, in that impliment." The same day the General Court ordered "that a ioyner should be pressed to make a surgeon's boxe for Mr Lisle & the constable to pvide ould linnen for the surgeon's use."

**Lawrence Litchfield** (1640). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1855; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Gen. Notes of Barnstable Families, Vol. II.

**Henry Looker** (1640). **AUTHORITIES:** Hudson's Hist. of Sudbury; Records of Mass. Bay, II.

**Francis Lyall** (1640). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; Snow's Hist. of Boston, p. 118; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.

His wife, Alice, died in 1666, and her son-in-law, Freegrace Bendall (1667), administered on her estate.

**Thomas Marshall** (1640), of Lynn in 1635, was admitted to be a freeman in 1641. Whitman says he was a tailor, but he is best known as the landlord of Anchor Tavern. This renowned hostelry stood on the west side of Saugus River, on the road leading from Salem to Boston. Mr. Armitage, its first landlord, was succeeded in 1652 by Mr. John Hathorne, who was succeeded by Capt. Thomas Marshall (1640). "He was one of the most jolly and hospitable landlords, and during his administration no wayside inn throughout the colonies enjoyed a more enviable reputation." Previous to this time, however, when the reign and the life of Charles I. had reached the culminating point, his military spirit was aroused, and he went to England, and received from Cromwell a captain's commission in the Parliamentary army. He served faithfully, was honorably discharged, and returned safely to his home. Nov. 29, 1659, the Quarterly Court ordered: "Thomas Marshall of Lynn is allowed by this Court, to sell strong water to travellers, and alsoe other meet provisions." John Dunton, the London bookseller, who visited Lynn in 1686, thus wrote in his journal: "About two of the clock, I reached Captain Marshall's house, which is half-way between Boston and Salem; here I staid to refresh nature with a pint of sack and a good fowl. Capt Marshall is a hearty old gentleman, formerly one of Oliver's soldiers, upon which he very much values himself. He had all the history of the civil wars at his finger's ends, and if we may believe him, Oliver did hardly anything that was considerable without his assistance; and if I'd have staid as long as he'd have talked, he'd have spoiled my ramble to Salem."

His fellow-townsmen elected him six times, first in 1659, and last in 1668, as their representative to the General Court, besides conferring upon him minor positions of honor and respectability. On the 18th of October, 1659, Capt. Marshall (1640) was authorized by the General Court to join in marriage such persons in Lynn as conformed to the legal requirements. In 1670, he was discharged from "officiating in that employment," because his "overmuch credulity" led him into the error of marrying some whose "intentions" had not been properly published.

It was at Capt. Marshall's (1640) tavern that Judge Sewall (1679) tarried in 1686, on his way from Newbury to Boston, where he learned that Benjamin Davis (1673) had been elected captain of the Artillery Company June 7, 1686.

Capt. Marshall (1640) commanded the military company of Lynn at the time of King Philip's War, in 1675. He dispensed the hospitalities of Anchor Tavern for forty years. He was a model landlord, active, attentive, pleasing, and instructive, well versed in the affairs of church and state, both in England and Massachusetts Bay. He died Dec. 23, 1689, at the age of seventy-three years.

**James Oliver** (1640), of Boston, was the son of the ruling elder, Thomas Oliver, and brother of John Oliver (1638). James was brought by his father, in 1632, from Bristol, Somerset County, England, in the "William and Francis." He was admitted to be a freeman Oct. 12, 1640. He was captain of one of the Boston companies in 1673, and during King Philip's War was in the great fight of Dec. 19, 1675. He served

**Thomas Marshall** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. I., pp. 322-324, 508; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1872, 1879; Records of Mass. Bay.

**James Oliver** (1640). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1865, 1885; Mem. Hist. of Boston; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Records of Mass. Bay.



as a selectman of Boston from 1653 to 1656 inclusive, and from 1662 to 1678 inclusive, making a total of twenty-one years in that office. In 1653, he had the title of cornet. He held office in the militia until 1680, when, as captain, he was discharged at his own request. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1646, first sergeant in 1648, ensign in 1651, lieutenant in 1653, and captain in 1656 and 1666.

On the 3d of April, 1652, the selectmen voted that "Ensign James Oliver [1640] and Sarjt Petter Oliver [1643] are granted libertie for to set up a wind mile one the tope of the hile between the towne and the hile Called Foxhile," etc. Fox Hill was formerly a small hill in the marshes at the bottom of the Common. The oft-recurrence of the name of James Oliver (1640) in the early records of Boston, and the conferring upon him of so many positions of responsibility, prove that he was a practical, faithful, and trusted citizen. His house and yard were on State Street, next below Francis Lyall's (1640), and opposite Merchants' Exchange.

Mr. Whitman (1810) relates, "In 1675 many Indians, 'who had subjected themselves to the English, were hurried down to Deer Island, where they remained during the winter' and suffered severely. 'On the 10th of September, at nine o'clock at night, (such was the alarm of the people) there gathered together about forty men, some of note, and came to the house of Capt James Oliver [1640]; two or three of them went into his entry to desire to speak with him, which was to desire him to be their leader, and they should join together, and go and break open the prison, and take one Indian out thence and hang him. Capt Oliver [1640], hearing their request, took his cane and cudgeled them stoutly, and so for that time, dismissed the company, which had he in the least countenanced, it might have been accompanied with ill events in the end.' He was a member of the Old South Church," and died in 1682, without children.

### Ralph Ory (1640).

**Henry Phillips** (1640), of Dedham in 1637, of Boston in 1656, and of Hadley in 1672, was a butcher, and was admitted to be a freeman March 13, 1639. He married (1), "5<sup>t</sup> of the 1<sup>st</sup> mo. 1639," Mary Brock, who died Aug. 1, 1640; and he married (2), May 1, 1641, Ann Hunting. She died in a very few years, and he married for his third wife Mary Dwight.<sup>1</sup> In the winter of 1638-9, "Henry Phillips who appeared to ye church a tender and broken hearted Christian," was admitted to the church.

Mr. Worthington says, "He came to Dedham from Watertown and was solicited to become a candidate for the ministry; he chose, however, to be a candidate in another place, but some events prevented his settlement in any town, and he became as our Church Records say, 'a discouraged and broken-hearted Christian.' Mather inserts his name among the ministers, as a resident of Dedham." Henry Phillips was ensign of the Dedham company in 1648, and clerk of the Boston market in 1658. He removed to

**Henry Phillips** (1640). **AUTHORITIES:** Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Dedham Town Records; Dedham Hist. Reg., 1892.

"[1685-6] Feb. 3, Wednesday, Mr. Henry Phillips is buried with Arms, he having been an Ensign at Dedham, and in Boston several years of Capt Oliver's Company. Capt Hutchinson led the Souldiers, his and Capt Townsends' Company springing of said Oliver's, Capt Townsend and Capt Hill each of them Trailed a Pike: were about 24 Files 4

deep. Snow very deep; so in the New-burial Place [Copp's Hill], 3 Paths, 2 for the 2 Files of Souldiers, middlemost for the Relations. Edw. Cowel and Mr Winchcomb go before the Governour. Return Wait is refused though I see he was there."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 121.*

<sup>1</sup> In Suffolk Deeds, Lib. II., p. 155, is recorded a marriage contract, dated June 24, 1653, in which he makes over to Mary Dwight his dwelling-house in Dedham, with barns, orchards, and gardens, with ten acres of upland and six of meadow.



Boston about November, 1655, when he bought a house there of Joshua (1640) and Lydia Fisher. In 1672, he became a deacon in the church at Hadley, and the same year was elected to represent that town in the General Court. He was buried Feb. 3, 1686.

**Samuel Shepard** (1640), of Cambridge in 1635, came in the "Defence," aged twenty-two years, by the custom-house records. He is called a servant of Harlakenden, probably to deceive the British government. He arrived Oct. 3, 1635, was one of the first members of a new church gathered Feb. 1, 1636, in "New Town," and was admitted to be a freeman March 3, 1636. He was a half-brother of Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Cambridge. He purchased the estate on the southerly side of Harvard Street, extending from Holyoke Street to Bow Street. Samuel Shepard (1640) was an able and useful citizen. He was intrusted by the General Court, in September, 1639, with the management of the college stock, and with "the completion of the building begun by Mr. Eaton." He was selectman in 1638, representative in 1639, 1640, 1644, and 1645, clerk of the writs in 1640, and commissioner for small causes in 1641. He was intimately associated with Col. George Cooke (1638); they were both military men; both came over in the "Defence"; they served here together, and went back to England together to serve in the army of Cromwell. He was the first ensign of the military company organized in Cambridge in December, 1636, of which George Cooke (1638) was captain. In October, 1645, having been excused from their duties as members of the General Court, they sailed together for England. Both enlisted in the cause of Parliament, — Cooke (1638) as colonel, and Shepard (1640) as major. His church relation was severed prior to 1658. He had then been in Ireland several years, for under date of March 8, 1649-50, he wrote from London to Deacon Edward Collins (1641), appointing him his attorney in New England, saying, "I am within a few days to be in Ireland, if God will; but the next letters will, I hope, settle me." Edward Collins (1641) was granted administration on the estate of Samuel Shepard (1640), deceased, Sept. 15, 1673.

**Christopher Stanley** (1640), of Boston in 1635, came, at the age of thirty-two years, in the "Elizabeth and Ann," from London. He joined the First Church May 16, 1641, and was admitted a freeman on the 2d of June next following. He is called in the church records a "taylor." In 1640, he was granted one acre "upon the little island at Hogg Island"; in 1642, he was given permission to buy "the marish in the mill-field," at forty shillings per acre; May 29, 1643, he was appointed "water Bayliffe to cleare the Shoare of all offences to boates or the like"; April 2, 1644, he was granted liberty to wharf before his property near Winnisimmet Ferry, in the mill-field. He was a captain in the militia, and died March 27, 1646. He left a good estate to his widow, who married William Phillips (1644), and made the first bequest to the town for the support of schools.<sup>1</sup>

**Samuel Shepard** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. I., p. 177; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Quincy's Hist. of Harv. Coll.

"College Book, No. III., p. 3, after stating, that Nathaniel Eaton, having been convicted of sundry abuses, was, in September, 1639, removed from his trust, proceeds thus: 'The charge of carrying on the building begun by Mr. Eaton was then committed to the management of Mr. Samuel Shepard [1640], and the College Book was put into his hands.'" — *Quincy's Hist. Harv. Coll., Vol. I.*

Mr. Shepard's (1640) accounts are printed in the above-mentioned volume.

**Christopher Stanley** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1830 (will).

<sup>1</sup> 1649, April 9, the town record says, "William Phillips [1644] hath agreed to give 13s 4d per annum forever to the use of the schools for the land that Christopher Stanley [1640] gave in his will for the schools' use."

**Robert Turner** (1640), of Boston in 1633, is called in the records of the First Church, of which he became a member Sept. 8, 1633, "our brother Edward Bendall's [1638] man-servant." He was admitted a freeman March 4, 1634. In 1639, he had a wife, Penelope. Their first child was Ephraim Turner (1663), who was born Dec. 13, 1639. Mr. Turner (1640) was an innholder. He bought of Richard Fairbanks (1654), in 1652, the property where the Boston *Globe* building now stands, and erected a new building upon the lot, which afterwards became known as the "Blue Anchor" tavern. The town voted, "5th 8mo. [1652], Sergt Turner [1640] is allowed to have his new house to jet out farther into the street then his old house now standeth," etc. He furnished lodgings and refreshments to government officials, to commissioners of the United Colonies, and to the clergy, when assembled in convention by order of the General Court. The rooms in the "Anchor," or "Blue Anchor," tavern, were designated as the "Cross Keyes," "Green Dragon," the "Anchor and Castle Chamber," and the "Rose and Sun Low Room." This tavern, in 1691, was kept by the celebrated landlord, George Monck. The Boston Records inform us that on the 28<sup>th</sup> of 1 mo., 1642, the selectmen ordered the constable to pay Robert Turner (1640) eighteen shillings for "Dyet, beere and fire for the Selectmen." Gleaner's article No. XXXVI., in Vol. V. of the Reports of the Record Commissioners of Boston, gives an exhaustive account of "Robert Turner's [1640] great pasture on Beacon street and hill."

He held the office of sergeant in the Boston militia in 1652, and that of lieutenant in 1655, and until his decease. Lieut. Turner (1640) was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1659, ensign in 1661, and lieutenant in 1662.

His will of July 9, 1664, which was proved Aug. 24, 1664, "as he spoke it," is given in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. XIII., p. 11.

**David Yale** (1640), of Boston, son of David and Anne Yale, of Wales, came to America, probably, in 1637, with his stepfather, Gov. Theophilus Eaton, who married, as his second wife, Anne, the widow of David Yale, Sr. They settled in New Haven, Conn. Mr. Yale (1640) was not suited with New Haven, and very soon after his arrival moved to Boston and settled there as a merchant. He married Ursula —, by whom he had at least four children, Elizabeth, David, Elihu, born April 5, 1649, and Theophilus. Mr. Savage says David Yale (1640) "was probably driven from Massachusetts by the intolerance of the age, for his estate here was sold by his attorneys," Capt. Thomas Clarke (1638) and Capt. Thomas Lake (1653). Mr. Yale (1640) was a sympathizer with the views of Samuel Maverick (1658), Dr. Robert Child (1639), Thomas Fowle (1639), and others, and with them signed that "petition of seditious character," which brought them before the court. All except Mr. Maverick (1658) very soon returned to England.

David Yale (1640) purchased, in 1645, of Edward Bendall (1638), his house and garden, "containing two acres," which "had Sudbury [Court] Street on the east and took in Tremont Row and the centre of Scollay Square." He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1648.

Not long after the birth of Theophilus in 1652, the family returned to England and

**Robert Turner** (1640). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Mem. Hist. of Boston; Drake's Landmarks of Boston; Whitmore's Notes to John Dunton's Letters; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**David Yale** (1640). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist., Vol. II.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. of Education in Conn., No. 14, Bureau of Education, U. S. A., 1893.

settled there. Elihu, when about twenty-one years of age, went to Madras, India, to make his fortune as a merchant, and became president of Madras. He had great opportunities to acquire wealth, and in 1692 returned to England very rich. Through the influence of Mr. Drummer and Cotton Mather, Elihu Yale was induced to make a present of eight hundred pounds in goods to the college of New Haven, on account of which gift the institution was given the name of "Yale." The goods were consigned for the college to Col. William Tailer (1712), who represented Mr. Elihu Yale on commencement day, in 1718.

---

**1641-2.** The officers elected were : Edward Gibbons (1637), captain ; Thomas Savage (1637), lieutenant ; Benjamin Keane (1638), senior sergeant ; Edward Hutchinson (1638), junior sergeant ; John Leverett (1639), clerk, and Arthur Perry (1638), drummer.

The Company elected Capt. Gibbons (1637) a second time, probably on account of his superior qualifications and his great personal popularity.

The new members recruited in 1641-2 were : Thomas Barker, John Biggs, Robert Bridges, Edward Collins, Samuel Eldred, John Hardier, Joshua Hobart, Nathaniel Howard, Jeremiah Howchin, John Humfrey, Jr., John Manning, John Milam, John Mousall, John Newton, Adam Otley, George Palmer, Thomas Parish, John Severne, William Torrey, John Townsend, John Westgate, Stephen Winthrop.

**Thomas Barker** (1641), of Rowley,<sup>1</sup> came from Ragwell, in the county of Suffolk, England. He became a freeman May 13, 1640. He died in 1650, and his widow became the third wife of Rev. Ezekiel Rogers.

**John Biggs** (1641), of Boston in 1630, came, probably, with Winthrop, as he was one of the earliest members of the First Church, and was admitted to be a freeman March 4, 1634. In 1635, he removed to Ipswich, but soon returned, and being one of the sympathizers with Mr. Wheelwright, he delivered up his arms to Capt. Robert Keayne (1637) in November, 1637. He probably lived in Exeter, N. H., a short time, where Wheelwright and his followers established themselves in 1638. A grant of land was made to him, west of North Russell Street, in Boston, in 1641. His dwelling was on Court Street, on the third lot from Washington Street, on the east side. He was one of the donors, Aug. 12, 1661, "towards the maintenance of a free-schoolmaster." Mr. Biggs (1641) was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1659.

**Robert Bridges** (1641), of Lynn in 1640, was admitted a freeman June 2, 1641. Soon after, he went to England, but returned with John Winthrop, Jr., in 1643. He was captain of the Lynn train-band at the organization of the militia in 1644, and the same year was elected deputy from Lynn. He was twice re-elected, 1645 and 1646, and the

**John Biggs** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; New Eng. Reg., 1861, p. 252 (will).

**Robert Bridges** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Lewis's Hist. of Lynn; Hurd's

Hist. of Essex Co., p. 294; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.

<sup>1</sup> Savage's Gen. Dict., Vol. I.



latter year he was speaker of the House of Representatives. He was elected assistant in 1647, and was yearly re-elected until 1656, the year of his death.

He was a man of property, ability, and marked traits of character. In 1645, he was appointed, with Richard Walker (1638) and Sergt. Marshall, by the New England Confederation, to negotiate with Monsieur d'Aulnay, knight captain-general for the King of France, Governor of the French province of Acadia. The negotiation was successful, and the commissioners were duly recompensed, Capt. Bridges (1641) being paid ten pounds.

In 1645, Capt. Bridges (1641) was one of a committee of five members of the House, to draft bills "for positive lawes" against lying, Sabbath-breaking, profanity, drunkenness, and kindred vices. He joined with the Governor and assistants in 1649, and signed a "protestation against the prevailing custom of wearing long hair, 'after the manner of ruffians and barbarous Indians.'" In the month of June, 1654, "Thomas Wheeler [was] bound over to the Court by the worshipful Captain Bridges [1641] for sinful and offensive speeches made by him in comparing Rev. Mr. Cobbett to Corah." Wheeler was sentenced to make public acknowledgment, pay the witnesses £12 2s. 6d., and fees of the court.

"On Sunday, July 20, 1651, three men of the Baptist persuasion, from Rhode Island, named Clark, Crandall, and Holmes, went to the house of one Witter, at Swampscott, where Mr. Clark began to preach. On hearing this, Capt. Bridges [1641], the magistrate, sent two constables to apprehend them, as disturbers of the peace. In the afternoon, they were taken to Mr. Whiting's meeting, where they refused to uncover their heads. Mr. Bridges [1641] ordered a constable to take off their hats, when one of them attempted to speak, but was prevented. At the close of the meeting, one of them made some remarks, after which they were taken to the Anchor Tavern, and guarded through the night. In the morning they were sent to Boston and imprisoned." From such incidents, it would seem that though Capt. Bridges (1641) was honest, religious, and faithful to his convictions, yet he was exacting, and rigorous, if not bigoted. Johnson says, "He was endued with able parts, and forward to improve them to the glory of God and his people's good."

In 1642, he took specimens of the bog-ore found in Lynn to London, and formed a company, which soon after set up a bloomery and forge. Winthrop having inspired him to that undertaking, was the probable cause of his return to New England in 1643. Capt. Bridges (1641) lived to see this enterprise fail, and the property sold to pay Mr. Savage's (1637) attachment, notwithstanding the material aid granted by the colony. Suits against the company were protracted through twenty years. Hubbard says "that, instead of drawing out bars of iron for the country's use, there was hammered out nothing but contention and lawsuits." Lewis adds, "They continued in operation on a small scale for more than one hundred years. The heaps of scoria are nearly overgrown with grass, and are called 'cinder-banks.'"

In 1644, by order of the General Court, Capt. Bridges (1641) had "the care of two great guns" belonging to the town of Lynn. On the 28th of April, 1648, his house was consumed by fire. He died in 1656, having lived in constant activity, loyal to the colony, and devoted to its best interests. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1642, and lieutenant in 1644.



**Edward Collins** (1641), of Cambridge in 1636, was admitted a freeman May 13, 1640. He joined the Cambridge church, and was elected a deacon therein before 1658. Mr. Collins (1641) was a representative from 1654 to 1670, and held various town offices in Cambridge. During his service in the General Court, he served on some of the most important committees. He was an intimate friend of Gen. Gookin (1645). For some years he lived on the farm of Gov. Cradock, in Medford, and finally purchased it for four hundred and fifty pounds. He sold one thousand six hundred acres to Richard Russell (1644), and the remainder to other parties. His residence in Cambridge was on the easterly side of Holyoke Street, nearly opposite the present site of the printing-office. This estate he sold to Gen. Gookin (1645), in whose family it remained until 1760. "In 1675, Mr. Collins [1641], at the age of seventy-three years, was still engaged in speculations in real estate" in Medford. He was admitted, Jan. 15, 1671, an inhabitant of Charlestown, where he died, April 9, 1689, aged about eighty-six years.

**Samuel Eldred** (1641), of Cambridge, had four children by wife Elizabeth, born in that town between 1641 and 1649. The only other fact known concerning him, when residing in Cambridge, is that he testified in a suit of Edward Goffe against Richard Cutter, "for wrongfully detaining calves." After the testimony had been given, the town, having considered the business, fined both the plaintiff and defendant. Mr. Eldred (1641) is supposed to have moved to Wickford, R. I., where, as a constable, he figured prominently in the dispute between Rhode Island and Connecticut concerning the boundary line. He was in Rochester in 1688, and is mentioned in the *Revolution in New England Justified*, p. 20.

**John Hardier** (1641), of Braintree.

**Joshua Hobart** (1641), of Hingham, son of Edmund and Margaret Hobart, was born in Hingham, England, in 1614. He came to America with his parents in 1633, and tarried at Charlestown, where he was received into the church. In 1635, he removed to Hingham, Mass., where his brother, Rev. Peter Hobart, was pastor of the church. Joshua (1641) was admitted to be a freeman Sept. 3, 1634. He married in March, 1638, Ellen Ibrook, of Cambridge. He was a selectman of Hingham eight years, between 1662 and 1681; was deputy to the General Court in 1643, and served in that office a total of twenty-five years; was speaker of the House in 1674; was interested in the militia; became ensign in 1648, lieutenant in 1651, and captain of the Hingham company in 1653. He held the latter position for over twenty years. In 1670, he was on a committee to revise the laws; in 1673 was chosen to audit the accounts of the treasurer of the colony, and in 1672, he and Lieut. Fisher (1640), having been appointed commissioners, reported to the Legislature upon the boundary line between Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth colonies. In 1679, a petition, signed by Capt. Hobart (1641) and others, to form a troop of horse, was granted, and in June, 1680, this troop was

**Edward Collins** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Brooks's Hist. of Medford; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.

**Samuel Eldred** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge.

**Joshua Hobart** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Lincoln's Hist. of Hingham; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.

attached to a new regiment, commanded by Col. Wm. Stoughton. The Indian deed of Hingham, given in 1665, conveys to Capt. Joshua Hobart (1641) and John Thaxter, "for a valuable consideration to us payd" by them, "the Townshippe of Hingham," for the use of the inhabitants of Hingham.

He appears to have been one of the principals in the famous military quarrel in Hingham in 1645, which disturbed the train-band, the church, the town, and finally the elders and the General Court. It resulted in the fining of all the parties, not exempting his brother, the minister. Capt. Joshua (1641) was fined twenty pounds, being the heaviest penalty imposed on any of them. This quarrel arose about the election of one Bozoun Allen (1650) to be the first captain of the train-band in Hingham. Capt. Hobart (1641), probably in consequence of the severity of the court upon him, was not only promoted to be captain when Capt. Allen (1650) moved to Boston, but, March 20, 1655, he was, "by a joint consent and general vote of the town, freed from paying any rates for the public charge of the town during the time that he is chief officer of the town for the exercise of the military company." Both of the above-mentioned captains, at the time of this difference, were members of the House of Representatives. There is a tradition that, as captain of a company, he was in active service during some part of King Philip's War. He resided on Main Street, next east of the meeting-house of the First Parish, where he died, July 28, 1682.

**Nathaniel Howard** (1641), of Dorchester, was admitted to be a freeman May 10, 1643. A Nathaniel Howard is mentioned in the History of Dorchester. Mr. Savage thinks he moved to Charlestown, and there married, July 2, 1666, Sarah, daughter of Major Simon Willard. She died Jan. 22, 1678, and he married, July 1, 1678, Sarah Parker. He was a tenant on Winthrop's farm, Feb. 12, 1671. He moved to Chelmsford in 1680. His will of Nov. 7, 1709, was probated Feb. 17, 1709-10.

**Jeremiah Howchin** (1641), son of William, of Harleston, Norfolk County, England, a tanner, came over in 1635, was admitted a member of Dorchester church June 12, 1639, and became a freeman May 13, 1640. He moved to Boston with Duncan (1638), Upshall (1637), and other Dorchester settlers whose names are among those of the founders of the Old North Society in 1650, and was admitted an inhabitant March 13, 1648. He was elected a constable of Boston in 1648, clerk of the market in 1649, sealer of leather in 1650, and served as a selectman six years, from 1649 to 1654. His daughter, Elizabeth, married John Endicott, Jr., and another, Rachel, married, in 1673, Bozoun Allen (1676). Mr. Howchin (1641) owned property on Elm Street, and also the east corner of Court and Hanover streets, where Concert Hall afterward stood. His house, garden, orchard, and tan-pits, included "one quarter of an acre of land," which he sold in 1646, and afterward lived on Elm Street. He was representative for Hingham from 1651 to 1659, excepting 1656, and for Salisbury in 1663, 1664, 1665, and 1667. He resigned his commission as ensign in Capt. Thomas Clarke's (1644) company, May 23, 1655. He died between April 7, 1670, the date of his will, and May 31 next following, when his will was proved.

**Nathaniel Howard** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Wyman's Charlestown.

**Jeremiah Howchin** (1641). AUTHORITIES:

Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Histories of Boston; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851 and 1880; Records of Mass. Bay.

**John Humfrey, Jr.** (1641), of Lynn, was the eldest son of Gen. John Humfrey (1640). Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "He probably returned to England and died there. A letter of attorney, in 1684, was sent to a Mr. Humfrey, to appear and answer for the province concerning Andros' troubles, and may mean the same person." Gen. Humfrey (1640) went to England Oct. 26, 1641, and perhaps John, Jr. (1641), went with him and did not return. The latter was the fifth person who joined the Artillery Company in 1641-2.

**John Manning** (1641), of Boston, was a merchant. His name is not mentioned in the Book of Possessions, nor in the Records of the Selectmen. He had children born in Boston, by wife, Abigail. She died June 25, 1644. He married (2) Ann, daughter of Richard Parker (1638).

Mr. Manning (1641) was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1648.

**John Milam** (1641), of Boston, a cooper, was admitted to be a freeman May 25, 1636, and joined the First Church, with his wife, Christian, Jan. 3, 1635-6. His house and garden were east of Hanover Street, on Cross Street (corner of North), the same lot upon which the stone house was erected which was torn down in 1864, and considered the oldest building in Boston. Sept. 25, 1643, he had liberty to wharf before his dwelling-house, and in 1647, "to wharf afor the highway that lys next him." In 1644, the General Court loaned two guns, valued at thirteen pounds, to the owners of a ship. The guns had not been returned May 22, 1651, when the General Court ordered that the owners of the ship — Capt. William Tyng (1638), Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), and John Milam (1641) — should pay to the colony fifteen pounds within fourteen days. In 1652, Mr. Milam (1641) removed from Boston.

**John Mousall** (1641), of Charlestown, was born in England in 1596; came to America in 1634, and joined the church in Charlestown, with his wife, the 23d of August, in the same year. He was admitted a freeman Sept. 3, 1634, and was a deputy in the General Court in 1635 and 1637.

He was one of the seven male members who constituted the church in Woburn at its organization, Aug. 14, 1642, and one of its deacons until his decease. He was appointed, in 1643, a commissioner to "end small causes" in Woburn; was one of the first board of selectmen, and served in that office twenty-one successive years.

He died in Woburn, March 27, 1665.

**John Newton** (1641) was of Dorchester "as early as 1630," according to Dr. Harris, and "in 1632" according to Mr. Savage. He was admitted a freeman March 4, 1633. He moved to Dedham prior to January, 1636, when his name appears in the

**John Humfrey, Jr.** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Milam** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Mem. Hist. of Boston; see description of the stone house, in Shurtleff's Topographical Description of Boston, p. 667.

**John Mousall** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Hurd's Hist. Middlesex Co., Vol. I., pp. 337, 338; Vol. II., p. 465; Sewall's Hist. of Woburn; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1875; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Newton** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Ded-

ham Records; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Savage's Gen. Dict.

This name (Newton) is given on the oldest roll of the Artillery Company, "Nuton," which Mr. Whitman (1810) called Nudon, hence Norden; therefore, Samuel Norden, of Boston. The sureties of this person, as given on the same roll, are Joshua and Anthony Fisher, of Dedham. We would naturally look to Dedham for the person. Mr. John Newton (1641), a resident of Dedham, prominent in the town and a neighbor of the Fishers, is believed to be the person intended.



Dedham Records. He united with the church there, April 9, 1643. In 1639, Edward Allen, "Gent," was authorized to make a transcript of the surveys made in Dedham. It had not been done May 6, 1642, when Mr. Allen was permitted to obtain the assistance of his kinsman, John Newton (1641), in writing and engrossing the same. His name appears repeatedly in Dedham Records until 1669. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1666.

**Adam Otley** (1641) was of Lynn in 1641. Mr. Lewis says Mr. Otley (1641) married a daughter of Gen. John Humfrey (1640). In 1644, Adam Otley (1641) petitioned the General Court for a review of the decision of the referees against him in his case against Joseph Armitage. The petition was denied.

**George Palmer** (1641), of Boston in 1640, was a wine-cooper. He removed before 1655 to Warwick, R. I., and died about 1669. In April, 1670, a Boston creditor, James Neighbors, was granted letters of administration.

**Thomas Parish** (1641), of Cambridge, a physician, came in the "Increase" in 1635, aged twenty-two years. He was admitted to be a freeman April 18, 1637.

In September, 1643, the three commissioners, with a guard of forty men, were sent out to bring in Samuel Gorton and his company. Capt George Cooke (1638) was one of the commissioners, and likewise captain of the Company. In this expedition, Thomas Parish (1641) served as surgeon. In Paige's History of Cambridge, we are informed that Thomas Parish (1641) resided on the westerly side of Garden Street, near Concord Avenue; was a selectman in 1639 and 1640. He returned to England before 1654, when his homestead (the house having been burned) was sold by his agent. Samuel Parish, of "witch mania memory," speaks of his father, Thomas, as a merchant living in London in 1656, and owning estates in Barbadoes, where he died in 1673.

**John Severance** (1641) — spelled Severne on the old roll — was, in 1639, an original proprietor of Salisbury. His son, Ephraim, married, Nov. 9, 1682, Lydia, daughter of Abraham Morrill (1638). Mr. Severance (1641) and Mr. Morrill (1638) lived near neighbors on Mudnock Road, and both were active in the affairs of the town.

Mr. Severance (1641) was chosen one of a committee to manage the affairs of the plantation in 1642, and was elected a prudential man the following year, and later held various town offices. His first wife, Abigail —, died June 17, 1658, and he married (2) Susanna Ambrose, a widow. He died April 2, 1682.

**William Torrey** (1641), of Weymouth, yeoman, son of Philip and Alicie Torrey, was born at Combe St. Nicholas, Somersetshire, England, in 1608 (baptized Dec. 21). He married, March 17, 1629, Agnes Combe, of Combe St. Nicholas, who died before 1640, when he came to America, bringing "William and Samuel Torrey, his sonne."

It is supposed that just prior to his emigration he married a second wife, by whom

**Adam Otley** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hutch. Coll., 121.

**George Palmer** (1641). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Thomas Parish** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge.

**John Severance** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Merrill's Hist. of Amesbury.

**William Torrey** (1641). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Lincoln's Hist. of Hingham; MSS. of Mr. Herbert A. Newton, No. Weymouth.



he had six children. He died on Tuesday, July 10, 1690. His will of May 15, 1686, was proved July 2, 1691.

He became a freeman May 18, 1642, and was a prominent citizen of Weymouth. He was a selectman of that town from 1643 almost constantly until 1682. In 1654, he was chosen a commissioner "to end small causes," and held that office many years. He was a representative from 1642 to 1649 inclusive, except 1646 and 1647, and also from 1679 to 1683; and after the overthrow of Andros, in 1690. He was clerk of the deputies from 1648 to 1658, and again in 1661; also, 1666. He was appointed clerk of the writs at Weymouth, and was authorized to "see people join in marriage at Weymouth." He served as lieutenant of the train-band of Weymouth, under Capt. Wm. Perkins (1638), and became his successor in command. During the difficulty in the Hingham company, 1645-8, Capt. Torrey (1641), by order of the General Court, Aug. 12, 1645, was the chief military officer in Hingham. In May, 1646, he was succeeded by Gen. Edward Gibbons (1637).

In consideration of the services of Capt. Torrey (1641), the General Court granted him five hundred acres of land. He was well educated, and is spoken of by Johnson as "a good penman, and skilled in the Latin tongue, usually Clarke of the Deputies." In 1687, he wrote a "Discourse concerning Futurities or Things to Come," — a curious essay on the speedy coming of the Messiah, which was published in 1757. The only copy known to be now in existence is in the Public Library of Boston.

His house in Weymouth was situated about two hundred feet easterly of the present line of Neck Street, at the head of the cove formerly known as Capt. Torrey's Cove, and later as Sampson's Cove. Well-defined marks of the cellar were there visible in 1885.

**John Townsend** (1641), of Lynn, was, perhaps, son of Thomas, of Lynn. With others, he made a settlement on Long Island, where he lived and left descendants.

**John Westgate** (1641), of Boston, an unmarried man when admitted to the church, Sept. 12, 1640, from which he was dismissed Sept. 26, 1647, "on desire of the church of Pulham Mary in Norfolk, England." In May, 1677, he was of Harleston in that county, whence he had written, April 5, 1653, to Capt. Thomas Lake (1653), to inquire if the report of the death of his former teacher, John Cotton, was true.<sup>1</sup>

**Col. Stephen Winthrop** (1641), fourth son of Gov. John Winthrop, of Massachusetts, was born at Groton Manor, Suffolk County, England, March 24, 1619. He accompanied his mother to New England in 1631, united with the church March 16, 1634, and became a freeman Dec. 7, 1636. He was appointed in 1639 by the Court "to record things," and in 1642 obtained leave from the General Court to visit England. He delayed his journey for some time, and in 1644 represented the town of Plymouth, N. H., in the House of Deputies.

In 1645, he went to England with his brother-in-law, Col. William Rainsburrow (1639), and thence to the West Indies. Returning to England, he resided in the parish of

**Stephen Winthrop** (1641). *AUTHORITIES:* Savage's Gen. Dict.; Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Letters of Col. Stephen Winthrop (1641), in Winthrop Papers, Part IV. New Eng. Hist. and Gen.

Reg. for 1894 gives his will, found in England and copied by Mr. Waters.

<sup>1</sup> Savage's Gen. Dict.

St. Margaret, Westminster. He acquired distinction, both military and political, obtaining a commission in the Parliamentary army, and becoming a member of Cromwell's Parliament, for Scotland. He gradually rose to the rank of colonel, and commanded a regiment in Cromwell's service. "He was much trusted by the Protector. He succeeded Major-Gen. Harrison, who troubled Cromwell so much with his anticipation of a kingdom of the saints." His health suffered from his sleeping on the damp ground in one of his campaigns, and he died at his residence in London in the latter part of 1658. In Suffolk County Records, of May 20, 1659, his wife, Judith, is called "relict of Stephen Winthrop." But for the failure of his health, it is stated that Cromwell would have made him a major-general.

He married Judith, sister of Col. William Rainsburrow (1639), an officer of distinction, and sister of the lady who subsequently became his stepmother. His wife and two daughters survived him.

He was the recorder of the court in Boston which tried Capt. Bayley's case against the Lady LaTour, and was arrested at LaTour's suit, on his return to England, at the same time that Capt. Weld (1637), one of the jury, was arrested, and was obliged to furnish bail in the sum of four thousand pounds.

---

**1642-3.** The officers elected were: Israel Stoughton (1637), captain; Thomas Hawkins (1638), lieutenant; Robert Bridges (1641), ensign; Humfrey Atherton (1638), senior sergeant; John Leverett (1639), junior sergeant; Anthony Stoddard (1639), clerk, and Arthur Perry (1638), drummer.

The new commander was an enthusiastic Puritan, and as the news began to arrive of the increasing difficulties between the King and Parliament, he doubtless often wished, as he led the Artillery to its monthly drill, that he could be transported with his command across the Atlantic, there to wage war against the Church of Rome. Not long after, he undertook the then tedious voyage, and gave his strength and courage to the cause of Parliament as lieutenant-colonel of Rainsburrow's (1639) regiment.

Lieut. Thomas Hawkins (1638) was jointly concerned, in 1643, with Past-Commander Gibbons (1637) in an expedition which they fitted out at Boston, under a contract with LaTour, a Protestant French-Indian trapper on the coast of Maine and New Brunswick, against a Roman Catholic, D'Aulnay, a rival in the trade. Gibbons (1637) and Hawkins (1642) could not openly wage war on D'Aulnay's settlement, but they permitted their men to volunteer under LaTour, by whom a windmill was burned, growing crops destroyed, and two vessels, loaded with four hundred moose-skins and four hundred beaver-skins, were brought to Boston.

The new members recruited in 1642-3 were: Abraham Adkins, Andrew Belcher, John Blake, Humphrey Bradshaw, Matthew Chaffy, John Cole, Nathaniel Duncan, Jr., Josias Evans, Hopestill Foster, Thomas Glover, William Patten, Michael Pepper, Thomas Rawlins, Robert Selling, William Shepard, Lawrence Smith, Richard Stowers, Edward Tyng, Richard Way, Adam Winthrop, John Woodde, Richard Woodde.

**Abraham Adkins** (1642). On the oldest roll (1680) this name is plainly written. The sureties of Mr. Adkins (1642) were Ensign Savage (1637) and Mr. Stoddard (1639). As Mr. Adkins' (1642) name does not appear in the records of Boston and vicinity, he was probably not a resident of the colony.

**Andrew Belcher** (1642), of Sudbury in 1639. In October of that year, he married Elizabeth Danforth, of Cambridge, and in 1646 moved to the latter place. In June, 1654, he was licensed by the County Court, "to keep a house of publique entertainment at Cambridge." This license was yearly renewed until 1673, in which year he probably died, as the license "to keep an ordinary" was granted to his widow, Elizabeth, in April, 1674. She, dying in 1680, was succeeded by her son Andrew. This tavern, kept by the Belchers, was the original Blue Anchor Tavern, and stood at the northeast corner of Brighton and Mt. Auburn streets, Cambridge. Andrew Belcher (1642) was the grandfather of Jonathan Belcher, Governor of Massachusetts and New Jersey.

**John Blake** (1642), of Dorchester in 1630, son of William Blake, was born in Little Baddow, Essex County, England. He came to America with his parents in 1630, in the "Mary and John," and settled with them in Dorchester. He was admitted a freeman in 1644. He married, in Boston, Aug. 16, 1654, widow Mary Shaw. He removed to Boston about 1663, and appears by the Boston Records to have been "Clarke of ye Market" in 1669. He subsequently held other town offices. "18, 12, 71," John Blake was dismissed by the Dorchester church to the Third (Old South) Church in Boston. He was a member of Capt. Sewall's (1679) company in 1684, and died without issue in 1688. His brother, William, joined the Artillery Company in 1646.

**Humphrey Bradshaw** (1642), of Cambridge in 1652, when he received his share of the Shawshine lands. Mr. Bradshaw (1642) resided in Menotomy, held several minor town offices, and acted on important town committees. He died May 9, 1682.

**Matthew Chaffy** (1642), of Boston in 1636, was a ship-carpenter, admitted to be a freeman May 17, 1637, and joined the First Church Aug. 7, 1636. He was granted a "great Lott" at Mount Wollaston in 1638. In 1644, he was permitted to build a wharf before his property in Mill-field. His house and garden, on the southeasterly part of Copp's Hill, east of Hanover Street, he sold in 1649 to John Capen (1646), of Dorchester, and bought of Dr. John Clarke, "late of Newberry, now of Boston," "one Ferme conteineing foure hundred Acres of land, lying and being betweene the river of Merrimack and Newbury River in Newbury [Essex County, Mass.], with all the houses, edifices and buildings thereunto belonging," Sept. 29, 1649, where he lived until his decease.

**John Cole** (1642), of Boston, son of Samuel (1637), came with his parents in the fleet with Winthrop, in 1630. He married, Dec. 30, 1651, Susanna,<sup>1</sup> daughter of William

**Andrew Belcher** (1642). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, 1870, 1873, 1874; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., p. 193; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Hudson's Hist. of Sudbury.

**John Blake** (1642). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Boston Records; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

**Humphrey Bradshaw** (1642). AUTHORITY: Paige's Hist. of Cambridge.

**Matthew Chaffy** (1642). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Coffin's Hist. of Newbury.

<sup>1</sup> Susanna Hutchinson, daughter of William and Ann Hutchinson, in 1642 removed into the Dutch territory, and settled near what is now New Rochelle. During the war between the Dutch and Indians, Mrs. Hutchinson and others were killed, but Susanna was carried into captivity. She remained with the Indians until July, 1646, when, unexpectedly, she was liberated through the intervention of the Dutch, and returned to Boston. — See *Drake's Book of the Indians*, eleventh edition, p. 132.



Hutchinson. He moved before 1664 to look after Mr. Hutchinson's lands in the Narragansett, when the authorities in Connecticut appointed him a magistrate. He died early in 1707.

**Nathaniel Duncan, Jr.** (1642), of Dorchester in 1630, came with his parents in the "Mary and John." He was the elder son of Nathaniel Duncan (1638), of Dorchester.

**Josias Evans** (1642). His sureties were Sergt. French (1638) and Sergt. Atherton (1638). The name is plainly written in the roll as copied in 1680.

**Hopestill Foster** (1642), and his mother, Patience, are recorded as being in the second emigration to Dorchester Plantation, which was in 1635. Hopestill was then fourteen years of age. He married Mary, daughter of James Bates. She died in 1703, aged eighty-three years. He joined the Dorchester church in 1638; became a freeman in 1639; was ensign of the Dorchester train-band, under Humfrey Atherton (1638), in 1644, and subsequently its captain. He served as a selectman from 1645 to 1674 inclusive, except 1646-9, 1651, 1653, and 1667. In 1675 he was elected, but declined. He was a deputy to the court in 1652, and afterwards a commissioner of trials. By his will, witnessed July 19, 1676, he gave five pounds towards the free school. He resided near the southwest corner of Adams and Centre streets. He was a brewer, active in all town affairs, a man of judgment, and deserved popularity.<sup>1</sup> He died Oct. 15, 1676. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1647. His son, Hopestill Foster (H. C., 1667), became a member of the same in 1673, and his grandson, Hopestill, in 1694.

**Thomas Glover** (1642), of Dorchester, son of John of the same, came in 1630 with his parents. John Glover was one of the original patentees of 1629. He was "a plain, sincere, godly man, strong for the truth." He was the first to set up tanning in Massachusetts. He owned land in Rhinehall, England, which he left by will, proved Feb. 9, 1653-4, to his son Thomas (1642). The latter was in England in 1661, and doubtless spent the remainder of his days there, where, Mr. Savage says, "he was well married."

**William Patten** (1642), of Cambridge, first appears in that town March 13, 1635-6, when he agreed with the town "to keep 100 cattle on the other side the River for the space of seven months for twenty pounds." He became a freeman in 1645. Mr. Patten (1642) does not appear to have been prominent in town affairs. He resided in Cambridge on the easterly side of North Avenue, opposite the common. He was one of the original proprietors of Billerica in 1658, and died there Dec. 10, 1668.

**Michael Pepper** (1642).

**Thomas Rawlins** (1642), son of Thomas and Mary Rawlins, of Roxbury and Scituate, was born in England, and came to America with his parents in 1630, in the same company as Gov. Winthrop. Thomas, Jr. (1642), resided in Boston, and married

**Hopestill Foster** (1642). AUTHORITIES: Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Savage's Gen. Dict; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1885.

**Thomas Glover** (1642). AUTHORITIES: Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**William Patten** (1642). AUTHORITIES: Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Savage's Gen. Dict.

<sup>1</sup> His son, John, born Dec. 10, 1648, died Sept. 9, 1681, aged thirty-three years, was an ingenious printer and mathematician. He designed the arms for the Colony of Massachusetts Bay.



Sarah —. His will, dated Dec. 12, 1681, conveys his property to his nephew, Ephraim Kempton, of Salem, and to other relatives. Thomas Rawlins, Sr., died March 15, 1660. He conveyed by will, March 12, 1660, some of his property to his wife, "and to his son Thomas [1642], a house in Boston, provided he live there with his mother as heretofore." It is added in the record of probate, that Thomas Rawlins (1642), "ye sonne, declared that knowing his father to have left his mother-in-law [stepmother] too little, he was free and willing and did give her nine pounds more."

**Robert Selling** (1642), as Mr. Whitman (1810) suggests, should be Robert Seeley (1642). His sureties were Sergt. Leverett (1639), with whom he served in 1654, and Mr. Lyall (1640).

Robert Seeley (1642) was an early settler in Watertown. He became a freeman May 18, 1630, was a proprietor in 1636-7, and in 1642. In 1634, he, with Abraham Brown, was employed in the survey of Watertown, and soon after left the town. In 1637, he served as a lieutenant in the Pequot War, and afterward returned to the vicinity of Boston. In 1654, he led the forces, raised in New Hampshire for service, under Gen. Sedgwick (1637) and Gen. Leverett (1639), against the neighboring province of New Netherlands—a conflict that was prevented by the restoration of peace in Europe. In 1663, he was at the head of the militia at Huntington, Long Island, but later at New York. A Capt. Seeley was killed in a battle with the Indians in December, 1675, who, it is thought, was Capt. Robert Seeley (1642).

**William Shepard** (1642). Mr. Farmer was not misled, as Mr. Savage suggests, by reading "Mr." as an abbreviation for "Wm." This name, on the oldest roll of the Company, is plainly written "Mr. W<sup>m</sup> Sheapheard." There was a Wm. Shepard in Dorchester, who was a servant of William Sumner. In April, 1636, he was whipped for stealing from his master; and "in no other instance," says Savage, "is the name to be found in Massachusetts for the first quarter of a century."

The Mr. Shepard who joined the Artillery Company in 1642 had the prefix "Mr.," and his sureties were Capt. Sedgwick (1637) and Sergt. French (1638). He was probably a sojourner or visitor in Boston, as others who defy all research were, their names not having become a part of the early town or colonial records.

**Lawrence Smith** (1642), of Dorchester, son of John Smith, the "quartermaster," who came to America in the ship "Mary and John," in 1630. He was called quartermaster because he had served in the Netherlands in that rank. Lawrence (1642) became a freeman May 10, 1643, and Mr. Savage says "he was often a selectman." He died Oct. 3, 1665. His name appears once in the Records of Massachusetts Bay, when he appeals to the court for damages on account of an apprentice being taken away from him.

**Thomas Rawlins** (1642). **AUTHORITIES:** Records of Families of the name of Rawlins, by John R. Rollins, Lawrence, 1874; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, 1855.

"Thomas Rawlins [Sr.] he brought 5 children to this Land. Thomas, Mary, Joane, Nathaniell, John. he came with the first company, 1630."—*Roxbury Church Records*.

**Robert Seeley** (1642). **AUTHORITIES:** Bond's Watertown; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. of Long Island; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Lawrence Smith** (1642). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay.

**Richard Stowers** (1642), son of Nicholas and Amy Stowers, of Charlestown, was born in England in 1620. He came to America with his parents in 1628. He became an inhabitant in 1648, was admitted to the church April 12, 1650, was made a freeman the next month, and in March, 1651-2, married Joanna —.

In 1658, he was licensed to keep a house of entertainment in Charlestown.

He died July 8, 1693. His wife, Hannah, died Feb. 3, 1698-9.

**Edward Tyng** (1642), of Boston in 1639, was born in Dunstable, England, in the year 1610. He was a brewer, afterward a merchant. His name first appears in Boston Records, "Admitted to be an Inhabitant" of Boston, Nov. 25, 1639. He joined the First Church, Jan. 30, 1640, and was admitted to be a freeman June 2, 1640. He was a constable in 1642; selectman of Boston in 1645, 1648, and 1651; representative from Boston in 1661 and 1662, and an assistant from 1668 to 1680 inclusive. He died, while occupying the latter office, Dec. 28, 1681, at Dunstable, whither he moved in 1679. He was buried in the chapel burial-ground, Boston. His burial-place became the property of the Waldo family. Mr. Whitman (1810) gives his age as eighty-one; Farmer and Savage, as seventy-one. In his will, proved Jan. 19, 1682, he speaks of his "old age." His daughter, Hannah, married Habijah Savage (1665), and afterward Major-Gen. Gookin (1645). Another daughter, Rebecca, married in 1669, Joseph Dudley (1677), afterward governor. His brother, William, joined the Artillery Company in 1638. Two only of his sons grew to manhood, — Edward (1668) and Jonathan (1670). He held a colonel's commission, and was chosen by the General Court major-general, to succeed Gen. Leverett (1639). The house, brew-house, warehouse, and wharf in front, "My wharf against the end of the great street," *i. e.*, State Street, corner of Merchants Row, were where Mr. Faneuil had subsequently his warehouse, and where still later the Admiral Vernon Tavern stood.

**Richard Way** (1642), of Dorchester, son of Henry, was born in England about 1620, and came to America with his parents in 1630 or 1631. He was admitted to be a freeman May 10, 1643. He moved to Salem, — his children were born there, — but removed to Boston about 1660. He joined the First Church Feb. 17, 1661. He married (1) Esther, daughter of Thomas Jones (1643), of Dorchester, and (2) Hannah, sister of Col. Penn Townsend (1674) and widow of Thomas Hull (1667).

He was active in town affairs after his settlement in Boston. April 29, 1672, "Lt. Richard Way [1642] to sell stronge watr<sup>s</sup> but not lesse than a pinte at once," is recorded as a vote of the selectmen. A license to sell strong drink was granted him for ten years, though he was by trade a cooper. Nov. 14, 1673, the selectmen ordered certain coopers not to build any fire in their cooper-shop chimneys until they were repaired to the satisfaction of the selectmen. Lieut. Richard Way (1642) is the first cooper named. This was a precaution against fire, which, however, did occur, and March 26, 1677, Lieut. Richard Way (1642) was allowed four pounds for his stable which was pulled down

**Richard Stowers** (1642). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1849 (will of Nicholas Stowers); Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. III., p. 98 (deed of homestead, bought by Richard Stowers, June 25, 1646).

**Edward Tyng** (1642). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co.,

Vol. I., pp. 738, 739; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Fox's Hist. of Dunstable; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660.

**Richard Way** (1642). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1875; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. of Dorchester; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1660-1701.

"in the last fire." He was a lieutenant for about twenty years, serving in 1686 in Capt. Turell's (1660) company. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1669, and a lieutenant in 1671. He died June 23, 1697.

**Adam Winthrop** (1642), the fifth son of Gov. John Winthrop, was born April 7, 1620, at Groton, England, and came to America in the ship "Lion," Nov. 2, 1631, with his mother. He was admitted to the First Church July 4, 1640, and became a freeman June 2, 1641. His first wife was Elizabeth Glover, daughter of Rev. José Glover and stepdaughter of President Dunster (1640); his second, Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Hawkins (1638). His son, Adam, Jr., joined the Artillery Company in 1692. Adam, Sr., died Aug. 24, 1652, being at the time a selectman of Boston. His widow married Major John Richards (1644).

**John Woodde** (1642), of Roxbury, son of Richard. John was admitted to be a freeman about 1644, was brother of Richard (1642), and married Mary, daughter of John Coggan (1638). He died May 23, 1650, "a christian and godly brother," says the church record.

**Richard Woodde** (1642), of Roxbury, brother of John (1642), was a soap-boiler; admitted to be a freeman in 1644. He moved to Boston. In the Second Report of the Boston Record Commissioners, under date of Jan. 26, 1651-2, it says, "Richard Wooddy is Admitted an Inhabitant upon his promise not to be offensive by his Trayd to the Towne." April 2, 1658, the selectmen of Boston leased to Richard Woodde (1642) and James Everill, "Bird Island . . . for sixty years, they paying 12*d* silver or a bushel of salt," per annum. In 1666, he manufactured saltpetre; and was ensign in the militia in 1674. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1655, fourth sergeant in 1662, ensign in 1667, lieutenant in 1669, and captain in 1677. He died in 1680-1, and administration on his estate was granted May 6, 1681.

---

1643-4. The officers elected were: Capt. George Cooke (1638), captain; Thomas Hawkins (1638), lieutenant; Francis Willoughby (1639), ensign; John Leverett (1639), senior sergeant; Thomas French (1638), junior sergeant; Anthony Stoddard (1639), clerk, and Arthur Perry (1638), drummer. ✓

When La Tour visited Boston, in June, 1643, the fortifications erected in 1635 on Castle Island, afterwards Fort Independence, had so gone to decay that his salute could not be returned. The fort was consequently repaired, at the expense of Boston and the five nearest towns. It was reconstructed of large pine logs, stones, and earth; made fifty feet square inside, with walls two feet thick. Mention is made of the Artillery Company going down to the fort and firing the great guns.

"The next week, the training day occurred at Boston; and La Tour, having expressed a wish to exercise his men on shore, was allowed on that occasion to land

**John Woodde** (1642). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Roxbury Church Records.

"[1650] May 23, John Wooddie dyed of the

small pox." — *Rev. S. Danforth's Records of Roxbury Church.*

**Richard Woodde** (1642). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853, p. 339 (will).



forty men. They were escorted to the field by the Boston company, which numbered one hundred and fifty men. After the exercises were over, La Tour and his officers were invited home to dinner by the Boston officers, and his soldiers by the Boston soldiers." <sup>1</sup> La Tour was entertained during his visit to Boston at the home of Gen. Gibbons (1637).

The tyrannical King and the patriotic Parliament having taken up arms against each other, the hostile attitude of the aborigines prompted an alliance of the English-speaking colonists. Massachusetts, Plymouth, Connecticut, and New Haven were represented by commissioners who united in Articles of Confederation, under the name of "The United Colonies of New England," for a firm and perpetual league, for offence and defence, and mutual advice and succor. This act was consummated May 19, 1643, O. S. When the threatened danger was averted, the temporary alliance ceased, but it was renewed again and again, as hostilities against the Indians or French formed a bond of cohesion, which finally resulted in independence. In the consummation of this desirable confederation, members of the Artillery Company took an active and influential part.

The social aspects of life in Massachusetts at this time were especially reverential. Family government was efficient, and military organization furnished the only titles of distinction. There was a general cultivation of reverence towards God and the Commonwealth, without a nobility in the government or forms in religion. The clergy were a recognized institution, the school-masters were abroad, and the drill-sergeants were diligent.

The magistrates of Massachusetts undertook at first to oppress trade by creating monopolies, and by forbidding the people to buy goods at vessels which might arrive, but giving the privilege to nine men and their partners to select such goods as might be wanted, and sell them at a profit of five per cent within twenty days. Six of the men who made the law were mentioned in it as proprietors of this profitable scheme, which disposed of the goods that were really wanted and of quick sale, leaving for regular merchants only those which were out of season. Joshua Hewes (1637) defied the law as unjust, and was arrested; but the "ring" was broken up. The year after his successful resistance to monopolies, Mr. Hewes (1637) and others organized "A Free Company of Adventurers," in order to divert the principal trade of Indians in beaver-skins to New England. These skins, like corn and bullets, were used as money at fixed prices, and while the Dutch settlement in New York and the Swede in Delaware appeared to have better opportunities to obtain such skins than Massachusetts, yet they were supposed to be brought in the largest quantities from the "Great Lakes," which Boston people thought were located in the northern part of the Massachusetts grant. This company was likewise unsuccessful.

The new members recruited in 1643-4 were: William Aspinwall, John Barnard, John Barrell, Richard Barthelemey, Thomas Bell, Matthew Bridge, Thomas Bridge, James Browne, John Button, Francis Chickering, Richard Cooke, Richard Cutter, John Davis, William Davis, Edward Fletcher, John Gurnall, John Hill, Atherton Hough, Thomas Jones, Henry Maudsley, Francis Norton, Peter Oliver, John Plympton, Hugh Pritchard, William Robinson, John Scarborough, Benjamin Smith, John Smith, Samuel Titterton, Robert Turner, William Ware, John Webb, Robert Wright.

<sup>1</sup> Mem. Hist. of Boston, I., 286.



**William Aspinwall** (1643), of Charlestown in 1630, probably came in the fleet with Winthrop. He served on the first jury of inquest in the colony, Sept. 28, 1630, was one of the first members of the First Church, and was chosen a deacon thereof at its organization. He removed to Boston, and was admitted a freeman April 3, 1632. He was a selectman of Boston the first term of 1636 and the last of 1637, and was chosen a representative from Boston in the place of Henry Vane, who returned to England in August, 1637; but being a signer of the famous petition concerning Mr. Wheelwright, and a supporter of the principles of Mrs. Hutchinson, he was rejected by the court, disarmed, disfranchised, and banished. He went to Rhode Island, and was the first secretary of that colony. Thence he removed to New Haven, where he lived in 1641. Under date of March 27, 1642, Winthrop says, "Mr. William Aspinwall [1643], who had been banished, as is before declared, for joining with Mr. Wheelwright, being licensed by the general court to come and tender his submission, etc., was this day reconciled to the church of Boston. He made a very free and full acknowledgment of his error and seducement, and that with much detestation of his sin. The like he did after, before the magistrates, who were appointed by the Court to take his submission, and upon their certificate thereof at the next general court, his sentence of banishment was released."

After his return to Boston, he was clerk of the writs, or recorder, and in 1644 was appointed a notary public. Oct. 14, 1651, for reflecting upon the judgment of the court, he was fined, and deposed from the offices of recorder for Suffolk County and clerk of the writs for Boston. He resided on Washington Street, the third estate above Francis Lyall's (1640) barber-shop, which was opposite where the Old South Church now stands. The lot of William Aspinwall (1643) extended from Washington Street to Tremont Street, and contained about two acres. In 1652, he sold this property to John Angier, his son-in-law.

In 1644, it appears he went with others on a voyage of discovery to Delaware River, and their pinnace was fired upon from the Swedish fort. He made great complaint of this act to the Dutch Governor, and particularly that they were forced to weigh anchor on the Lord's Day.

He was a proprietor of Watertown, though he never resided there, and went back to England in 1653, never to return.

Mr. Aspinwall (1643) published several books in England, among which was one with the following title: "A brief Description of the Fifth Monarchy or Kingdom that is shortly to come into the World; the Monarch, Subjects, Officers and Laws thereof, and the surpassing Glory, Amplitude, Unity and Peace of that Kingdom, &c." In the conclusion there is "added a Prognostic of the time when the Fifth Kingdom shall begin, by William Aspenwall, N. E." The book was printed in "London, by M. Simmons, to be sold by Livewell Chapman, at the Crown in Pope's-head-Alley, 1653." By his theory, Antichrist's dominion was to cease, or the fifth monarchy to be set up, in 1673. Two years after, another of his works, with the following title, was printed in London: "An Abstract of Laws and Government &c, collected and digested by John Cotton, of Boston, in N. E. in his lifetime presented to our General Court and now published after his death by William Aspenwall."

Mr. Whitman (1810) gives the following specimen of a judicial proceeding by Mr. Aspinwall (1643), when recorder:—

**William Aspinwall** (1643). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay; Mem. Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Hist. of Boston.

"To the Marshal or his Deputy :

"You are required to attach the goods or lands of William Stevens, to the value of £100, so as to bind the same to be responsible at the next Court at Boston, 29th of the 5th month, to answer the complaint of Mr. James Astwood [1638], in an action of debt to the value of £50, upon a bill of exchange ; and so make a true return hereof under your hand.

"Dated 29th 2d month, 1650.

"per curiam

"WILLIAM ASPINWALL."

Mr. Whitman (1810) adds, "This brevity is exceeded only by the warrant of an Indian magistrate in the early settlement of the country, viz. : —

"I, Hihondi,

You, Peter Waterman,

Jeremy Thwackit,

"Quick you take him,

Fast you hold him,

Straight you bring him,

"Before me.

HIHONDL."

**John Barnard** (1643). Mr. Whitman (1810) says he was of Cambridge. John Barnard, of Cambridge, moved in 1636 to Hartford, Conn., and thence in 1659 to Hadley, Mass. The John Barnard (1643) of the Artillery Company was, more probably, John, of Watertown, who came to America from Ipswich, England, in 1634, aged thirty years ; was admitted a freeman March 4, 1634-5 ; he was a selectman of Watertown in 1644, and was buried June 4, 1646.

**John Barrell** (1643), of Boston, was a cooper. In 1656, he was ensign of the Artillery Company, having served as fourth sergeant in 1651, and first in 1654. In Boston Records he is called (1651-3) "Sergt," and he held some minor town offices. In 1654, he was sent, with Richard Waite (1638), as messenger to the Indians, for which the General Court allowed each of them three shillings per day. In August, 1654, Mr. Barrell (1643) was appointed an officer to prevent the exportation of money. He died Aug. 29, 1658.

**Richard Barthelemey** (1643), of Salem in 1638, had a grant of land from the Salem authorities. He was admitted to be a freeman June 2, 1641, having joined the church there, July 31, 1640. He died in 1646.

**Thomas Bell** (1643) resided in Boston as early as 1637, when "a house plott neere to Mr Dyar's," and a great lot at the Mount, were granted him. His house and garden were on the south side of Summer Street, about midway between Washington and South streets. He was the public executioner in 1649, and, therefore, the General Court exempted him "from watchings." He died June 7, 1655.

**Matthew Bridge** (1643), of Cambridge, probably came over with his father, John, in 1632. He married Anna, daughter of Nicholas Danforth. He resided on the north-west corner of Brattle and Mason streets, a property he bought in 1657. Subsequently he moved to the Farms, now Lexington, and improved four hundred acres which he

**John Barnard** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Bond's Watertown.

**John Barrell** (1643). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, p. 353.

owned there. In May, 1637, by some mischance, he killed John Abbot, for which he was arrested. Sept. 19, 1637, "Matthew Bridge appearing, and no evidence coming in against him, he was quit by proclamation." He was a respected and influential townsman, and died April 28, 1700, having attained a great age.<sup>1</sup>

**Thomas Bridge** (1643), of Cambridge, a brother of Matthew (1643), was born in Essex County, England. He died before March 10, 1657, at which time the inventory of his estate was taken. It is said that Thomas (1643) and his wife, Dorcas, died of small-pox in Boston, in 1656.<sup>2</sup>

**James Browne** (1643), of Boston in 1630, was a member of the First Church, and was admitted to be a freeman March 4, 1634. He died in 1651, and his will was proved Aug. 7, 1651. On certain conditions, he willed his house and land to the church. This property was on Court Street, opposite the old court-house.<sup>3</sup>

**John Button** (1643), of Boston in 1633, was a miller by trade. He was born about 1594, joined the First Church Dec. 22, 1633, was admitted to be a freeman May 4, 1634, and in 1637 was disarmed, being a sympathizer with Mr. Wheelwright. He owned one acre in the Mill-field, and three lots, with houses thereon, on north side of the present Elm Street. His mill was on the former lot, near which he resided. He was a contributor among the "richer inhabitants," Aug. 12, 1636, towards the maintenance of a free schoolmaster. He held several minor town offices, and died in 1681. By his will, dated Nov. 5, 1681, he gave twenty pounds to the First Church, "to buy two silver cups."

**Francis Chickering** (1643), of Dedham, came in 1637 from Suffolk County, England, bringing his family. His first wife was Ann Fiske, whom he married in England. She was buried Dec. 6, 1640, and he married, second, June 11, 1650, Mrs. Sarah Sibley.

**Matthew Bridge** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay.

**James Browne** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., VII., 335 (will).

**John Button** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Records of Mass. Bay.

**Francis Chickering** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Dedham Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company.

<sup>1</sup> Epitaph prepared for the gravestones of Matthew (1643) and Thomas Bridge (1643) by a descendant, Samuel Bridge, of Boston:—

"In memory of Matthew Bridge, Esq., eldest son of Deacon John Bridge. Came over with him from England in 1631.

"He resided with his father in this city, in 1632. A member of the Artillery Company in 1643. Admitted a freeman in 1645. Removed to Lexington, and a large landholder in 1666. He subscribed for the erection of the First Church in 1692, and paid the largest parish tax at its organization in 1693. At the ordination of Rev. John Hancock, in 1698, as a mark of distinction and respect for his advanced age, he was seated at the table in the meeting-house by order of the parish.

"He was a prominent citizen, having served the town in many important public stations with honor and fidelity. A man who feared God and loved his fellow-men. He died at Lexington, April 28, 1700.

"In 1643, he married Anna, daughter of Nickolas and Elizabeth Danforth, a woman of most exemplary virtue and piety. She died Dec. 2, 1704, aged eighty-four years."

<sup>2</sup> "In memory of Thomas Bridge, Esq., youngest son of Deacon John Bridge. Came over with him from England in 1631.

"He resided with his father, in this city, in 1632. A member of the Artillery Company in 1643. Admitted a freeman in 1648. Removed to Boston, and was a merchant in 1650. He and Dorcas, his wife, died during a prevailing epidemic, beloved, honored, and lamented, March, 1656.

"Also, Dorcas, only daughter of Thomas and Dorcas Bridge, and wife of Capt. Daniel Champney. Born Feb. 16, 1648; died Feb. 7, 1683."

<sup>3</sup> In the list of officers for 1653, as recorded in the oldest book of the Company, "John Browne" is given as the second sergeant. As no John Browne appears on the roll prior to 1653, this is, probably, an error for James Browne (1638).



He was admitted to become a freeman May 13, 1640; was a member of the church in Dedham, and was chosen one of its first deacons in 1650; he was a selectman of Dedham for many years, and represented that town in the General Court in 1644 and 1653. He is called "ensign" in the Dedham Records, in 1656. He was a man of worth and wealth, the ancestor of a distinguished family. He died Oct. 2, 1658.

**Richard Cooke** (1643), a tailor, came from Gloucestershire, England; was admitted to the First Church Aug. 28, 1634, and to be a freeman March 4, 1635. He was the representative of Dover, N. H., in 1670. In the Book of Possessions, his six pieces of real estate are defined, the first being his house and garden on School Street, nearly opposite City Hall. His house<sup>1</sup> was the second, toward Tremont Street, from Arthur Perry's (1638). Here, also, lived his son, Dr. Elisha Cooke, who was prominent in the politics of the colony, and married a daughter of Gov. Leverett (1639). Their son, Elisha, Jr. (no less renowned than Elisha, Sr.), joined the Artillery Company in 1699. The will of Lieut. Richard Cooke (1643), containing a legacy to Harvard College, was proved Dec. 25, 1673, in which month he died. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1666, and lieutenant in 1668.

Upon the decease of Richard Cooke (1643), Ensign John Hull (1660) was appointed by the court to succeed him as lieutenant of Capt. William Hudson's (1640) company.

**Richard Cutter** (1643), brother of William (1638), of Cambridge, probably came with his mother about 1638 and settled in Cambridge. He was admitted to be a freeman June 2, 1641, and died June 16, 1693, aged about seventy-two years. His first wife, Elizabeth, died March 5, 1661-2, and he married, Feb. 14, 1662-3, Mrs. Frances Amsden.

**John Davis** (1643), of Boston, came over in the "Increase" in 1635, and was a joiner by trade. He was admitted to the First Church Jan. 3, 1635-6, and became a freeman May 25, 1636. He was a supporter of Mr. Wheelwright and Mrs. Hutchinson, and was punished therefor. In 1641, Rev. John Wilson sold land on the (present) corner of State and Devonshire streets to Sergt. John Davis (1643), the joiner, and Davis, in 1646, sold it to Edmund Jackson (1646). After 1646, the name of John Davis (1643) disappears from the Boston Records. Savage suggests that Mr. Davis (1643) may have gone to Duxbury, where one John Davis sold an estate in 1650.

**William Davis** (1643), of Boston in 1643, was an apothecary; admitted to the church July 28, 1644, and to be a freeman in 1645. "He was a man of wealth, enterprise, and discretion." He was a selectman of Boston in 1647, from 1654 to 1661 inclusive, also from 1670 to 1675 inclusive; one of the founders of the Old South Church in 1669. He was lieutenant in 1652, and captain in 1656, of the Suffolk County troop, and commanded a troop of horse in Ninigret's war; was joined with Gen. Leverett (1639), afterward Governor, to visit the Dutch Governor, Stuyvesant, of New York, in

**Richard Cooke** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**John Davis** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Boston.

**William Davis** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Whitman's

Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Records of Mass. Bay; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

<sup>1</sup> March 29, 1652, Sergt. Richard Cooke (1643) was allowed to set a house on the town's ground, between the house Mr. Woodmansey lived in and the town "skoole" house. This arrangement provided for the enlargement of the school-house.

1653, and was a commissioner to King Philip, at Taunton, in 1671, in company with William Hudson (1640) and Thomas Brattle (1672). Mr. Whitman (1810) says Capt. William Davis "accompanied the brave Capt. Thomas Lake [1653] in his expedition to Kennebec, in 1676, and with him escaped at a back door, when the Indians had gained the fort, to the water's side, where Capt. Lake [1653] fell. Capt. Davis [1643] was wounded, but made his escape."

Capt. Davis (1643) represented Springfield in the House of Representatives in 1652, 1666, 1671, and 1672. He probably resided in that town for a few years, and there he married, in 1644, a daughter of William Pynchon, the assistant, the founder and leading inhabitant of the town. She died July 3, 1653, and he married Huldah Symmes. In his will, he gave four hundred pounds to his wife Sarah. He also represented Haverhill in 1668. His house was on State Street, on the lot next west of "William Hudson's [1640], where in provincial days stood the Bunch of Grapes tavern"; or on the lot next west of that on the corner of Kilby and State streets.

Capt. William Davis (1643) was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1645, ensign in 1652, lieutenant in 1659 and 1663, and captain in 1664 and 1672. Of his sons, Benjamin joined the Artillery Company in 1673, and William in 1677.

Capt. Davis (1643) died May 24, 1676, and was buried in the chapel burial-ground.

**Edward Fletcher** (1643), of Boston, a cutler by trade, was admitted to be a townsman Feb. 24, 1640, to be a freeman Oct. 12, 1640, and a member of the First Church in July of that year. His house was on the second lot south from the corner of Milk and Washington streets. He had grants of land, and held minor offices of the town. In 1656, he preached at Dover, N. H., returned to England in 1657, and subsequently preached at Dunsburn, England, from which, being dismissed in 1662, he came back to Boston. His will, in which he calls himself "clerk of Badgerden," was made Feb. 24, 1660, and proved Feb. 12, 1666.

His widow married, in 1676, Hugh Drury (1659) as his second wife.

**John Gurnell** (1643) came to Dorchester in 1630. He was a tanner by trade. He joined the church in 1638, was admitted to be a freeman May 10, 1643, and died July 31, 1675, "aged sixty-four years," according to his gravestone, on which his name is spelled Gornell. He left by will forty pounds, "to be put into the hands of some godly and honest man, to be by him loaned from time to time to some poor, honest and godly mechanic, to assist in setting him up in business." He also left "£20 to the schools in Dorchester." He was wealthy, "a very respectable citizen," and much interested in the prosperity of Dorchester.

**John Hill** (1643), of Boston in 1641, a blacksmith, was admitted to the First Church in July, 1641, and a freeman May 18, 1642. He died July 21, 1646. In 1643, he was one of the grantees of the franchise for a tide-mill, "on the north-west side of the causey leading to Charlestown," which lasted over one hundred and eighty years. His house was on the lot now the corner of North and Union streets.

**Edward Fletcher** (1643). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1862, 1868; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Calamy, II., 330; Boston Records.

**John Gurnell** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Hist.

of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Hill** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1862; Snow's Hist. of Boston.

**Atherton Hough** (1643) was mayor of Boston, England, in 1628, and an alderman there in 1633, when he decided to come to America with his minister, Rev. John Cotton. Mr. Hough (1643) arrived at Boston with his wife, Elizabeth, in the "Griffin," Sept. 4, 1633, became a freeman March 4, 1634, and was chosen an assistant in 1635. On account of his antinomian tendencies he was not chosen assistant in 1637, but Boston elected him a deputy in 1637 and 1638. He was present when the charter of the Military Company of the Massachusetts was granted. June 8, 1638, he was fined five shillings for absence when the General Court was called. He advanced fifty pounds to aid the colony, and in 1641 he was granted by the General Court four hundred acres of land in lieu thereof. His wife died Oct. 14, 1643, and he married another at Wells, who was received into the First Church, Boston, April 4, 1646.

Jan. 4, 1635, Mr. Hough (1643) was granted by the town of Boston six hundred acres of land at Mount Wollaston, which grant was soon after increased to seven hundred acres.

He was chosen selectman of Boston Sept. 28, 1640, for the six months following. His residence was on the southerly side of School Street, near Washington. Beacon Street, easterly end, was laid out on the 30th of March, 1640, by the following vote: "Also it is ordered y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> streete from Mr. Atherton Haulghes [1643] to y<sup>e</sup> Centry Hill be layd out & soe kept open forever." The foregoing order established the whole of School Street, and Beacon Street as far as the present State House.

He died Sept. 11, 1650, leaving a widow, Susanna, and one son, Rev. Samuel Hough, of Reading.

**Thomas Jones** (1643) came from England to Dorchester in 1635, aged forty years. He was one of the first signers of the church covenant in 1636, was admitted to be a freeman March 13, 1638, and the same year was a deputy; also in 1639 and 1649. He was elected selectman in 1636, and often during the thirty years after; also, in 1661, a commissioner "to end small causes." He lived near the hill called by his name, and died "Nov. 13, 1667, aged 75 years," according to his gravestone. Col. Stoughton (1637) called him, in his will, "My loving friend Jones."

**Henry Maudsley** (1643), now Moseley, of Braintree, came in the "Hopewell" in 1635, aged twenty-four years. "Henry Moseley, of Dorchester in 1630, had a house-lot granted him in that town, Sept. 10, 1637," according to the History of Dorchester, "and was afterward in Boston and Braintree." Feb. 24, 1639-40, he was granted by the town of Boston twelve acres, at three shillings per acre. Henry Maudsley (1643) bought, about 1653, the lot on the corner of Hanover and Union streets, which Dr. Shurtleff identifies as the home of Franklin's father.

Samuel Moseley, the renowned Indian fighter, who joined the Artillery Company in 1672, was a son of Henry (1643).

**Atherton Hough** (1643). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Boston, 1634-1660; Records of Mass. Bay; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.

This name is plainly Hough on the oldest roll. It is the same on the transcript of 1745; but some one added "es" to the name, and Mr. Whitman (1810) translated Houghes to be Hewes. Mr. Hough's (1643) sureties were two very prominent

men, — Capt. Gibbons (1637) and William Tyng (1638).

**Thomas Jones** (1643). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, 1852, 1861 (will); Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Records of Mass. Bay.

**Henry Maudsley** (1643). **AUTHORITIES:** Shurtleff's Topog. Des. of Boston, p. 628; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.



**Francis Norton** (1643) was of Portsmouth, N. H., in 1631. "After the death of Capt. Mason, his widow and executrix sent over Francis Norton [1643] as her general attorney, to whom she committed the whole management of the estate. But the expenses so far exceeded the income, and the servants grew so impatient for their arrears, that she was obliged to relinquish the care of the plantation, and tell the servants that they must shift for themselves: upon which they shared the goods and cattle. Mr. Norton [1643] drove above an hundred oxen to Boston, and there sold them for twenty-five pounds sterling per head, which, it is said, was the current price of the best cattle in New England at the time. He did not return to New Hampshire, but took up his residence in Charlestown" in 1637, when the town voted, "Mr. Francis Norton is admitted a Townsman, if he please." He was admitted to be a freeman May 18, 1642. In 1646, he was lieutenant of the Charlestown train-band, and in 1655 was promoted to be its captain. In 1652, he was appointed to act as major of the Middlesex Regiment during the absence of Major Robert Sedgwick (1637). The same year the General Court appointed a committee of ten persons to attend to the repairing of the Castle, nine of whom were members of the Artillery Company. Francis Norton (1643) was one of the committee. In 1646, he visited England. He was deputy from Charlestown to the General Court in 1647, 1650, and from 1652 to 1661 inclusive, except 1656 and 1657. He was elected first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1644 and 1645, ensign in 1647, lieutenant in 1650, and captain in 1652 and 1655. "He was," says Johnson, "a man of bold and cheerful spirit, well disciplined; and an able man"; also, "one of a cheerful spirit, and full of love to the truth." He died July 27, 1667.

**Peter Oliver** (1643), of Boston, son of Elder Thomas, was a brother of Capt. James Oliver (1637), of John (1638), and of Samuel (1648). He was grandfather of Capt. Nathaniel Oliver (1717). Peter Oliver (1643) was born in England about 1618, and came over with his father in 1632. He married Sarah, daughter of John Newgate. He was an eminent trader; was admitted to be a freeman May 13, 1640, and was selectman of Boston from 1653 to 1656 inclusive, and from 1661 to 1670 inclusive.

One of the first contributions which Boston and Massachusetts ever made for suffering communities was made in 1667, when an appeal was sent to Major-Gen. John Leverett (1639) by a starving settlement near the mouth of Cape Fear River, North Carolina. Peter Oliver (1643) and Mr. John Bateman, of Boston, were appointed by the General Court to receive and forward all contributions.

He was one of the founders of the Third, or Old South, Church, in May, 1669. In the Records of Selectmen of Boston, March 28, 1653, he is called "Cornet Peeter Oliver." He held the position of cornet in the Suffolk County troop of horse in 1652, and after his decease he was succeeded by Thomas Brattle (1675). He was lieutenant in the Narraganset expedition in 1654, under Major Willard. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1651, ensign in 1658, and captain in 1669. He died April 11, 1670, while occupying the latter office.<sup>1</sup>

**Francis Norton** (1643). **AUTHORITIES:** Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay.

**Peter Oliver** (1643). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1865; Oliver Genealogy;

Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

<sup>1</sup> "70, 2<sup>m</sup> 11<sup>d</sup>. Mr Peter Oliver died and was lamented by all men." — *Roxbury Church Records*.

**John Plympton** (1643), of Dedham in 1642; but probably came over some years before, as Dr. George Alcock, of Roxbury, in his will of Dec. 22, 1640, mentions his apprentice, John Plympton (1643). He was admitted to be a freeman May 10, 1643, and married, at Dedham, March 13, 1644, Jane Daman, or Damon, of Dedham. He moved from Dedham to Medfield in 1652. His house-lot was on Main Street, where William Kingsbury now lives. His field was on the south side of the street, opposite his house. In the spring of 1673, he emigrated to Deerfield, and, when King Philip's War began, he was the chief military officer in Deerfield. Mr. Plympton (1643) was captured by the Indians, Sept. 19, 1677, carried toward Canada, and subsequently killed. One report says he was burned at the stake by the savages near Chambly.

**Hugh Pritchard** (1643) was of Gloucester in 1642, and moved to Roxbury soon after. He was admitted to be a freeman May 18, 1642, and joined the church in Roxbury, "being recommended from the church at Cape Ann." He was deputy from Roxbury in 1643, 1644, and 1649. According to Mr. Johnson (1637), Capt. Pritchard (1643) was captain of the Roxbury train-band in 1644. May 6, 1646, Mr. Hugh Pritchard (1643) was freed by the General Court from common training at Roxbury for twelve months. Winthrop says, May 26, 1647, "Capt. Weld [1637], of Roxbury, being dead, the young men of the town agreed together to choose one George Denison, a young soldier lately out of the wars in England, but the ancient and chief men of the town . . . chose one Mr. Prichard [1643], . . . whereupon much discontent and murmuring arose in the town." "The cause coming to the Court, and all parties being heard, Mr. Prichard [1643] was allowed, and the young men were pacified, and the lieutenant." Mr. Pritchard (1643) was sent in 1643, with Humfrey Atherton (1638), on an embassy to the Narraganset and Niantick Indians. In 1657, Capt. Hugh Pritchard (1643) sold his estate of fifty acres, "lying west of Stony River and east of the highway to Muddy River," to John Pierpont. Capt. Pritchard (1643) was one of the founders of the free school in Roxbury, and went home about 1650 to Wales, his native country. In the deed written in 1657, his attorneys describe him as of Broughton, in the county of Denbigh.

**William Robinson** (1643), of Dorchester in 1636, was admitted to be a freeman May 18, 1642, having joined the church in 1638. He was granted land there in 1656, and was a "rater" in 1658 and 1661. He bought the tide-mill, now known as Tilton's Mill, on Smelt Brook Creek. He went to England in 1644, and returned the same year. Mr. Robinson (1643) was killed July 6, 1668, by being drawn under the cog-wheel of his mill.

**John Scarborough** (1643), of Roxbury in 1639, was admitted to be a freeman May 13, 1640. The Roxbury Records, as printed by the Boston Record Commissioners,

**John Plympton** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Dedham Records; Tilden's Hist. of Medfield.

**Hugh Pritchard** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Records of Mass. Bay; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury.

**William Robinson** (1643). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, 1858 (will), 1880; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Scarborough** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"Peter Gardiner, of Roxbury, testifies that Mary Torrey's first husband, John Scarborough, was killed at Boston, shooting off one of the great guns."—*New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 1886, p. 63.

This accident occurred "4 mo., 9 day," instead of "9 mo., 4 day," as stated in the Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. I.

Vol. VI., p. 32, define his property. His neighbors were Isaac Morrill (1638) and Isaac Johnson (1645). The Roxbury Church Records inform us, "4 mo., 9 day, 1646," "John Scarborough slaine by charging a great gunn."

**Benjamin Smith** (1643), of Dedham, was born about 1612. He became a freeman June 2, 1641, and joined the Dedham church May 28, 1641. He married, July 10, 1641, Mary Clarke, of Dedham. He signed the Dedham covenant, and was granted six acres of upland in 1642. His son, Benjamin, was born in that town Oct. 18, 1646, after which trace of the father is lost. His sureties were both Dedham men, viz.: Lieut. Lusher (1638) and Sergt. Fisher (1640).

**John Smith** (1643), of Dedham, was probably related to Benjamin (1643). On the oldest roll of the Company, there are the names of four persons who joined the Company at the same time. They are enclosed by a bracket, and opposite are the names of the two sureties for each of the four persons. The sureties are both Dedham men, and three of the four recruits were citizens of Dedham. It would seem most probable that the fourth person was, also. John Smith (1643), of Dedham, was a farmer; by wife, Margaret, he had a son born July 5, 1644, and the father died Aug. 14, 1645.

**Samuel Titterton** (1643). This name is plainly written on the oldest roll, "Sam<sup>l</sup> Titterton," but no trace of him has been found.

**Robert Turner** (1643). He joined the Military Company of the Massachusetts first in 1640. See page 111.

**William Ware** (1643), of Dorchester in 1633, became a freeman May 10 of that year. In 1644 and 1652, he purchased additional properties in Dorchester. At about the latter date he removed to Boston. He was by trade a shoemaker, and was admitted to be a townsman in Boston Jan. 31, 1653. In 1657, his taxes were abated "upon consideration of his long sickness and low estate." He died Feb. 11, 1658. Abstract of his will, dated March 26, 1656, and proved April 1, 1658, is given in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, VIII., 353.

**John Webb** (1643), of Boston, was admitted to the church Feb. 9, 1634, when he was called a single man. He probably went home soon after, and returned to America June 3, 1635. He was a husbandman, said to be from Marlborough, Wilts County, England, and had an alias, "Evered," probably to delude the tyrannical formalities. He was admitted a freeman Dec. 7, 1636, and became one of the early settlers of Chelmsford. He was ensign of a military company there, and represented that town at the General Court in 1663, 1664, and 1665. In the year last named, he was expelled and disfranchised for a season, but was soon restored, and had a grant of land. He was at Dracut in 1667, at which time he held the office of captain. He died Oct. 16, 1668.

**Benjamin Smith** (1643). AUTHORITY: Dedham Records.

**John Smith** (1643). AUTHORITY: Dedham Records.

**William Ware** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist.

Soc.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1887.

**John Webb** (1643). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. VI., p. 207.



Rev. Samuel Danforth, in his records, says, "17<sup>th</sup> 8<sup>m</sup> 68 John Web, alias Everit, pursuing a Whale, was caught in y<sup>e</sup> rope, twisted about his middle, & being drawn into y<sup>e</sup> sea, was drowned."

**Robert Wright** (1643) appears to have been in Boston from 1643 to 1655, where by wife, Mary, he had four children; also in 1656, when he was chosen surveyor of highways.

---

The officers elected were: Thomas Hawkins (1638), captain; Robert  
**1644-5.** Bridges (1641), lieutenant, and Thomas Wells (1644), ensign. Francis Norton (1643) was first sergeant; Eleazer Lusher (1638), second sergeant; James Johnson (1638), third sergeant, and Thomas Clarke (1644), fourth sergeant. Anthony Stoddard (1639) was clerk, John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Arthur Perry (1638), drummer.

Capt. Hawkins (1638) was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1642, was re-elected in 1643, and promoted to be captain in 1644, "being the only instance," says Mr. Whitman (1810), "known of the like in the Company." He lived on Rock Hill, afterwards called Savin Hill, in Dorchester, where the first fort was built, and where "ye Great Guns" were mounted.

In 1644, the Massachusetts train-bands were organized into thirty companies, one in each town, which were massed into four regiments, bearing the names of as many counties, which, to exhibit to posterity that "they remembered from whence they came," were called Suffolk, Essex, Middlesex, and Norfolk or Northfolk. The last-named was composed of towns which are now principally within the limits of the State of New Hampshire.

Each company had its captain, lieutenant, and ensign, chosen by a majority vote; and the officers of companies in each regiment elected a sergeant-major, who was its commander. The commander-in-chief, or sergeant-major-general, was elected by the General Court.

The first sergeant-major-general, who was elected in 1644, was Thomas Dudley, whose name is subscribed to the charter of the Artillery Company as deputy governor, but who never was a member, though several of his descendants have been. Thomas Dudley was the son of Capt. Roger Dudley, who was "slain in the wars." He served gallantly when a young man as the captain of a company of Englishmen in the service of France, who followed the white plume of Henry of Navarre at the siege of Amiens. Later in life he became a strict Puritan, and when he was fifty-four years of age he came

In 1636, Charlestown paid Capts. Patrick and Underhill (1637) twenty shillings a time for training its company.

"But there were no such expenses after Robert Sedgwick [1637] and Francis Norton [1643], both distinguished military men as well as enterprising merchants, became inhabitants.

"Edward Johnson [1637] speaks of 'the very gallant horse troop' of this town in 1644. Francis Norton [1643] at that time commanded the foot company, Ralph Sprague [1638] was the lieutenant, and Abraham Palmer [1638] the ensign. The early

writers speak in high terms of the skill displayed at the general musters. There was one in May, 1639, that lasted a day, when more than a thousand soldiers, able men, well armed and exercised, were in Boston; and another, Sept. 15, 1641, which lasted two days, when there were over twelve hundred; and though there was 'plenty of wine and strong beer,' yet, such is the testimony, there was 'no man drunk, no oath sworn, no quarrel, no hurt done.' This was the golden age of New England musters." — *Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown*, p. 97.

to New England as deputy governor under Gov. Winthrop. He held this office in 1630, and frequently until 1641; but in 1644, when he was sixty-eight years of age, he was chosen sergeant-major-general. It was said that "his faithfulness in office, great zeal in the affairs of the colony, distinguished military talents and love of the truths of Christ, led the people to choose him as their major-general, although he was far stricken in years." The three sergeant-majors of 1644 whose names have been preserved were members of the Artillery Company, and of the thirty-four captains, lieutenants, and ensigns on the roster of the Massachusetts Militia in 1644, whose names have been handed down, twenty-four were members of this Company.

The civil war in England began in August, 1642, when the swords of the contending factions were first drawn. On one side were the king and his adherents, on the other, Parliament with its forces, which were at first led by the Earl of Essex. The Earl was not fitted for a commander-in-chief, having "little energy and no originality." In 1643, the Independents arose, of whom Oliver Cromwell became the soul and inspiration. He "looked for recruits," says Macaulay, "who were not mere mercenaries,—for recruits of decent station, and grave character, fearing God and zealous for public liberty." Such were the recruits of Massachusetts Bay, who quickly and cheerfully volunteered under the standard of the "lord of the fens."

There is a tradition that a regiment of cavalry,—probably it was a company,—called "Cromwell's Own," enlisted in the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, and, crossing the ocean, fought upon the side of Parliament. We regret that if there is any information concerning this regiment or company in the archives of the British empire, it has been unobtainable.

The following-named members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts Bay are known to have been of the number who espoused on the battle-field the cause represented by Oliver Cromwell:—

Col. George Cooke (1638).	Major Benjamin Keayne (1638).
Col. John Leverett (1639).	Major Samuel Shepard (1640).
Col. William Rainsburrow (1639).	Surgeon Francis Lyall (1640).
Col. Stephen Winthrop (1641).	Capt. William Hudson (1640).
Lieut.-Col. Israel Stoughton (1637).	Capt. Thomas Marshall (1640).
Major Nehemiah Bourne (1638).	Ensign Thomas Huckens (1637).

It is a matter of record that many others, members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, went to England between 1640 and 1647, but it is not known who of them engaged in military service.

The new members recruited in 1644-5 were: Thomas Adams, Herman Adwood, John Arnold, Theodore Atkinson, John Baker, George Barstow, Henry Bridgham, William Burcham, John Butler, Thomas Clarke [Jr.], George Clifford, Robert Crosman, Andrew Duren, George Fairbanks, Henry Farnham, Anthony Fisher, Ralph Fogg, Robert Hale, Anthony Harris, David Kelly, Henry Kibby, Edward Larkin, Nathaniel Manwarring, Moses Paine, Thomas Phillips, William Phillips, John Read, John Richards, Thomas Roberts, Richard Russell, Peter Saltonstall, John Smith, Joshua Tedd, John Tuttle, Isaac Walker, Robert Ware, Thomas Wells, Hugh Williams, Nathaniel Williams, Robert Williams, Deane Winthrop, John Woodbridge.

**Thomas Adams** (1644), of Braintree, son of Henry, came to America with his parents in 1632, was admitted to be a freeman May 10, 1643, and removed to Concord in 1646. In 1657, he settled in Chelmsford, where he was the first town clerk. He was a selectman, and also represented that town in the General Court, 1673. He was elected ensign of the foot company at Chelmsford in 1678, and was its lieutenant in 1682. He died July 20, 1688, aged seventy-six years.

**Herman Adwood** (1644), of Boston in 1642, came from Sanderstead, Surrey County, England, in the employment of Thomas Buttolph, a leather-dresser. He was admitted to be a townsman Dec. 26, 1642, joined the church Feb. 24, 1644, and became a freeman in 1645. He married, Aug. 11, 1646, Ann, daughter of William Copp. He died in 1651. His son, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1673.

**John Arnold** (1644), of Boston in 1639, was a plasterer. He was admitted to be a freeman May 10, 1643, and was unmarried when he united with the First Church, April 22, 1643. He died prior to Oct. 29, 1661, when the administrator of his estate entered a claim to certain lands in Boston as the property of the deceased. His house and garden were west of Hanover Street and north of Mill Creek. He had a grant of land, Feb. 24, 1639.

**Theodore Atkinson** (1644), of Boston in 1634, felt maker, came in the employment of John Newgate, from Bury, England. He joined the First Church Jan. 11, 1635, and became a freeman May 18, 1642. He was one of the founders and members of the Old South Church. His son, Theodore, — a sergeant in Capt. Davenport's (1639) company, — was killed in the great Indian fight of Dec. 19, 1675. Theodore, Sr. (1644), had a grant of land in 1640 at Muddy River, and subsequently was a constable, 1649, and clerk of the market, 1655. In 1645, he bought of Thomas Hawkins (1638) a house on Court Street, south side, on the second lot from the corner of Washington Street. In 1652, he bought another, near the present line of Bromfield Street, which he sold to Edward Rawson, colonial secretary; hence Rawson's Lane, now Bromfield Street. Theodore Atkinson died in August, 1701, aged eighty-nine years.

**John Baker** (1644), of Boston, a blacksmith, was admitted to be an inhabitant of Boston March 28, 1642, and to be a freeman May 18, 1642. He married Joan Swift, of Dorchester. By his will, it appears that he had a second wife, Thankful Foster; that he was part owner of the ships "Hercules" and "Mary," the latter being commanded by Capt. Joseph Rock (1658). Hopestill Foster (1673) was his brother-in-law, and Richard Baker (1658) was his brother. His will was signed March 26, 1665-6, and the inventory was taken July 3, 1666.

**George Barstow** (1644), of Boston, son of Matthew, of Shelf, York County, England, came from Gravesend in the ship "Truelove," in 1635, aged twenty-one years. In

**Thomas Adams** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853, p. 42.

**Herman Adwood** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**John Arnold** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**Theodore Atkinson** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hill's Hist.

of Old South Church; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853.

**John Baker** (1644). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1861, p. 124 (will); Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**George Barstow** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Plymouth Colony; Dedham Records; Deane's Hist. of Scituate.



1636, he had a grant of land at Dedham, whither he moved soon after his arrival, and thence to Scituate about 1651.

From the Records of Plymouth Colony, Vol. III., p. 35, we learn that a suit was commenced against William Barstow—brother of George (1644)—by Rev. Charles Chauncy, of Scituate (afterwards president of Harvard College), for saying that he (Mr. Chauncy) was the cause of the death of his brother, George Barstow (1644), late deceased, and for saying that the said Mr. Chauncy sent his bulls abroad to the church at Cambridge, whereby the said George Barstow (1644) was hindered from communion with said church, which hastened his death through grief. The court ordered William Barstow to retract. The explanation of this is, that George Barstow (1644) was a member of the Second Church in Scituate, with which Mr. Chauncy was at variance.

George Barstow (1644) died at Cambridge March 18, 1653-4.

**Henry Bridgham** (1644), of Dorchester in 1641, was admitted to be a freeman in 1643, and removed to Boston. He united with the First Church March 31, 1644. He was a tanner.

On the creek, near the corner of the present Water and Congress streets, the leather-dressers, in 1643, were granted a place to water their leather. Deacon Henry Bridgham (1644) was in possession of property on the south side of Water Street in 1655, and in 1670 he built a mansion on the lot and had his tan-pits near by. Mr. Bridgham (1644) did not live to move into the new house. The mansion became the famous Julien House, and its history is given by Shurtleff in his *Topographical Description of Boston*, p. 659. A picture of it may be seen in *Memorial History of Boston*, Vol. II., p. 524.

In 1646, the selectmen gave Capt. Bridgham (1644) permission to set his bark-house on the town's land, and in 1660 the land was confirmed unto him by them, upon his paying forty pounds towards the erection of an "Almes-house" in the town. He was a constable in 1653, and later, a captain in the militia.

He died March 12, 1670-1, and his will was proved April 13, 1671. The inventory was nearly four thousand pounds.

**William Burcham** (1644).

**John Butler** (1644), of Boston, became a freeman in 1649; by profession a physician. Savage says Mr. Butler (1644) was probably of Hartford in 1666, certainly a freeman there in 1669. He removed to Branford, and died in 1680. Administration on the estate of Dr. John Butler (1644) was granted in Boston, Oct. 5, 1682.

**Thomas Clarke [Jr.]** (1644), of Boston, shopkeeper, son of Major Thomas Clarke (1638), was born in England. He lived with his parents for a short time in Dorchester, became a freeman June 2, 1641, and soon after removed to Boston. He held a prominent place in the affairs of the town, and was a representative to the General Court in 1673, 1674, 1675, and 1676. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1644, third sergeant in 1645, first sergeant in 1650, clerk in 1653 and 1654, second sergeant

**Henry Bridgham** (1644). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. II.; *Bostonian Mag.*, Vol. I., p. 275; Shurtleff's *Topog. Des. of Boston*.

**Thomas Clarke [Jr.]** (1644). **AUTHORITY:** Whitman's *Hist. A. and H. A. Company*.

in 1660, first sergeant in 1661, ensign in 1662, and captain in 1673. In the local militia, he rose to the grade of captain. He died July 28, 1678.

Col. Nathaniel Byfield (1679) in 1675 married Deborah, a daughter of Capt. Thomas Clarke (1644), and Elisha Hutchinson (1670) married another daughter, Mrs. Elizabeth (Clarke) Freak.

**George Clifford** (1644), of Boston, had a son John, born in 1646. The preceding, with the following from the Boston Record Commissioners' Report, Vol. II., p. 76, comprises our knowledge of him:—

"It is agreed betweene the select men on the Towne's behalfe and Hugh Williams [1644] and George Clifford [1644]: That Nathaniel Newgate [1646] Apprentize to the said Hugh Williams [1644] and George Clifford [1644], aforesaid, shall doe all Comon service in druming for the Towne on trayning dayes and watches, The sayd George for these three yeares next ensueing, and the said Nathaniel for these foure yeares next ensueing, in Consideration whereof the Towne will be at the charge of learning skill in druming.

"It's further agreed with Arthur Perry [1638] that he shall give his Best diligence in Teaching the sayd George Clifford [1644] and Nathaniel Newgate [1646] in all the skill and use of the drum needfull to all common service in military Affayres, in consideration whereof he shall have foure pounds payd to him within six mo: next ensueing." Arthur Perry (1638), — who lived on School Street, — the first drummer of the Artillery Company, was thus the teacher of his successors.

**Robert Crosman** (1644), of Dedham, was born in England. He was one of the first proprietors of Dedham, 1636, when he signed the covenant for the government of the town. He was admitted a townsman Jan. 2, 1642, and grants of land in that town were made to him in February, 1642; October, 1643; May, 1644; October, 1644; February, 1645, and March, 1652. He had permission, Feb. 4, 1644, to build himself a house "nere the meeting house." Mr. Crosman gave notice of his discovery of a "mine of Mettall," "26 of 3 mo., 1649," and claimed it for his heirs and assigns. The mine was westerly of the place where Neponset River divides, a part being on the south side of the greatest stream and a part "betwixt the division of said streams." In 1652, Mr. Crosman had liberty to accept or refuse the building of a mill according to the grant made to him, and soon after he "lay down that grant of libertie."

He was living in Dedham in the summer of 1653. He married in that town, May 25, 1652, Sarah Kingsbury, by whom he had eleven or more children. His wife died in 1686, and he afterward married a widow, — Martha Eatton, of Bristol. He moved to Taunton in 1653 or 1654, with wife and one daughter. He was one of the early "twelve shilling" purchasers of the territory.<sup>1</sup> He also bought a house on Dean Street, of Capt. Foster, of Dorchester. Mr. Crosman (1644) was considered a very skilful mechanic, and was called "the drum-maker." June 28, 1672, the selectmen of Dedham made a contract with Mr. Crosman (1644) to build a mill at Wollomonuppoag, now

**Robert Crosman** (1644). **AUTHORITIES:** Dedham Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1857, p. 40.

Capt. John W. D. Hall, secretary of the Old Colony Historical Society, has disproved the statement of Mr. Savage, in his Genealogical Dictionary,

and of Mr. Baylies, that Robert was the son of John Crosman. Robert was an original emigrant, who settled in Dedham, and was one of the original settlers of Taunton.

<sup>1</sup> MS. of Mr. John W. D. Hall, Taunton, 1895.

Wrentham. He must have been a reliable man and a superior mechanic, otherwise the selectmen of Dedham would not have sent to Taunton for a man who had not been a resident of Dedham for eighteen years, to build a mill for them. He died in 1692, and his widow in 1694.

**Andrew Duren** (1644) is supposed to have come from Lincolnshire, England. He signed the Dedham covenant, was admitted to the Dedham church April 19, 1646, and was admitted a freeman May 6 next following. He was admitted an inhabitant of Dedham Jan. 1, 1651, and held the office of surveyor of land that year. He married (1) Lydia Goodnow and, (2) Dec. 21, 1652, "An Donstall." He died Sept. 16, 1677. Mr. Duren<sup>1</sup> (1644) resided in that part of Dedham now called Needham. He owned large tracts of land in the south part of the town, on Charles River, which were occupied by his descendants for several generations.

**George Fairbanks** (1644), of Dedham, son of Jonathan of that town, who came from Sowerby, England, prior to 1641, bringing his wife and six children. George (1644), the second son, was in Dedham in 1641, and is said to have been the first settler in Medfield, west of the river, near the Sherborn line, whither he moved in 1657. He married, in 1646, Mary Adams, of Dedham. He was drowned in 1682. Administration on his estate was granted May 31, 1683.

**Henry Farnham** (1644) settled in Roxbury, and was admitted a freeman in 1645, his name then being spelled Firnum. On the church records, kept by Rev. John Eliot, the name is spelled Farnham. Rev. Samuel Danforth wrote in the Roxbury Church Records: "1658 mo 12, 11 d. At midnight there happened a great burning. The fire began in the outside of Henry Farnham's [1644] work-house next the orchard and it burnt up his work house and his dwelling house and consumed a great part of his timber, some of his goods and corn and all his tools, but it pleased God not to suffer it to proceed any further." He was a joiner by trade. He moved to Long Island, thence to Killingworth, Conn., where he was in 1666, and became in that town a deacon of the church. He died Jan. 13, 1700.

**Anthony Fisher** (1644), son of Anthony, brother of Daniel (1640), and cousin of Joshua (1640), came with his parents to New England and settled in Dedham in 1637. He became a freeman May 6, 1643, and joined the Dedham church July 20, 1645. He married, Sept. 7, 1647, in Dedham, Joanna Faxon, of Braintree. He moved to Dorchester from Dedham, and probably lived with his father, who died the next year. He was one of the first to settle within the limits of the present town of Wrentham in the year 1661. He died at Dorchester Feb. 13, 1670, and in the inventory of his estate, taken April 7, 1670, he is called "late of Dedham." His widow died Oct. 16, 1694.

**Ralph Fogg** (1644) was of Plymouth in 1633, but removed to Salem, and was admitted a freeman Sept. 3, 1634. He was chosen treasurer of the town of Salem in

**Andrew Duren** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Dedham Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**George Fairbanks** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Tilden's Hist. of Medfield; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Henry Farnham** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1880; Sixth Report of Boston Rec. Com.

**Anthony Fisher** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Dedham Records; Dedham Hist. Reg.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851.

<sup>1</sup> "Andrew Duen," according to the earliest copy of the roll; now spelled Dewing. Mr. Savage, in Gen. Dict., II., 392, mentions five children of Andrew Duren.



1637, and the same year it was ordered that, "for want of print howse or some means to publish" resolves, etc., that the inhabitants might understand the laws and avoid any breach of them, they were advised to repair to Mr. Ralph Fogg (1644), who kept the records of said resolves and orders, where the people might satisfy themselves in every particular.<sup>1</sup> In 1645, Mr. Fogg (1644) was authorized to receive contributions from Salem people for the maintenance of poor scholars at the college at Cambridge.<sup>1</sup> In 1652, Ralph Fogg (1644) petitioned the General Court to keep "an intelligence office or exchange." It was not granted. He soon after returned to England, was a livery-man of London of the Skinners' Company, and died in 1674.

**Robert Hale** (1644), of Charlestown, came probably in the fleet with Winthrop in 1630, and was one of the earliest members of the First Church in Boston, his name being the eighteenth on the church roll. He was one of the founders of the Charlestown church, Nov. 2, 1632, and was one of its first deacons. He became a freeman May 14, 1634, and was by trade a carpenter. Hale Street perpetuates his name. He was wealthy, and active in all public concerns of the town, serving as a selectman for eleven years. He was ensign of the Charlestown train-band, and died July 16, 1659. Nathan Hale, executed by the British as a spy, was one of his descendants.

**Anthony Harris** (1644), of Boston, may have lived in Ipswich in 1648, but he must have returned soon after and settled at Winnisimmet Point, now Chelsea, where he died Dec. 30, 1651.

He was a brother-in-law of Elias Maverick (1654), and his mother married as her second husband, William Stitson (1648).

**David Kelley** (1644), of Boston, had wife, Elizabeth, and two sons, David and Samuel. He died in 1662.

**Henry Kibby** (1644), of Dorchester, was a tailor; admitted to be a freeman May 18, 1642, and died July 10, 1661.

**Edward Larkin** (1644), of Charlestown in 1638, became a freeman May 13, 1640. His dwelling-house and garden plot "were situated on the Southwest of the Mill hill, butting south-west upon crooked lane."<sup>2</sup> His wife is called "widow Joanna Larkin," Feb. 3, 1656.

**Nathaniel Manwarring** (1644).

**Moses Paine** (1644), of Braintree, born in England, was eldest son of Moses of the same town. He was admitted to be a freeman in 1647; was ensign of the Braintree company from 1665 to 1671; represented that town in the House of Deputies in 1666 and 1668; was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1667, ensign in 1668, and lieutenant in 1677. He moved to Boston in 1671, and was clerk of the market in 1672; constable in 1673. In 1676, he was one among many citizens of Boston, named and

**Robert Hale** (1644). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1877, p. 83; Pilgrims of Boston, p. 344; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.

**Anthony Harris** (1644). AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, p. 218.

**Moses Paine** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Tilden's Hist. of Medfield.

<sup>1</sup> Felt's Hist. of Salem, Vol. I., pp. 361, 430.

<sup>2</sup> Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. III, pp. 43, 75.

approved of by the selectmen, "for preuentinge of excessiue drinkeinge and disorder in priuate houses &c." He was elected a "Surveyor for Bostone" March 12, 1676-7, and in 1682 was one of six citizens licensed to keep "Wine Taverns." He died Dec. 15, 1690. His daughter, Elizabeth, married Henry Adams (1652), of Medfield.

### Thomas Phillips (1644).

**William Phillips** (1644), of Charlestown, was admitted to the church Sept. 23, 1639, and to be a freeman May 13, 1640. His wife died May 1, 1646, and he moved to Boston about 1649, where he married the widow of Christopher Stanley (1640). She died June 16, 1655. He had much property in lands and mills in Saco,<sup>1</sup> was there made an officer in the militia, was a magistrate in 1663, and was confirmed in that office by the royal commissioners in 1665. He was promoted to be major in 1675, the year in which he bravely and successfully defended his place against assault by the Indians. They, however, destroyed his house by fire, and he returned to Boston to reside. He made his will Sept. 29, 1683, and it was proved the 13th of November following. The Charlestown Land Records refer to property of William Phillips, but do not locate it. A memorandum says, "That I, Harman Garret, . . . did sell a house and ground unto Walter Allen, which house and ground was the house and ground of Mr. Phillips, that now keeps the ship tavern in Boston." This memorandum was sworn to Sept. 30, 1652. In the Boston Town Records, he is named as appointed on a town committee, March 11, 1650, and again the next month. He was called lieutenant in 1657, when he appeared before the selectmen as attorney for Edward Bendall (1638). He next appears on Boston Records, Dec. 3, 1680, applying for damages, which he received, for a highway laid through his land in 1650. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1655, and lieutenant in 1657.

**John Read** (1644), who was born in 1598, and is supposed to have been the son of William and Lucy Henage Reade, residing at the hamlet of Rangle, near Boston, Lincolnshire, England, came to America with the great fleet in 1630. He lived for a time in Dorchester, Braintree (now Quincy), and Weymouth. He was admitted a freeman May 13, 1640. He finally settled in Rehoboth, in the Plymouth Colony, where he spent a long life of usefulness. He went there in company with the Rev. Samuel Newman, pastor of the church in Weymouth, and others. His name appears as third on the original list of proprietors of the town. He resided in that part of the town called the "Ring," or the "Ring of the Town," — a semicircle, open to the west, which was after-

**William Phillips** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Read** (1644). AUTHORITY: MS. of Mr. George B. Reed, Boston, 1894.

<sup>1</sup> "Richard Vines and John Oldham received from the Plymouth Company in England, 1630, a patent for land on the west side of Saco River, four miles by the sea, and eight miles up country by the river. This is now called Biddeford. Vines sold the patent, in 1645, to Dr. Robert Child [1639], who, being an Episcopalian, did not find a residence on it comfortable, and, in 1648, he sold it to John Box & Co., of London. They resold it to William Phillips [1644], of Boston, vintner, March 11, 1658-9. To end a controversy with the settlers, Mr. Phillips [1644] retained the upper part of the

patent, and gave the inhabitants the lower part. Major Phillips [1644] strengthened his title by an Indian deed, May 31, 1664. About this time, he was appointed as major over the forces of the Province. In 1661, he bought of the Indians another tract, eight miles square, which now comprises nearly the towns of Sanford, Alfred, and Waterboro'. One half of this tract, called the "nineteen thousand acres," he divided, in 1676, among nineteen persons, among whom were, besides seven of his children, three sons-in-law, and four children of his wife's by a former marriage, John Jolliffe, John Woodman, Elisha Hutchinson [1670], Theodore Atkinson [1644], and William Hudson [1640], all of Boston — to each, one thousand acres." — *MS. of Mr. Edward P. Burnham, Saco, Me.*

wards included in the town of Seekonk, and in our day is a part of East Providence, R. I. His grave is near the centre of the old Seekonk burying-ground, the gravestone being marked, "I. R. A G 87. D. S 1685" (John Read, aged eighty-seven; died September, 1658).

His second son, John, Jr., was killed March 26, 1676, by the Indians, in "Pierce's Fight," King Philip's War, near Valley Falls, now in Rhode Island, an engagement in which all the English, fifty in number, were killed.

**John Richards** (1644), of Dorchester, was a son of Thomas, who came to America in 1630. John came, Randolph says, "as a servant," but he became a rich and successful merchant. He settled, in 1649, at Arrowsic Island, Me., for the purpose of trading with the Indians, but in 1653 removed to Boston. In 1654, he married the widow of Adam Winthrop (1642) and daughter of Capt. Thomas Hawkins (1638), who died Nov. 1, 1691. His second wife was Ann, a daughter of Gov. John Winthrop, of Connecticut. He had no children.

He was a lieutenant and captain in the militia, and succeeded Thomas Clarke (1638) as sergeant-major of the Suffolk Regiment in 1683, which office he retained through Andros's administration until 1689. He was treasurer of Harvard College from 1672 to 1685, and judge of the Superior Court in 1692. He was elected second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1658,—first, in 1663; was ensign in 1665, and lieutenant in 1667 and 1670.

He was admitted to the Second Church in Boston in 1664; held many important positions in town matters, being selectman of Boston six years, 1668 to 1673; was representative in the General Court for Newbury in 1671, 1672, and 1673; for Hadley in 1675, and for Boston in 1679 and 1680, being elected speaker the last-named year. From 1680 to 1686, he was elected an assistant, and was appointed one of the first new council under the charter of William and Mary, in 1692. He continued in that office until his death, which occurred at Boston, April 2, 1694. He was a commissioner with Mr. Dudley (1677) to the King, in 1681, and in 1692 was appointed one of the judges of the Superior Court for the trial at Salem of persons suspected of witchcraft.

He gave, by will, one hundred pounds to Harvard College, one hundred pounds to the town of Boston, and one hundred pounds to the Second Church, beside numerous other legacies. He left a large estate. Mr. John Foster (1679) was one of the executors.

**John Richards** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

"Thursday, Sept. 1. 1692. Major John Richards marries Mistress Anne Winthrop before Wm Stoughton Esq the Lieut Governour, at the House of Madam Usher."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 364.*

"April 2, 1694, Monday. Artillery Training. . . . In the afternoon, all the town is filled with the discourse of Major Richards death, which was very extraordinarily suddain: was abroad on the sabbath, din'd very well on Monday, and after falling into an angry passion with his Servant Richard Frame, presently after, fell probably into a Fit of Apoplexy and died. On Tuesday night was opened and no cause

found of his death; noble Parts being fair and sound.

"Friday April 6. Major Richards is buried in his Tomb in the North Burying Place: Companies in arms attending the Funeral. Bearers Stoughton, Danforth, Russell, Brown, Sewall, Addington; Major General and Mr. Foster led the widow. Mr. Torrey was not there because it was Friday. Coffin was covered with Cloth. In the Tomb were fain to nail a Board across the coffins and then a board standing right up from that, bearing against the top of the Tomb, to prevent their floating up & down; sawing and fitting this board made some inconvenient Tarriance."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. I., pp. 389, 390.*



**Thomas Roberts** (1644), son of John, came with his parents from Wales in 1636. He settled with them in Roxbury, and became a member of the Roxbury church. He moved to Boston, and was admitted to be a freeman in 1645. He was chosen "clerk of the market," "1st mo. 12th," 1654, and died probably in July, 1654. His widow, Eunice, married Moses Maverick, of Boston, Oct. 22, 1656.

**Richard Russell** (1644), of Charlestown, son of Paul, came in 1640 from Hereford, England, where he was born in 1611. He became an inhabitant of Charlestown in 1640, a member of the church, May 22, 1641, and a freeman on the 2d of June following. "He began early to be much esteemed," and was selectman in 1642, representative in 1646, and for twelve years afterward; speaker in 1648, 1650, 1654, 1655, and 1658; treasurer of the colony for twenty years, and assistant in 1659, and was repeatedly re-elected until his decease. His gravestone, in the old burial-ground in Charlestown, says, "Who served his country as Treasurer more than treble apprenticeship." He was, therefore, in public life more than thirty years. He died May 14, 1676. Among other bequests, he gave one hundred pounds to Harvard College, one hundred pounds to the church, fifty pounds for a minister's home, two hundred pounds for the poor, etc. He married (1) Maud —, who died in 1652, and (2) in 1655, widow Mary Chester, of Weathersfield, Conn.

**Peter Saltonstall** (1644). Mr. Whitman (1810), in his *History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company*, says, "Peter Saltonstall [1644] [was the] youngest son of Sir Richard, of Watertown. It is from this son that the Saltonstalls of Haverhill are descended. Col. Richard [1733] [was] a grandson of Peter."

Mr. Savage, in his *Genealogical Dictionary*, and Mr. Bond, in his *History of Watertown*, find no trace of any Peter Saltonstall in America. The late Leverett Saltonstall, of Boston, wrote that "the name of Peter Saltonstall has been discovered in no records except those of the Artillery Company. It is not improbable that he was a son of Sir Peter Saltonstall of Berkway, Co. Herts, K't, first cousin of Sir Richard. Sir Peter had a son Peter, who died unmarried." Later he wrote again, "Upon making further investigation, I find the evidence conflicting as to whether Peter was a son of Richard or not. Winthrop speaks of Sir Richard staying at his house on the evening of his return with two of his sons. Now, as Richard, Robert, and Samuel, I know, remained, Winthrop's statement can only be accounted for by the fact that Peter and Henry were those who returned with him."

The names of several members of the Artillery Company are not found in any town records, but the presence of some of them in Boston has been proved beyond doubt.

On the oldest roll of the Artillery Company (1680) the name is written plainly, "Mr. Peter Saltonstall," and his sureties were Capt. Hawkins (1638) and Mr. Clarke (1638).

**John Smith** (1644). Savage, in his *Genealogical Dictionary*, mentions as belonging to this period more than sixty John Smiths. He says, "John Smith, Boston, a tailor,

**Thomas Roberts** (1644). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1858, p. 220; Roxbury Records; Savage's Gen. Dict. Inventory of his estate is given in New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, p. 277. The five persons who signed the inventory were all members of the Artillery Company.

**Richard Russell** (1644). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. I., p. 27; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown; Charlestown Records.

admitted to the church Feb. 6, 1639, was admitted a freeman May 22, 1639. He died in 1674; his will, dated Sept. 23, 1673, was proved on the 13th of June following." The Report of Boston Record Commissioners, Vol. II., locates John Smith's house and garden west of Hanover Street and north of Portland Street, adjoining the lot where the Green Dragon Tavern stood.

**Joshua Tedd** (1644), of Charlestown. This name is spelled on the oldest roll of the Artillery Company, "Ted." Savage spells it "Tead, Teed, and Ted"; Frothingham, "Tedd"; Wyman, "Tidd," and Charlestown Records, "Tedd."

He was admitted an inhabitant of Charlestown in 1637, was admitted to the church there March 10, 1639, and became a freeman May 22 next following. He was a shop-keeper. His possessions of real estate in Charlestown consisted of six separate pieces. His homestead was "west of Mill hill." He was a selectman in 1660 and 1668, is called ensign on the church records in 1669, and was lieutenant of the Charlestown company in 1678. He died Sept. 15, 1678, aged seventy-one years.

**John Tuttle** (1644), of Ipswich in 1635,<sup>1</sup> came over that year in the "Planter," from St. Albans, England. He was admitted to be a freeman March 13, 1639, and represented Ipswich, in 1644, in the General Assembly. After a few years, he returned home and became advantageously established in Ireland, whither his wife followed him in 1654. He died Dec. 30, 1656, aged sixty years, at Carrickfergus, Ireland.

**Isaac Walker** (1644), a merchant of Boston in 1644-5, probably came hither from Salem, Mass., as he was recommended to the First Church in Boston by the church in Salem. He joined the former May 2, 1646, and a few days after was admitted to be a freeman. In 1674, he transferred his membership to the Third Church. He was an active proprietor of Lancaster, though he did not move there. In 1662, he and his wife deeded to "their daughter, Susannah, . . . that little shop which now she keeps." This daughter married a Thomas Stanbury, who built the building pulled down in 1860, called the "Old Feather Store." His son, Lieut. Isaac, joined the Artillery Company in 1676. Isaac, Sr., died Oct. 19, 1688. Judge Sewall, in his Diary, writes of Mr. Walker's (1644) burial, on Monday, Oct. 22, 1688. Mr. Walker's (1644) third or fourth wife was Hannah, daughter of Deacon Theophilus Frary (1666).

**Robert Ware** (1644), a husbandman, of Dedham, of that part now Wrentham, in 1643, was admitted to be a freeman in 1647, and was received into the church at Dedham, "2<sup>d</sup> 8<sup>m</sup>, 1646." He was highway surveyor in 1656 and 1658. He married, (1) "11<sup>th</sup> of the 1<sup>st</sup> mo. 1645," Margaret Hunting, of Dedham, and (2) "3, 3, 1676," Hannah Jones. In his will, dated Feb 25, 1698-9, his great age is spoken of. He died in 1699, his will being proved May 11 of that year. In his will he mentions his wife, Hannah. She died April 20, 1721, aged eighty-four years.

His son, Robert, served in December, 1675, under Capt. Moseley (1672), in King Philip's War.

**Joshua Tedd** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown; Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. III.

**Robert Ware** (1644). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1852; Dedham Records.  
<sup>1</sup> Hurd's Hist. of Essex Co., Vol. I., p. 570.

**Thomas Wells** (1644), of Ipswich, perhaps a physician, came in the "Susan and Ellen" from London, with young Richard Saltonstall. The town of Wells, Me., received its name from this family. Mr. Wells (1644) was made a freeman May 17, 1637. He left a good estate, including lands in Wells, (now) Me. He was a deacon of the Ipswich church, made his will July 3, 1666, and died on the 26th of October of that year, aged sixty-six years. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1644.

**Hugh Williams** (1644), a hatter, of Boston, was called "a single man" when he joined the First Church, Jan. 1, 1642. He became a freeman May 18 of the same year. Mr. Savage, in his *Genealogical Dictionary*, says, "Probably never married, at least his will of Oct. 21, 1674, mentions no wife or children." He was clerk of the market, 1655.

Mr. Williams (1644) was the employer of Nathaniel Newgate (1646) when the latter was engaged to drum for the Military Company and the town. Arthur Perry (1638) was Mr. Newgate's (1646) instructor. Mr. Williams (1644) probably moved to Block Island, as his executors, Nov. 12, 1674, call him "late of Block Island."

**Nathaniel Williams** (1644), called "a laborer," was a glover, of Boston. He was admitted to the First Church May 26, 1639, and became a freeman May 13 following. He was held in good esteem, had a fair estate, and died April 23, 1661.<sup>1</sup> He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1654, and held the position of lieutenant in the militia. His son, Capt. Nathaniel Williams, joined the Artillery Company in 1667, and held the office of commissary during King Philip's War. Nathaniel, Sr. (1644), was clerk of the market in 1651, constable, 1656-7, and selectman from 1659 to his decease. His daughter, Ruth, married Joseph Belknap (1658). The Records of Boston's Selectmen state, "29, 2, 1661, . . . Peter Oliver [1643] is chosen sealer of weights and measures in ye place of Nat. Williams [1644] deceased."

**Robert Williams** (1644), a husbandman, of Roxbury in 1637, became a freeman May 2, 1638. He came from Norwich, England, "and is the common ancestor of the divines, civilians, and warriors of this name, who have honored the country of their birth." Among his distinguished descendants are Col. Ephraim Williams, founder of Williams College; Rev. Elisha, president of Yale College; William, Governor of Connecticut, and a signer of the Declaration of Independence; Col. Joseph, of Roxbury, and Rev. Eleazer, he "lost Bourbon."

**Thomas Wells** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, p. 175; 1850, p. 11.

**Hugh Williams** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Caulkins's Hist. of New London.

**Nathaniel Williams** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**Robert Williams** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury, pp. 115, 116; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1880, p. 69.

"Robert Williams, of Roxbury, eldest son of Stephen and Margaret (Cooke) Williams, of St. Nicholas Parish, Great Yarmouth, England, baptized there Dec. 11, 1608. In 1623, he left his father's house and went to Norwich, where, as a 'forrener,' he was apprenticed to John Garrett, 'cordynar,' for seven years. On the expiration of his apprenticeship, he was admitted freeman of the city of Norwich, and, five years later, was elected warden of

his guild, and was also searcher and sealer of leather for the city.

"Two years later (April 8, 1637), he was examined, according to royal act, and received permission to emigrate, and, on April 15, 1637, he embarked with wife, Elizabeth Stalham, four children, and two 'servants,' on the 'Rose,' of Yarmouth, and reached Boston June 20, 1637. He settled at Roxbury, Mass., and, after holding many town offices, died there Sept. 1, 1693, aged eighty-five.

"During the fifty years from 1680 to 1730, the descendants of Robert Williams are among the foremost in the ministry, and the Primate of the Protestant Episcopal Church of this country, the venerable Rt. Rev. John Williams, of Connecticut, is in the seventh generation from Robert Williams [1644]." — *MS. of E. H. Williams, Jr., Bethlehem, Pa.*

<sup>1</sup> "[He] Died 23<sup>d</sup> of 2 mo., 1661." — *Diary of John Hull.*



The homestead of Robert Williams (1644), in which five generations of the family lived and died, remained standing until 1794, upon the site now occupied by the large brick dwelling-house on Dearborn Street, near the school-house. This mansion, built by Dr. Thomas Williams, a descendant of Robert, was the family residence until the death of his son, "Lawyer Tom," in 1823. This old family seat formed a part of quite a large estate, extending easterly from what is now Albany Street, on both sides of Eustis Street, as far as Magazine Street.

Mr. Williams (1644) was for some time clerk of the town of Roxbury, and received two acres of land near Dorchester Brook for his services. Mr. Drake says that Robert (1644) subsequently petitioned the town to take it back, as it occasioned him "too much worldly care."

Robert Williams (1644) married (2), Nov. 3, 1675, Margaret Fearing, widow, of Hingham. He died Sept. 1, 1693, aged eighty-five years.

**Deane Winthrop** (1644), of Boston, was the sixth son of Gov. John Winthrop, of Massachusetts. He was born at Groton Manor, England, March 16, 1623, and was left there at school by his father, but came over in the "Abigail" in 1635, at the age of twelve years, with his brother, John. His name was derived from Sir John Deane, half-brother of his mother. He was early engaged with his uncle Downing in projecting a new settlement on the Nashua River below Lancaster, and lying on the Merrimack. It was created a new town in 1655, and was named Groton in honor of the town of his birth, Groton, England. He was appointed the first selectman of the new town. In 1656, he was granted a thousand acres of land by the General Court. In 1653, Mr. Winthrop (1644) petitioned the General Court to be "freed from trayning." The request was "left to the descretion of his captayne." His residence, however, was always at Pulling Point, in the harbor of Boston, and the place has recently been erected into a corporate town by the name of Winthrop. He was admitted to be a freeman in 1665, and died March 16, 1704. He married Sarah, daughter of Rev. José Glover, and sister of the wife of his brother, Adam (1642). His daughter, Mercy, married Atherton Hough (1643).

Several of his letters may be read in the Winthrop Papers, and a picture of his house at Pulling Point may be seen in Memorial History of Boston, Vol. I., p. 447.

**John Woodbridge** (1644), of Newbury, was a son of Rev. John Woodbridge, of Stanton, England. He was born in 1613, had been bred at Oxford, Mather says, but on the requirement of the oath of uniformity he left the university, and was brought by his uncle, Rev. Thomas Parker, of Newbury, in the "Mary and John," in 1634, to America. John (1644) was one of the first planters of Newbury, Mass. He seems to

**Deane Winthrop** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1882, p. 26.

"March 16, 1703-4. Mr. Dean Winthrop, of Pulling Point, dies upon his birthday, just about the Breaking of it. He was Taken at eight a'clock the evening before, as he sat in his chair, sunk first, being set up, he vomited, complain'd of his head, which were almost his last words. Hardly spake anything after his being in bed. 81 years old. He is the last of Gov. Winthrops children, — *statione novissimus exit*. March 20, is buried at Pulling

Point by his son and three daughters. Bearers: Russell, Cooke: Hutchinson, Sewall: Townsend, Paige. From the House of Hasey: Scutcheons on the Pall. I help'd to lower the Corps into the Grave. Madam Paige went in her Coach. Maj. Gen. and Capt Adam Winthrop had scarvs and led the widow. Very pleasant day; Went by Winisemet." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 96.

**John Woodbridge** (1644). AUTHORITIES: Coffin's Hist. of Newbury; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Savage's Gen. Dict.

have had little tendency to preach, for in 1637, when his father died in England, a successor was immediately appointed to the vacancy, and he was made "surveyor of the arms," and representative to the General Court. He was living in Newbury in November, 1642, when his father-in-law stirred him up to seek advancement as a minister.

In 1644, he taught school in Boston, and married Mercy, daughter of Gov. Thomas Dudley. Oct. 24, 1645, he was ordained at Andover the first pastor of the church there, but went to England in 1647. He remained there sixteen years, being engaged in important matters of the state, preaching at Andover and teaching at Newbury, whence, Mather says, the Bartholomew Act excluded him. On the 27th of July, 1663, he arrived at Boston in the ship "Society," and for two years assisted in the ministrations of his uncle, Parker. After two or three years, a controversy occurred in the church and he was dismissed, when practically he retired from the ministry. In 1683, he was chosen an assistant, and he acted as a magistrate until his death, March 17, 1695.

To a person of his surname is to be attributed the origin of paper money, — Hutchinson says his name was Woodbridge, a New England man, and calls him "the projector," — about 1690.

**Rev. John Norton**, of Boston, delivered the Artillery sermon in June, 1644. The Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay in New England (1644), Vol. II., p. 71, say, "It is ordered the printer shall have leave to print the election sermon, with Mr. Mather's consent, and the artillery sermon, with Mr. Norton's consent."

Rev. John Norton was born at Starford, England, May 6, 1606, educated at the University of Cambridge, England, and came to America with Gov. Winslow, in 1635. He was ordained at Ipswich in 1636, and settled with the church there. July 23, 1656, he succeeded Rev. John Cotton, deceased, as pastor of the First Church in Boston. He died April 5, 1663.

The officers elected were: Robert Sedgwick (1637), captain; **1645-6.** Thomas Savage (1637), lieutenant, and Humfrey Atherton (1638), ensign. Francis Norton (1643) was first sergeant; Eleazer Lusher (1638), second sergeant; Thomas Clarke (1644), third sergeant; William Davis (1643), fourth sergeant; Robert Scott (1638), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Arthur Perry (1638), drummer.

The Company again honored two of its founders by the re-election of Robert Sedgwick (1637) as captain and Thomas Savage (1637) as lieutenant. Sergt. Humfrey Atherton (1638) was promoted to the rank of ensign.

The theocratic form of government established in Massachusetts was not universally popular, and a desire was manifested to have churches established in accordance with the Presbyterian creed, which had then been adopted by the British Parliament as the established church of England. Those who entertained this view refused to acknowledge the supremacy of the independent church established in Massachusetts, and were therefore "excluded from civil and military employments and from the franchise."

**Rev. John Norton.** AUTHORITIES: Mather's New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1880, p. 89. Magnalia, Vol. I., p. 286; Eliot's Biographical Dict.;

The new members recruited in 1645-6 were: John Bowles, Daniel Gookin, Robert Hinsdale, John Hutchinson, Isaac Johnson, Daniel Kilhen, Clement Koldom, Thomas Lothrop, William Lyon, Henry Parkes, Thomas Rashley, Joshua Scottow, Elias Stileman, Israel Stoughton, Thomas Venner, William Wale.

**John Bowles** (1645), of Roxbury in 1639, became a freeman May 13, 1640. He was a member of the church at Roxbury, of which Rev. John Eliot was pastor, and "4 mo. 6. d. 1675" he was elected a ruling elder of the church. He was the founder of a grammar school, a member of the General Court in 1645, and died in Roxbury Sept. 21, 1680.<sup>1</sup>

Elder Bowles was a leading member of the Massachusetts company for colonizing New England, and was a warm friend of the apostle Eliot, who said of him, "Prudent and gracious men set over our churches for the assistance of their pastors, such helps in government had he [Eliot] been blessed withal, the best of which was the well-deserving Elder Bowles [1645]. God helps him to do great things among us." The family of John Bowles (1645) was prominent in town affairs for nearly a century.

John Bowles (1645) married (1) Dorothy, who died Nov. 3, 1649; (2) April 2, 1650, Elizabeth, a daughter of Elder Isaac Heath, who died July 6, 1655, and (3) Sarah, widow of Francis Chickering (1643), who died May 23, 1687.

Sergt. John Bowles (1645) was confirmed as ensign of the Roxbury company Sept. 9, 1653. He was one of the petitioners to the General Court, Oct. 25, 1664, when there was a constant struggle for colonial rights under the charter, requesting the honored court to "stand fast in our present liberty's," and assuring the members that they will pray the Lord to "assist them to sterve right in these shaking times."

**Daniel Gookin** (1645), of Cambridge, emigrated with his father from the County of Kent, England, to Virginia in 1621, whence, in consequence of religious persecutions, or flying from the Indian massacre, he came to New England May 20, 1644. On the Sunday following, he was admitted a member of the First Church, and May 29 of the same year was admitted a freeman. In both records he is called "Captain." He resided in Boston and Roxbury a short time, but in 1647 removed to Cambridge, where he resided until his decease. In Mather's *Magnalia*, he is regarded as one of the converts of Thompson, — a missionary from New England to Virginia in 1642.

"Gookin was one of them: by Thompson's pains,  
Christ and New England, a dear Gookin gains."

He was dismissed by the Boston church to the church at Cambridge, Sept. 3, 1648. He married for his second wife Hannah, widow of Habijah Savage (1665) and daughter

**John Bowles** (1645). *AUTHORITIES*: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Records of Mass. Bay; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, pp. 192-3; 1852, p. 372; Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Bridgman, p. 206.

**Daniel Gookin** (1645). *AUTHORITIES*: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1848, 1849, 1877, 1879; Eliot's Gen. Dict.; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co.; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Records of Mass. Bay.

"[1686-7] March 18. . . I go to Charlestown Lecture, and then with Capt Hutchinson to see dying Major Gookin. He speaks to us.

"March 19, Satterday, about 5 or 6 in the morn, Maj Daniel Gookin dies, a right good Man." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. I, p. 170.*

He was buried Tuesday, March 22.

<sup>1</sup> "M 7 day 21. 1680 beloved Elder Bowles deceased having bene Elder of the church 5 years & 3 months he was killed by a cart wheele running over his body.

"M 7 day 24. Deare Bro. Bowles was buried, he hath bene Elder above 5 years." — *Roxbury Church Records, by Rev. John Eliot.*

In the inventory of his estate, Nov. 10, 1680, Suffolk Probate Records, Vol. IX., folio 2, are included "Armes and Ammunition."



of Edward Tyng (1642). Capt. Gookin (1645) for about forty years was one of the most active and useful citizens of Cambridge. He was licenser of the printing-press in 1663; selectman from 1660 to 1672; representative, 1649 and 1651, being speaker the latter year; an assistant from 1652 to 1686, excepting 1676, in which the prejudice against the Praying Indians, whom he befriended, prevented his election.

He succeeded William Spencer (1637) as lieutenant of the Cambridge train-band, and on Capt. George Cooke's (1638) departure to England was elected captain, being afterward promoted to be sergeant-major of the Middlesex Regiment. He commanded the first regiment of Middlesex on the division in 1680, and May 11, 1681, succeeded Gov. Leverett (1639) as sergeant-major-general, being the last person elected to that office under the old charter. He was described by Johnson as a "Kentish souldier," "a very forward man to advance martial discipline and withal the truths of Christ." In 1676, when major, he was very active in raising and furnishing troops for King Philip's War.

"He was trusted by Oliver Cromwell as a confidential agent, and was selected by him to assist in executing his favorite project of transplanting a colony from New England to Jamaica. He visited England twice, partly at least on public service. On his last return to this country, the two regicides, Goffe and Whalley, were his fellow-passengers, and accompanied him to Cambridge, where they arrived in July, 1660. He was therefore denounced by Randolph as their friend and protector. In the troublesome contest which commenced soon afterwards, upon the restoration of Charles II., Major Gookin [1645] was among the foremost defenders of the chartered rights of the colonists. He was as resolute in the maintenance of religious as of civil privileges, and when the Quakers disturbed the peace of the church, he was among the sternest of their judges."

He was an intimate friend of Rev. John Eliot, the apostle to the Indians, and for many years acted as a general superintendent of Indian affairs, visiting their villages, holding courts among them, and endeavoring to provide for their welfare. "His reputation," says Savage, "in the present age stands justly higher than it did during a part of his life, when his benevolent attempts to serve and save the Indians were misinterpreted, much obloquy was uttered against him, and he said on the bench of justice, that he was afraid for his life in walking the streets."

He resided in Cambridge, on what is generally called the Winthrop estate, on the southerly side of Arrow Street, near the easterly angle of Bow Street. He died March 19, 1686-7, aged seventy-five years.

Mr. Whitman (1810) seems to estimate him very justly. Major-Gen. Gookin (1645) "was in disposition lively and active, which, united with generosity, prompted him to noble actions. Although somewhat tinctured with party spirit, both in religion and politics, yet he was a firm, dignified republican, and prized religious freedom as invaluable. As a magistrate, he held the sword of justice with effect, to protect the rights of his brethren; and as a soldier, was ever ready to wield the same sword against the enemies of his country. Piety and morality shone conspicuous in his character; he had firmness in a just cause to stem the torrent of popular invective, and convince his opponents of the wisdom and integrity of his conduct."

**Robert Hinsdale** (1645), of Dedham, was one of the founders of the church in that town, Nov. 8, 1638, and became a freeman March 13, 1639. He was among the first

**Robert Hinsdale** (1645). **AUTHORITIES:** Tilden's Hist. of Medfield; Dedham Records.

thirteen who took up house-lots at Medfield, and his homestead was upon North Street. He built his house there in 1652. In 1659, he purchased a bell and "brought it up for the use of the town." Soon after, the town granted him forty-six acres of land near what is now Collins' Mill, in Millis. He built a mill there, which, it is believed, was burned by the Indians in 1676. He was active in organizing the Medfield church, was one of the first board of selectmen in that town, and held the office six years.

He removed from Medfield to Hadley, and thence to Deerfield. He was harvesting in the cornfield, when he and three of his sons were killed by the Indians, at the same time, Sept. 18, 1675, when Capt. Lothrop (1645), with the "Flower of Essex," fell at Bloody Brook.

**John Hutchinson** (1645) has not been positively identified. There were then two families of Hutchinsons in the colony. John, of the Salem family, was not born until 1643. John Hutchinson, of Alford, England, was born May 18, 1598. He married, Oct. 1, 1618, Elizabeth Woodthrope. He probably married a second wife. His last child, born in England, was born Feb. 4, 1641-2. Rev. John Wheelwright was his brother-in-law. William, Samuel (1652), Richard, and Edward Hutchinson, Sr., were his brothers, and Edward (1638) his nephew, all of Boston. Whether he followed his relatives to America is a matter of uncertainty.<sup>1</sup>

**Isaac Johnson** (1645), of Roxbury, was the eldest son of Capt. John Johnson (1638), of Roxbury. Capt. John (1638) came in the fleet with Winthrop, bringing his wife and sons, Isaac and Humfrey. Isaac was admitted to be a freeman March 4, 1635, and became a member of the Roxbury church. He married, Jan. 30, 1637, Elizabeth Porter, of Roxbury, who died Aug. 13, 1683. He was ensign of the company in Roxbury previous to 1653; on June 13 of that year was elected captain, and represented that town in the General Court in 1671. He was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1666, and its captain in 1667. On July 6, 1675, a body of fifty-two Praying Indians, Rev. John Eliot's converts, marched from Boston for Mount Hope under the intrepid Capt. Isaac Johnson (1645), of Roxbury, who afterwards certified that the most of them acquitted themselves courageously and faithfully. He, with five other captains, was killed while storming the Narraganset stronghold, when that fierce tribe was destroyed at the famous Fort fight, Dec. 19, 1675.

**Daniel Kilhen** (1645) should probably be Daniel Kilham (1645), whom Mr. Savage locates in Wenham, Mass.

**Clement Koldom, or Coldam** (1645), of Lynn in 1630, was a miller, born in 1622, and died April 8, 1675. He took oath, May 26, 1661, that he had known William Longley at Lynn for twenty-three years. "His recollection of matters pertaining to [Lynn's] very early days," says Mr. Newhall, of that city, "seems to have been much relied on in after years, his testimony having great weight in several important lawsuits. Not much is known of his military achievements."

**Isaac Johnson** (1645). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Records of Mass. Bay; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1885, p. 74.

**Clement Koldom** (1645). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Savage's Gen. Dict.

<sup>1</sup> New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1865.

**Thomas Lothrop** (1645), of that part of Salem now Beverly, became a freeman May 14, 1634; was lieutenant of the Salem train-band in 1644, under Capt. Hathorne, and succeeded him in command in 1645. He represented Salem in the House of Deputies in 1647, 1653, and 1664. In 1654, a colonial force proceeded to Acadia and captured Port Royal and St. John. Capt. Thomas Lothrop (1645) was a captain under Gen. Sedgwick (1637) in that expedition. He brought home a bell, taken from a church in St. John, for the use of the people at Cape Ann Side (Beverly). In 1662, he took command of the military company at Cape Ann Side. He was one of the founders of the church there, in 1667, and represented the town in the Legislature for four years. He was active in military matters, and served as captain for years. He held that office in King Philip's War, and, with about seventy of his men, was slain at Bloody Brook, Sept. 18, 1675. Increase Mather calls him "a godly courageous commander."

He married Bethia Rea, of Salem, but left no children. His property was inherited by his sister, Ellen, the second wife of Ezekiel Cheever, the famous school-master.

**William Lyon** (1645), of Roxbury, came to America in 1635, aged fourteen years, in the "Hopewell," and became a freeman in 1666. He, with John Bowles (1645) and others, signed the Roxbury petition, Oct. 25, 1664, to the General Court, praying it to "stand fast in our present liberty's." Bellevue Street, in Roxbury, was formerly Lyon Street, in honor of this early settler, on which stood the old homestead. He died May 21, 1692.

**Henry Parkes** (1645).

**Thomas Rashley** (1645), of Boston, was admitted to the First Church March 8, 1640, and is called "a student." The next year he was in Gloucester for a short time as a preacher. His child, John, "being about six weeks old," was baptized at Boston May 18, 1645. He was settled in Exeter in 1646. Soon after, he returned to England, and was minister at Bishop Stoke, where, May 4, 1652, he baptized Samuel Sewall (1679), first of that name, chief-justice of Massachusetts. Rev. Thomas Rashley (1645) was afterward settled in Wiltshire, England.

**Joshua Scottow** (1645), of Boston, "chirurgion," came to America with his widowed mother, and he joined the First Church May 19, 1639. He never took the oath of a freeman, but was appointed by the General Court, in 1645, a commissioner for regulating the exportation of powder. He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1650 and 1651, and its ensign in 1657. Capt. Scottow (1645) was one of the founders of the Old South Church in May, 1669. His garden, consisting of about one half an acre of land, and his house were situated on Sudbury Street. He owned several other pieces of real estate in the town. He was a selectman of Boston from 1657 to 1667.

**Thomas Lothrop** (1645). AUTHORITIES: Felt's Annals of Salem, Vol. II., p. 504; Bodge's King Philip's War.

**William Lyon** (1645). AUTHORITIES: Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. VI.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury.

**Thomas Rashley** (1645). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Joshua Scottow** (1645). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, 1889; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Memoir of Joshua Scottow, by Hamilton A. Hill; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.



inclusive. Of his daughters, Elizabeth married Lieut.-Col. Thomas Savage (1665), Lydia married (1) Benjamin Gibbs (1666) and (2) Anthony Checkley (1662), and Mary married Samuel Checkley (1678).

Joshua Scottow (1645) was a captain in the militia, the confidential agent of La Tour in transactions with the colonial government, 1654-7, and after King Philip's War had a large property at Scarborough, (now) Me. He was captain of the garrison there, and held the office of magistrate. From Oct. 25, 1675, to May, 1676, he was actively engaged in the Indian war, and his journal in manuscript, covering that period, is in the library of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

In 1681, he was cruelly charged with the murder of a Mr. Bedford, who was proved to be accidentally drowned.<sup>1</sup> He was the author of two curious tracts concerning the early history of New England, which were published in Boston in 1691 and 1694.<sup>2</sup> He was an original, thoughtful, liberal man, a friend of the murdered Mrs. Hibbens. He died Jan. 20, 1698, aged eighty-three years—so his gravestone relates, which was transferred from the burying-ground to the inside of the tower of the "Old South,"<sup>3</sup> and thence to the New Old South meeting-house.

Judge Sewall (1679) records: "Jan. 21 [1697-8]. It seems Capt Scottow died the last night. Thus in New England men drop away. Jan 22 [1697-8] Joshua Scottow is buried in the old burying place. Extream cold. No minister at funeral; no wife nor daughter."

**Elias Stileman** (1645), of Salem, son of Elias, perhaps came in the fleet with Higginson in 1629. Elias (1645) was then twelve years of age. He was admitted to the Salem church Aug. 18, 1639, and became a freeman May 18, 1642. He removed about 1659 to Portsmouth, and represented that town in the House of Deputies for six years, 1667-72. He was authorized by the General Court to hold court in Dover and Portsmouth in 1667, and in York County in 1668; was a counsellor under President Cutt in 1680; a captain, then a major in the militia; representative again in 1690; secretary of New Hampshire, and died Dec. 19, 1695, aged seventy-eight years. His residence was for some years at Great Island, now Newcastle, N. H.

**Israel Stoughton** (1645), of Dorchester, eldest son of Lieut.-Col. Israel Stoughton (1637), was born in England. Mr. Savage adds, "There is no more mention of him, and he died before May, 1665." When admitted to the Artillery Company he was called "Mr. Israel Stoughton," and his surety was Lieut. Savage (1637).

In the Records of the First Church in Roxbury, Mass., written by Rev. John Eliot, is found the following entry: "1647. This spring we of Roxbury w<sup>th</sup> some of Dor-

**Elias Stileman** (1645). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay.

<sup>1</sup> Maine Hist. Coll., III.

<sup>2</sup> "Mr. Scottow [1645] was a merchant of much respectability, nearly contemporary with the Governor [Bradstreet], and, during his early life, took an active interest in all the affairs of the town. But he grew despondent as he grew in years; the change of dress, manners, and social customs, from those of the first generation, seemed to him the sure presage of destruction, and he poured out his sorrow in a book of lamentations called *Old Mens' Tears for their own Declensions*."—*Quoted in Hist. Cat. of Old South Church*, 1883.

Three years later, he published *A Narrative of the Planting of the Massachusetts Colony*.

<sup>3</sup> "A Venerable Relic in a Curious Place. — As the workmen engaged in repairing the Old South Church were removing some bricks in the tower of that edifice, on Monday morning, it became necessary to take out a flat stone over the place in the wall through which the connecting-rod of the hands of the north dial of the clock passed. This stone proved to be a finely-chiselled gravestone, bearing the name of Joshua Scottow, who died Jan. 20, 1697-8."—*Boston Atlas*, October, 1850.

chester ventured to sea in a small vessell but the master wanted sufficient experience & the vessel overmasted & was over-sett, & many weeks after came whole allmost, ashore to shew the error of men to goe to sea so rawly: many w<sup>r</sup> cast away in her, m<sup>th</sup> Stoughton's eldest sonne [1645], M<sup>r</sup> Howards Eldest sonne w<sup>th</sup> many others."

He is called Mrs. Stoughton's son because Lieut.-Col. Stoughton (1637), his father, had died two years before, in England.

**Thomas Venner** (1645), a wine cooper, of Salem, was admitted to the church Feb. 25, 1638, and the next month became a freeman. Mr. Felt, in the *Annals of Salem*, says, under date of June, 1641, "Thomas Venner [1645] at the head of a company, is zealous for emigrating to Providence, W. I., and strengthening a church there." He moved to Boston prior to January, 1645, at which time his daughter Hannah was born. She was baptized in the First Church, Feb. 2, 1644-5, and her father is called "—— Venner member of Ch at Salem." He was in Boston in 1649-50 also, as recorded in the Boston Records. In 1650, "10th of first mo.," "Mr. Venner and the neighbors there about had libertie to dig a Well and Set a Pumpe therein, nere the Shop of William Davis [1643]." Mr. Venner's (1645) place was on the water's edge, near State Street, on wharf property owned by Edward Tyng (1642), whose brewery probably received its barrels from the cooper shop of Mr. Venner (1645). In 1648, he was one of seven who asked the government to make a corporation of coopers.

He returned to London in October, 1651, and followed his trade of a cooper until about 1657, when he became a preacher to a sect of enthusiasts called Fifth Monarchy Men. After the Restoration in 1660, he attempted to renew the anarchy; "to bring in the kingdom of Jesus Christ and to drive out Charles Stuart." He, with a small number of followers, variously estimated at from fifty to five hundred, raised an insurrection in the streets of London. The Lord Mayor marched at the head of forty thousand municipal troops and volunteers to quell the disturbance; but, failing to find Mr. Venner (1645) and his disciples, who had retreated to Caen Wood, the army pulled down the meeting-house. It is said that Venner's "rogues" "put the King's life-guard to the run," and "spread consternation through the entire collection of train-bands." Finally, the insurrection was suppressed, the fanatics were captured, the formality of a trial was granted them, and Mr. Venner (1645) and twelve of his associates, who declared themselves invulnerable, were executed in January, 1661.

**William Wale** (1645).

The officers elected were: Edward Gibbons (1637), captain; Humfrey Atherton (1638), lieutenant; Eleazer Lusher (1638), ensign; Thomas French (1638), first sergeant; Richard Sprague (1638), second sergeant; James Oliver (1640), third sergeant; William Hudson (1640), fourth sergeant; Anthony Stoddard (1639), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Arthur Perry (1638), drummer.

**Thomas Venner** (1645). AUTHORITIES: Palfrey's *Hist. of New Eng.*; Diary of John Hull, pp. 200, 201; See New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1893, illustrated article on Thomas Venner, the Boston Wine Cooper and Fifth Monarchy Man, by Dr.

Charles E. Banks, of Portland, Me.

"He was hung, drawn, and quartered in London, 1661, as a Fifth Monarchy Man." — *Felt's Annals of Salem, Vol. I., p. 173.*

The popularity and efficiency of Sergt.-Major Gibbons (1637) were shown by his election for the third time as commander, while Ensign Humfrey Atherton (1638) was promoted to the rank of lieutenant. Major Lusher (1638), of Dedham, who was elected ensign, was one of the few "husbandmen" who have belonged to the Company. He was known as the "nimble-footed captain," and Mr. Johnson (1637) says, "He was one of a nimble and active spirit, strongly affected in the ways of truth — one of the right stamp, and pure metal, a gracious, humble and heavenly minded man."

The North Battery, "att Walter Merry's Point," was commenced in 1646. Edward Johnson (1637) speaks of it as "a very strong battery, built of whole timber and filled with earth." It is now Battery Wharf.

In 1646, a number of those inclined to the Presbyterian faith, among them Thomas Fowle (1639), David Yale (1640), Dr. Robert Child (1639), Samuel Maverick (1658), and John Smith (1644), presented a petition to the General Court, in which they compliment the government for its "eminent gifts, continual care, and constant vigilance." There could be no question as to their "care and vigilance." The petitioners asked permission to publicly worship God according to the dictates of their own consciences.

This unexpected movement produced the greatest excitement, and the petitioners were at once cited to appear in person before the General Court. They were charged with "contemptuous and seditious expressions, and were required to find sureties for their good behaviour." The case came before an adjourned session of the General Court for final settlement, when the petitioners, having been convicted of violating "the rule of the apostle," which is, "to study to be quiet and to meddle with your own business"; and having been reminded of "that sin of Korah, and of the near resemblance between theirs and that," were fined respectively in sums varying from thirty to fifty pounds.

These petitioners then determined to appeal to Parliament, and Dr. Child (1639), one of their number, who had been engaged for some time in studying the mineral wealth of Massachusetts, was appointed to go at once to England and prosecute their appeal there. This, however, coming to the knowledge of the authorities, they arrested the doctor, took from him his papers, and kept him in confinement for two or three days until the ships were gone. Mr. Winthrop complains, with much sadness, that, on this occasion, Dr. Child (1639), "a man of quality, a gentleman and a scholar," as he terms him, manifested a somewhat undue amount of passion, and "gave big words."

Two other persons, in the meantime, — Mr. Vassall and Mr. Fowle (1639), — managed to slip away, with the obnoxious papers in their possession, and embarked for England. Just before they sailed, Mr. Cotton delivered a Thursday lecture, in which he took occasion to inveigh against the enormous wickedness that must possess the man who would dare to go abroad on such an errand, and warned such of his hearers as might be about to cross the sea, against the perils they might expect to encounter if these seditious documents should happen to be on board the ship; adding that they would prove to be a Jonas to the voyage. "A storm did arise," says Mr. Blake in his History of Boston, "and a certain woman on board, who had heard Mr. Cotton's sermon, ran about the ship in much consternation," anxious to find out if there was a Jonas on board. "She gave Mr. Vassal a call at midnight. He asked her why she came to him. Because, she said, it was thought he had some writings against the people of God. He told her that he had only a petition to Parliament, merely praying that they might enjoy the liberty of English subjects." She next paid Mr. Fowle (1639) a visit. He told her he had a copy of the petition which himself and others had presented to the court at



Boston; and said that, if she and others judged that to be the cause of the storm, they might have it, and do what they would with it. She took the paper to her companions, who, after consultation, decided that it should be cast overboard. It was not observed, however, that the giving of the document to the sea was followed by any favorable change in the weather, although, after a perilous passage, she reached the shores of England in safety, where Messrs. Vassall and Fowle (1639) published the genuine papers with which they were charged, under the title, "New England's Jonas Cast Up in London."

The new members recruited in 1646-7 were: George Barber, William Blake, Edmund Bowker, John Capen, Roger Clap, William Clark, Hugh Gunnison, Richard Harding, Richard Harrison, Edmund Jackson, Nathaniel Newgate, William Parsons, Brian Pendleton, Edward Preston, John Ruggles, John Shaw, Richard Whittington.

**George Barber** (1646), of Dedham, was born in England about 1615. He came to America in the "Transport" in 1635. He became a townsman in Dedham in 1640, took the freeman's oath in 1647, and soon after settled in what is now Medfield. In November, 1641, he contracted with the selectmen of Medfield to build a mill, "for the supply of the town," which he did on Mill Brook, near where Elm Street crosses it. The next year he sold the mill to Henry Adams (1652). Oct. 26, 1652, the General Court ordered that the town of "Medfield, being not capable of choosing commissioned officers, the Court doth grant that George Barber [1646] whom they have chosen as eldest sergeant, shall carry on the military exercise there." He was promoted to be captain of the foot company prior to 1678. In 1663, he "beat the drum," and received from the town therefor four bushels and three pecks of corn.

He served ten years on the board of selectmen of Medfield, and was a representative from that town to the General Court nine years, viz., 1668, 1669, 1673, 1676, 1677, and 1679 to 1682. He married, (1) Nov. 24, 1642, Elizabeth Clark, who died in 1683; and (2) Joan (Faxon), widow of Anthony Fisher (1644), of Dedham. Capt. Barber (1646) died in 1683.

**William Blake** (1646), of Dorchester, came over in the "Mary and John" from Little Baddow, Essex County, England, arriving at Nantasket May 30, 1630. He was born in England in 1594; joined the church at Dorchester in 1636; was granted land in 1637; admitted to be a freeman March 14, 1638-9, and was a selectman in 1645, 1647, and 1651. In 1636, he went with Pyncheon to Springfield, but remained less than a year. He lived in that part of Dorchester which, in 1662, was incorporated as Milton. He was the "Recorder for y<sup>e</sup> Towne, Clerk of y<sup>e</sup> Writs for y<sup>e</sup> Co. of Suffolk, 1656," in which office he continued until his death. He was a very useful and prominent citizen. He died Oct. 25, 1663. By his will, dated Sept. 3, 1661, he gave "Vnto y<sup>e</sup> Towne of Dorchester, £20. to be bestowed for y<sup>e</sup> repairing of y<sup>e</sup> Burying Place, so y<sup>t</sup> swine and other vermine may not Anoy y<sup>e</sup> graues of y<sup>e</sup> saints."

**Edmund Bowker** (1646), of Dorchester, is recorded in the History of Dorchester. He married Mary Potter, of that town, and removed to Sudbury, where he died in March, 1666.

**George Barber** (1646). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848; Records of Mass. Bay; Tilden's Hist. of Medfield; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**William Blake** (1646). AUTHORITIES: New

Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1858, p. 153 (will); 1867, p. 292; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. III., p. 398; Teele's Hist. of Milton.

**John Capen** (1646), of Dorchester, only son of Bernard Capen, of Dorchester, was born in England in 1612. He was admitted a freeman May 14, 1634; was a deacon of the church in 1658; elected selectman of Dorchester for sixteen years; a representative in 1671, and from 1673 to 1678; town recorder for thirteen years, writing more in the town records than any other man, and was fourth sergeant in the Artillery Company in 1650. He was called lieutenant in 1674, and March 30, 1683, was elected captain of the foot company in Dorchester. He was by trade a shoemaker, and his house is supposed to have stood at the corner of Pleasant and Pond streets.

Capt. Capen (1646) married, (1) Oct. 20, 1637, Radigan Clap, who died Dec. 10, 1645; and, (2) Sept. 20, 1647, Mary Bass, of Braintree. He died April 6, 1692. It was to Mr. Capen's (1646) house that Nicholas Upshall (1637) was "removed out of prison, in 1661."

**Roger Clap** (1646), of Dorchester in 1630, came in the "Mary and John" from Plymouth, and arrived at Nantasket May 30 of that year. He was born April 6, 1609, in Salcombe, on the coast of Devonshire, England. Roger Clap, in his Memoirs, mentions that the passage over was made in seventy days, and the Word of God was preached and expounded every day during the voyage. He was one of the original settlers of Dorchester. His autobiography is contained in his oft-published Memoirs. He was granted land in 1633, and filled most of the important offices of the town at various times from 1637 to 1665.

He was admitted a freeman in 1634, and was a founder of the church in Dorchester in 1630, of which he continued a member sixty years. He was lieutenant of the Dorchester train-band in 1644, and was afterwards its captain. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1647, and was its lieutenant in 1655. He was representative from Dorchester in 1647, and from 1652 to 1665, — except 1658, — and in 1671; in all, fifteen years. In 1659, the General Court granted him five hundred acres of land.

Aug. 10, 1665, immediately after the death of Capt. Davenport (1639), the General Court appointed Capt. Clap (1646) to the command of Castle William, a position he held until 1686, when he resigned it. After the new charter, the command became a sinecure, and was usually assigned to the lieutenant-governor. The fort was burned March 21, 1672-3, when Capt. Clap (1646) commanded, but was immediately rebuilt. He was of the ultra-Puritan school, and by no means tolerant of the innovations attempted by the Antinomians and Quakers. It is said of him that his soldiers were treated as of his own family, and none were permitted to be enlisted but pious as well as brave men.

So greatly was he beloved by the people of Dorchester, that in the year 1676, "when taken sick, they kept a day of fasting and prayer to beg his life of God, and, when he recovered, a day of thanksgiving." He died Feb. 2, 1690-1, and his gravestone, in the chapel ground, is standing, on which his name is plainly legible. He was

**John Capen** (1646). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, p. 80; 1866, p. 246; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Records of Mass. Bay.

**Roger Clap** (1646). AUTHORITIES: King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman, p. 239; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay.

"[1686] Sept. 24. Friday. Capt Clapp leaves

the Castle; about nine Guns fired at his going off. It seems Capt. Clap is not actually come away, but Capt Winthrop, and Lieut Thomas Savage did this day receive their Commissions." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 152.

Capt. Clap left the Castle Sept. 29, 1686.

"[1690-1] Feb. 2. This morn Capt Roger Clap dies, about 86 years old." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 340.

buried with much pomp; the military officers — probably the Artillery Company — preceding the corpse, the Governor and General Court following the relatives as mourners, and the guns firing at the Castle.

“In his natural temper he was of a cheerful and pleasant disposition, courteous and kind in behaviour, free and familiar in his conversation, yet attended with proper reservedness, and he had a gravity and presence that commanded respect.”

**William Clark** (1646), of Dorchester, came over in the second emigration, 1635. He was selectman in 1646, 1647, and 1650. He removed in 1659 to Northampton, for which town he was representative in 1663, and for thirteen years afterward, but not consecutively. He was commissioned by the General Court as lieutenant, Oct. 8, 1662, and he held that position in active service in King Philip's War. In 1662, he was authorized to solemnize marriages in Northampton, and in 1665 was elected an associate judge of the Hampshire court.

Lieut. Clark (1646) died July 19, 1690, aged eighty-one years. His gravestone still stands in the old burying-ground at Northampton.

**Hugh Gunnison** (1646), of Boston in 1634, was admitted to the First Church March 22, 1635, when he is called “servant to our brother Richard Bellingham,” and became a freeman May 25, 1636. He was one of the persons disarmed in 1637, and the same year had a grant of land at Mount Wollaston.

Feb. 28, 1642, Hugh Gunnison (1646) applied to the selectmen for permission to keep an “Ordinary with a cook's shop,” and in 1649 reference is made to his “signe post.” In 1650, Hugh Gunnison (1646) was called “a vintner.” He was licensed by the selectmen, and kept a tavern called King's Arms, on Dock Square, “facing to the head of the Dock.” He sold this tavern, with barns, brew-house, etc., and removed to Kittery about 1652. May 18, 1653, he was licensed by the General Court to keep an ordinary, and to sell wine and strong water. The same day the General Court appointed him an associate commissioner in the court holden at Kittery.

He represented Wells in the General Court in 1654, and was returned as re-elected in 1657, but for some reason he was considered by the court “vnmeete” for that trust, and was discharged therefrom.

**Richard Harding** (1646) was of Boston in 1640. He is probably the Capt. Harding mentioned several times in the Second Report of the Boston Record Commissioners. Richard Harding's (1646) lot was that on which, in 1640, the new meeting-house for the First Church was erected, now occupied by the Rogers Building, on Washington Street.

Mr. Drake, in the History of Boston, p. 243, says Mr. Harding (1646) “was one of the disarmed, went to Rhode Island and was a prominent man in that colony.”

**Richard Harrison** (1646). On the record of 1680, this name is plainly written. Richard Harrison (1646) was probably a resident of New Haven, and joined the Company while temporarily sojourning in Boston or vicinity. He died in New Haven, Oct. 25, 1653.

**William Clark** (1646). AUTHORITIES: Pilgrims of Boston, p. 310; Records of Mass. Bay.

**Hugh Gunnison** (1646). AUTHORITIES: New

Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1880, p. 42; Records of Mass. Bay; Boston Records, 1634-1660; Savage's Gen. Dict.



**Edmund Jackson** (1646), of Boston in 1635, was a shoemaker, and joined the First Church Nov. 15, 1635. He became a freeman May 25, 1636. He was chosen a sealer of leather in 1647 and 1661, a constable in 1650, clerk of the market in 1657, and in 1673 was licensed to keep a house of public entertainment and sell beer, which was repeatedly renewed. His will of May 2, 1675, was proved July 28 following. He was married three times, his second wife being Mary, daughter of Samuel Cole (1637). His house and garden were on the corner of Hanover and Sudbury streets, where, during the provincial period, the Orange Tree Inn stood.

**Nathaniel Newgate** (1646), of Boston, son of John of the same, was born at Southwark, near London Bridge, England, and came over with his parents in 1632. Nathaniel (1646), before his marriage, returned to England. Nathaniel's (1646) eldest sister, Elizabeth, married John Oliver (1637); his youngest sister, Hannah, married Simon Lynde (1658), and his sister Sarah married Peter Oliver (1643), brother of John Oliver (1637).

**William Parsons** (1646), of Boston, came, probably, in the "James" from Southampton, in 1635. He was a joiner by trade; was admitted to the First Church April 20, 1644; was admitted to be a townsman Dec. 2, 1644, and became a freeman in 1645. His house and garden were on the northeast corner of the present Water and Devonshire streets. He died Jan. 29, 1701-2, aged eighty-eight years.

**Brian Pendleton** (1646) was born in 1599, for when he was a witness in York County Court (now in Maine), in July, 1669, he gave his age as seventy years. He came to this country with his wife, Eleanor, and children, Mary and James. He was admitted a freeman of the Massachusetts Colony Sept. 3, 1634. He settled in Watertown; was a selectman of that town in 1635, 1636, and 1637, and was representative in 1636, 1637, and 1638. In the last-named year, he, with others, set the bounds of the town of Sudbury, and in 1640 was desired to train the company of that town. About 1645, he returned to Watertown, and was again its representative in 1647 and 1648. March 20, 1648-9, he sold his real estate in Watertown to Robert Daniel, of Cambridge, and the same year purchased a six-hundred-acre farm in Ipswich, where for a time he probably resided. In 1651, he became interested in the plantation at Strawberry Bank (Portsmouth, N. H.), for, Oct. 23, 1651, he was appointed an associate to hold court at that place. He represented this new plantation in the General Court in 1654, 1658, 1660, 1661, and 1663. In 1663, he was appointed commissioner to enforce the navigation laws on the river "Piscataqua," at the Isles of Shoals, and ports adjacent. In 1664, he was commissioned captain of a military company at Portsmouth, and in 1668 he was made major at Saco, "he to settle Blackpoint"; and at the same time was directed to assist in keeping the court at York.

In 1669, when New Hampshire was a royal province, it was governed by a president and eight councillors, appointed by King Charles II. Brian Pendleton (1646) was one

**Edmund Jackson** (1646). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**William Parsons** (1646). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

"[Saturday] Jan. 31, 1701-2. William Parsons of 88 years, is buried. Was in the fifth-mon-

archy fray in London; but slipt away in the crowd."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 52.*

**Brian Pendleton** (1646). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, p. 53 (letter of Mr. Pendleton); 1849 (will); Williamson's Hist. of Maine, Vol. I., p. 686; Savage's Gen. Dict.

of these councillors. In 1672, he was relieved of military command, at his own request, and his regiment became the care of Major-Gen. John Leverett (1639).

His commission as associate for the county of York was renewed in 1675, and again in 1676.

June 12, 1673, he purchased of John Paine, of Boston, seven hundred acres of land in Westerly, R. I., and gave to his son James a life-interest in the same, and, at his death, they were to be equally divided among the children of James's second wife, Hannah.

He was possessed of a large estate, perhaps larger than that of any other person in Portsmouth. He was described in a list of the Royalists and Puritans in Maine (supposed to have been written by Edward Randolph about 1680), in the following words: "Major Bryan Pendleton [1646], a man of Saco River, of great estate, but very precise, independent, [is] beloved only by those of his fraternity, being both an enemy to the King's interest and Mr. Gorges' interest, also a great ring leader of others to the utmost of his power." A clue to Major Pendleton's (1646) American home may possibly be furnished by the deposition of Job Tookie, made June 27, 1683, wherein he says "that his grandfather, minister of St. Ives, Huntingdonshire, was an acquaintance of Major Pendleton [1646] of Winter Harbor, then lately deceased."

Major Pendleton (1646) returned from Saco to Portsmouth in 1676, where, on the 7th of August, 1677, he made his will, and he died in 1681.

**Edward Preston** (1646) was probably the son of William Preston, of Dorchester. He came over in the ship "Christian," the first ship from London, in 1635, and was thirteen years of age. The father removed to New Haven as early as 1639, and his son Edward is called, "of New Haven." The latter seems to have lived in both New Haven and Boston. He was in Connecticut (not New Haven) in 1643 and 1644-5, but in 1651, 1654, and 1655, had children born in Boston. His name does not appear in the Boston Book of Possessions, nor in the town records, except in records of births.

**John Ruggles** (1646), of Roxbury, born in England, came over in 1635 in the ship "Hopewell," when he was ten years of age. The church record says, "John [1646] was brought over a servant by Phillip Eliot." The homestead of Thomas Ruggles, John's father, was on the south side of the First Church, and included the hill where the lower Roxbury fort stood. The property extended from Dudley Street, beyond Cedar, on the south, and from the Norfolk House to Centre Street, on the west. John Ruggles (1646) was admitted a freeman in 1654, was a sergeant in the military, and died, or was buried, Sept. 15, 1658.

**John Shaw** (1646), of Boston, was a butcher. "The 26:12:54 . . . Itt is this daye ordered that there shall be a distresse leveyed upon the land the which was John Shawes, bucher, for the Rent which is behind due to the Towne upon the Dock Caled Bendalls Dock."<sup>1</sup> He died July 23, 1687.

**John Ruggles** (1646). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury.

"John Ruggles, he came to New Eng. in the year 1635 & soone after his coming joyned the church. he brought his first borne, John Ruggles, with him." — *Roxbury Church Records*.

His father's will is given in New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1849, p. 265; and his, in same, 1855, p. 139.

<sup>1</sup> Boston Town Records, Second Report, pp. 122 and 153.

**Richard Whittington**, or **Withington** (1646), of Dorchester, son of Henry, was born in England, came to America in 1636, and admitted to be a freeman May 13, 1640. Richard's sister, Faith, married Richard Baker (1658). Richard Whittington (1646) was chosen ruling elder in the Dorchester church in 1651, and deacon in 1669. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Philip Eliot (1638). He was a selectman in 1675, 1676, and 1677. He died Dec. 22, 1701, aged about eighty-three years.

1647-8. The officers elected were: Robert Keayne (1637), captain; Eleazer Lusher (1638), lieutenant, and Francis Norton (1643), ensign. Joshua Hewes (1637) was first sergeant; Roger Clap (1646), second sergeant; William Hudson (1640), third sergeant; Hopestill Foster (1642), fourth sergeant; Anthony Stoddard (1639), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Arthur Perry (1638), drummer.

The clamor raised against Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), at the instigation of George Story, had prompted his fellow-townsmen to elect him a deputy from Boston to the General Court, and the military company which he founded manifested its confidence in him by re-electing him its commander.

The new members recruited in 1647-8 were: Thomas Bumstead, Abraham Busby, John Hansett, John Hill, Giles Payson, and Roger Williams.

**Thomas Bumstead** (1647), of Roxbury. The church records of that town say: "Thomas Bumstead came to this Land in the 5<sup>th</sup> month of the yeare 1640," in which year he became a freeman. He moved to Boston in 1643, and died there June 22, 1677.

The Boston Book of Possessions, p. 103, mentions Goodman Bumstead as residing in a house adjoining the mansion-house belonging to John Coggan (1638), corner of State and Washington streets.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says, in the History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, p. 155, "His gravestone in the Granary ground records, 'Thomas Bumsted died June 22<sup>d</sup> 1677.' His estate was opposite the burial-ground, a valuable portion of which has remained in the family ever since [1842] and was lately the residence of Major Thomas Bumstead [1764]. The elegant blocks of Hamilton Place and Bumstead Place stand on his land, also the Masonic Temple [corner Tremont Street and Temple Place]."

Mr. Winthrop says (1644), "A private matter or two fell out about this time, the power and mercy of the Lord did appear in them in an extraordinary manner. A child of one [Thomas] Bumstead [1647], a member of the church, fell from a gallery in the meeting-house, and broke the arm and shoulder, and was also committed to the Lord in

**Richard Whittington** (1646). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, p. 468; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.

**Thomas Bumstead** (1647). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng., Vol. II., p. 250; Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"Thomas Bumstead. he came to this Land in the 5 month of the year 1640. he brought two

small children Thomas & Jeremiah. He and his wife [Susanna] were dismissed to Boston." — *Roxbury Church Records*.

The will of Thomas Bumstead, brazier, made May 25, 1677, mentions his son, Jeremy, and daughters, Hannah, Mary, wife of Ambrose Dawes (1674), and Mercy. — See *Suffolk Probate Records*, Vol. VI., p. 530.



the prayers of the church, with earnest desires, that the place where his people assembled to his worship might not be defiled with blood, and it pleased the Lord also that this child was soon perfectly recovered."

**Abraham Busby** (1647), of Boston, was a linen weaver, and a son of Nicholas, of Watertown. Abraham came with his parents from old Norwich, England, to Boston, June 20, 1637. He was admitted a freeman in 1650. The father moved to Boston in 1646, and willed to his wife, and after her to his son, Abraham (1647), his new dwelling-house and garden, situated on Washington Street, about one third the distance from West to School streets.

He held several minor town offices, and died March 20, 1687. Sarah Busby, who married Thomas Cakebread (1637), was a sister of Abraham Busby (1647).

**John Hansett** (1647), of Boston, is called, on his admission to the church, July 13, 1634, "Servant to our pastor John Wilson." He was admitted a freeman May 17, 1637, and soon removed to Braintree. Not long after, he took up his residence in Roxbury. It is recorded in the church records of the latter place, written by Rev. John Eliot, under date of Feb. 23, 1684, "Old John Hansett [1647] buried."

In October, 1637, the selectmen of Boston granted him a great lot at Mount Wollaston. In 1646, he bought a house and garden of Abraham Page, situated on Milk Street, where the Boston *Post* building formerly stood. "The spot got its chief glory sixty years later, when Benjamin Franklin was born here."

**John Hill** (1647), of Dorchester, a blacksmith, came to America in 1633, and united with the church in Dorchester in July, 1641. He was one of the selectmen of Dorchester in 1636, was admitted a freeman in 1642, and died in 1664, his will being proved June 14 of that year.

**Giles Payson** (1647), of Roxbury, came in the "Hopewell" from London, 1635, aged twenty-six years, and was admitted a freeman April 18, 1637. He was a member of the church in Roxbury, and the records say he "married a maide servant, Elizabeth Dowell." He became a deacon of that church, held many town offices, and there had a homestead of five acres. His farm was one of the first cut up into house-lots in Roxbury. It contained Forest and Dudley streets, and Mount Pleasant Avenue. He removed to Dorchester, and died there Jan. 28, 1689.

His daughter, Elizabeth, married (1) Hopestill Foster (1673) and (2) Edmund Browne (1691).

**Roger Williams** (1647), of Dorchester, came over in the "Mary and John" in 1630; served on the jury Sept. 30, 1630, in trial of Palmer for killing Bratcher, and was admitted a freeman May 18, 1631. He was one of the selectmen of Dorchester in

**Abraham Busby** (1647). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

"[1686-7] Sabbath, March 20, Abraham Busby dies." "Tuesday, March 22, 1686-7, Abraham Busby buried."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., pp. 170, 171.

**John Hansett** (1647). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. II.

**John Hill** (1647). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1858, p. 346 (will); Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.

**Giles Payson** (1647). AUTHORITIES: Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Roger Williams** (1647). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.

1635, and the next year removed to Windsor, Conn. At Windsor he was in excellent repute, had a good estate, and served on juries in 1642, 1643, and 1644. His wife died Dec. 10, 1645, whereupon he sold his property in Windsor, and in 1647 returned to Dorchester. In 1649, he married Lydia Bates of that town.

In 1650, in a deed he gave, he is called "of Boston." He was an ancestor of Lieut.-Gov. Samuel T. Armstrong (1807).

---

**1648-9.** The officers elected were: Robert Sedgwick (1637), captain; John Leverett (1639), lieutenant, and John Manning (1641), ensign. James Oliver (1640) was first sergeant; David Yale (1640), second sergeant; Joshua Fisher (1640), third sergeant; Samuel Oliver (1648), fourth sergeant; Anthony Stoddard (1639), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Arthur Perry (1638), drummer.

A charter member of the Artillery Company, Major Sedgwick (1637), had twice before been honored with its command, and he is spoken of as "a very brave, zealous, and pious man." When the colony feared retaliation from the Royalists of Great Britain, and the expedition for the subjugation of New York was talked of, Major Sedgwick (1637) took an active part in reorganizing the militia of Massachusetts.

Peace having been concluded, the expedition against the Dutch at New York was abandoned, and Gen. Sedgwick (1637), returning to England, was promoted to the rank of major-general.

On the 20th of March, 1649, Gov. Winthrop died, after a brief illness, closing his eyes "upon a scene of rare prosperity, which he, helped by many other good and able men, had been the chief instrument in creating." Gov. Bellingham, immediately after his death, invited several of the principal men of the town to his late residence to decide "how to order his funeral." We have no particulars of "the great solemnity and honour" which was observed on the third day of April, but the following extract, from the records of the General Court for the 2d of May, shows that the Artillery Company fired proper salutes in memory of the signer of their charter:—

"Whereas the surveyer generall, on some encouragements, lent one barrell and a halfe of the cuntryes store of powder to the Artillery officers of Boston, conditionally, if the Generall Corte did not alowe it to them as a gift to spend at the funerall of our late honored Governor, they would repay it, the powder being spent on the occasion above said, the Corte doth think meete that the powder so delivered should never be required againe, and thankfully acknowledg Bostons great, worthy, due love and respects to the late honored Governor, which they manifested in solemnizing his funerall, whom wee accompted worthy of all honour."

Gov. Winthrop's house, wherein he died, was of wood, two stories high, on what is now Washington Street, opposite the foot of School Street, and its spacious garden, extending to Milk Street, is now occupied by the Old South Church. The house was destroyed for firewood by the British soldiers in 1775. His remains were buried in the north end of what is now known as the King's Chapel Burial-Ground, in the tomb of the Winthrop family.

There were no religious services or sermons at funerals, at that period of our colonial history. Indeed, Dr. Shurtleff states "that the first prayer at a funeral in

Boston was as late as 1766, . . . and the first funeral sermon as late as 1783." Rev. John Cotton preached a sermon in respect to Gov. Winthrop on a special Fast, held by the church during his illness, of which we have a few extracts only. Funeral sermons, formerly as now, were delivered on some Sunday after the interment. No religious services were necessary, however, to make the occasion of Mr. Winthrop's death a solemn one. Hutchinson, who had access to all the contemporary records, speaks of "the general grief throughout the colony." It is easy to picture to ourselves the authorities and the people of the town and the neighborhood assembling at the Governor's house, and following the corpse, borne by loving hands—for there were no hearses in those days—to the tomb or grave, while the Artillery Company gave the funeral salute in honor of the dead.

Massachusetts is fortunate in possessing an original portrait of Gov. Winthrop, which now adorns the Senate Chamber in the State House at Boston. It represents him as a well-formed man, with a high forehead, dark blue eyes, and long, dark hair, his countenance beaming with intelligence and kindness. This is probably the portrait of which the following anecdote is given in the memoranda of the Winthrop family: "One of the Pequot Sagamores, who knew the old Governor Winthrop, coming to Boston, after his death, and going into the room where the picture was, ran out, very much surprised, exclaiming, 'He is alive! He is alive!'"

The new members recruited in 1648-9 were: Peter Brackett, Samuel Carter, John Cole, Nicholas Davison, Caleb Foot, Samuel Oliver, Thomas Richards, Jacob Sheafe, Thomas Squire, and William Stitson.

**Peter Brackett** (1648), of Braintree, brother of Capt. Richard Brackett (1639) was admitted a freeman May 10, 1643. He represented Braintree in the General Court in 1644, 1645, 1646, 1653, 1660, and 1662, and was deputy for Scarborough in 1673 and 1674. In his last years he lived in Boston. He was one of the founders of the Old South Church, and one of its first deacons.

"In 1662," says Savage, "he purchased of the Indians the tract on which Mendham was erected." In 1640, Peter Brackett was granted forty-eight acres of land at Braintree, and Dec. 25, 1676, Capt. Brackett (1639), of Braintree, was allowed to cut enough timber upon the common land to build a third part of a vessel of twenty-five tons.

Peter Brackett (1648) married for his second wife Mary, widow of Nathaniel Williams (1644). Judge Sewall (1679), writing to the Rev. Increase Mather, July 24, 1688, says, "Deacon Brackett [1648] was buried this day."

**Samuel Carter** (1648), of Charlestown, yeoman, son of Thomas and Mary Carter, was born in 1616. He became an inhabitant in 1637, and was admitted to the church "1, 5, 1645." He married Winfred Harrod, or Harwood, who died Jan. 20, 1675. He died Aug. 29, 1681.

He was a man of considerable property, and was prominent in the town.

**Peter Brackett** (1648). AUTHORITIES: Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Braintree Records.

**Samuel Carter** (1648). AUTHORITIES: Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.

The indefatigable Savage, in his Genealogical

Dictionary, gives 1652 as the date of his will, and says that in it he names a grandson, John Green. Mr. Whitman (1810) followed these statements. John Green is not mentioned in Samuel Carter's will, which is dated Aug. 16, 1680, and was proved Oct. 4, 1681.



**John Cole** (1648), of Lynn. Mr. Lewis, in his history of that town, mentions John Cole, of Lynn in 1642, who died Oct. 8, 1703, but nothing is recorded as to wife or family.

**Nicholas Davison** (1648), of Charlestown in 1639, was one of the chief men and agent of Gov. Cradock, "the founder of Medford." Matthew Cradock, first governor of the Company of Massachusetts Bay, was the richest member of the New England company. He never came to America, but was most helpful to the early settlers of Medford. He gave the largest sum to the company; sent two of his ships over, bringing fishermen, coopers, shipwrights; made Medford his first settlement; procured a large tract of land; began ship-building, fishing, etc., and placed here an agent to execute his plans. Mr. Nicholas Davison (1648) was his mercantile agent, and had charge of the estate after Mr. Cradock's decease. He went to England in 1655, and returned in 1656 in the "Speedwell," being then forty-five years old. The court records inform us that Sept. 3, 1639, Nicholas Davison (1648), Mr. Cradock's agent, "for swearing an oath, was ordered to pay one pound, which he consented unto." He died in 1664, leaving a large property. His will was proved July 11 of that year. By the will we learn that an Indian Sagamore gave him a mortgage of Nahant. His inventory included land in Boston, Charlestown, Pemaquid, and about two thousand one hundred acres near Windsor, on both sides of the Connecticut. His inventory amounted to nearly one thousand nine hundred pounds.

He married Joanna Hodges, by whom he had one son, also a daughter, Sarah, who married Lieut.-Col. Joseph Lynde (1681), of Charlestown.

May 7, 1662, the General Court, by request of the Middlesex troop, confirmed Nicholas Davison (1648) as cornet of said troop.

**Caleb Foote** (1648). On the old roll of 1680, it is plainly written, "Mr. Caleb Foote." His sureties were Lieut. Hewes (1637) and Ensign Hudson (1640).

**Samuel Oliver** (1648), of Boston, son of Elder Thomas, and brother of James (1640), of John (1637), and of Peter (1643), was born in England, and was admitted to the First Church May 21, 1643. He married Lydia, by whom he had three children. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1648, and third sergeant in 1651. He was drowned March 27, 1652, and his widow married Joshua Fisher (1640), of Dedham.

**Thomas Richards** (1648), of Boston, was admitted to be a freeman in 1645. In the will of Thomas Richards (1648), dated Nov. 17, 1650, he is called "of Weymouth," but at the time was ill at the house of his "bro. Thomas Loring," in Hull. The will was proved Jan. 28, 1650. Inventory, thirteen hundred pounds.

**Jacob Sheafe** (1648), of Boston, was born at Cranbrook, Kent County, England, and the church register there says he was the son of Edmund, and was born Aug. 4, 1616. He came over with his mother, and went first to Guilford, where he was one

**Nicholas Davison** (1648). AUTHORITIES: Records of Mass. Bay; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Samuel Oliver** (1648). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1865; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Jacob Sheafe** (1648). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

of the seven persons who constituted the church there, of which his uncle became pastor. In 1643, he removed to Boston. He was a merchant, and acquired a large property.

In the records of the General Court, II., 46, we read this unusual favor: Sept. 7, 1643, "Jacob Sheafe and Margaret Webbe are permitted to join in marriage though but twice published."

He was a constable of Boston in 1651, a selectman in 1657 and 1658, and was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1652.

He died March 22, 1658-9, and his tombstone stands in the chapel ground.

**Thomas Squire** (1648), of Charlestown in 1630, probably came with Gov. Winthrop. His name is among the first signers to the covenant of the First Church. He was dismissed therefrom in October, 1632, to found the new church at Charlestown. He became a freeman May 14, 1634. Thomas Squire (1648) is recorded as a member of the church in Malden in 1649.

**William Stitson**, now **Stetson** (1648), of Charlestown in 1632, was admitted a freeman June 11, 1633. He was deacon in the church there, having been admitted with his wife, Elizabeth, March 22, 1633. He represented that town in the General Court in 1646, and from 1667 to 1671. He was elected selectman first in 1642, and served twenty years in this office. He held the office of sergeant in the Charlestown company; he also kept the ferry, succeeding Thomas Harris. His wife, Elizabeth Harris, died Feb. 16, 1669-70, and Aug. 22, 1670, he married Mary, widow of Francis Norton (1643). He died April 11, 1691, in his ninety-first year, "having served as a deacon 31 years 5 mos," as it is inscribed upon his tombstone.

1649-50. The execution of King Charles, and the progress of the great rebellion in England, so completely overshadowed minor events in the colony that we know but little of the Company's proceedings during 1649-50. No officers for that year are recorded in the list written by Nathaniel Barnes (1676) in 1680, but the name of "Capt. John Carnes, Captain," was inserted in the transcript of 1745, first in pencil, and afterward in ink. Mr. Whitman (1810) says that he "has seen a printed list of captains of the Artillery Company in an old almanac, which had Capt. Carnes' name as captain for this year, and also obtained some traditionary information which corroborates the statement. There was a Capt. John Carnes [1649] an officer in the Parliaments navy, in Boston about that time," and it seems probable that he was admitted into the Company and elected its captain.

Meanwhile, Massachusetts, and especially Boston, appears to have flourished. Edward Johnson (1637), whose *Wonder-Working Providence* was probably written about 1650, thus rejoices over the flourishing condition of the colony, and especially over the growth of Boston: "The chiefe Edifice of this City-like town is crowded on the Lea-bankes, and wharfed out with great industry and cost, the buildings beautifull

**Thomas Squire** (1648). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co.

**William Stitson** (1648). AUTHORITIES: Wy-

man's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates; Savage's Gen. Dict. Mr. Wyman gives this name as Dea. Wm. Stilson, Stitson, of Stetson.

and large, some fairely set forth with Brick, Tile, Stone, and Slate, and orderly placed with comly streets, whose continuall enlargement presages some sumptuous City.

"But now behold the admirable Acts of Christ: at this his peoples landing, the hideous Thickets in this place were such that Wolfes and Beares nurst up their young from the eyes of all beholders, in those very places where the streets are full of Girls and Boys sporting up and downe, with a continued concourse of people. Good store of Shipping is here yearly built and some very faire ones: both Tar and Mastes the Country affords from its own soile; also store of Victuall both for their owne and Forreiners ships, who resort hither for that end: this Town is the very Mart of the Land: French, Portugalls and Dutch come hither for Traffique."

For the defence of the harbor, what is now known as Fort Independence, then a rough fortification, had been rebuilt and strengthened, and was garrisoned by not less than twenty men in summer and ten in winter. It was placed under the command of Capt. Richard Davenport (1639), who arrived at Salem with Gov. Endicott, in September, 1628, and had taken a conspicuous part in the Indian wars. His predecessors in this command were Nicholas Simpkins (1650), who was the first captain of it, 1635; Edward Gibbons (1637), who commanded in 1636; Richard Morris (1637), and Robert Sedgwick (1637), in June, 1641.

Fifty pounds were appropriated to build him a house, and he also was allowed one third of the island for his personal use. His pay was to be one half "in corne" and one half in "beaver and shop commodities." When he asked that he might be provided with a chaplain, he was formally notified that he could expect no regular chaplain for the garrison, but that "the Lord having granted him able gifts," he was expected to perform the duties of that office, and to take care of the garrison as of his own family. In July, 1665, "God was pleased to send a grievous storm of thunder and lightning, which did some hurt in Boston, and struck dead here that worthy renowned Captain Richard Davenport [1639]."

The new members recruited in 1649-50 were: John Carnes, Thomas Hawkins, Stephen Paine.

**John Carnes** (1649) was born in Orchardtown, Scotland. He was post-captain in the British navy, and was ordered to America as commander of the fleet cruising in North American waters. He made frequent visits to Boston, and spent much of his time there. He married in Boston about 1652. Commodore John Carnes (1649) died at sea in 1652, on his return passage to England. He was a man of large fortune, owning extensive land estates in Scotland, on which there were coal mines, from which large quantities of coal were afterward sent to America. His intentions were to settle up his affairs in Scotland and return to America to live. His only son, Thomas, was born after the father had sailed for England. Thomas was the grandfather of John, who commanded the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1750. Prior to his time, the name was spelled Cairnes, but he dropped the "i," and spelled his name Carnes. Capt. John Carnes (1649) is believed to have commanded the Military Company in 1649.

**John Carnes** (1649). **AUTHORITIES:** Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842;

Letters from descendants of Capt. Carnes (1649) in New York and Virginia.



**Thomas Hawkins** (1649), of Boston, was a baker. He came to America about 1640. In that year he was granted a "great lot" at Mount Wollaston, and five acres were afterward added to it.

The building known as the Green Dragon Tavern stood on Green Dragon Lane, now Union Street, between Hanover and the old mill-pond. John Davies's property was on the south of the Green Dragon property. Thomas Hawkins (1649) in 1645 bought Mr. Davies's house and garden, and Oct. 10, 1662, he bought an adjacent lot of Mr. Johnson. Mr. Hawkins (1649) mortgaged the property to Rev. Thomas Thacher, and gave a second mortgage, June 15, 1671, to Sampson Sheafe. A part of Mr. Hawkins's (1649) property became the Green Dragon estate.

Mr. Hawkins (1649) was a noted biscuit-maker, but subsequently an innholder. He built a tavern, called "Star Inn," which was kept successively by Mr. Hawkins (1649), his wife Rebecca, John Howlett, and Andrew Neal. Mr. Hawkins died in the latter part of 1671.

**Stephen Paine** (1649), of Braintree, born in England, son of Moses, of Braintree, was a brother of Lieut. Moses Paine (1644). He married, Nov. 15, 1651, Hanna Bass. Stephen (1649) was admitted to be a freeman in 1653.

Dec. 19, 1670, the town meeting of Braintree was held at "Steven Paine's [1649]." He died July 29, 1691.

---

**1650-1.** The officers elected were: Humfrey Atherton (1638), captain; Francis Norton (1643), lieutenant; Thomas French (1638), ensign. Thomas Clarke (1644) was first sergeant; William Hudson (1640), second sergeant; Anthony Stoddard (1639), third sergeant; John Capen (1646), fourth sergeant; Joshua Scottow (1645), clerk; Arthur Perry (1638), drummer, and John Audlin (1638), armorer.

The Second Church in Boston was a necessity, on account of increased population in the town. Previously, 1632 to 1650, there had been but one, viz., the First Church. It was agreed that a meeting-house should be erected at the North End, and its foundation was laid in 1649, at the head of what is since called North Square. This was the "Church of the Mathers." The first sermon was preached in the new house, June 5, 1650. On that day, seven persons entered into church covenant, of whom James Astwood (1638) was a member of the Military Company of the Massachusetts.

The new members recruited in 1650-1 were: Bozoun Allen, Zacheus Bosworth, William Cotton, Jacob Greene, George Halsey, and Nicholas Simpkins.

**Bozoun Allen** (1650), of Hingham in 1638, came from Lynn, Norfolk County, England, in the "Diligent," from Ipswich. He was admitted a freeman June 2, 1641, and was representative in 1643, and for seven other years, the last being in 1652. On his motion, by reason of his great loss in his mill-dam, occasioned by a great storm, he

**Thomas Hawkins** (1649). **AUTHORITIES:** Eng., Vol. II., p. 271; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Shurtleff's Topog. Des. of Boston; Savage's Gen. Reg. (will), 1851, p. 299. Dict.

**Bozoun Allen** (1650). **AUTHORITIES:** Hist. of Hingham, 1893, Vol. II., p. 8; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng., Vol. II., p. 271; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg. (will), 1851, p. 299. "1638, Mr. Bozone Allen and his wife and two servants came from Lynn, in Norfolk, and settled in New Hingham."—*Daniel Cushing's Record, Hingham.*



THIRD MEETING-HOUSE OF THE SECOND CHURCH.





was dismissed from the service of the General Court, unless he could conveniently come again. He was often a deputy, a military officer, and an influential citizen of Hingham. Mr. Allen (1650) was confirmed as lieutenant of the trained soldiers of Hingham, Oct. 27, 1648, and captain, May 22, 1651. His son, Bozoun, was admitted a member of the Artillery Company in 1676.

Mr. Winthrop, in his *History of New England*, Vol. II., pp. 221-236, gives an account of the "troublesome business" in which Capt. Allen (1650) was concerned. There was a dispute in Hingham as to who should command the military company. A part of the citizens favored Lieut. Anthony Eames, and the other, Capt. Allen (1650). The minister became involved, and the church was more or less disturbed by the difficulty. Complaints were made before the magistrates by both parties. All were finally bound over to appear at the next Court of Assistants. John Winthrop was tried before his brother magistrates for maladministration, but he managed so discreetly, and with so much humility, that he was acquitted honorably. This famous riot, contempt of authority, and interference of priestcraft, were finally subdued, and all parties—captain, lieutenant, the whole train-band, and even the minister—were fined. The total of persons arraigned was ninety-five, and the aggregate fines were one hundred and fifty-five pounds. Capt. Allen (1650) held the captaincy, and the lieutenant paid a fine of five pounds. The latter became reconciled to his supersedure. Mr. Allen (1650) and Joshua Hobart (1641), of Hingham, were both deputies at the time of the trial.

Capt. Allen (1650) removed to Boston in 1652, and died Sept. 14, 1652. His daughter, Martha, married Ebenezer Savage (1682), son of Major Thomas Savage (1637).

**Zacheus Bosworth** (1650), of Boston in 1630, probably came in the fleet with Winthrop. He was admitted a freeman May 25, 1636, and was disarmed in November, 1637, for sympathizing with Mrs. Hutchinson's views. He early became a member of the First Church. "His house, garden, cow-house, barns, and orchard," were at the west corner of School and Tremont streets. July 29, 1644, he was appointed pound-keeper in Boston. He died July 28, 1655.

**William Cotton** (1650), of Boston in 1647, a butcher by trade, was probably of Gloucester at an earlier date, as a William Cotton owned land there in 1642; but no more is told of him. William Cotton (1650) joined the church in Boston in May, 1647, and became a freeman the same year. He was a surveyor of highways in 1650 and 1651. In 1652, he is called "Sergeant Cotton," in the town records. He held the office of clerk of the market in 1655 and 1656. He was clerk of the Artillery Company from 1658 to 1660, second sergeant in 1661, and first sergeant in 1662.

**Jacob Greene** (1650), of Charlestown, son of John (1639), who came from London to Charlestown, bringing Jacob with him, in the ship "James" in 1632, was born in 1625. Jacob (1650) was admitted to be a freeman in 1650, became a church-member

**Zacheus Bosworth** (1650). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., Vol. V., p. 443; Boston Records.

**William Cotton** (1650). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**Jacob Greene** (1650). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.

in 1661-2, and was representative in 1677. He married (1) Elizabeth Long and (2) Mary Whipple. Administration on his estate (one hundred and ninety-nine pounds) was granted to his widow, Mary, Oct. 6, 1701.

**George Halsey**, or **Halsall** (1650), of Dorchester in 1642, was born about 1614. In 1642, he was recommended by the church in Dorchester to the church in Boston. He became a freeman in 1645, and in that year bought of Samuel Cole (1637) a house and garden on the southeasterly part of Copp's Hill. The next year George Halsall (1650) had liberty of the selectmen "to set down a causey ten foot square, from his wharfe to low-watter marke and that passingers shall come and go free to it." Soon after he was permitted "to imploy a passag boatt betweene his wharfe and the ships wher the ships rid, and is to take a penny for each person." He was by trade a blacksmith, and removed to New London in 1661, but "staid there not long."

**Nicholas Simpkins** (1650), of Boston, a tailor, was made the first captain at the Castle about 1634, but in 1636 he seems to have given dissatisfaction by being indebted to the government, and was succeeded by Edward Gibbons (1637). In 1638, he removed to Yarmouth, but returned to Boston before 1649.

In the addenda of Winthrop's History of New England, we are told, "mo. 5th, 14th [1636] Nic Simpkins brought before the Governor and J. Winthrop for braving the Lieutenant Morris [1637] and telling him in public that he lied, &c. He confessed the words, but refused to acknowledge it a fault, or to ask his pardon in the mercate [market] place. So we committed him. 16th, upon his submission and acknowledgment that he had done ill, we took his bond in £20. to appear at the next Court, and left him at liberty. Besides he was ill, and we feared he would grow distracted &c."

---

The officers elected were: Thomas Savage (1637), captain; Thomas  
**1651-2.** Clarke (1638), lieutenant; James Oliver (1640), ensign. William  
 Hudson (1640) was first sergeant; Peter Oliver (1643), second sergeant; Samuel Oliver (1648), third sergeant; John Barrell (1643), fourth sergeant; Joshua Scottow (1645), clerk, and John Audlin (1638), armorer.

While the mother country was convulsed with civil war, Massachusetts flourished. We learn that new buildings, some of brick, sprung up in every quarter of Boston; markets were erected; wharves stretched into the harbor; colonial and foreign vessels were sent to the West Indies and to the Madeira Islands, and returned laden with sugar, oranges, wines, cotton, tobacco, and bullion; and these, with the furs and the products of the fisheries at the capes and at the banks, including bone and oil—procured in trips farther to the north—were sent to England to pay for the manufactured goods needed by the colonists. The resources of the country were rapidly developed. The vast forests which clothed its surface were converted into masts, plank, boards, staves, shingles, and hoops, all of which were of value in commercial exchange. Glass-works were established, and iron foundries were erected at Lynn, Braintree, and Plymouth.

**George Halsey** (1650). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Nicholas Simpkins** (1650). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.



*Thomas Savage*





Mills were likewise built, ship-yards opened, and some slight progress was made in the manufacture of linen and cotton cloth.

The new members recruited in 1651-2 were: James Davis, Strong Furnel, William Ludkin, Simon Tuttle.

**James Davis** (1651) was of Boston in 1635, in which year he became a freeman. His house and garden were situated on the north side of Water Street, at the shore. In 1640, he was granted land at "Long Island," and in 1645 was one of a committee chosen by the selectmen "to hire eight fitt men for the Garrison" at the Castle. In 1651, the selectmen voted, "James Davis [1651] hath Libertie to keepe a house of common entertainment, if the Countie Court consent." He was called "sergeant" on the town records in 1645.

**Strong Furnel** (1651), of Boston, a soapboiler, called also a ship-carpenter on his admission to the church, became a freeman May 10, 1643. He probably died before 1658, as "widow Furnall" is spoken of in the records of Boston, Jan. 31, 1658.

**William Ludkin** (1651), of Hingham, a locksmith, came from Norwich, Norfolk County, England. He sailed from Ipswich, England, April 8, 1637, and arrived at Boston June 20, and settled in Hingham. He had a house-lot granted him in Hingham in 1637. He became a freeman in March, 1638. He removed to Boston, and was chosen a constable March 8, 1652. On the 27th of March, 1652, he was drowned in Boston Harbor, leaving a wife and two children.

**Simon Tuttle** (1651), of Ipswich, was born in England in 1630, and came over with his parents in the "Planter" in 1635. His father settled in Ipswich. Simon (1651) was recorded in the list of voters in that town Dec. 2, 1679. He died in January, 1692.

**Rev. John Cotton**, the second or associate pastor of the First Church in Boston, delivered the election sermon in 1651. He was born at Derby, in England, Dec. 4, 1585. At the age of fourteen years, he was entered at the University of Cambridge, and in 1606, he took his degree of A. M. at Trinity College. He remained at Cambridge until 1613, when he was chosen vicar of the borough of Boston, in Lincolnshire. He preached there twenty-one years, and then, in consequence of a growing dissatisfaction with the ecclesiastical tendencies in England, he resigned his charge and came over to Massachusetts. He arrived at Boston, in New England, in the "Griffin," Sept. 4, 1633, and on the following Sunday was admitted to the First Church. On the 10th of October, he was ordained its teacher, and May 4, 1634, was made a freeman. He died Dec. 23, 1652, in consequence of taking cold while crossing the ferry to Cambridge. His burial was described as "the most grievous and solemn funeral ever known upon the American continent."

Mr. Cotton resided in a house, surrounded by a garden, etc., of one and a half

**James Davis** (1651). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**William Ludkin** (1651). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1876; Boston Records.

**Simon Tuttle** (1651). AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1868, p. 329.

**Rev. John Cotton**. AUTHORITIES: Mather's Magnalia; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Gen. of the Cotton Family.

acres, facing on what is now Tremont Row, and looking down Prison Lane, now Court Street. This wide allotment was creditable to the town, which thus recognized its pastor, from whose English home the town derived its name. His wife retained her possession of a "house and garden in the market place in Boston, in Lincolnshire," and he made provision in his will that in case she returned there with her children, or they should die without heirs, his landed estate was to be equally divided between Harvard College and the church at Boston.

—•—

**1652-3.** The officers elected were: John Leverett (1639), captain; Francis Norton (1643), lieutenant; William Davis (1643), ensign. Richard Sprague (1638) was first sergeant; John Hull (1638), second sergeant, and Jacob Sheafe (1648), clerk.

The Castle, now Fort Independence, which had fallen into a ruinous condition, was rebuilt, the Boston train-bands working upon it during the time usually spent in monthly parades and drills. Capt. Roger Clap (1646), the commander of the Castle, tells us, in his *Memoirs*, that it was built partly of bricks, and contained a number of apartments. He says that there was a "dwelling room below, a lodging room over it, a gun room over that, wherein stood six good sacker guns, and over it, upon the top, three lesser guns." This affair cost about four thousand pounds. Mr. Johnson (1637) says of the expenditure: "Yet are not this poor pilgrims people weary of maintaining it in good repair, as it is of very good use to awl insolent persons."

The new members recruited in 1652-3 were: Alexander Adams, Henry Adams, Isaac Addington, William Aubrey, Thomas Edsall, Henry Evans, William Hasey, Samuel Hutchinson, William Paddy.

**Alexander Adams** (1652), of Boston, a shipwright, became a freeman in 1648, and married, it is said, Mary, sister of Tristram Coffin, of Salisbury, and afterward of Nantucket. He removed to Dorchester in 1647, but returned to Boston, and from 1655 to 1661 held the office of "water-baillyffe." "27:3:61," at a meeting of the selectmen, they declared, "Whereas Alexander Adams [1652] hath taken vp an Anchor on y<sup>e</sup> Flatts, w<sup>ch</sup> hauing beene cried & no owner appeares. Itt is ordered y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Anchor shall be d'd to y<sup>e</sup> Townes Treasurer, & y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> water bayliffes shall haue  $\frac{1}{2}$  of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Anchor if nott owned."

His residence was at Merry's Point, where, in 1645, he purchased property which was originally Walter Merry's, who gave his name to the point. In 1646, Alexander Adams (1652) was allowed to wharf out, maintaining along the shore a highway for a cart, now Commercial Street.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1656.

**Henry Adams** (1652), son of Henry, of Braintree, was also of Braintree, but removed to that part of Dedham afterward called Medfield. Henry (1652) was born in England about 1604, and he was the first town clerk of Braintree. Removing to

**Alexander Adams** (1652). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853, p. 42; 1877, p. 18; Hist. of the Adams Family; Tilden's Hist. of Medfield.

**Henry Adams** (1652). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853, p. 42; Hist. of the Adams Family, 1893, by Henry Whittimore; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Tilden's Hist. of Medfield.





John Zuretti



Dedham, he became the first town clerk of Medfield, and was very prominent in town matters. He was a selectman several years, a representative in 1659, 1665, 1674, and 1675, and was lieutenant of the train-band there.

In 1652, he bought the mill which George Barber (1646) had erected. He had several grants of land in the town, and was one of the petitioners for the incorporation of the town of Sherborn.

Mr. Mather, in his *History of King Philip's War*, says, "Lieut. Henry Adams [1652] was killed at his own door by the Indians, Feb. 21, 1676." His wife was accidentally but mortally wounded by a soldier the same night, at the house of Rev. Mr. Wilson.

He married, Nov. 17, 1643, Elizabeth, daughter of Moses Paine (1644). His brother, Thomas, joined the Artillery Company in 1644.

**Isaac Addington** (1652), of Boston in 1640, married, in 1644, Anne, a sister of Major-Gen. John Leverett (1639), and became a freeman May 22, 1650. They had five children, four of whom were daughters. One, Sarah, died young; of the others, Ann married Capt. Samuel Maudsley, or Moseley (1672); Rebecca married Eleazer Davenport, son of Capt. Richard (1639), and Sarah married Penn Townsend (1674). Their eldest child was Isaac, who became chief-justice of the Superior Court and secretary of the province.

Isaac Addington (1652) is believed to have been a surgeon by profession, or a "chirurgeon," as then called. The first items enumerated in the inventory of his estate are, "Steele instruments," "a box of launcets tipt with silver," and "a surgions chest." Administration on his estate was granted to his widow, Dec. 6, 1653, and on the tenth of the same month the property was inventoried at £998 9s. 4d.

**William Aubrey** (1652), of Boston, a merchant, came to America from London, by virtue of a contract made in 1650, and was factor for the iron-works at Lynn. He married Rachel, the daughter of the secretary, Edward Rawson. In 1651, Valentine Hill sold a lot, near Mill-Creek Bridge, and north of the cove, to William Aubrey (1652), "for the use of the undertakers of the iron-works in New England." A lane which passed through this lot (the present North Centre Street) was called Paddy's Lane, from Capt. William Paddy, who joined the Artillery Company the same year as William Aubrey (1652).

**Thomas Edsall** (1652), of Boston, was a turner by trade. He married Elizabeth Farman, Sept. 16, 1652, and had one son, Henry, born in Boston, Feb. 28, 1654.

**Henry Evans** (1652), of Boston in 1643, a husbandman, was admitted a freeman in 1645, and was a member of the Boston church. A Henry Evans, of Middlesex County, was drowned March 1, 1667.

**William Hasey** (1652), of Boston, lived at Rumney Marsh, now Chelsea, as early as 1652. The Boston Records call him "Cornet William Hasey [1652]." He was admitted a freeman in 1665.

**Isaac Addington** (1652). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850, p. 117; Eliot's Biog. Dict.

**William Aubrey** (1652). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**William Hasey** (1652). AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1871, 1881, 1888.

"[May 27, 1674.] Cornet William Haisy is appointed to be lieutenant . . . to the Three County Troop, under the conduct of Edward Hutchinson [1638] their Captain." — *Records of Mass. Bay*.

Cornet William Hasey (1652) was appointed on the 27th of May, 1674, lieutenant of the Three County Troop, an engraving of whose standard is given in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. XXV., also an account of the troop. In the summer of 1675, Lieut. Hasey (1652) commanded a company engaged in King Philip's War.

William Hasey (1652) married, (2) May 16, 1681, Judith Poole, widow of Capt. Jonathan, of Reading. After Mr. Hasey's (1652) death, she married, about 1690, Robert Gould, Sr., of Hull. Lieut. Hasey (1652) seems to have given up his farm at Rumney Marsh to his children, and to have taken up his residence at the Poole homestead in Reading.

William "Hescy," as it is spelled on his gravestone now standing in Wakefield, died in Reading, May 30, 1689, aged about seventy years.

**Samuel Hutchinson** (1652), of Boston, brother of John (1645) and of Rev. William, husband of the famous Ann, was born in England, Nov. 1, 1589. The time of his arrival in America is not known. He had a grant of land in Rhode Island, May 20, 1638, whither he went, probably with his brother William. He was accounted a scholar in his day, and wrote from Boston, "Answer to a Letter sent from Old England to New, 1659." It was printed in London in 1667.

Samuel Hutchinson (1652) died, unmarried, July 14, 1667.

**William Paddy** (1652), of Boston, merchant, came over in the "James" from Southampton in 1635, arriving in Boston June 3. He was called in the custom-house clearance, a "skinner," and was probably of a guild or company of the skimmers. He lived for a time at Plymouth, was deacon of the church there, and one of the representatives from that town in the first General Court of Deputies for Plymouth Colony, in 1639. His first wife, Alice Freeman, died April 24, 1651, and he married in Boston, Dec. 3, 1651, Mary Greenough, about which time he made that town his permanent residence. He was elected a selectman March 12, 1654-5, and was re-elected until his decease. He attended the meeting of the board, Aug. 12, 1658, and died on the twenty-fourth day of that month. William Paddy (1652) attended nearly every meeting of the selectmen during three and a half years, and was very prominent in the conducting of town affairs.

In his will, after providing for his wife and nine children, and granting legacies to several friends, he gave "ten pounds to be disposed of by y<sup>e</sup> selectmen of y<sup>e</sup> town of Boston, for y<sup>e</sup> poore."

A gravestone was dug up from the north side of the Old State House, near the centre door, and bones found near it, while the city were repairing the building, June 18, 1830. The inscription is all in capital letters, viz.: "Here sleeps that | Blessed one ◇ whose lief | God help us all to live | That so when tiem shall be | That we this world must lieve | We ever may be happy | With blessed William Paddy." On the other side: "Hear lyeth | The body of Mr. William Paddy, Aged 58 years. | Departed | This life August the — 1658."

The stone was deposited in the garret of the Old South Church.

**Samuel Hutchinson** (1652). AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, pp. 299, 302; 1862, p. 331 (will); 1865, p. 15.

**William Paddy** (1652). AUTHORITIES: New

Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850, 1853, 1854, 1877; Drake's Hist. of Boston; *Columbian Centinel*, June 19, 1830; Records of Plymouth Colony.



**1653-4.** The officers elected were: Thomas Clarke (1638), captain; James Oliver (1640), lieutenant; William Hudson (1640), ensign. Joshua Hewes (1637) was first sergeant; James Browne (1638), second sergeant, and Thomas Clarke (1644), clerk.

The English army, as organized this year, consisted of regiments composed of eight companies of musketeers, with a flank company of grenadiers on the right, and of fusileers on the left, each company being composed of sixty men, rank and file. The captains carried pikes; the lieutenants, partisans; the ensigns, half-pikes, and the sergeants, halberds. Each infantry soldier was armed with a musket and a sword, and the grenadiers carried hand-grenades, which they lighted and threw among their opponents.

During the reign of Cromwell, the people of Massachusetts managed their affairs with very little interruption from the mother country. Mr. Hutchinson says he has "nowhere met with any marks of disrespect to the memory of the late King, and there is no room to suppose the colonists were under disaffection to his son; and if they feared his restoration, it was because they expected a change in religion, and that a persecution of all non-conformists would follow it."

Cromwell had conquered Ireland, and while considering how to keep it in subjection, he thought of the Puritans in New England, and made overtures to them to recross the water and occupy "the Green Isle" as its proprietors by right of conquest. The General Court did not receive the proposition with favor, and directed Gov. Endicott to reply that the people of Massachusetts "were enjoying health, plenty, peace, and the liberty and ordinances of the gospel, and an opportunity for spreading the knowledge of it among savages; and that, content with these blessings, they had no desire to change their abode."

The new members recruited in 1653-4 were: Jonathan Gilbert, Thomas Lake, Evan Thomas.

**Jonathan Gilbert** (1653), of Hadley, innkeeper, came from England and settled in Hartford, Conn. He married, Jan. 29, 1646, Mary, daughter of John White. His wife died Dec. 15, 1649, and in 1650 he married Mary Welles, of Hadley, to which place he had removed. He was a man of distinction, and was for many years marshal of the colony. He died Dec. 10, 1682, aged sixty-four years. His eldest daughter became the wife of Andrew Belcher, and mother of Gov. Jonathan Belcher.

**Thomas Lake** (1653), of Boston, came from London to New Haven, and there married the daughter of the deputy-governor of that colony. He was admitted a free-man in 1641; was selectman from 1658 to 1676; an eminent merchant, and member of the Second Church. He purchased in 1654, from John Richards (1644), half of "Arousick" Island, in the Kennebec River, where he occasionally resided, and for many years had a trading house, near which he was killed by the Indians, against whom Capt. Lake (1653) commanded an expedition. His bones remained long unburied, but were afterwards discovered and deposited on Copp's Hill, where his gravestone says: "An eminently faithful servant of God, and one of a public spirit — was previously slain

**Thomas Lake** (1653). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1849, 1850, 1851, 1871; Mather's *Magnalia*; Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.

"[1676-7] March 13. Capt Lake, the Remainder of his Corps, was honorably buried." — *Sewall's Diary*, Vol. I., p. 38.

by the Indians at Kennebec, August 14th 1676, and here is interred, March 13th following." His inventory amounted to nearly twenty-five hundred pounds.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1654, ensign in 1660, lieutenant in 1661, and captain in 1662 and 1674. His daughter, Ann, was the wife of Rev. John Cotton, and afterward of Rev. Increase Mather, whom she also survived.

**Evan Thomas** (1653), of Boston in 1640, came from Wales; was "taken into consideration as a resident" of Boston, Oct. 26, 1640, and was admitted an inhabitant Jan. 25, 1641. He was admitted to the First Church April 4, 1641, and became a freeman the 2d of June following. He was a vintner, had a good property, and died Aug. 25, 1661.

He and Thomas Lake (1653) were anti-tariff men in 1655, according to Drake's History of Boston, p. 340, and were opposed to any duty on beer. He assisted in the impressment of thirty-two soldiers for the expedition against Ninigret in 1654, and was paid by the town for his service. In 1660, Oct. 25, the selectmen voted to allow him to keep a house of "publick intertainment for the yeare ensuing," and Oct. 27, 1661, his widow was permitted "to draw beere till April next," according to the grant made to her late husband. Her license was renewed in 1662, and repeatedly afterward, for in 1671 she is allowed to draw beer and keep a house of public entertainment. Savage says, "The widow seems to have been less acceptable in her control of the business at the Kings Arms public house, for she was warned to leave town as late as 1672, and not restored before 1676." In May, 1680, she relieved the tavern of a mortgage of three hundred pounds, and died in 1697.

---

1654-5. The officers elected were: Edward Gibbons (1637), captain; Edward Hutchinson (1638), lieutenant; Joshua Hewes (1637), ensign. John Barrell (1643) was first sergeant; Nathaniel Williams (1644), second sergeant; Thomas Lake (1653), third sergeant; Richard Waite (1638), fourth sergeant, and Thomas Clarke (1644), clerk.

Capt. John Leverett (1639) was commissioned by Gov. Endicott and the General Court, as the agent of the colonists in England, to appear for them and to act in their behalf "in all matters of concernment to them before His Highness, the Lord Protector of the Commonwealths of England, Scotland, Ireland, and His Honourable Council there." He had been a commissioner to confer with Gov. Stuyvesant, of the New Netherlands, concerning a rumor of a plot between the Dutch at New Amsterdam and the Mohawks. On stating the case to Cromwell, Major Sedgwick (1637) and Capt. Leverett (1639) received from him a commission to raise five hundred volunteers in New England for an expedition against the Dutch at New Amsterdam, and he returned to Boston with four ships and a few troops. They had a long passage, and were immediately followed by news of a peace between England and Holland, which put an end to the expedition. Cromwell next proposed that Jamaica, which he had wrested from Spain, should be colonized with the Puritans of New England.

Daniel Gookin (1645), formerly a Kentish soldier, who had first emigrated to Virginia, and who went thence to Massachusetts, was then in London. Cromwell sent

**Evan Thomas** (1653). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

him home with propositions to the people of New England to emigrate to his new possessions, over which Major John Sedgwick (1637), of Massachusetts, was to be Governor. "The Lord High Protector did apprehend," he said, "that the people of New England had as clear a call to transport themselves from thence to Jamaica, as they had from England to New England, in order to their bettering their outward condition, God having promised his people should be the head and not the tail; besides that design had his tendency to the overthrow of the man of sin." He offered them land on the easiest terms, immunity from taxes and customs for a period of years, and other inducements. But he proposed himself to appoint their highest magistrate, and this alone would have been an insurmountable obstacle, had there been no other, to their acceptance of his offer. The General Court returned "their thankful acknowledgment of his Highness's favor, and assured him that he should always have their prayers"; but, with periphrastic phraseology such as they could trust him to understand, they declined to go to the West Indies.

The expedition against the Dutch having failed, the two commanders turned their attention against the French at the eastward. "It was a time of peace," says Hutchinson, "between the two nations, but the English had good right to the country."

The new members recruited in 1654-5 were: William Avery, Peter Duncan, Richard Fairbanks, Elias Maverick, John Severne.

**William Avery** (1654), of Dedham, an apothecary and physician, was admitted a citizen of that town Jan. 1, 1650. He was called sergeant in 1655, was a lieutenant of the company at Dedham in 1673, and was admitted a freeman in 1677. It is possible he was the bookseller mentioned by Thomas in his History, Vol. II., p. 411, whose will is in the probate records, but certainly he represented Springfield in the Legislature of 1669. He died at Boston, March 18, 1686-7, aged about sixty-six years, and was buried in Dedham, in the Ancient Burial-Place, Range XIV., No. 29, or in King's Chapel Burial-Ground, Boston,—both places record his burial.

**Peter Duncan** (1654), of Dorchester, son of Capt. Nathaniel Duncan (1638), of Dorchester, and brother of Nathaniel (1642), came to America with his parents in 1630. He removed to Gloucester and there settled.

**Richard Fairbanks** (1654), of Boston, where he arrived in 1633, having crossed the ocean in the "Griffin" with Rev. Mr. Cotton. He joined the First Church the same day as Elder Leverett (October, 1633), the father of John Leverett (1639); was admitted a freeman May 14, 1634, and in November, 1637, was disarmed for his adhesion to the cause of Mr. Wheelwright. Within two years after, he was made, by the same government, the first receiver of all letters from abroad for the whole colony. He was elected "pound keeper" in 1637. In 1652, he sold his house to Robert Turner (1640). It was on a lot next to Robert Keayne's (1637), where the Blue Anchor Tavern afterward was erected. He was second sergeant of the Company in 1656.

**William Avery** (1654). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847; King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Dedham Register, 1892, p. 159; Dedham Records, Vol. II., p. 277; Vol. III., pp. 179, 221.

"[1686-7] March 18. Dr. W<sup>m</sup> Avery dyes."  
—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 170.

He was buried Monday, March 21.

**Peter Duncan** (1654). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Richard Fairbanks** (1654). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.



**Elias Maverick** (1654), of Charlestown in 1632, joined the church there in February, 1633, and became a freeman June 11 of the same year. He afterward lived at Winnisimmet, now Chelsea. "He died at Charlestown," says his gravestone in the old burial-ground in Charlestown, "September 8, 1684, aged 80 years." He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1658.

The winter of 1633 was severe, and the small-pox added to the terror of the Indians. Sagamore John, a friend of the whites, died on the 5th of December, and his people died so fast that Elias Maverick (1654) buried above thirty in one day; and when their own Indian friends deserted them, Elias Maverick (1654), his wife, and servants, went daily to them, administered to their necessities, and cared for their children.

**John Severne** (1654). As but one John Severne, or Severance, is found in 1654 on the records of the towns of Massachusetts Bay, it is probable that this is the same person who joined the Military Company of the Massachusetts in 1641.

**Rev. Thomas Thacher**, of Weymouth, afterward of Boston, was the preacher of the Artillery sermon in 1654 and 1671. He was born in Salisbury, England, May 1, 1620, and was well educated at the grammar school, but preferred "the meannesses of America" to an attendance at Oxford or Cambridge. He embarked for New England, and arrived at Boston June 4, 1635. He fortunately came under the tuition of Mr. Charles Chauncy, who was afterwards president of Harvard College. He pursued his studies; was married May 11, 1643; was ordained Jan. 2, 1644, and settled in Weymouth. In May, 1669, at the formation of the Third Church, or Old South, in Boston, he became its first pastor, and continued as such until his death, Oct. 15, 1678.

---

**1655-6.** The officers elected were: Francis Norton (1643), captain; Roger Clap (1646), lieutenant; William Phillips (1644), ensign. Daniel Fisher (1640) was first sergeant; Richard Woodde (1642), second sergeant; John Gore (1638), clerk, and John Audlin (1638), armorer.

Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), the founder of the Artillery Company, died at Boston on the 23d of March, 1656, and was doubtless buried with such martial pomp as was customary in those days; for, he said in his will, "to declare my affections to that [military] exercise & the society of souldiers, I shall desire to be buryed as a souldier in a Military way . . . if the time and place may suit thereunto," which was left to his executors and friends to determine.

His voluminous will reveals prominent traits. He was thoughtful, wise, generous, and forgiving. He remembered public interests and private friendships. The church, the college, the free school, the town and its needs, the Artillery Company, and public library were thoughtfully remembered; yet neither the town nor city — while recognizing others of less beneficence and worth — raises an effigy or slab to express its gratitude to its first princely benefactor. The place of his interment is not known, but his memory should be cherished by every member of the Artillery Company.

The new members recruited in 1655-6 were: Thomas Bell, Jr., and John Webb.

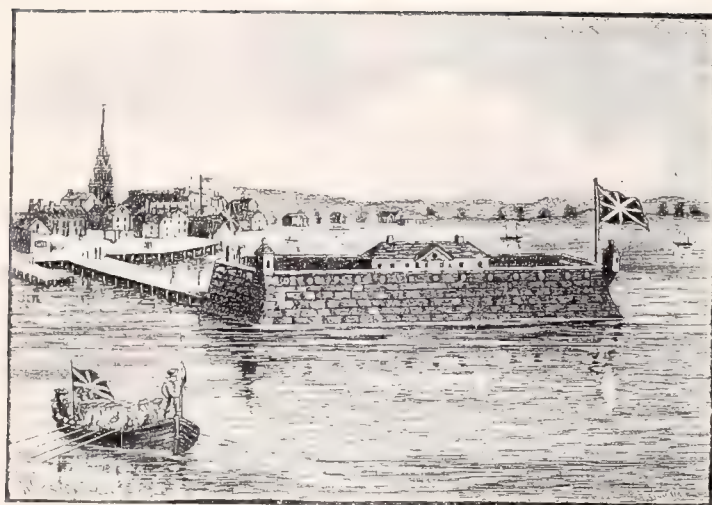
**Elias Maverick** (1654). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sumner's Hist. of East Boston.

**Rev. Thomas Thacher.**

**AUTHORITIES:** Mather's Magnalia; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Hill's Hist. of the Old South Church; Eliot's Biog. Dict.







NORTH BATTERY.

**Thomas Bell, Jr.** (1655.) He was not the son of Thomas Bell (1643). That Thomas, Jr., was born in Boston, Aug. 3, 1642. Thomas Bell, Jr. (1655), was probably the Thomas Bell who testified in 1681 in regard to the Lynn iron-works, and said he was fifty years of age; but no more is known about him.

**John Webb** (1655) was a brazier, who, according to Boston Records, "was Admitted to Inhabitt in the Towne six Months, and if he behave himself well, for Lounger Tyme," on the 24th of November, 1651. He is subsequently referred to in the records of Boston as Ensign John Webb. He was a constable in Boston in 1655, was clerk of the Military Company of the Massachusetts in 1656, and ensign in 1660. He was ensign in the militia in 1657.

**Rev. Peter Hobart**, of Hingham, was the preacher of the Artillery sermon in 1655. He was born at Hingham, Norfolk County, England, Oct. 13, 1604. He attended the free school at Lynn, and was admitted into Magdalen College, Cambridge, England, where he received the degrees of A. B. in 1625 and A. M. in 1629. He entered the ministry, and came to New England, arriving at Charlestown, Mass., June 8, 1635. In September following, he settled in Hingham among old friends. He continued as the pastor of the church there for forty-four years, and died Jan. 20, 1679.

---

**1656-7.** The officers elected were: James Oliver (1640), captain; William Hudson (1640), lieutenant; John Barrell (1643), ensign. Alexander Adams (1652) was first sergeant; Richard Fairbanks (1654), second sergeant; John Webb (1655), clerk.

Aug. 28, 1656, the selectmen ordered "that the North battery bee forthwith repaired," and the disbursements therefor were made by Capt. James Oliver (1640), Peter Oliver (1643), William Davis (1643), and William Paddy (1652), members of the board of selectmen.

This battery, Drake says, stood "at the lower part of the north end of the town, and it was not demolished until after the War of Independence. The site was then converted into a wharf for the accommodation of ships and merchandise, and it still bears the name of Battery Wharf. This was a very important point, as it commanded a great extent of the harbor, and much expense was laid out, early [in] this year, to put it in a condition to be of service in case an enemy should appear."

The new members recruited in 1656-7 were: William Beamsley and Nicholas Clarke.

**William Beamsley** (1656), of Boston in 1632, joined the First Church April 5, 1635, and was admitted to be a freeman May 25, 1636. The church records call him "Labourer." He bought of William Phillips (1644) a shore lot, near Merry's Point, and "wharfed out" in 1650. He was granted sixteen acres of land, 1637, near Muddy River, and in 1641 "bro. Beamsley [1656]" was paid by the town for ten rods of

**Rev. Peter Hobart.** AUTHORITIES: Mather's *Magnalia*; Sprague's *Annals of American Pulpit*; Lincoln's *Hist. of Hingham*.

**William Beamsley** (1656). AUTHORITIES: *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 1855 (will); Boston Records; *Savage's Gen. Dict.*

causeway built by him at Rumney Marsh. He was a constable of the town in 1647, and in 1649 was ordered "to remove away his oyster shells from the Towne's hye way before his dore." He was appointed on important committees by the selectmen, but was fined ten shillings for harboring a person without leave.

He died Sept. 29, 1658. His will, made Sept. 14, was proved Oct. 28, 1658.

**Nicholas Clarke** (1656). He was first sergeant of the Military Company of the Massachusetts in 1657, beyond which nothing has been discovered, unless he is the Nicholas Clarke who arrived in Boston Sept. 16, 1632, settled in Cambridge, and before 1639 sold his property there and removed to Hartford, Conn. He died July 2, 1680.

**Rev. Richard Mather**, of Dorchester, delivered the Artillery sermon in 1656. He was born in Lowton, Lancaster County, England, in 1596. He attended school at Winwick; at fifteen years of age was a school-master, and when twenty-two began preaching at Toxteth. May 23, 1635, he set sail from Bristol for New England, and after a stormy passage arrived at Boston Aug. 17, 1635. He soon proceeded to Dorchester, gathered another church, and Aug. 23, 1636, Mr. Mather was settled over it as pastor and teacher. There he remained during nearly thirty-four years. He died at Dorchester, April 22, 1669, at the age of seventy-three years.

He was a person of great authority in the early churches of New England, the father of Increase Mather, and grandfather of Cotton Mather, the head of a family which for nearly a century filled no second place in the church of New England.



**1657-8.** The officers elected were: Edward Hutchinson (1638), captain; William Phillips (1644), lieutenant; Joshua Scottow (1645), ensign. Nicholas Clarke (1656) was first sergeant; Hezekiah Usher (1638), second sergeant; William Cotton (1650), clerk.

An inventory of the estate of Miles Standish, Plymouth's great captain, returned to the court in 1657, shows that he had been the possessor of "One fowling piece, three muskets, four carbines, two small guns, one old barrell, one sword, one cutles, three belts, cesers comenteryes and Bariiffs Artillery." Nearly every early colonial home was from necessity an arsenal.

It does not appear that any members were enlisted this year, and but few were during the years immediately before and after. "It will be recollected," says Mr. Whitman (1810), "that this was during the Protectorate of Oliver Cromwell. The Commonwealth in England furnished better employment for men of military talents than the wilderness of New England. Possessed, as the Dissenters were, of church and state, few inducements were offered for emigration, and more returned to England than came to New England."

The will of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637) was probated May 2, 1656. His son, Major Benjamin Keayne (1638), was appointed in the will sole executor. Capt. Keayne (1637) also appointed his "honored and loving friends," Mr. Simon Bradstreet, Major-Gen. Denison (1660), Mr. William Hibbins, Mr. Edward Winslow, Rev. John Wilson,

**Rev. Richard Mather.** AUTHORITIES: Mather's *Magnalia*; Savage's *Gen. Dict.*; Sprague's *Annals of American Pulpit*; *Histories of Dorchester.*



Rev. Mr. Norton, Mr. Edward Rawson, and Lieut. Johnson (1638), overseers of his will. Major Benjamin Keayne (1638) went to England in 1644, entered the service of Cromwell, and probably did not return to America.

From 1656 to 1671, when the conduit was removed, the overseers in charge of the estate were probably Simon Bradstreet, Daniel Denison (1660), Edward Rawson, and James Johnson (1638).

Dec. 29, 1656, the selectmen voted, "It is agreed that the next day of our [town] meeting some time bee spent to consider of Capt Keayne's [1637] will in respect of the legacies to the towne."

At the next general town meeting, held March 9, 1656-7, Capt. Thomas Savage (1637), Anthony Stoddard (1639), Jeremiah Howchin (1641), and Edward Hutchinson (1638), were "chosen a committee to consider of the modell of the towne house, to bee built, as concerning the charge thereof, and the most convenient place, as also to take the subscriptions of the inhabitants to propagate such a building and seasonably to make report to a publick townes meeting." All the members of this committee were members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts.

The above committee probably reported to the town, because, Aug. 31, 1657, Thomas Marshall (1640), Samuel Cole (1637), William Paddy (1652), Joshua Scottow (1645), and Jeremiah Howchin (1641), having had "full power given" them "by the town of Boston," made choice of Edward Hutchinson (1638) and John Hull (1660) as commissioners to superintend the erection of the town-house. It will be noticed that all the members of the second committee, and the building commissioners also, were members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts.

The commissioners entered into an agreement with Thomas Joy, who joined the Artillery Company in 1658, and Bartholomew Bernad, for the erection of the desired building for the sum of four hundred pounds. The total cost of the town-house and conduit was six hundred and eighty pounds.

The building was sixty-six feet long, thirty-six feet wide, set upon twenty-one pillars, ten feet high, projecting three feet over the pillars on each side. There was a walk on the top, fifteen feet wide, with two turrets and balusters, and rails around the walk. The agreement gives a minute description of the building.

Capt. Keayne's (1637) legacy was three hundred pounds; three hundred and ninety-three pounds and six shillings were pledged by the citizens of Boston. This latter sum was subscribed by one hundred and twenty-four persons, of whom the following were, at that time or later, members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts:—

Edward Tyng . . . (1642),	£10	Joshua Scottow . . . (1645),	£5
John Evered (Webb) . (1643),	10	William Hudson . . . (1640),	10
Peter Oliver . . . . (1643),	10	Hezekiah Usher . . . (1638),	20
John Barrell . . . . (1643),	3	John Coggan . . . . (1638),	5
James Oliver . . . . (1640),	12	John Hull . . . . . (1660),	5
Richard Parker . . . (1638),	10	Thomas Clarke . . . . (1638),	4
Nathaniel Williams . (1644),	3	Robert Turner . . . . (1640),	5
Theodore Atkinson . (1644),	5	William Davis . . . . (1643),	15
Thomas Hawkins . . . (1649),	2	Jacob Sheafe . . . . (1648),	12
Richard Cooke . . . . (1643),	3 10s.	Thomas Lake . . . . (1653),	9
Samuel Hutchinson . (1652),	5	Isaac Walker . . . . (1676),	3

Thomas Edsall . . .	(1652),	10s.	Henry Messinger . .	(1658),	10s.
Richard Gridley . .	(1658),	£2	Thomas Bumstead . .	(1647),	£1
John Button . . .	(1643),	5	Samuel Cole . . .	(1637),	2
John Coney . . .	(1662),	15s.	Henry Bridgham . .	(1644),	10
Richard Waite . . .	(1638),	2	Nathaniel Reynolds .	(1658),	1
Richard Woodde . .	(1642),	1	James Davis . . .	(1651),	16s.
William Paddy . . .	(1652),	12	Daniel Turell . . .	(1660),	1
Thomas Makepeace .	(1638),	1	Edmund Jackson . .	(1646),	1
Joshua Hewes . . .	(1637),	10s.	James Johnson . . .	(1638),	2
Henry Phillips . . .	(1640),	5	Henry Powning . . .	(1677),	2
Thomas Brattle . . .	(1675),	5	Humphrey Bradshaw .	(1642),	10s.
John Biggs . . . .	(1641),	2	Nathaniel Duncan . .	(1638),	2
Henry Allen . . . .	(1658),	1	Peter Duncan . . . .	(1654),	1 10s.
Hugh Drury . . . .	(1659),	1			

Forty-nine of the one hundred and twenty-four persons who subscribed were members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts. Those forty-nine persons subscribed two hundred and thirty pounds and eleven shillings, or nearly two thirds of the entire amount.

The town-house was probably completed and occupied in 1658. March 28, 1659, the selectmen voted that no one should smoke, or bring a fire or match, under or about the town-house, except in case of military exercise.

In 1666, Robert Gibbs, father of Robert (1692), obtained a lease of the cellar under the town-house, and in 1664, Thomas Lake (1653) and Hezekiah Usher (1665) occupied the east end of the cellar. In 1678, Samuel Shrimpton (1670) bought Capt. Lake's (1653) interest of the latter's widow, and obtained an extension of the lease for thirty-nine years.

Oct. 9, 1667, the Legislature ordered "the necessary full and suitable repair of the Town and Court House in Boston, *founded by the late Captain Robert Keayne*," the expense to be paid, one half by the colony, one quarter by the county of Suffolk, and one quarter by the town of Boston.

In the "Re-dedication of the Old State House," July 11, 1882, Mr. William H. Whitmore, in his address, gives a minute history of the buildings which have stood at the head of State Street, called "Old Town House" and "Old State House."

"About 7 or 8 o'clock, of the night between the 2d and 3d of October, 1711," a fire broke out in Cornhill (now Washington Street), near the meeting-house of the First Church. It consumed all the houses from School Street to Dock Square; all the upper part of (now) State Street, together with the old town-house and the old meeting-house. Thus ended the first town-house in Boston, to which Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), and members of the military company which he founded, so largely contributed.

Up to this time, there is no record of any by-laws, agreeable to the provisions of the charter, adopted by the Artillery Company. As Mr. Whitman (1810) well observes, "It is presumed that Keayne [1637], the founder and patron of the Company, was, during his life, their lawgiver and oracle, but he died, March 23, 1656, and they saw the necessity soon after, of establishing rules for their government." This was done in September, 1657. These do not appear to have been sanctioned by the Governor and council, or

General Court, until September, 1677, of which the following is a copy from the colony records:—

“It is ordered by the Artillery Company in Boston, September 7th, 1657—

“1st. That whereas there is an agreement to order, that every member of this Company is to pay four shillings per year for their quarterages, into the hand of the Clerk;—that whatsoever is due from any of the Company, shall be paid within one month into his hands who is the present Clerk.

“2d. It is further ordered by the Company, that for the time to come, every one who is a member of the Company, shall pay into the hands of the Clerk, upon the election days, or before, his quarterages for the year past.

“3d. It is further ordered by the Company, that the training days for this Company be five yearly, and they to be on the first Mondays of April, May, June, September, and October, yearly; and that every officer and soldier is to appear at their colours by eight of the clock in the morning: and if the Monday prove foul, the Friday after is appointed.

“4th. It is further ordered by the Company, that if any shall neglect to appear in arms four training days together, and not give an account of it to the satisfaction of the Company, he shall then pay to the Company what is due, both for fines and quarterages, and have his name put out of the rolls, and no more to be accounted a member of the Company.

“5th. It is further ordered by the Company, that if any be chosen to any office in the Company, and hath not borne an higher office in the Company before, and shall refuse to hold the office he is chosen to, he shall pay what arrears he is behind to the Company, and have his name put out of the Company's roll, and no longer be acknowledged a member of the Company.

“6th. It is further ordered by the Company, that the Clerk, without any further order, shall have full power to distrain for any fine, or quarterages, due to the Company, which shall be unpaid one month after they are due.

“7th. It is further ordered by the Company, that the Clerk shall, every training day, bring the book of the Company's Orders into the field, that it may be there, not only to call over the Company, but to enter any who is admitted, and enter any orders which shall be made.

“8th. It is further ordered by the Company, that the Clerk's accounts, yearly, shall, after the day of election, and before the next training day in September, be audited by those who were commissioned officers the year past, with the Captain and Clerk new chosen, that accounts may be delivered into the new Clerks hands.

“9th. It is further ordered by the Company, that whereas no town training is to be upon Artillery days, yet the Commander of the Artillery may have liberty to request so much favor of any Captain, and he not be a transgressor of the order, to grant it to meet with his Company upon such days with the Artillery, for the better helping forward of discipline in the Company.

“10th. It is further ordered by the Company, that a perfect list shall be taken of members of the Company, and being perfected, shall be called over every training day. It is also desired by the Company, that these several orders may be presented by Major Atherton to the Council for their approbation of them, that so they may carry more authority with them.”

"April 5th, 1675. It was then voted by the Artillery Company, that the orders of the Company be presented by Thomas Clark, Esq., to the General Court or Council, for their confirmation.

"JOHN MORSE, *Clerk*.

"The Court, having perused the above written orders of the Artillery Company, do allow and approve thereof.

"Attest :

"EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary*."

**Rev. Henry Flint**, of Braintree, who delivered the Artillery sermon of 1657, came from Matlock, in Derbyshire, England, to Boston, in 1635. He became a freeman May 25, 1636; was ordained March 17, 1640; married Margery, a sister of Rev. Leonard Hoar, president of Harvard College, and was settled in Braintree, where he died April 27, 1668.

1658-9. The officers elected were: Humfrey Atherton (1638), captain; James Johnson (1638), lieutenant, and Peter Oliver (1643), ensign. Elias Maverick (1654) was first sergeant; John Richards (1644), second sergeant; William Cotton (1650), clerk; Thomas Dwaite, drummer, and John Audlin (1638), armorer.

The new members recruited in 1658-9 were: Henry Allen, Richard Baker, Joseph Belknap, William Dinsdale, Richard Gridley, Thomas Joy, Hudson Leverett, Simon Lynde, Samuel Maverick, Henry Messinger, Richard Price, Nathaniel Reynolds, Joseph Rock, John Sunderland, Richard Woodcock.

**Henry Allen** (1658), of Boston, was a carpenter. He joined the church in May, 1644, and became a freeman in 1648. He was a constable of Boston in 1656. Nov. 29, 1661, at a meeting of the selectmen (six members of the board present, and all members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts), liberty was granted Richard Gridley (1658) and Henry Allen (1658) "to erect a wind-mill at the point before Abel Porters house and to enjoy the land upon the sea side, . . . they paying yearly every first of March to the Town Treasurer, two bushels of wheat." In 1672, he is called "deacon" in the records of Boston. He served as selectman eleven years, 1677-87, and was often on important town committees. On the board of selectmen, he took the place of Capt. Thomas Lake (1653), who was killed by the Indians Aug. 14, 1676. He represented Rowley in the General Court in 1674. In 1685, he, with other prominent citizens of Boston, paid the Indians in cancellation of their claim to Deer Island, Boston Neck, etc., and a deed of the same was given by the Indian chiefs to the town.

Mr. Allen (1658) died Jan. 6, 1696, leaving a large estate, but no will.

**Rev. Henry Flint.** AUTHORITIES: Mather's *Magnalia*; Savage's *Gen. Dict.*; *Hist. of Braintree*.

**Henry Allen** (1658). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's *Gen. Dict.*; Drake's *Hist. of Boston*.

Mr. Whitman (1810), in his *History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company*, Edition of 1842, calls this person "Capt. John Allen of

Charlestown." Capt. John Allen united with the Company in 1639. The above name in the roll is "Sergt — Allen," and his surety is Edward Hutchinson. This would indicate that Mr. Allen was a citizen of Boston, and from the relations of Mr. Henry Allen and Mr. Hutchinson, in town affairs, the name "Henry" has been substituted for "John."



**Richard Baker** (1658), of Dorchester, arrived in America from England, Nov. 28, 1635. He joined the Dorchester church Nov. 4, 1639, and was admitted a freeman May 18, 1642. He was early granted land; was one of the raters in 1647, 1650, and 1660; selectman in 1653; constable in 1663; was once chosen a ruling elder, but it does not appear that he accepted the office. He died Oct. 25, 1689.

The History of Dorchester, from which the above facts are learned, says, "He lived in the part of the town now known as Savin Hill, and was owner of a large real estate in Dorchester, a piece of which is now [1859] in possession of his descendants, near his homestead, at the place mentioned."

He married Faith, daughter of Henry Withington, the ruling elder of the Dorchester church.<sup>1</sup>

**Joseph Belknap** (1658), of Boston, was a son of Abraham Belknap, who settled in Lynn in 1637, and removed to Salem. Joseph (1658) was born in England, came to America with his parents, and settled in Boston. He was admitted a freeman in 1665, and was one of the founders of the Old South Church in 1669, from which he took a letter of dismission to the Hatfield church. He lived in Hatfield from 1682 to 1696, then came back to Boston.

June 29, 1657, the selectmen let to Joseph Belknap (1658) a small piece of ground for eight shillings per year. His lease of it was renewed in 1662 for twenty-one years, and in 1696 was renewed again for a term not exceeding ninety-nine years.

In 1689, he was chosen clerk of the market; in 1690, a tithing-man; in 1691, a constable, and was continued in minor town offices for several years. He held the office of fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1679. His son, Joseph, joined the Artillery Company in 1692.

Sergt. Belknap (1658) died Nov. 14, 1712, aged eighty-two years.

**William Dinsdale** (1658), of Boston, was admitted a freeman in 1657. His house and garden were on Milk Street, nearly opposite the present post-office. The Boston Town Records first mention him, March 14, 1652-3, as follows: "William Dinsdall and Isack Collimore, is chosen to look to Cariages and Wheels of the great artilliry, and to be payd by the selectt men." He was chosen by the selectmen packer of "fish and meat," in 1653, and was annually selected until 1679-80.

In 1663, he was aged forty-seven years, at which time he hired an island in Boston Harbor of John Leverett (1639), for seven years. He died at Barbadoes in 1681, aged sixty-five years.

**Richard Gridley** (1658), of Boston as early as 1631, was admitted a freeman April 1, 1634. His residence was on the southeast corner of Summer Street and Cow Lane, or High Street, and his pasture extended east to Fort Hill. It was on this estate first mentioned that Capt. Samuel Adams, the father of Samuel Adams, lived, and here, in

**Joseph Belknap** (1658). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1852, 1859; Boston Records; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

"[1712. Nov.] 18. Tuesday. Mr Belknap buried. Joseph was invited by Gloves, and had a scarf given him there, which is the first."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. II., pp. 367, 368.*

**William Dinsdale** (1658). AUTHORITIES:

New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**Richard Gridley** (1658). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> See New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1889, p. 279 *et seq.*, Art., Genealogy of Richard Baker, by Edward J. Baker.

1722, the latter was born. Richard Gridley (1658) was a captain in the militia, and a subscriber toward the free school established in Boston, Aug. 12, 1636. He was disarmed in November, 1637, being a supporter of Mr. Wheelwright. His three children, born after the last-mentioned event, were named Return, Believe, and Tremble. He furnished bricks for the fortification at Fort Hill. He held town offices, and for several years was water-bailiff with Alexander Adams (1652). His sons, Believe and Joseph, joined the Artillery Company in 1662.

In the Boston Town Records, Richard Gridley (1658) calls himself a "Brick-maker." His will of Oct. 19, 1674, was proved the next month.

**Thomas Joy** (1658), of Boston in 1638, was a house carpenter. In the year 1642, he was permitted "to set up an howse over his sellar by the water side, in the common way by his dwelling howse in the milfield." This was on the southeasterly side of Copp's Hill. Thomas Joy (1658) and partner built the first town-house, — which resulted from a legacy by Capt. Keayne (1637), — and were voted by the selectmen, Jan. 28, 1661, six hundred and eighty pounds in full. For a short time, he resided in Hingham, and built the Hingham Mills.

Nov. 27, 1676, a great fire occurred in Boston, "at the North end of the town," which consumed forty-six dwelling-houses, besides a meeting-house and other buildings. Among the former was that of Thomas Joy (1658). In an attempt to widen the streets after the fire, there were differences between Thomas Joy (1658) and the selectmen, which were settled by referees, Aug. 1, 1677.

At the time of the church troubles in Boston in 1646, several members of the Artillery Company were prominent, especially Thomas Fowle (1639) and David Yale (1640). The trouble got into the courts; the petitioners for a larger liberty were convicted, fined, or imprisoned. Mr. Drake, in his *History of Boston*, p. 297, in explaining this contention, says, "Thomas Joy [1658], a young carpenter, for some kind offices to the prisoners, and inquiring of the marshal when he went to search Mr. Dand's study, if his warrant were in the King's name, 'was laid hold on, and kept in irons four or five days,' which was sufficient to extort a confession of wrong on his part, as it allowed him to return to the care of his family, 'upon reasonable bail.' Thus, arbitrary power shows its strength and importance, when those in the more humble walks of life are accidentally or otherwise thrown within its insolent grasp."

Thomas Joy (1658) was admitted to be a freeman in 1665, and died Oct. 21, 1678. His son, Samuel, joined the Artillery Company in 1665.

**Hudson Leverett** (1658), the only son of Gov. John (1639) and Hannah (Hudson) Leverett who grew to manhood, was born in Boston, May 3, 1640. He was never admitted to be a freeman, nor did he attain any distinction in the church, which in his time was the first step to all preference. He married (1) Sarah, daughter of Bezaleel Peyton, who died June 7, 1679, and (2) about 1692, Elizabeth Myham, a widow, who survived him, and died Dec. 16, 1714. Though the son of a past commander of the Artillery Company, he never held any office in the organization except that of clerk, in

**Thomas Joy** (1658). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.

**Hudson Leverett** (1658). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850.

1662-3. Hutchinson, I., 323, says, he "did not support the reputation of his father." He was crier of the court at quarter-sessions in June, 1687.

He died in the summer of 1694. The will of Hudson Leverett (1658) is on file in the probate office of Suffolk County, No. 1986, but is not recorded; it is dated Oct. 10, 1692. His son, John, was the eighth president of Harvard College, and joined the Artillery Company in 1704.

**Simon Lynde** (1658), of Boston in 1650, was born in London, England, in June, 1624. He was bred to trade in Holland, and after coming to Boston and residing here several years,—1650 to 1670,—he returned to London and was engaged in business. He married, in Boston, Feb. 22, 1653, Hannah Newgate. In Boston Town Records, April 27, 1655, he first appears as being in arrears to the town forty shillings, for four years' rent. He was a constable in 1659. He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1661, first sergeant in 1669, and was a soldier in King Philip's War. In 1672, he was interested as a land speculator in planting a colony near Stonington, Conn. He died Nov. 22, 1687.

**Samuel Maverick** (1658), of Boston, was found here on Noddles Island, in 1630, by the Massachusetts Company. There is no record of the time of his arrival. By his deposition, made Dec. 9, 1665, we learn that he was born in 1602. He had fortified his island home with four small pieces of artillery prior to Mr. Winthrop's visit, in 1630. He became a freeman Oct. 2, 1632. In 1635, being too much given to hospitality, he was required to change his residence and move to the peninsula; but the order was not strictly enforced. The same year he went to Virginia to buy corn, and arrived home with two vessels well laden, Aug. 3, 1636. In July, 1637, Samuel Maverick (1658) entertained Lord Ley and Mr. Vane. Mr. Josselyn says that, July 10, 1638, he went on shore upon Noddles Island to Mr. Samuel Maverick (1658), who was "the only hospitable man in all the country; giving entertainment to all comers, gratis." In 1641, he was prosecuted for receiving into his house persons who had escaped from prison in Boston; but in 1645 he made a loan to the town, that the fort on Castle Island might be rebuilt. He was again prosecuted in 1646, and fined fifty pounds for signing a petition of "a seditious character" to the General Court. In 1664, he was appointed by the King a commissioner, to perfect peace in the colonies. His name occurs repeatedly in the Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, but it does not appear that Mr. Maverick (1658) ever held any position in the colonial militia.

**Henry Messinger** (1658), of Boston, was a joiner, and was admitted to be a freeman in 1665. He received a grant of land, Jan. 27, 1640, at Muddy River. The Book

**Simon Lynde** (1658). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1866; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Samuel Maverick** (1658). AUTHORITIES: Sumner's Hist. of East Boston; Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Eliot's Biog. Dict.

"[April 1, 1633.] Noddles Island is granted to Mr. Samuel Maverick, to enjoy to him and his heirs forever, yielding and paying yearly at the general court to the governour for the time being, either a fat wether, a fat hog, or £10 in money, and shall give leave to Boston and charlestown to fetch wood

continually, as their need require, from the southern part of the said island."—*Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. I., p. 104.*

Winnisimmet Ferry, both to Charlestown and Boston, was also granted to him forever.

Mr. Whitman (1810) gives this name as James Maverick. In the oldest copy of the roll, 1680, it is plainly written, "Mr Sam<sup>l</sup> Maverick." The transcript of 1745 gives the name as James Maverick, which led Mr. Whitman (1810) into an error.

**Henry Messinger** (1658). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1862; Savage's Gen. Dict.



of Possessions locates Henry Messinger's (1658) house and garden. His lot was that on which now stands the building of the Massachusetts Historical Society, and in part that of the Boston Museum. His will of March 15, 1678, gave the estate to his wife, who at her death gave it to their two sons. The father died previous to April 30, 1681, when his estate was appraised. His son, Simeon, joined the Artillery Company in 1675.

**Richard Price** (1658), of Boston, married, Aug. 18, 1659, Elizabeth Cromwell, only daughter of Thomas, whom Mr. Savage calls "the prosperous privateersman," and the Memorial History of Boston designates as "the reformed freebooter." His name, with that of Simon Lynde (1658) and twenty-four others, is attached to a petition to the court, October, 1666, in favor of acknowledging the King's authority. He was a freeman, with prefix of respect, in 1664.

**Nathaniel Reynolds** (1658), of Boston, was a son of Robert, of Watertown and Boston, to whom Capt. Robert Keayne (1637) thus refers in his will: "Item, I give unto our Brother Renolds, shoemaker, senior, Twenty shillings as a token of my respects to him if he be living two yeares after my decease, not forgetting a word that he spake publicly & seasonably in the time of my distresse & other mens vehement opposition against me."

He married, (1) Nov. 30, 1657, Sarah Dwight, of Dedham. She died July 8, 1663, and he married, (2) before Feb. 21, 1666, Priscilla Brackett, of Boston. He was admitted a freeman in 1665, and was in command of the garrison at Chelmsford in 1675-6. On Feb. 25 of that year, the inhabitants of that town petitioned the court to allow him to remain for their protection. He was interested in the organization of the town of Bristol, R. I., where he lived for a short time, but later returned to Boston.

May 12, 1675, the General Court confirmed Nathaniel Reynolds (1658) as lieutenant of the foot company of Capt. William Hudson (1640).

April 27, 1691, the town of Boston granted liberty to Josiah Franklin to erect a building eight feet square, upon the land belonging to Lieut. Nathaniel Reynolds (1658), near the South Meeting-House.

He held town office, was constable in 1655, sealer of leather, or inspector of the transportation of hides, from 1663 to 1692. He is in the Boston tax list of 1695, but was then a resident of Bristol, R. I.

**Joseph Rock** (1658), of Boston in 1652, married (1) Elizabeth, daughter of John Coggan (1638), which brought him a good estate. He married (2) Mary, daughter of Rev. John Wilson, of Boston. He became a freeman in 1652, and was one of the founders of the Third, or Old South, Church. He was elected constable of Boston, March 14, 1653, and on the 4th of April was fined twenty shillings for not accepting the office. On the 18th of the latter month, he was re-elected, and again was fined twenty shillings for refusing to accept. In 1654, he served as clerk of the market, and in 1655 was a constable. His will of Jan. 18, 1683, was proved on the 3d of January next following.

**Nathaniel Reynolds** (1658). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1855, 1888; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Shurtleff's Topog. Des. of Boston.

**Joseph Rock** (1658). AUTHORITIES: Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.



**John Sunderland** (1658), of Boston, was a parchment maker; became a member of the First Church, April 9, 1643, and a freeman May 10 following. He was unfortunate in business, and, in 1672, made a conveyance of his goods to John Vial, in trust, for his wife and children. He removed to Eastham, and there died, Dec. 26, 1703, aged eighty-five years. His will provided for his widow and children.

**Richard Woodcock** (1658), of Boston, is called in the Records of Massachusetts Bay, Vol. IV., Part 2, "armorer" in 1661. He was then paid four pounds and nine shillings for the repairing of the country's arms. He died Nov. 12, 1662.

**Rev. John Mayo**, of Boston, preached the annual Artillery sermon in 1658. He came to America in 1638, was admitted a freeman March 3, 1640, and was ordained to the gospel ministry, as colleague with Rev. John Lothrop, at Barnstable, April 15, 1640. He removed to Eastham in 1646, where he preached until Nov. 9, 1655, when he was installed as pastor of the Second, or North, Church in Boston. He held this relation until 1672, when physical infirmities obliged him to resign, and in 1673 he removed from Boston to Barnstable, to reside with his daughter. There, at Yarmouthport, he spent the remainder of his days in peace and quiet, dying in May, 1676.

---

**1659-60.** The officers elected were: Thomas Savage (1637), captain; William Davis (1643), lieutenant; Richard Sprague (1638), ensign. Robert Turner (1640) was first sergeant; John Biggs (1641), second sergeant; William Cotton (1650), clerk; Thomas Scottow, drummer, and John Audlin (1638), armorer.

The colony was convulsed this year by the Quakers. A law was passed making it a capital offence for a Quaker to return into any colony after being banished from it, a threat that never before had failed of its desired effect. The first six Quakers who were banished after its enactment departed and never returned, but Marmaduke Stevenson, having heard of it in Barbadoes, came to Rhode Island, and with his friend, William Robinson, announced that he was commanded to come to Boston and lay down his life.

Capt. Edward Hutchinson (1638) and Capt. Thomas Clarke (1638), members of the General Court, entered their dissent against the law. They were not censured or troubled. The person most conspicuous in doing humane acts toward the persecuted Quakers was a member of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, Nicholas Upshall (1637). He fed and sheltered them at the hospitable Red Lion Tavern. He had compassion on them when imprisoned, and shared their imprisonment. He was fined,—banished; having returned to his home, was imprisoned for two years. When Robinson and Stevenson were hanged on Boston Common, it was this same Upshall (1637) "who caused pales to be brought to fence the place, into which they were cast, that so their bodies might not be preyed upon by the bruit creation."

The new members recruited in 1659-60 were: Hugh Drury, Richard Waldron.

**John Sunderland** (1658). **AUTHORITIES:** Second Church, by Chandler Robbins; Sprague's *Savage's Gen. Dict.*; Boston Records.  
**Rev. John Mayo.** **AUTHORITIES:** Hist. of the Annals of American Pulpit.

**Hugh Drury** (1659), of Boston in 1640, was a carpenter. He was a member of the First Church; became a freeman in 1654, and was chosen a surveyor of highways the same year. He was elected constable of Boston in 1655 and 1656; was appointed to survey the mill bridge in 1659. He was commissioned lieutenant in Capt. Henchman's fifth militia company in Boston, May 16, 1675, and was elected second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1664. He resided in Sudbury for a short time, — 1641 to 1645, — but returned to Boston. On the corner of what is now Batterymarch Street and Liberty Square, once stood a well-known ordinary, which in 1673 was known as the "Blue Bell," and as early as 1674 was jointly tenanted by Deacon Henry Allen (1658) and Hugh Drury (1659). In 1692, it was called the "Castle Tavern," of which at his decease Hugh Drury (1659) owned a half.

He married (1) Lydia Rice, who died April 5, 1675, and (2) Mary, widow of Edward Fletcher (1643). He died in July, 1689, and was buried with his wife, Lydia, in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground.

**Richard Waldron** (1659), of Dover in 1635, was born at Alcester, Warwick County, England, in 1615. He was a man of unusual ability and great influence. He was representative in 1654, 1657, 1661, and very often after for several years, being speaker from 1666 to 1669 inclusive, 1673, 1674 to 1676, and last in 1679. He was active in military matters; became a captain quite early, and served as major in the Indian war of 1675-6; a counsellor under the new form of government of New Hampshire in 1680; the same year was made commander-in-chief of the militia of the province, and on the death of President Cutt, in 1681, was at the head of the province until the arrival of a royal Governor, Cranfield, in October, 1682. He was killed by the Indians, June 27, 1689, under circumstances of the most inhuman cruelty. He was a brave man, venerable in years and public service, who had sustained with honor the highest offices in the province, and long been one of its strongest pillars.

**Rev. John Norton**, who preached the Artillery election sermon in 1659, also delivered the election sermon before the Company in 1644.

On the death of Rev. John Cotton, of Boston, in December, 1652, Rev. John Norton received a call to succeed him, which, being accepted in 1653, he was installed July 23, 1656. He occupied the pulpit of the First Church until his decease, April 5, 1663. His wife, a daughter of John Fernsley, of Suffolk, England, joined those who seceded from the First Church on the ordination of Rev. John Davenport, of New Haven, as the successor of her husband, and founded the Third, or Old South, Church. On the 1st of April, 1669, she gave by deed the land on which the Old South meeting-house stands, corner of Washington and Milk streets, and in 1677 she gave the remainder of her land, and the house in which she resided.

**Hugh Drury** (1659). AUTHORITIES: Hudson's Hist. of Sudbury; Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1877.

**Richard Waldron** (1659). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1855; Savage's Gen.

Dict.; Sketches of Hist. of New Hampshire, by John M. Whiton.

**Rev. John Norton**. AUTHORITIES: Mather's Magnalia; Maclure's Life of Norton; Young's Chron.; New Eng. Memorial; Emerson's Hist. of First Church in Boston.

**1660-1.** The officers elected were: Daniel Denison (1660), captain; William Hudson (1640), lieutenant; Thomas Lake (1653), ensign. John Webb (1655) was first sergeant; Thomas Clarke (1644), second sergeant; William Cotton (1650), clerk; Thomas Scottow, drummer, and John Audlin (1638), armorer.

Massachusetts had not officially proclaimed either Cromwell or his son as Lord High Protector, and was tardy in acknowledging allegiance to Charles II. Learning, however, that the Quakers in England were making complaints against the colonial government, the General Court adopted a loyal address, in which they represented "New England kneeling with the rest of your subjects, before your Majesty as her restored king." A brief but gracious answer was returned, followed by an order for the arrest of Gens. Goffe and Whalley, the fugitive regicides, who had come to Boston.

The regicides, Lieut.-Gen. Edward Whalley and Major-Gen. William Goffe, sat as judges at the trial of King Charles I. They served under Cromwell during the civil war and after it, being, Savage says, relatives of the Great Protector. On the Restoration, they fled from England, and arrived at Boston July 27, 1660. They were courteously received by the Governor, magistrates, and principal men.

The regicides, in February, 1661, proceeded to New Haven, Conn., lived there in concealment, and in October, 1664, took up permanent residence at Hadley, with Rev. John Russell. Goffe died about 1679, and Whalley a year or two previously.

The new members recruited in 1660-1 were: Matthew Barnard, Daniel Denison, John Hull, Zechariah Phillips, and Daniel Turell.

**Matthew Barnard** (1660), of Boston, a carpenter, was born in England. His father, Bartholomew, of Boston, who, with his family, came to America in 1651, was also a carpenter. Matthew (1660) was admitted a freeman in 1673; is called sergeant in Boston Records, Feb. 29, 1671-2; was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1664, and a lieutenant in the military company under command of Capt. John Richards (1644), May 12, 1675.

He died May 9, 1679, aged fifty-four years, and was buried on Copp's Hill.

His brother, Richard, joined the Artillery Company in 1662; his son John in 1677; his son Thomas in 1681.

**Daniel Denison** (1660), son of William, of Roxbury, was born in England in 1612, being about nineteen years of age when he came to America. He passed the first year after his arrival in Roxbury with his parents, but removed the following year, 1633, to Cambridge, his name being on the list of first settlers and church-members. He there married Patience, daughter of Gov. Thomas Dudley. He took the oath of a freeman April 1, 1634, and in 1635 moved to Ipswich, Mass. He was there chosen deputy in 1635, 1636, and 1637, and also from 1640 to 1652 inclusive. The honor of the speakership was conferred upon him during the sessions of 1649, and again in the years 1651 and 1652. He held other local offices between 1636 and 1643, and in the latter year the

**Matthew Barnard** (1660). AUTHORITIES: Records of Mass. Bay; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Bridgman; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848.

**Daniel Denison** (1660). AUTHORITIES: New

Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, 1854, 1869; Savage's Edition of Winthrop's Hist. of New Eng.; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay; Denison Memorial, Ipswich, 1882.



town presented him with two hundred acres of land. He held the office of assistant from 1654 until his decease. In 1637, he was a member of the memorable court which judged Mrs. Hutchinson and her antinomian sympathizers. He was captain of the first volunteer train-band of Ipswich, 1636; and, in 1643, as it was reported that a conspiracy existed among the native tribes against the whites, Capt. Denison (1660), with five others, was ordered to "put the country into a posture of war." Enlistments were made in Ipswich and the adjoining towns; a military company was incorporated, and the town agreed to pay Major Denison (1660) twenty-four pounds seven shillings annually, to be their military leader.

Mr. Johnson (1637), in his *Wonder-Working Providence*, thus speaks of him: "Their [Essex and Norfolk Regiments'] first Major who now commandeth this regiment is the proper and valiant Major Daniel Denison [1660]; a good soldier, and of a quick capacity, not inferior to any other of these chief officers; his own company are well instructed in feats and warlike activity."

In 1644, he became the first sergeant-major of the Essex Regiment, and, in 1653, sergeant-major-general, as successor to Gen. Sedgwick (1637).

In 1646, Major Denison (1660) was selected by the General Court, with Deputy-Gov. Dudley and Hawthorne, with full powers to settle with D'Aulnay, a French Governor in Acadia. In 1647, he was appointed one of the justices of the inferior court, sitting at Ipswich. In May, 1658, he was selected by the General Court to codify the laws of the colony, "to diligently peruse, examine, compare," retaining the plain and good, and rejecting the obscure and contradictory. In a few months, the work was done and the laws were printed in one volume. As a compensation for "transcribing the lawes" the court granted him a quarter part of Block Island. In 1657, he was appointed to confer with the dissatisfied people of Maine, which resulted in the jurisdiction of Massachusetts being extended over Kittery, York, etc. Major Denison (1660) was one of the commissioners of Massachusetts at the Congress of the Confederate New England Colonies. He was outspoken in regard to the Quakers in 1657, and was opposed to the war against the Narragansets. The command of an expedition against the Indians he declined. During King Philip's War, in 1675, Major Denison (1660) was commander-in-chief of the Massachusetts forces. Being prevented by illness from taking the field, the active command devolved on Major Thomas Savage (1637). Oct. 10, 1677, the General Court granted to Gen. Denison (1660) an island of six or seven acres, opposite the middle of his farm, for his distinguished services. In 1660, he was captain of the Artillery Company.

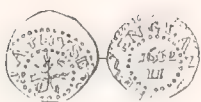
Notwithstanding his life was so busy with public matters, he found time to write and publish, "*Irenicon, or Salve for New England's Sore.*"

Gen. Denison (1660) died Sept. 20, 1682. Mr. Randolph, in 1673, enumerates him as "among the most popular and well-principled men." His pastor selected as the text for his funeral sermon, "For, behold, the Lord, the Lord of hosts, doth take away from Jerusalem and from Judah the stay and the staff, the whole stay of bread, and the whole stay of water, the mighty man, and the man of war, the judge, and the prophet, and the prudent, and the ancient, the captain of fifty, and the honorable man, and the counsellor, and the cunning artificer, and the eloquent orator." (Isaiah iii. 1-3.)

He was buried in High Street burying-ground, Ipswich, Mass. A heavy slab of red stone, the inscriptions of which are nearly obliterated, marks his grave.







HULL COINS

**John Hull** (1660), of Boston, was the son of Robert Hull, a blacksmith, who was a brother of Capt. John Hull (1638). He was born Dec. 18, 1624, at Market Harborough, Leicester County, England, and came to America in the ship "George," with his parents, from Bristol, England, arriving Nov. 7, 1635. "He was," says Mather, "the son of a poor woman, but dutiful to and tender of his mother, which Mr. Wilson, his minister, observing, pronounced that God would bless him, and although he was then poor, yet he should raise a large estate." In his diaries, he left accounts which are of interest, as showing the inner life of a Puritan merchant interested in the military. He was admitted a freeman May 2, 1649, and in his twenty-third year (11<sup>th</sup> 3<sup>d</sup> mo, 1647) married Judith, daughter of Edmund Quincy.

Massachusetts was the only colony that attempted to coin money. The General Court authorized John Hull (1660), "a silversmith," and Robert Sanderson, of Boston, for "melting, refyning and coining of silver." Three denominations were coined, shilling, sixpence, and threepence. The first coinage (1652) had only the initials of New England on one side and Roman numerals, XII., VI., or III., expressive of value, on the other. The coinage for thirty years bore the date "1652." Very soon, however, the court ordered that all pieces of money should have on one side, "Massachusetts," and a pine-tree in the centre, and "New England," with the date on the other. Mr. Hull (1660) was allowed to take as his pay fifteen pence out of every twenty shillings. The court soon discovered that Mr. Hull (1660) had a very advantageous contract, and sought to be released, but Mr. Hull (1660) declined so to do. The mint-master amassed a large fortune by the profits of his contract. Hannah, his only child who grew up, married, Feb. 14, 1658, Samuel Sewall (1679), afterward chief-justice of the province. Mr. Whitman (1810) repeats the tradition, that when dressed for the wedding and in presence of the guests, her father placed her in his large scales, and piled on the silver shillings in the other until the scales balanced. It is said that thus Judge Sewall (1679) received, with the bride, thirty thousand pounds in New England shillings.

Capt. Hull (1660) was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1663, lieutenant in 1664, and captain in 1671 and 1678. He continued a member of the Company until his death. He kept a book in which he made minutes of the sermons preached at the General Court and Artillery elections, in short-hand mostly. He noted the preacher's name, text, and place of residence. We are indebted to him for much of our knowledge concerning the preachers of those early years of the Company. Mr. Whitman (1810) states that he had one of these note-books, consisting exclusively of sermons. It was of pocket size, originally fastened by brass clasps, and contained quotations from Latin and Greek authors, proving that Mr. Hull (1660) was a student, and acquainted with the ancient languages. One of his maxims, written in English, apparently in the quivering hand of old age, is, "The affairs of our estate are come to that pass, that though we be bound to feel them, we have no leisure to report them."

**John Hull** (1660). **AUTHORITIES:** Records of Mass. Bay; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"1671. I was chosen by the town of Westfield for their deputy for the General Court. I was also chosen by the Artillery Company for their Captain. The Lord make me diligent and humble!"—*Hull's Diary*.

Hull Street, Boston, is named for Capt. John Hull (1660), through whose pasture it was laid out. The ground was conveyed to the town by Judge Samuel Sewall and wife, on the express condition that the street should always bear that name. For his wife, Judith, that much-dreaded point of Narragansett Bay, where Neptune exacts his tribute from voyagers through the sound, is named.

Mr. Hull (1660) was appointed a corporal in the militia May 29, 1648; a sergeant June 28, 1652; chosen ensign April, 1654; clerk of a company April 25, 1656; was elected representative for Wenham in 1668; for Westfield from 1671 to 1674, and for Salisbury in 1679. He was town treasurer in 1660-1, and selectman from 1657 to 1667 inclusive, except 1661. He was treasurer of Massachusetts, 1676 to 1679, and was an assistant from 1680 until his decease. He was a member of the First Church, but withdrew, and assisted in May, 1669, in establishing the Third, or Old South, Church, and was at one time its treasurer. He was promoted to be lieutenant in 1673, and to be captain in 1675. He gave a legacy of one hundred pounds to Harvard College.

He died Sept. 30, 1683, and his remains were buried in the Granary Burial-Ground. He was an active, useful, and enterprising citizen.

**Zechariah Phillips** (1660), of Boston, in April, 1660, was licensed by the selectmen to open a cook shop and sell beer. Aug. 2, 1675, he was killed by the Indians at Brookfield, when a party under Capt. Edward Hutchinson (1638), going by appointment to arrange a peace, was treacherously cut off.

**Daniel Turell** (1660), a blacksmith, came from Instow, England. He appears to have been in Boston in 1649, when the selectmen voted, that he "shall erect his wharfe for y<sup>e</sup> highway before his howse before 3: 11: or pay 20s. fine." In 1656, he was elected constable. In 1659, the town of Boston bought of John Baker (1644) and Daniel Turell (1660) the beginning of the present Copp's Hill Burial-Ground. His residence was between Hanover Street and Hudson's Point, on the shore. He was elected a selectman March 13, 1675-6, and was called "Ensign." July 30 of the same year he is called in town records, "L<sup>t</sup>"; March 10, 1683-4, he is called captain. After the fire of 1679, a special "Watch of the Town" was established. The watch in the "Conduit quarter," drawn from Capt. Oliver's (1643) and Capt. Davis's (1643) companies, was under the charge of four citizens, one of whom was Lieut. Daniel Turell (1660). "Turine" in the records becomes "Turell" after March, 1676 7.

He was admitted a freeman May 19, 1669. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1666, and lieutenant in 1676. He served as selectman from 1676 to 1690 inclusive, and was active in town affairs.

He married (1) Lydia Blott, who died June 23, 1659, and, (2) Nov. 10, 1659, Mary, widow of John Barrell (1643). His son, Daniel, Jr., joined the Artillery Company in 1674. He died in July, 1693, and was buried July 24.

**Rev. Samuel Whiting**, of Lynn, who was the second pastor of the First Church in that town, was the preacher of the Artillery sermon in 1660. He was installed there on the 8th of November, 1636. He was a son of Sir John Whiting, mayor of old Boston, England. Samuel was born Nov. 20, 1597, and entered Emanuel College in 1612. He received the degrees of A. B. in 1616, A. M. in 1620, and subsequently D. D. After taking orders in the Church of England, he became chaplain in a family in Norfolk. Three years later he accepted a rectorship in Lynn Regis, where, three years subse-

**Zechariah Phillips** (1660). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Fifth Report of Boston Rec. Com., Gleaner Articles, XII.

**Daniel Turell** (1660). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Rev. Samuel Whiting**. AUTHORITIES: Math-er's Magnalia; Brooks's Lives; Savage's Gen. Dict.



quently, he was censured by the Bishop of Norfolk for non-conformity. Again at Shirbeck, near Boston, he came under censure, and in 1636 he emigrated to America. Settling in Lynn, becoming a freeman Dec. 7, 1636, he served the First Church as its pastor until his decease, Dec. 11, 1679. His name and memory are perpetuated in Whiting School and Whiting Street, Lynn, Mass.

---

**1661-2.** The officers elected were: William Hudson (1640), captain; Thomas Lake (1653), lieutenant, and Robert Turner (1640), ensign. Thomas Clarke (1644) was first sergeant; William Cotton (1650), second sergeant; Thomas Scottow, drummer, and John Audlin (1638), armorer.

Humfrey Atherton (1638), of Dorchester, who was then major-general of the Massachusetts militia, died Sept. 17, 1661. After having been employed on almost every occasion of importance to the colony, in peace and war, for thirty years, he was "killed by a fall from his horse at ye South End of Boston."

The Quaker writers, with their usual prejudice, rejoiced over Major Atherton's (1638) death as a judgment upon him because he favored their prosecution. Their harsh and cruel judgment was evidently not indorsed by the people of Massachusetts, who regarded the death of Major-Gen. Atherton (1638) as a public calamity.

Samuel Shattuck, a Quaker, who had been banished from Salem with the threat of death should he return, came to Boston, bringing a letter from King Charles to Gov. Endicott, directing that pending processes against the Quakers should be discontinued, and that the persons in custody should be sent to England for trial. Shattuck sturdily presented the letter, wearing his hat, and Gov. Endicott bowed in sarcastic bitterness to him who was, he said, a greater man than himself.

Aug. 8, 1661, Charles II. was formally proclaimed at Boston, by order of the General Court, as the "lawful King of Great Britain, France and Ireland, and all other the territories and dominions thereunto belonging." Later in the year, Mr. Bradstreet and Mr. Norton were sent to London, with instructions to represent the colony as his Majesty's loyal and obedient subjects.

Capt. John Hull (1660) thus describes the official proclaiming of Charles II. in Boston: "Eight of the sixth, 1661, being the fifth day of the weeke, after our ordinary lecture, the soldiers being all in armes, viz: our four companies and the county troop, the magistrates mounted on horseback, the ministers being present and a multitude of people, King Charles the Second was proclaimed by Mr. Edward Rawson, Secretary of State, all standing bare, and ended with, 'God save the King,' and a shout, sundry volleys of shot from the soldiery, all the guns in the castle, fort and town and ships. All the chief officers feasted that night at the charge of the country."

The new members recruited in 1661-2 were: William Howard, George May, Edward Page, John Pease, and Robert Sanford.

**William Howard** (1661), of Boston, was, in 1660, a witness to the will of William Paine, and a legatee, also, therein.

From the Boston Records, under date of April 29, 1667, we learn, "Mr. Will

**William Howard** (1661). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

Howard [1661] hath liberty to keep a wrighting schoole, to teach children to writte and to keep accounts."

Mr. Whitman (1810) says he came from the city of London. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1665. He died previous to May 12, 1675, when "Alice, relict of the late William Howard [1661], petitioned the General Court in regard to selling his estate."

**George May** (1661), of Boston, an ironmonger, was admitted to be a freeman in 1665. He held office in the town in 1663-4 and 1674-5, and married, Oct. 6, 1656, Elizabeth, daughter of William Franklin.

**Edward Page** (1661), of Boston, was a cooper, and married, about 1652, Elizabeth, daughter of William Beamsley (1656). Their last child, born June 7, 1673, was named Humility.

**John Pease** (1661), of Salem, was a son of John Pease, who came in the "Francis" from Ipswich, England, in 1634. The wife and mother, with John, Jr., came over in a later ship. They settled at Salem. John Pease (1661) became a freeman in 1668, was active in military affairs, and was promoted to be captain in the militia. He married (1) Mary —, who died Jan 5, 1668, and, (2) Oct. 8, 1669, An Cummings.

Fresh-Water Brook was the name of an inviting territory which anciently belonged to Springfield. It was set off from the parent town in 1681, and was settled chiefly by emigrants from Salem. Among these were John Pease, Sr., and John, Jr. (1661). The emigrants were allowed to become a township in 1683, and took the name of Enfield.

Capt. John Pease (1661) died at Enfield in 1689, aged sixty years. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1665.

**Robert Sandford** (1661), of Boston in 1650, was a brother of John, the school-master. He was admitted a freeman in 1652. Robert (1661) was highway surveyor for Boston several years, the last time being in 1676-7.

**Rev. John Ward**, of Haverhill, was probably the preacher of the Artillery election sermon in 1661. In the list of officers and preachers, as prepared by Nathaniel Barnes (1676) in 1680, the name of the preacher is given as "Samuel Ward." In the transcript of 1745, "Samuel Ward of Ipswich" is given as the preacher; "of Ipswich" being a modern addition. There was no minister in New England at that time by the name of Samuel Ward. The given name, "Samuel," is, perhaps, an unintentional duplication of the name immediately preceding it in the list, viz., "Samuel" Whiting.

Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, "the Simple Cbler of Agawam," died in 1653. His son, John, was born in Haverhill, England, Nov. 5, 1606. He was educated at Emanuel College, England, and received the degrees of A. B. in 1626, and A. M. in 1630. He came to America about 1649, and became a freeman May 3 of that year. In 1641, he settled in Haverhill, Mass., and there he remained as pastor of the church until his decease, Nov. 19, 1693.

**John Pease** (1661). AUTHORITIES: Felt's Annals of Salem, Vol. I., p. 224; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1849, p. 31.

**1662-3.** The officers elected were: Thomas Lake (1653), captain; Robert Turner (1640), lieutenant, and Thomas Clarke (1644), ensign. William Cotton (1650) was first sergeant; Richard Woodde (1642), second sergeant; Hudson Leverett (1658), clerk; Seth Perry (1662), drummer, and John Audlin (1638), armorer.

Charles II., the "Merry Monarch" of Great Britain, sent word to the people of Massachusetts that he confirmed their charter, but that he intended to substitute royal rule for the theocracy of the Puritans, who had established the town meeting, the locally governed schools, and compulsory militia duty, as foundations upon which the Commonwealth was being erected. The clergy, who ruled the colony, were men of narrow but vigorous intellects, and although they excluded Papists, Episcopalians and sceptics from office, they permitted some of the British veterans, who had crossed the ocean, and who were not communicants, to receive military commissions. Many of these citizen-soldiers were men of heroic deeds and noble thoughts; men inspired with the liberal ideas and free traditions of Cromwell's camps; who had heard the bold words of Hampden and Sidney. They rejoiced at the royal promise that all persons of suitable character should be eligible to office, "without reference to their opinion or profession."

Rich and expensive colors were at this time carried by the military companies of Massachusetts. John Pyncheon sold to Ensign Wilton, of Northampton, for the military company, colors, staff, tassel, and top, for five pounds. The next year he sold to Hadley, for the use of the soldiers, colors, staff, tassel, and top, for five pounds. These flags were large, and of costly silk. Expensive flags were used down to the Revolution. Timothy Pickering, in 1775, censured the enormous waste of silk used for colors, and said, "Three or four square yards of silk are taken to make one color." When the wind blew the ensigns had much trouble, and were obliged to gather the flags in folds in their hands. Mr. Pickering wanted them reduced to about a yard in length. The flag of a company was called an "ensign," and the bearer was an ensign-bearer, usually called "ensign," but sometimes "ancient." In the early records of Connecticut, Ensign Stoughton, of Windsor, is called "Ancient Stoughton."

The new members recruited in 1662-3 were: Richard Barnard, Anthony Checkley, William Clements, John Coney, Believe Gridley, Joseph Gridley, Nathaniel Hunn, George Nowell, Seth Perry, Return Waite.

**Richard Barnard** (1662), of Boston, was a brother of Matthew (1660). He was born in England, and came over with his parents in 1651. He died Dec. 20, 1706.

**Anthony Checkley** (1662), of Boston, son of William, came to America in 1645 with his uncle, John, from Preston Capes, Northamptonshire, England. He was baptized July 31, 1636, and married Hannah, daughter of the celebrated Rev. John Wheelwright. His second wife was Lydia Gibbs, widow, daughter of Joshua Scottow (1645). He was a constable of Boston in 1667-8 and in 1679, and, with Lieut. Turell (1660) and two others, had charge of the watch in the conduit quarter. In 1683, he was selected as one of a committee to act with the selectmen in drawing up instructions for

**Anthony Checkley** (1662). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg, 1848, 1861; Foote's Annals of King's Chapel, Vol. I., p. 89; Province Laws of Mass. Bay, Vol. VII.; Drake's Hist. of Boston.

"[Oct. 20, 1708.] Capt Anthony Checkley buried in a Tomb in the New Burying place."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 240.*



the deputies of the General Court, and Aug. 24, 1685, was elected commissioner to assess the property and number the people of the town. He was chosen attorney-general of the province in 1689, and was continued in that office until 1703. He was confirmed by the General Court, May 12, 1675, ensign of the foot company under the command of Capt. John Richards (1644). He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1677, ensign in 1680, and lieutenant in 1683. He died Oct. 18, 1708.

Col. Samuel (1678) was son of Ensign Anthony Checkley (1662).

**William Clements** (1662), of Cambridge, son of William, married Mary, daughter of Joseph Rock (1658). He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1663 and 1664.

William Clements (1662) sold, in 1669, twenty-five acres of land which he bought of Richard Dummer, of Boston, on the highway from Watertown to Roxbury south. He owned a house and land near Chestnut Hill. He was one of the founders of the First Church in Newton. He died in 1691.

**John Coney** (1662), of Boston, was a cooper, and admitted to be a freeman in 1669. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1672. He died Dec. 24, 1690. Mr. Sewall says, "He was buried Thursday, December 25th 1690." From 1668, when he was elected a constable, until his decease, he held some town office nearly all the time. Dec. 10, 1678, he was chosen to collect subscriptions for Harvard College from the members of the Second Church. His son, John, died Aug. 29, 1722, and the funeral sermon was preached by his son-in-law, Rev. Thomas Foxcroft, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1723.

**Believe Gridley** (1662) was a son of Capt. Richard Gridley (1658), a brickmaker, and was born May 3, 1640. Capt. Richard (1658) died in 1674, and Mr. Savage says that "Believe and Tremble died before their father."

**Joseph Gridley** (1662), of Boston, brother of Believe (1662) and son of Capt. Richard (1658), followed the business of his father, that of brickmaking. His son, Capt. Richard Gridley, became a member of the Artillery Company in 1695. Joseph Gridley (1662) held various minor offices of the town from 1660 until his decease. His will was proved April 14, 1687.

**Nathaniel Hunn** (1662), of Boston, was a son of George, a tanner, who came to America in 1635. Nathaniel (1662) was a shoemaker by trade. He lived in Boston until about 1669, and resided in Wethersfield, Conn., from 1673 to 1693.

**George Nowell** (1662), of Boston, was a blacksmith. He erected a house "neere the Conduit" about 1667, and from that time until 1675, when the street was paved, there was trouble between him and the town in regard to the "stoppage of the watter course," as given in Boston Records.

**Seth Perry** (1662), of Boston, born March 7, 1639, was a son of Arthur (1638), of Boston. Arthur Perry (1638) was a tailor, a trade which Seth (1662) and his brother

**William Clements** (1662). AUTHORITY: *Savage's Gen. Dict.*; *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.* 1853, p. 31 (will of George Hunn, his father).

**John Coney** (1662). AUTHORITIES: Foote's *Annals of King's Chapel*, Vol. I, p. 93; Boston Records; *Savage's Gen. Dict.*

**Nathaniel Hunn** (1662). AUTHORITIES: *Sav-*

**Seth Perry** (1662). AUTHORITIES: *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 1876, p. 206; Boston Records; Hill's *Hist. of Old South Church*.



John pursued. Seth (1662) was admitted to be a freeman in 1666. He held town offices at various times between 1666 and 1690. He appears on the Town Records, the last time, March 30, 1702, when he was appointed to superintend precautions against fire. He was one of the founders of the Old South Church, was drummer for the Artillery Company from 1662 to 1666 inclusive, and was third sergeant in 1685.

**Return Waite** (1662), of Boston, was a son of Richard (1638), of Boston, a tailor, who, in November, 1637, was compelled to surrender his arms to Capt. Keayne (1637). His next child, born July 8, 1639, was named Return. The son succeeded his father as an officer under the government; he was a sergeant, in regular pay, from 1674 to 1681, and very prominent in the military display at the funeral of Gov. Leverett (1639), in 1679. He died in September, 1702, aged sixty-three years.

**Rev. John Higginson**, of Salem, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1662. He was a son of Rev. Francis Higginson, the first minister at Salem, and was born at Claybrook, England, Aug. 6, 1616, and came to New England with his parents in 1629, at which time he joined the church in Salem. On the death of his father, he was assisted in perfecting his education, and at the age of twenty-four years became chaplain at Fort Saybrook, Conn. In 1641, he taught school in Hartford, and in 1643 settled as colleague over the church at Guilford, Conn. From 1651 to 1659, he had sole charge of that church. In the latter year, he took passage for England, but the ship was obliged by stress of weather to put into Salem Harbor. The church in Salem having no minister, engaged Mr. Higginson for one year, at the expiration of which, in August, 1660, he became its settled pastor. He continued in that office for forty-eight years, until his death, Dec. 9, 1708, when he was ninety-two years of age. He was one of the most honored of the early clergy in America.

1663-4. The officers elected were: John Leverett (1639), captain; William Davis (1643), lieutenant; John Hull (1660), ensign. Hezekiah Usher (1638) was first sergeant; John Richards (1644), second sergeant; William Clements (1662), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Seth Perry (1662), drummer.

Intelligence having been received by the General Court that a fleet of war vessels would soon arrive from London, bringing royal commissioners to inquire into public affairs, the train-bands were reorganized, and Capt. Richard Davenport (1639) was placed in command at the Castle. A committee of the General Court, says Mr. Drake, consisting of Mr. Richard Russell (1644), Mr. Edward Johnson (1637), and Mr. Joseph Hills, reported, June 9, a bill allowing two barrels of powder per annum, "for saluting of ships" at the Castle. But one barrel had been allowed hitherto. The report was made upon a petition of Capt. James Oliver (1640), of Boston, who said, that "now by

**Return Waite** (1662). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850, 1877.

"[1685-6] Feb 2 . . . This day Return Waite is by Sentence of Court turned out of his Marshal's Place, many complaints coming against him."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 120.

**Rev. John Higginson**. AUTHORITIES: Math-er's Magnalia; Felt's Annals of Salem; Young's Chronicles; Upham's Second Century Lecture; Savage's Gen. Dict.

the increase of shipping, coming and going, itt proues much to little for the honorable efecting of the worke." Mr. Hills, who drew up the report, said the committee were of opinion that one barrel was "to little, considering the increase of shipping beyond what hath been formerly, and some expense at the time of eleccon of General officers."

The General Court also resolved, that "being informed that some of his Majesty's ships are on their voyage to these parts, in which are several gentlemen of quality, do therefore order that the captain of the Castle, on the first sight and knowledge of their approach, give speedy notice to the honored Governor and Deputy Governor, and that Captain James Oliver [1640], and Captain William Davis [1643] are hereby ordered forthwith to repair on board the said ships and to acquaint those gentlemen that this Court hath and doth by them present their respects to them, and that it is the desire of the authority of this place that they take strict order that their under officers and soldiers, in their coming on shore to refresh themselves, at no time exceed a convenient number, and that without arms, and that they behave themselves orderly amongst his Majesty's good subjects here, and be careful of giving no offence to the people and laws of this place; and invite them on shore, provision being made for their present refreshment."

The General Court also resolved, that, "forasmuch as it is of great concernment to this commonwealth to keep safe and secret our patent, it is ordered that the patent, and duplicate, belonging to the county be forthwith brought into the Court; and that there be two or three persons appointed by each House to keep safe and secret the said patent and duplicate, in two distinct places, as to the said committee shall seem most expedient; and that the Deputy-Governor, Major-General Leverett [1639], Captain Clarke [1638], of Boston, and Captain Johnson [1637], of Woburn, are appointed to receive the grand patent from the Secretary, and to dispose thereof as may be most safe for the country."

The new member recruited in 1663-4 was Ephraim Turner.

**Ephraim Turner** (1663) was a son of Lieut. Robert Turner (1640), the innholder. Ephraim (1663) was born in Boston, Dec. 13, 1639; was admitted a freeman in 1666; served as ensign in the Boston company of Capt. James Oliver (1640) from 1675 to 1680, when he was relieved at his request. Ensign Turner (1663) served as lieutenant in the Narraganset campaign against King Philip in 1676. He married Sarah, daughter of Major William Phillips (1644), and through her came into possession of large tracts of land in the district of Maine. He was, by trade, a brazier. He held town office from 1674 to 1676. It is supposed that he removed eastward about 1680-1.

**Rev. Thomas Shepard**, of Charlestown, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1663. He was a son of Thomas Shepard, of Cambridge. The younger was born April 5, 1635, just previous to the embarkation of his parents, in 1635, for America. He graduated at Harvard College in 1653; married, Nov. 3, 1656, Ann, daughter of William Tyng (1638); was ordained, April 13, 1659, as colleague of Rev. Zechariah Symmes, and died of small-pox Dec. 22, 1677. He was a man of great learning and influence. Rev. Urian Oakes, president of Harvard College, pronounced an eloquent eulogy in Latin, before the alumni and officers of that institution, on Commencement Day in 1678.

**Ephraim Turner** (1663). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1885; Boston Records.

**Rev. Thomas Shepard**. AUTHORITIES: Sib-

ley's Harvard Graduates; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Budington's Hist. of First Church, Charlestown; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.

**1664-5.** The officers elected were: William Davis (1643), captain; John Hull (1660), lieutenant; Hezekiah Usher (1638), ensign. Matthew Barnard (1660) was first sergeant; Hugh Drury (1659), second sergeant; William Clements (1662), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Seth Perry (1662), drummer.

Major Thomas Clarke (1638) was appointed, in 1664, a commissioner with Major John Pynchon, to meet the King's commissioners before New York, and to confer with them relative to the forces ordered to be raised by Massachusetts to be employed in recapturing Menhades, as New York was then called.

On Saturday, July 23, 1664, two ships of war, the "Elias" and the "Guinea," entered Boston Harbor, and were saluted by the Castle, then commanded by Capt. Richard Davenport (1639). The "Elias" and the "Guinea" had sailed from Portsmouth, England, ten weeks before, in company with the "Martin," the "William," and the "Nicholas," from which they had become separated by a storm. The first two ships had as passengers four commissioners and nearly four hundred troops, destined for a campaign against the Dutch at Menhades.

The General Court of Massachusetts promptly raised and equipped a force of two hundred men, and appointed Hugh Mason and Capt. William Hudson (1640) their commanders; but, before they left for Connecticut, Major Clarke (1638) wrote that the Dutch had capitulated to the fleet sent from England, and the colonial expedition was therefore disbanded.

The new members recruited in 1664-5 were: David Saywell and Joseph Turner.

**David Saywell** (1664), of Boston, probably son of Robert, of Boston, married, Aug. 15, 1660, Abigail Buttolph. He was admitted to be a freeman in 1666, and held the office of second sergeant in the Artillery Company in 1668. He died in 1672.

**Joseph Turner** (1664), son of Lieut. Robert Turner (1643), was born in Boston, Sept. 7, 1644. His name does not again appear on the Boston Records.

**Rev. James Allen**, of Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1664. He was born in England June 24, 1632; entered Magdalen Hall March 16, 1649; received the degree of A. M. from New College, Oxford, and was one of its fellows. He arrived at Boston June 10, 1662, and married (1) Hannah, daughter of Richard Dummer, (2) Elizabeth, daughter of Jeremiah Howchin (1641), widow of the second John Endicott, and (3) Sarah Breck, daughter of Capt. Thomas Hawkins (1638). He was installed as the teacher of the First Church, Dec. 9, 1668, at the same time that Rev. John Davenport — whose settlement here caused the formation of the Third, or Old South, Church — was installed as its pastor. He continued his relation with the First Church, as teacher or pastor, until his decease, Sept. 22, 1710.

John Dunton, a London bookseller, who visited Boston in 1686, says, in his *Life and Errors*, "I went to visit the Reverend Mr. Allen. He is very humble and very rich and can be generous enough when the humor is upon him." His house, considered the oldest stone house in Boston, stood where the Congregational House now stands, corner

**David Saywell** (1664). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Rev. James Allen.** AUTHORITIES: Sprague's

Annals of American Pulpit; Emerson's Hist. of First Church; Hutchinson's Hist. of Mass.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Eliot's Biog. Dict.



of Beacon and Somerset streets. Mr. Allen is said to have owned a larger part of the territory of Boston than was ever owned by any one individual, unless William Blackstone is an exception. His farm of twenty acres was situated between Cambridge Street, the water, and the Leverett Street estates.

---

**1665-6.** The officers elected were: Thomas Clarke (1638), captain; Richard Sprague (1638), lieutenant, and John Richards (1644), ensign. William Howard (1661) was first sergeant; John Pease (1661), second sergeant; Ephraim Turner (1663), clerk, and Seth Perry (1662), drummer.

Gen. John Leverett (1639) was employed to reconstruct the fortifications of Boston. A report by a committee of the General Court states, concerning the famous scone of South Battery, built where Rowe's Wharf now stands, under the brow of what was then Fort Hill, that the thirteen guns were well mounted, and it was thought to be the "completest work of the kind" in America. The committee also examined a fort, on the north side of Boston, at Merry's Point, at the foot of Copp's Hill, which was of earth, faced with strong timber and mounted with seven guns. A ditch was dug across the "neck," with a defensive gateway, where Dover Street now crosses Washington Street. There were two gates, one for vehicles and the other for pedestrians, flanked by brick walls, banked up with earth, and pierced with embrasures for "sakers." A vote of thanks was passed to Gen. Leverett (1639), and a grant of one hundred pounds made to him for his services.

The new members recruited in 1665-6 were: Humphrey Davie, Samuel Joy, John Mills, Habijah Savage, Thomas Savage, Jonathan Shrimpton, John Taylor, Hezekiah Usher.

**Humphrey Davie** (1665), of Boston, was a merchant. Mr. Whitman (1810) confuses the father and son. Capt. Humphrey Davie (1665) was a son of Sir John Davie, and came from London in 1662. He was admitted a freeman in 1665, and represented Billerica in the General Court, because he owned property there, from 1665 to 1669; also Woburn in 1678. He was assistant from 1679 to 1686. Immediately after this service, he married Sarah (Gibbons) Richards, a widow, of Hartford, Conn., whose former husband left her a large estate, which caused Mr. Davie's (1665) removal thither. He was prominent in town affairs, and was chosen for important duties. In 1663, he purchased the south part of the Bellingham lot, — Tremont Street, between Beacon and Court streets, — the heirs to which sold it, with a stone house, in 1710, to Andrew Faneuil, from whom the estate descended to his nephew, Peter Faneuil.

When the General Court, Oct. 7, 1674, permitted Capt. Edward Hutchinson (1638) to lay down his "captain's place of the Three County Troop," the court appointed Mr. Humphrey Davie (1665) captain of that troop. Mr. Davie (1665) declined to accept the position. In 1675, when the number of militia companies was increased from four to eight, Mr. Humphrey Davie (1665) was appointed captain of one of the new companies. The other new captains were Capt. Thomas Lake (1653), Mr. John Richards (1644), and Mr. John Hull (1660).

**Humphrey Davie** (1665). **AUTHORITIES:** *ords of Mass. Bay; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, p. 169; Rec- Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.*



Capt. Humphrey Davie (1665) died Feb. 18, 1689. The administration on the estate, Dec. 29, 1718, as given by Mr. Whitman (1810), page 176, was on the estate of Humphrey, son of Capt. Humphrey Davie (1665). The widow of Capt. Davie (1665) married Major Jonathan Tyng (1670).

**Samuel Joy** (1665), of Boston, son of Thomas (1658) and Joan (Gallop) Joy, was born in that town Feb. 26, 1639. He moved to Hingham with his parents, and married, Nov. 13, 1668, Ann Pitts. Samuel Joy (1665) died in 1670 or 1671. On "the 29th day of the 4<sup>th</sup> month, 1671, An Joy, widow, was appointed to administer upon the estate of her husband, late of Boston, deceased."

**John Mills** (1665), of Braintree, son of John and Susanna Mills, removed with his parents to Braintree — that part now called Quincy — about 1642. John (1665) settled later in what is now Braintree, and became an influential man in town. He was born June 3, 1632, and married, April 26, 1653, Mary Shove.

**Habijah Savage** (1665), of Boston, son of Thomas Savage (1637), and brother of Ephraim (1674), of Ebenezer (1682), and of Thomas (1665), was born in Boston, Aug. 1, 1638, and graduated at Harvard College in 1659. He married, May 8, 1661, Hannah, daughter of Capt. Edward Tyng (1642). He was admitted to be a freeman in 1665, was captain of a militia company, and died when on a business trip to Barbadoes in 1669. His widow married Major-Gen. Daniel Gookin (1645).

**Thomas Savage** (1665), of Boston, a shopkeeper, son of Thomas Savage (1637) and brother of Ephraim (1674), of Ebenezer (1682), and of Habijah (1665), was born in Boston (baptized), May 17, 1640. He married, about 1664, Elizabeth, daughter of Joshua Scottow (1645). He was an officer in the militia of Boston, and rose to the rank of lieutenant-colonel of the Boston regiment in 1702, and held it until his decease. He served in King Philip's War, became a freeman in 1690, in which year he led one of the three regiments in Sir William Phips's expedition against Quebec, and was the first field officer that landed. He wrote a brief account of this expedition, which was printed in London in April, 1691.

In his will, he mentions his sons, Thomas, Habijah (1699), and Arthur (1738). He was a member of the Old South Church, first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1674, and ensign in 1681. He died July 2, 1705.

**Jonathan Shrimpton** (1665), of Boston, was a son of Edward, of Bednall Green, and a cousin of Samuel (1670). Jonathan (1665) came to Boston in 1648, and married, about 1666, Mary, daughter of Peter Oliver (1643). He died in 1673, and, in 1674, his widow married Capt. Nathaniel Williams (1667).

**Samuel Joy** (1665). AUTHORITY: Lincoln's Hist. of Hingham.

**John Mills** (1665). AUTHORITIES: Hist. of Braintree; Titcomb's Early New England People.

**Habijah Savage** (1665). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Thomas Savage** (1665). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Records of Mass. Bay; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

"July 2, 1705, Lt Col Thomas Savage dies about 6 p. m."

"July 5, . . . Col Savage buried at 7 p. m. Companies in Arms. . . . The Street very much filled with People all along." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. II., pp. 133, 134.*

**Jonathan Shrimpton** (1665). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1889, p. 161; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Taylor** (1665), of Cambridge in 1644, was admitted to be a freeman in 1651. He went to England, says Rev. Lucius R. Paige, D. D., in 1671, as a special messenger of the church, to accompany the Rev. Urian Oakes across the Atlantic. In acknowledgment of his services, the church granted him five pounds. He was the butler of Harvard College, and perhaps performed other services for that corporation.

His epitaph, now somewhat mutilated, bears testimony to his worth: "Here lyes the body of John Taylor, aged 73 years, deceased September 6th, 1683. He was a useful man in his generation, a lover of piety, a lover of learning, a faithful servant of Harvard Colledg about forty years."

**Hezekiah Usher** (1665), of Boston, was a son of Hezekiah Usher (1638), and was born at Cambridge, Mass., in June, 1639. He married in 1686, Bridget, widow of Leonard Hoar, who had been president of Harvard College, and daughter of Lady Alicia, widow of Lord Lisle, the regicide. It was not a happy marriage. He thought she was too extravagant, and she thought he was not orthodox in his faith. She embarked for England, and did not return during his life. Judge Sewall recorded her departure, "1687, Tuesday, July 12."

Mr. Usher (1665) resided afterward for a time at Groton. In his will, made Aug. 17, 1689, he recapitulates his grievances, and appropriates a sum of money for the publication of his letters, etc., "as to the evil of having a wife only in name."

Mr. Thomas, in his *History of Printing*, Vol. II., p. 410, *note*, says, "In 1692, a respectable man whose name was Hezekiah Usher [1665] was accused of witchcraft, in consequence of which accusation he was ordered to be confined in the common prison; but on account of the goodness of his character, he was by connivance allowed to secrete himself in the house of a friend, and afterwards to escape out of the hands of his persecutors, until the delusion or madness of the times in part subsided."

He died at Lynn, July 11, 1697, and Judge Sewall (1679) says his remains were "brought to Boston and laid in his father's tomb, July 14<sup>th</sup>."

**Rev. Increase Mather**, the second pastor of the Second Church in Boston, delivered the election sermon in 1665 and 1710. He was the youngest son of Rev. Richard and Caroline (Holt) Mather, of Dorchester, and was born June 21, 1639, graduating at Harvard College in 1656. He went to his eldest brother, Samuel, at Dublin, in 1657, and there studied for his degree of A. M. He preached in several places,—County Devon, Isle of Guernsey, etc.,—but returned to New England in the latter part of August, 1661. On the 8th of September, he delivered his first sermon on our side of the water in that church—the Second—where he served more than sixty years, though he was not ordained until May 27, 1664. He was chosen president of Harvard College in 1685, and filled the office until 1701, when the prevailing dissatisfaction, because he would not give up the pastorate of the Second Church and reside at Cambridge, so increased that he resigned the presidency. In the last year of Sir Edmund Andros's administration, Mr. Mather was sent in disguise on board a ship, and proceeded to

**John Taylor** (1665). AUTHORITY: Paige's *Hist. of Cambridge*.

**Hezekiah Usher** (1665). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1869, p. 410; *Hist. of Middlesex Co.*, Vol. II., p. 649; Paige's *Hist. of Cambridge*.

**Rev. Increase Mather**. AUTHORITIES: Mather's *Magnalia*; *Histories of Harv. Coll.*; Sibley's *Graduates of Harv. Coll.*; *Life of Cotton Mather*; Sprague's *Annals of American Pulpit*; Eliot's *Biog. Dict.*

England to intercede with King James. He sailed April 7, 1688, and was absent from his church and college until May 14, 1692, when he arrived at Boston with Sir William Phips, the new Governor, who brought the new charter of William and Mary. He died Aug. 23, 1723, and was buried the 29th, with the greatest marks of esteem and affection.

---

**1666-7.** The officers elected were: James Oliver (1640), captain; Isaac Johnson (1645), lieutenant, and Richard Cooke (1643), ensign. John Newton (1641) was first sergeant; Daniel Turell (1660), second sergeant; Ephraim Turner (1663), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Seth Perry (1662), drummer.

The royal commissioners sent home an account of New England, in which they said that the commodities of Massachusetts were "fish, which was sent into France, Spain and the Straits; pipe, staves, masts, fir-boards, some pitch and tar, pork, beef, horses and corn, which they sent to Virginia, Barbadoes, etc., and took tobacco and sugar for payment, which they often sent to England. There was a good store of iron in this province."

"In Boston," said the same commissioners, "the houses are generally wooden, the streets crooked, with little decency and no uniformity; and there neither months, days, seasons of the year, churches, nor inns are known by their English names." "At Cambridge, they had a wooden college, and in the yard a brick pile of two cages for the Indians, where the commissioners saw but one [Indian]. They said they had three more at school. It might be feared this college might afford as many schismatics to the church, and the corporation as many rebels to the King, as formerly they had done, if not timely prevented."

The new members recruited in 1666-7 were: Daniel Brewer, Hugh Clarke, Philip Curtis, Tobias Davis, Theophilus Frary, Benjamin Gibbs, Laurence Hammond, Thomas Hull, Richard Jencks, John Paine, Thomas Sanford, William Sedgwick, Thomas Snawson, Thomas Watkins.

**Daniel Brewer** (1666), of Roxbury, "husbandman," son of Daniel, of Roxbury, was probably born in England, and married, Nov. 5, 1652, Hannah, daughter of Isaac Morrill (1638). He became a member of the Roxbury church May 20, 1684. Daniel, Jr. (1666), died Jan. 9, 1708, aged eighty-four years.

**Hugh Clarke** (1666), of Watertown in 1640, removed to Roxbury in 1657, and was admitted to be a freeman in 1660. He became a member of the Roxbury church Sept. 11, 1659. In the records of the Roxbury church, it is related, under date of Sept. 10, 1665, that "Hugh Clark [1666] was called before the church and charged with telling a lye in the face of the Court, etc. By all which it appeared to the church that his soul was sick and needed medicine and therefore dispensed a public admonition unto him." Again, in the same records, "October 21, 1666, Hugh Clark [1666] had

**Daniel Brewer** (1666). AUTHORITIES: Roxbury Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853, p. 170 (will of his father).

**Hugh Clarke** (1666). AUTHORITIES: Roxbury Church Records; Hugh Clark and his Descendants, p. 17.



a solemn admonition dispensed to him." "November 25, 1666, Hugh Clark [1666] was forgiven by the church." "June 8, 1673, Hugh Clark [1666] was solemnly admonished." "14th of February 1674, Hugh Clark [1666] was reconciled to the church." He died July 20, 1693, about eighty years of age.

**Philip Curtis** (1666), of Roxbury, son of William, of Roxbury, was born in England. He married, in 1658, Obedience Holland, of Dorchester. He was a lieutenant in a militia company of Roxbury prior to 1670. He was lieutenant of Capt. Henchman's (1675) company, which left Boston Nov. 1, 1675, for the purpose of rescuing two boys whom the savages had captured at Marlborough. The savages were overtaken near Grafton; a fight ensued; the boys were rescued, but Lieut. Philip Curtis (1666) and several of his comrades were killed. He held the office of second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1671.

**Tobias Davis** (1666), of Roxbury, blacksmith, married Sarah, daughter of Isaac Morrill (1638). She died Jan. 23, 1649, and he married, Dec. 13 next following, Bridget Kinsman. Tobias Davis (1666) succeeded to the business and estate of his father-in-law. The latter included much of the tract bounded by Dudley, Warren, St. James, and Washington streets. He served in the militia as ensign, and was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1668. He died April 25, 1690.

**Theophilus Frary** (1666), of Boston, cordwainer, son of John Frary, of Dedham, was born in England. He resided in Dedham until he was admitted an inhabitant of Boston, Feb. 23, 1656-7. His first town office was that of surveyor in 1659-60, and he was selectman from 1679 to 1687 inclusive, and in 1689. He represented Boston in the General Court from 1689 to 1695 inclusive, and in 1699. He was one of the founders of the Old South Church in 1666, and was violently opposed to the Episcopal Church. In 1688, Randolph endeavored to establish worship of that form, and wrote in urgent terms to the Bishop of London on the subject.

Mr. Hutchinson in a note observes, "A dispute happened at the grave of one Lilly. He had left the ordering of his funeral to his executors. They forbade Mr. Ratcliffe, the Episcopal rector, performing the service for burial. Nevertheless he began. Deacon Frary [1666] interrupted him and a stop was put to his proceeding. The Deacon was complained of, and besides being bound to his good behavior for twelve months, it was thought the process would cost him one hundred marks." Mr. Lillie was Capt. Frary's (1666) son-in-law.

Capt. Frary (1666) was elected deacon of the Old South Church, Nov. 6, 1685. He was prominent in town matters, and served on various special committees. Theophilus Frary (1666) was commissioned by the General Court, May 12, 1675, lieutenant of the eighth foot company, which was commanded by Capt. John Hull (1660). In 1683,

**Philip Curtis** (1666). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury.

**Tobias Davis** (1666). AUTHORITIES: Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Theophilus Frary** (1666). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records, Foote's Annals of King's Chapel; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Records of Mass. Bay; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"[1691] Sabbath Oct. 25, Capt Frary's voice failing him in his own Essay, by reason of his Palsie, he calls to me to set the Tune, which accordingly I doe: 17, 18, 19, 20 verses, 68th Psalm, Windsor Tune."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 351.

"Oct'r 17, 1700, Capt Theophilus Frary expires about 3 a'clock past midnight."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 23.



he is called in the Records of Massachusetts Bay, "Captain." He held the office of ensign in the Artillery Company in 1674, of lieutenant in 1675, and of captain in 1682. He died Oct. 17, 1700. On the death of his father-in-law, Jacob Eliot, the house and garden of the deceased, situated on the southwest corner of Washington and Boylston streets, became the property and residence of Theophilus Frary (1666).

**Benjamin Gibbs** (1666), of Boston, merchant, first appears at Boston in 1662, and married Lydia, daughter of Joshua Scottow (1645). He was admitted to the First Church July 13, 1662; became a freeman in 1666; was a founder and member of the Old South Church in 1669, and in 1673 donated fifty pounds to Harvard College.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "Josselyn speaks of his [Gibbs's] new house as being a stately edifice, which it is thought, will stand him a little less than £3000, before it be fully finished." This costly house was near Fort Hill, and belonged to Col. Robert Gibbs.

Capt. Benjamin (1666) served on Connecticut River in King Philip's War, in 1676, and died soon after. His widow married (1) Anthony Checkley (1662), attorney-general, and (2) William Coleman (1676).

**Laurence Hammond** (1666), of Charlestown, was admitted a freeman in 1661, and united with the church in Charlestown, April 29, 1662. He was elected recorder of the town, and served from Jan. 27, 1672-3, until the election of Mr. James Russell, Jan. 14, 1677-8. Mr. Hammond (1666) was chosen lieutenant of the Charlestown company, May 27, 1668, and was promoted to be captain of the same, Oct. 12, 1669. In March, 1680-1, the Charlestown train-band was divided into two companies, one of which was under the command of Capt. Laurence Hammond (1666). He was one of a few who, in 1686, were unwilling "to lift hand or voice" against Andros, "the representative of the crown"; on account of which he was deprived of his military command. His diary is preserved by the Massachusetts Historical Society.

He was a selectman of Charlestown, representative of that town from 1672 to 1677 inclusive, and clerk of the courts and registrar of probate and deeds under Andros. He removed to Boston July 10, 1692, and died July 25, 1699. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1667, ensign in 1670, and lieutenant in 1672.

**Thomas Hull** (1666), of Boston, was a cooper. He married Hannah Townsend in 1657, about which time he bought of Capt. James Johnson (1638) what is now the corner of Batterymarch Street and Liberty Square, where stood a well-known ordinary, — the "Blue Bell," afterward the "Castle Tavern." In 1674, Hugh Drury (1659) occupied a part of the building.

Administration was granted on the estate of Thomas Hull (1666), deceased, Aug. 10, 1670. His widow married Lieut. Richard Way (1642).

**Richard Jencks** (1666), of Boston, was admitted to the Second Church, Oct. 29, 1682, and became a freeman in 1683.

**Benjamin Gibbs** (1666). AUTHORITIES: Records of Mass. Bay; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Laurence Hammond** (1666). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex

Co., Vol. I., p. 195; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown; Mather's Magnalia. Vol. II., p. 91; Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. II., p. 311, *et seq.*

**Thomas Hull** (1666). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**John Paine** (1666), of Boston, son of William, was born in England. He came to America in 1635, when three years of age, with his parents, who settled in Ipswich. They removed to Boston, and the father dying in 1660, left an only son, John (1666). John Paine (1666) married, in March, 1659, Sarah, daughter of Richard Parker (1638).

There is a tradition that he died at sea, after conveying, Dec. 29, 1674, some estate to his niece, Hannah, daughter of Samuel Appleton, wife of William Downe (1716).

**Thomas Sanford** (1666), born in December, 1644, was a son of Thomas, of Dorchester. He was admitted a freeman in 1669, and removed to New Haven, where he owned real estate in 1685.

**William Sedgwick** (1666), son of Robert (1637), of Charlestown, was probably born in that town. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. Samuel Stone. He became ruined, morally, by service in the British army, and after some years of abandonment of his wife she petitioned for a divorce in May, 1673. Having removed to Hartford, Conn., she was released, by vote of the General Court of Connecticut, in October, 1674, from the "unchristian bondage." Sept. 7, 1668, William sold all right in his father's estate to Francis Willoughby (1639).

There is a tradition that William died on the return voyage from the West Indies to Boston.

**Thomas Snawsnell** (1666) was a merchant in Boston in 1663, and is probably the "Mr. Thomas Snossall" who was elected constable for Boston, March 14, 1669-70. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1670.

**Thomas Watkins** (1666), of Boston, in a deed, October, 1653, is called a "tobacco maker." He became a freeman in 1660, and was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1668. He owned a plantation on the Kennebec, which he sold in 1669, and died Dec. 16, 1689.

**Rev. Edmund Brown**, of Sudbury, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1666. He came over from England in 1637; was admitted a freeman May 13, 1640; was ordained the first minister of Sudbury in August, 1640, and continued as pastor until his decease, June 22, 1677. He married, about 1645, Anne, widow of John Loveren, of Watertown, but left no children.

Mr. Brown's real estate consisted of three hundred acres, besides a grant in Framingham from the General Court. He hunted and fished, and it is said was a good angler. He was a musician, and in his will speaks of his "Base Voyal," etc. He left fifty pounds to establish a grammar school in Sudbury, and one hundred pounds to Harvard College.

A portrait of Rev. Mr. Brown was owned by the late Henry A. Whitney, of Boston.

**John Paine** (1666). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**William Sedgwick** (1666). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Wyman's Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown.

**Thomas Watkins** (1666). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Rev. Edmund Brown**. AUTHORITIES: Mather's Magnalia; Hudson's Hist. of Sudbury; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.

**1667-8.** The officers elected were: Isaac Johnson (1645), captain; John Richards (1644), lieutenant; Richard Woodde (1642), ensign. Moses Paine (1644) was first sergeant; Laurence Hammond (1666), second sergeant; Ephraim Turner (1663), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Joshua Hughes, drummer.

The new members recruited in 1667-8 were: Freegrace Bendall, Samuel Bosworth, George Broughton, William Kent, John Ratcliff, Nathaniel Williams.

**Freegrace Bendall** (1667) was the eldest son of Edward Bendall (1638), and was baptized July 5, 1635. March 11, 1666-7, he applied for a lot to build a house upon, and, Aug. 26, 1667, the selectmen reported that he had been accommodated "with a piece of ground on Fort Hill as appears by deeds [lease] of May 27, 1667," with the privilege to wharf out upon the flats. In 1668-9, he served the town as constable, and in 1670 was made clerk of the Superior Court. For some years prior to his death, the town allowed him and others to plant upon the unoccupied portion of Fort Hill.

He married Mary, daughter of Francis Lyall (1640), and, with her, was drowned, June 6, 1676, while returning from Noddles Island to town, by the overturning of his boat in a sudden squall. They left eight children, "five of which so small not able to shift for themselves"; whereupon the town, March 13, 1681-2, remitted the twenty shillings per annum required to be paid by the lease of Aug. 26, 1667, and the house and land were sold for the benefit of the children.

Freegrace Bendall (1667) was clerk of the Company from 1669 to 1672 inclusive, and ensign in 1676.

**Samuel Bosworth** (1667) was a son of Zacheus (1650), of Boston, and was born March 4, 1643. He married Mercy, daughter of Thomas Bumstead (1647). "Widow Franke" was approved by the selectmen, April 23, 1677, to keep a house of entertainment "provided y<sup>t</sup> Samuell Bosworth [1667] keepe y<sup>e</sup> house or some other carefull & Suffitient man to manage it." In 1678, Clement Grosse was licensed, "provided y<sup>t</sup> Samuel Bosworth [1667] drawe the beere," to sell "beere & syder." He was employed by "Widow Franckes" in 1679, but in 1680 was himself licensed to sell beer and cider. In 1681, the license was granted to Widow Bosworth, implying the death of Samuel (1667) in the latter part of 1680.

**George Broughton** (1667) resided in Massachusetts in 1667, but was of Dover or Kittery in 1680. In 1670, he was at Berwick. Mr. Hubbard, in his *Indian Wars*, mentions George Broughton (1667) as of Salmon Falls in 1675. The same year, he had command of the forty men sent from Boston and Essex County for the better security of Dover. He was captain of a company at Kittery in 1682. He is mentioned in the Boston Town Records of Aug. 18, 1690. He had died May 1, 1691, as Widow Broughton is then named in the records. They had children born in Boston in 1667, 1670, 1672, 1673, and 1677.

**Freegrace Bendall** (1667). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"[1676] Tuesday June 6. Mr Bendall, Mrs Bendall, Mr James Edmunds and a Quaker female were drowned; their boat (in which coming from Nodles Iland) being overset, and sinking by reason of ballast. Mr. Charles Lidget [1679] hardly es-

caped by the help of an oar." — *Sewall's Diary*, Vol. I., p. 13.

**Samuel Bosworth** (1667). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**George Broughton** (1667). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Records of Mass. Bay.



**William Kent** (1667), of Boston in 1662, had permission of the selectmen, Nov. 27, 1665, "to keep a Cooke Shop," which was renewed April 27, 1668. He continued in this business, licensed annually, until April 25, 1681, when he was approved by the selectmen to keep a house for public entertainment. In 1677-8, he was clerk of the market. He is recorded as innholder May 1, 1691, but June 26, 1693, the license is given to Hannah Kent. William Kent (1667) was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1671 and ensign in 1673. He died July 9, 1691.

**John Ratcliff** (1667), of Boston, was a bookbinder. "An English binder, John Ratlife (or Ratcliffe), whom a prospect of work on the Indian Bible brought to New England, was employed by Mr. Usher [1638], and paid two and sixpence per Bible, he finding 'thread, glue, pasteboard, and leather claps,' for himself. In 1664, he addressed a memorial to the commissioners of the United Colonies, complaining of the insufficiency of this pay. 'I finde by experience,'—he writes, from Boston, Aug. 30 [1663],—'that in things belonging to my trade, I here pay 18s. for that which in England I could buy for four shillings, they being things not formerly much used in this country.'"<sup>1</sup>

**Nathaniel Williams** (1667), of Boston, son of Nathaniel Williams (1644), was born in Boston, Sept. 25, 1642. He married (1) Mary, daughter of Peter Oliver (1643) and widow of Jonathan Shrimpton (1665). He was admitted a freeman in 1676 and had a grant of land in 1679. He, not his father (1644), was a commissary in King Philip's War. He was a member of the Old South Church, and was elected deacon Oct. 15, 1693. He was a constable of Boston in 1677-8; surveyor, 1684-5; the first named of the first board of overseers of the poor, chosen in the town of Boston March 9, 1690-1, and selectman in 1692-3. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1676, ensign in 1684, second sergeant in 1690, and lieutenant in 1693.

**Rev. Samuel Danforth**, of Roxbury, delivered the Artillery election sermon. He was born in Framingham, Suffolk County, England, September, 1626, and came over with his father, Nicholas, of Cambridge, in 1634. His mother died when he was about three years of age. Samuel graduated at Harvard College in 1643, was admitted a freeman in 1647, and attained some reputation as an astronomer and as a poet, publishing almanacs from 1646 to 1649 inclusive. On the 24th of September, 1650, he was ordained as colleague to the Rev. John Eliot, pastor of the First Church in Roxbury, and the so-called "Apostle to the Indians." He was married, Nov. 5, 1651, to Mary, daughter of the Rev. John Wilson, of Boston, brother-in-law of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637). He died Nov. 19, 1674, aged forty-eight years. His widow married Joseph Rock (1658), of Boston, and, surviving him, died Sept. 13, 1713, aged eighty-one years.

**William Kent** (1667). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; see Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. IV., p. 302.

**Nathaniel Williams** (1667). AUTHORITIES: Hist. of Old South Church; Boston Records.

"Lords Day Dec. 12, 1714: Neither Capt Belchar nor Capt Williams abroad. . . . [Dec. 13] I visited Capt Williams [1667], who has been very sick since last Wednesday. Tells me he was 71 years old that day my son was ordain'd. Desires Prayers. . . . [Dec. 25] Shops open &c. as on other

days, very pleasant weather. Capt. Williams [1667] buried; Bearers, Col. Checkley, Capt Hill, Mr. Tay, &c." — *Seewall Papers*.

**Rev. Samuel Danforth**. AUTHORITIES: Am. Quarterly Register, VIII.; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Sixth Report of Boston Rec. Com.; Sibley's Harv. Graduates; Mather's Magnalia; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.

<sup>1</sup> Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. I., p. 469.







THE OLD SOUTH CHURCH.

**1668-9.** The officers elected were : Thomas Savage (1637), captain ; Richard Cooke (1643), lieutenant ; Moses Paine (1644), ensign. Tobias Davis (1666) was first sergeant ; David Saywell (1664), second sergeant ; Thomas Watkins (1666), clerk ; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Joshua Hughes, drummer.

The Third Congregational Church in Boston, now usually styled the Old South Church, was formed at Charlestown, on the 12th and 16th of the third month, *i. e.*, of May, 1669, O. S. The original members or founders of this church were fifty-two in number ; twenty-nine were males and twenty-three females. Of the twenty-nine males, the following-named seventeen persons were members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts :—

Theodore Atkinson (1644).	Peter Oliver (1643).
Joseph Belknap (1658).	Seth Perry (1662).
Peter Brackett (1648).	Joseph Rock (1658).
Thomas Brattle (1675).	Thomas Savage (1637).
Joseph Davis (1675).	Joshua Scottow (1645).
William Davis (1643).	Benjamin Thurston (1675).
Theophilus Frary (1666).	Hezekiah Usher (1638).
John Hull (1660).	John Wing (1671).
John Morse (1671).	

The new members recruited in 1668-9 were : John Crafts, Thomas Foster, Joseph Lyall, Edward Tyng, Jr.

**John Crafts** (1668), of Roxbury, son of Griffin Crafts, of Roxbury, who came with Winthrop in 1630, was born in Roxbury July 10, 1630, the earliest born in town, according to town records. He married, (1) June 7, 1654, Mary Wheelock, who died in November, 1667, and, (2) March 30, 1669, Mary Hudson, of Lynn. He died Sept. 3, 1685.

**Thomas Foster** (1668), of Roxbury, son of Thomas Foster, of Weymouth and Braintree, and probably a nephew of Hopestill (1642), was born at Weymouth Aug. 18, 1640. He moved to Roxbury about 1662, and removed to Cambridge about 1672. He married, Oct. 15, 1662, Sarah Parker. On the court files of 1678, he is styled "physician." He died Sept. 16, 1679, according to the town record, — or Oct. 28, 1679, as inscribed on his headstone, — "aged 39 years."

**Joseph Lyall** (1668), of Boston, son of Francis Lyall (1640), was born in Boston, March 14, 1654. Mr. Farmer says that Joseph was a lawyer. He does not appear to be mentioned in the records of Boston.

**Edward Tyng, Jr.** (1668), son of Major-Gen. Edward Tyng (1642), was born in Boston, March 26, 1649. He was a lieutenant in Capt. Davenport's company during the Narraganset expedition. Mr. Drake, in the Old Indian Chronicle, says : "Before our

**John Crafts** (1668). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1880.

**Thomas Foster** (1668). AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1872, p. 395.

**Edward Tyng, Jr.** (1668.) AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

men came up to take possession of the Fort, the Indians shot three bullets through Capt Davenport [son of Richard (1639)], whereupon he bled extreemely, and immediately called for his Lieutenant, Mr. Edward Tyng [1668], and committed the charge of the Company to him."

In 1680, Lieut. Tyng (1668) removed to Falmouth (Portland), and soon after married Elizabeth Clark. He was in command of Fort Loyal in 1680 and 1681; a councillor and magistrate under President Danforth; in 1686, was one of the council of his brother-in-law, Gov. Joseph Dudley (1677), and afterward under Andros, who made him lieutenant-colonel. He commanded in the province of Sagadahoc in 1688 and 1689.

After Nova Scotia was conquered, he was made Governor of Annapolis, and on his voyage to that colony he was taken by the French, and carried to France, where he died. Administration on his estate was granted his brother, Jonathan, in April, 1701.

**Rev. John Wilson**, of Medfield, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1668. He was a son of Rev. John Wilson, the first pastor of the First Church in Boston, and a nephew of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637). Rev. John, Jr., was born in England in September, 1621; graduated at Harvard College in its first graduated class, 1642; joined the First Church in Boston, March 3, 1644, and was ordained as colleague with Rev. Richard Mather, at Dorchester, in 1649. He settled at Medfield in 1651, and there preached until his decease, Aug. 23, 1691.

—•—

**1669-70.** The officers elected were: Peter Oliver (1643), captain; Richard Woodde (1642), lieutenant; Richard Way (1642), ensign. Simon Lynde (1658) was first sergeant; Ephraim Turner (1663), second sergeant; Freegrace Bendall (1667), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Joshua Hughes, drummer.

March 14, 1669-70, Capt. Peter Oliver (1643) was chosen "sealer of waights & Measures," as appears by the Boston Town Records. April 16, 1670, it is recorded in them, that "vpon the decease of Cap<sup>t</sup> Peter Olliuer [1643] Cap<sup>t</sup> James Olliuer [1640] is chosen sealer of waights & measures."

He died while in command of the Artillery Company, — the second instance of the kind, the first being that of Major-Gen. Gibbons (1637), who died Dec. 9, 1654.

The new members recruited in 1669-70 were: James Russell and Edward Shippen.

**James Russell** (1669), of Charlestown, born Oct. 4, 1640, was the eldest son of Hon. Richard Russell (1644), who settled in Charlestown in 1640. James (1669) married (1) Mabel, daughter of Gov. Haynes (1639), of Connecticut, and (3) Mary, daughter of Henry Walcott. His fourth wife was Abigail (Hathorne) Curwin. He was admitted a freeman in 1668; was representative in 1679; treasurer of the colony, 1680

**Rev. John Wilson.** AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Tilden's Hist. of Medfield.

**James Russell** (1669). AUTHORITIES: Hurd's

Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. I., pp. 28, 29; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1875; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.



to 1685 ; judge of probate, June 18, 1692 ; judge of the Court of Common Pleas, 1692 to 1707 ; one of the Governor's council, 1692 to 1708, and a member of the Council of Safety in 1689. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1672.

A slab in the burying-ground in Charlestown, still standing, has upon it this inscription : " Here lies interred the body of James Russell Esqr Son of Richard and Maud his wife, who was born in this town Oct. 4, 1640, and was elected Counsellor for the Colony in the year 1680. He was annually chosen saving those few years in the reign of King James when the people were deprived of that privilege. He also served God and his Country in many other eminent stations as a Treasurer, a Judge, and in other places of great trust, all which he discharged as becomes a faithful steward. He exchanged Earth for Heaven on Thursday April 28, 1709."

**Edward Shippen** (1669), the son of William Shippen, was born in England in 1639. He came to New England in 1668, and settled in Boston, where he engaged in mercantile pursuits with great success. He owned a house and two acres of ground, which included what is now Tremont Row, and a part of Scollay Square. He bought this property, previously owned by David Yale (1640), who purchased it of Edward Bendall (1638), in 1678, and sold it in 1702. He was a member of the church, and a popular citizen until 1671, when he married Elizabeth Lybrand, a Quakeress, and joined the Society of Friends. He became at once a mark for New England intolerance and fanaticism, and was forced to take his share of the "jailments" and scourgings which were visited upon his sect. In 1693, a meteor appeared in the Massachusetts atmosphere, and was made the signal for a fresh persecution of Quakers and Baptists, during which Mr. Shippen (1669) was banished. He went to Philadelphia, bought a lot, built a house, and by the end of 1694 had closed up his business in Boston and removed his family and effects to the new city, having first erected a memorial "on the green," near a "pair of gallows, where several of our friends had suffered death for the truth and were thrown into a hole."

Mr. Shippen (1669) was a man of wealth, talents, and high character, and his mansion was a "princely place." He soon stepped to the front in the new community, and Penn lavished honors and offices upon him. He was early chosen to the assembly, and was its speaker in 1695 ; the first mayor of Philadelphia under the charter of 1701, and in 1702-4 president of the council after Andrew Hamilton's death, and *ex-officio* deputy-governor of the province until Penn set it over his son, William, Jr., and John Evans, to supersede him.

In 1704, Mr. Shippen (1669) married his third wife, Elizabeth James, and as she was not a Quakeress he withdrew himself from the society, but continued on good terms with it, and prominent in public affairs, until his death, Oct. 2, 1712.

**Rev. Samuel Torrey**, of Weymouth, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1669. He was a son of Capt. William Torrey (1641), who came over in 1640, bringing his son, Samuel. They came from Combe St. Nicholas, Somerset County, England, and settled in Weymouth. He entered Harvard College, but left at the expiration of three years. He continued his studies, however, and was ordained Feb. 14, 1665, to succeed

**Edward Shippen** (1669). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Rev. Samuel Torrey.** AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Eliot's Biog. Dict.

Rev. Thomas Thacher at Weymouth. He preached the election sermon before the Legislature in 1674, 1683, and 1695, an honor conferred in no other instance in Massachusetts. He was twice chosen president of Harvard College, but declined both elections.

He married, (1) May 15, 1657, Mary, daughter of Edward Rawson, and, (2) July 30, 1695, Mary, widow of William Symmes.

He was admitted a freeman in 1669, and, having preached more than fifty years, died April 21, 1707, aged seventy-five years.

The officers elected were: John Leverett (1639), captain; John Richards (1644), lieutenant; Laurence Hammond (1666), ensign. **1670-1.** Elisha Hutchinson (1670) was first sergeant; Thomas Snawsnell (1666), second sergeant; Freegrace Bendall (1667), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Joshua Hughes, drummer.

The new members recruited in 1670-1 were: Elisha Hutchinson, Thomas Norman, Samuel Shrimpton, and Jonathan Tyng.

**Elisha Hutchinson** (1670), son of Capt. Edward (1638), was born in Boston, Nov. 16, 1641. He was admitted a freeman in 1666; represented Boston in the General Court from 1680 to 1683; was selectman from 1678 to 1687 inclusive, except 1681; assistant in 1684, 1685, and 1686; was one of the council in 1689, and under the new or provincial charter, in 1692, he was a councillor, and was continued in that office until his death, Dec. 10, 1717. He was a captain in the Boston militia, and sergeant-major of the regiment, succeeding John Richards (1644), and was the last person who held that office. On the reorganization of the militia, he was made major of the Suffolk Regiment under Col. Shrimpton (1670); in 1694 was promoted to be lieutenant-colonel, and in 1699 to be colonel, which office he held until 1703. In 1692, he was appointed commander-in-chief of the forces sent against the French and Indians, then in arms in the Province of Maine, and in 1702 was commander of the Castle. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1670, ensign in 1671, lieutenant in 1674, and its captain in 1676, 1684, 1690, and 1697. Mr. Whitman (1810) adds, Col. Hutchinson (1670) "continued a member through the troubles of Andros's administration, and was [one of] the principal and leading characters who caused the resuscitation of the Company afterwards, being chosen in the autumn of 1690 to command a second [third] time, until the next anniversary election." He was a member of the Company for forty-seven years.

He married, (1) Nov. 19, 1665, Hannah, daughter of Capt. Thomas Hawkins (1638), who died Oct. 9, 1676, and, (2) Sept. 12, 1677, Elizabeth (Clarke) Freak, daughter of Major Thomas Clarke (1644). The store and property of Major Clarke (1644), an eminent merchant of Boston, at the North End, long continued in the

**Elisha Hutchinson** (1669). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 300; 1865, 15; Report of Boston Rec. Com., 1634-1660, *et seq.*; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. II., p. 462; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company.

"[1717] Dec. 13. Col Hutchinson is buried, the Regiment being in Arms. Bearers, His Excel-

lency the Governor, Lt Gov. Dumer; Col Tailer; Sam'l Sewall, Col. Townsend, Simeon Stoddard, esq. Was buried in the South burying place, in Mr. Freaks Tomb, where his last wife was buried. Now I have been a Bearer to three of my Wives Bearers in less than two Moneths time." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 155.

family, and a part became afterward known as Hutchinson's Wharf. His house was in the North Square. "This part of the town, about his day, became the 'Court End,' where the heaviest shipping laded and unladed and the most extensive business was transacted." His son, Thomas, who was grandfather of Gov. Hutchinson of Revolutionary fame, joined the Artillery Company in 1694.

In 1695-6, the General Court gave the monopoly of making salt "after the manner as it is made in France," for fourteen years, to Elisha Hutchinson (1670) and two other merchants of Boston. They set up their works on the marshes by the Neck, toward Roxbury. In 1716, they admitted to their number eleven associates, of whom eight were members of the Artillery Company.

He was in London in 1688, and joined in a remonstrance to King James II. He had been commander at Castle Island, and sustained that office when Dudley arrived, but was removed to make way for the new order of things, and was succeeded by Lieut.-Gov. Povey, after which, and until the Revolution, that office was a sinecure. He was one of the commissioners, with Col. Townsend (1674) and President Leverett (1704), son of Hudson Leverett (1658), to Port Royal, in 1707, and commander of the colonial forces when the new charter arrived.

**Thomas Norman** (1670), of Boston in 1670-4, probably removed to Topsfield, where he was living when made a freeman in 1681.

**Samuel Shrimpton** (1670), of Boston, son of Henry, of Boston, and cousin of Jonathan (1665), was born in Boston, May 31, 1643, and became a freeman in 1673. In March of the latter year, having been elected constable, he expressed his desire in public meeting to pay a fine of ten pounds rather than serve in that office, "which was accepted by the town." He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1672, lieutenant in 1673, and its captain in 1694. He was very active in the revival of the Company after Andros's administration, and was made colonel of the Suffolk Regiment April 20, 1689—being the first person who held that office after the abolition of the office of sergeant-major as the commander of a regiment. He died while holding the office of colonel, Feb. 9, 1698, aged fifty-five years.

Col. Shrimpton (1670) was a large landholder. In 1673, he purchased of John Turner a piece of land "on the way leading up from the training field to Centry hill," which is a part of the present State House estate. After John Turner's death, in 1681, Col. Shrimpton (1670) bought of his executors the remainder of the summit of Beacon Hill, reserving unto the town of Boston its "privileges and interest on the top of said hill and passage from the Common thereto." He also owned a piece of land in King Street, now occupied by the Union Bank building, and on account of this possession Exchange Street was for many years known as Shrimpton's Lane.

**Thomas Norman** (1670). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Samuel Shrimpton** (1670). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Province Laws of Mass. Bay; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, 1861, 1889; Sumner's Hist. of East Boston.

"[1697-8] Fourth day Febr 9. Last night about nine of ye Clock, Col Shrimpton dyes of an Apoplexy. . . . Second day Febr 14. 1697/8. Col.

Sam<sup>l</sup> Shrimpton was buried with Arms: Ten Companies, 8 [Boston companies], Muddy River and Sconce: No Horse nor Trumpet: but a horse led—Mr. Dyers, the colonel's would not endure the cloathing: Mourning coach also and Horses in Mourning: Scutcheon on their sides and Death heads on their foreheads: Coach stood by the way here and there and mov'd solitarily. . . . Capt Clark fired twelve great guns at the Sconce."—*Sewall Papers*, pp. 470, 471.



He was one of Sir Edmund Andros's council in 1687, "without partaking in his tyranny"; one of the Council of Safety in 1689, and a councillor at large in 1695-7. He was very wealthy, and an old almanac calls him, "*Vir patriæ clarus.*" He was an ancestor of Gen. William H. Sumner (1819), who, in his History of East Boston, gives an extended account of Col. Samuel Shrimpton (1670).

**Jonathan Tyng** (1670), of Dunstable, son of Edward Tyng (1642), of Boston, was born in Boston, Dec. 15, 1642. He married, first, Sarah, daughter of Hezekiah Usher (1638). He removed from Boston to Dunstable about 1678, and thence to Woburn about 1700. At the latter place, he married, second, Sarah, widow of Humphrey Davie (1665), and his third wife was Judith, daughter of John Rayner. He was of the royal council in 1686 and 1687, but did not partake of the principles of Andros; was a magistrate and representative under the new charter, in 1692, and died Jan. 19, 1724. His children settled in Tyngsborough and Chelmsford, Mass. His name is perpetuated in Tyng's Island, in the Merrimack, above Lowell.

Tyng's Island was visited by the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company during its fall parade in October, 1879, and again it visited the island in June, 1888, in company with its guests,—members of the Honourable Artillery Company of London,—by invitation of the Martin Luther Society of Lowell, Mass.

Jonathan Tyng (1670) passed through the lower grades in the militia; was major in 1697, lieutenant-colonel in 1702, and colonel of the Upper Middlesex Regiment in 1703.

The *News-Letter*, No. 1043, one of the earliest newspapers in New England, says, "Woburn, Lord's Day, January 19, 1723-4. We were entertained with a very loud *memento mori*. The Hon. Col. Jonathan Tyng, Esq., walking to the place of public worship in the afternoon, expired as soon as he got into his seat, during the time of the first prayer, aged 81. His faith and holiness were so apparent, that we were persuaded he was conveyed to the assembly of the first born in Heaven, to bear a part with them in glorifying their Creator and Redeemer."

**Rev. John Oxenbridge**, of Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1670. He was born Jan. 30, 1609, at Daventry, England; entered Lincoln College, Oxford, June 20, 1623, but was subsequently transferred to Cambridge, where he received the degree of A. B. in 1631. He taught at Magdalen Hall, and in 1634 went to Bermuda and took charge of a church. He returned to England in a few years, but being cut off by the Act of Uniformity of 1662, he went to Surinam, thence to Barbadoes, and in 1669 came to New England. He was installed in April of that year as colleague with Rev. James Allen, pastor of the First Church. He was admitted a freeman in 1670, and died Dec. 28, 1674.

**Jonathan Tyng** (1670). **AUTHORITIES:** Fox's Hist. of Old Dunstable, pp. 104, 105; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. I., pp. 29, 385; Province Laws of Mass. Bay, Vol. VII.; Records of Mass. Bay.

**Rev. John Oxenbridge.** **AUTHORITIES:** Mather's Magnalia; Emerson's Hist. of the First Church; Brooks's Lives; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.



**1671-2.** The officers elected were: John Hull (1660), captain; Richard Way (1642), lieutenant; Elisha Hutchinson (1670), ensign. William Kent (1667) was first sergeant; Philip Curtis (1666), second sergeant; Freegrace Bendall (1667), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Joshua Hughes, drummer.

The new members recruited in 1671-2 were: Benjamin Alford, Thomas Bendish, Jeremiah Dummer, John Lowle, John Morse, Nehemiah Pierce, Thomas Thacher, Jr., John Walley, and John Wing.

**Benjamin Alford** (1671), of Boston, merchant, was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1681, and ensign in 1685. He was elected constable of Boston in 1685-6, and, refusing to serve, was fined ten pounds. From June 24, 1689, to 1693, he was annually chosen one of a committee to audit the books of the town treasurer. His will, dated Feb. 19, 1696-7, was proved Feb. 28, 1709. Of his sons, John was a member of the Artillery Company in 1714, and James in 1713. Major Benjamin Davis, his brother-in-law, joined the Artillery Company in 1673. Mr. Savage says that previous to Mr. Alford's residence in Boston he had been a prisoner in Barbary.

**Thomas Bendish** (1671). "Perhaps only a transient visitor."

**Jeremiah Dummer** (1671), of Boston, son of Richard, of Newbury, was born Sept. 14, 1645. He was a goldsmith, and served his apprenticeship with John Hull (1660), the mint-master. He married Ann, sister of Joshua Atwater (1677), of Boston. They had Jeremy, "H. C. 1699; a lawyer, agent at Queen Anne's court, wit, and friend of St. John, Viscount Bolingbroke," etc.; and William (1702), lieutenant-governor of the province, beside other children. Mr. Dummer (1671) was admitted a freeman in 1680, was one of the Council of Safety in 1689, and died May 25, 1718.

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1679. From the Records of the Town of Boston, we learn that Mr. Dummer was a constable in 1675-6; a member of Capt. Hutchinson's company in 1684; selectman from 1690 to 1692; commissioner in 1691; treasurer of the county in 1701, and justice of the peace from 1693 until his decease in 1718.

The Boston *News-Letter* of June 2, 1718, said, "On the 25th, past, departed this life Jeremiah Dummer, Esq., in the 73d year of his age, after a long retirement, under great infirmities of age and sickness; having served his country faithfully in several public stations, and obtained of all that knew him the character of a just, virtuous, and pious man; and was honorably interred on Thursday last."

**Benjamin Alford** (1671). **AUTHORITIES:** Foote's Annals of King's Chapel, Vol. I., p. 89; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Jeremiah Dummer** (1671). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1881, 1887, 1890.

"Jan'y 30. 1704-5. . . . Cousin Jer Dumer, Philosophiae Dr., going out of the Town house about 8 at night, fell by reason of the Ice, hit his left Temple against a piece of Brick-batt, Cut a great

Gash at which much blood Issued: He was so stun'd as to be as dead when Mr. John Winthrop took him up."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 123.*

"[1718] May 24<sup>th</sup>. . . . This day Capt Dummer dies. . . . [May] 29. . . . Capt Dumer buried."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. III., p. 185.*

His son, Jeremiah, Jr., brother of William Dummer (1702), was the well-known agent of the colonies, and died in England, May 19, 1739. A London newspaper of May 26, 1739, called him "the brightest Genius of that Time."

**John Lowle** (1671), now spelled Lowell, of Boston, a cooper, son of John, of Newbury, was born in England, and was brought to America in 1639. He married (1) Hannah, daughter of George Proctor, of Dorchester; (2) Jan. 24, 1659, Elizabeth Sylvester; and, (3) in 1666, Naomi, a sister of his second wife. He died June 7, 1694. He was constable of Boston in 1663-4, and in 1667 was complained of as encumbering the street opposite his shop. He asked permission in 1669-70 to wharf out on the point of Fort Hill, and in 1685-6 held town office. His son, Ebenezer (1711), a cordwainer, was the father of Rev. John Lowell, of Newburyport, whose son, John (Harv. Coll., 1760), was distinguished as a judge.

**John Morse** (1671), a son of John, of Dedham, who removed to Boston in 1654, was born June 8, 1639. He was a shopkeeper, and was elected clerk of the Artillery Company from 1673 to 1677. He was constable of Boston in 1671, and clerk of the market in 1674. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Zacheus Bosworth (1650); was admitted a freeman in 1669, and served as a commissary in King Philip's War. He died Oct. 25, 1678.

**Nehemiah Pierce** (1671), of Boston in 1661, a cooper, was a son of John, of Dorchester, and was born in 1639. He married, in 1684 (perhaps second wife), Ann, widow of Capt. Samuel Moseley (1672), and eldest daughter of Isaac Addington (1652). March 11, 1689-90, he was chosen by the selectmen to inspect "Chimneys" that are "insuffitient and danger[ous]."

Mr. Pierce (1671) died prior to April 28, 1691, when administration was given to his widow.

**Thomas Thacher, Jr.** (1671), of Boston, merchant, son of Rev. Thomas Thacher, the first minister of the Old South Church, married Mary, daughter of Thomas Savage (1637). He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1674, and ensign in 1675. He died at Boston, April 2, 1686. His father delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1654 and 1671; his brother, Peter, in 1695, and his son, Peter, in 1712.

**John Walley** (1671), of Boston, son of Rev. Thomas Walley, of London, afterward of Barnstable, Mass., came to New England before his father. He became a freeman in 1673; lieutenant in the militia in 1678; captain in 1679; was elected major of the Boston regiment in 1699, and soon after was colonel. In 1683, he lived at Barnstable; was engaged in the settlement of Bristol in 1684; was assistant in the Plymouth Colony, and was one of the council named in the royal commission of Andros. He held the office of

**John Lowle** (1671). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Bridgman's Pilgrims of Boston, p. 304.

**John Morse** (1671). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Walley** (1671). AUTHORITIES: Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. II.; Hinkley Papers, published by Mass. Hist. Soc.; Bridgman's Pilgrims of Boston, p. 34; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"He resided for a time in Bristol, then the shire town of Bristol County, Mass. He was an early, and perhaps the earliest, treasurer of that county, and

major commandant of the regiment composed of all the militia in that county." — *MS. of Gen. Ebenezer W. Peirce* (1852).

"Sixth-day Jan 11, 1711-12, Major John Walley dies. I was at prayer with him last night. Mr. Pemberton pray'd excellently. He was a good neighbor, a publick spirited Man, a Purchaser and principal Settler of Bristol.

"Fifth-day Jan 17. . . . Went to Funeral of Major Walley. . . . Tomb in the new Burying place." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 232.*

major, though he commanded a regiment under Gov. Phips, against the French and Indians, in 1690. He was the chief military officer of that expedition against Quebec, Feb. 12, 1689. He rose to be lieutenant-general of his Majesty's forces, and, Mr. Whitman (1810) adds, is the only person on the roll that ever sustained that rank. He was a member of the council under the new charter of 1692, and, by the Governor and council, was appointed one of the judges of the Superior Court, June 7, 1700, and served for eleven years. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1676, lieutenant in 1678, and captain in 1679, 1699, and 1707. At the last two elections, he is styled lieutenant-general. He was a member of the Company for thirty-six years, and was active in its revival.

"At the first election under the new charter," says Mr. Hutchinson, "it was made a question whether, by the General Court or Assembly was intended the House of Representatives only, or the whole three branches; and it is handed down to us by tradition, that after some time spent in messages and replies, the council of the former year gave up the point and sent Major Walley [1671], one of their number, to acquaint the speaker with it; but when he came to the door, he heard the speaker putting the question to the House, and finding they had conceded to the council, he returned without delivering the message; and a committee coming soon after from the House, to bring up the vote, the council by this accident retained a privilege which they have been in the exercise of ever since."

His tombstone says he died Jan. 11, 1711-12, aged sixty-nine. In his will, he gave one hundred pounds to Harvard College, twenty pounds and his silver tankard to the Old South Church, where he was a member, and also a donation to Harvard College towards the "support of two hopeful scholars, such as the President and Ministers of the church in Cambridge and the Old South ministers approve." His inventory was £16,805 18s. 6d., and his debts £9,061 11s. 5d.

His mansion and grounds were on Water Street, the latter extending through to Milk Street, and, on the water side, terminated in a wharf. At his death, the property descended to his son, John, on whose death, in 1755, the house was advertised as containing "twenty rooms."

**John Wing** (1671), of Boston, master-mariner and shopkeeper, son of Robert, of Boston, was born July 22, 1637, and married Josebeth, daughter of James Davis (1651). He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1673, ensign in 1677, lieutenant in 1682, and captain in 1693. He was a very thrifty man, for as early as 1674 he made a mortgage to Samuel Shrimpton (1670) for four thousand two hundred pounds, secured by Castle Tavern and other estate, of which part was near the Common, and this mortgage was discharged in three years. He took an active part in the resuscitation of the Company after Andros's usurpation, and continued a member until his death. He died Feb. 22, 1703. His will of Feb. 24, 1702, was proved March 12, 1703. The appraisers of his estate were H. Deering (1682), and John Marion, Jr. (1691). He was a member of the Old South Church.

**Rev. Thomas Thacher**, of Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1671, also in 1654. He became a freeman in 1645. He removed to Boston, and joined the

**John Wing** (1671). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1879, p. 406; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

**Rev. Thomas Thacher**. AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Wisner's and Hill's Hists. of Old South Church; Mather's Magnalia; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.



First Church Aug. 4, 1667. In October, 1669, he was dismissed to the First Church in Charlestown, and became the first settled pastor over the Third, or Old South, Church. He was held in high esteem, and continued as its pastor until his decease, Oct. 15, 1678. His second wife was Margaret, the widow of Jacob Sheafe (1648). She survived her husband, but died in 1693, leaving her landed estate to her two daughters, who had two streets laid out through it, one called Margaret Street, and the other Sheafe Street.

The officers elected were: William Davis (1643), captain; Laurence  
**1672-3.** Hammond (1666), lieutenant; Samuel Shrimpton (1670), ensign.  
 James Russell (1669) was first sergeant; John Coney (1662), second  
 sergeant; Freegrace Bendall (1667), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Joshua  
 Hughes, drummer.

The new members recruited in 1672-3 were: Peter Bennett, Daniel Davison, and Samuel Moseley.

**Peter Bennett** (1672), of Boston, housewright, son of Richard, of Salem in 1636, but removed to Boston before 1642, was born Jan. 18, 1649, in Boston. Both Peter (1672) and his wife, Mary Porter, died before his father, Richard, whose will was proved Sept. 8, 1677. Peter Bennett (1672) was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1675, and a soldier in King Philip's War.

**Daniel Davison** (1672), of Charlestown, son of Nicholas Davison (1648), of Charlestown, was probably born in that town, where he had children by his wife, Abigail Coffin, in 1676 and 1677. He was a merchant. He removed to Ipswich, and thence to Newbury. He was a man of note, active in military matters, and at one time was major of an Essex County regiment. He represented Newbury in the General Court in 1697, 1698, and 1701, and was appointed on a committee to prepare an address to the King, and on another to give instructions to their newly-appointed agent, Wait Winthrop (1692), who was to "negotiate their affairs in England."

**Samuel Moseley** (1672), of Dorchester, a cooper, removed early to Boston, and was a son of Henry Maudsley — Moseley — (1643), of Braintree. Samuel (1672) was born in Braintree, June 14, 1641. In the way of trade, he visited Jamaica and other parts of the West Indies, where the adventurous spirit was excited and schooled, the result of which was his bringing home to Boston two prizes from some unmentioned enemy. Mr. Hutchinson says he "had been an old privateer at Jamaica, probably of such as were called buccaneers." He was a captain in King Philip's War, "showed gallant spirit, had great success in destroying the Indians, and by some was thought to take too great delight in that exercise."

Rev. Edward E. Hale, in the *Memorial History of Boston*, Vol. I., p. 313, says, after relating of the departure of Capts. Henchman (1675) and Prentice for the seat of King

**Peter Bennett** (1672). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Bodge's *Soldiers in King Philip's War*, pp. 91, 130.

**Daniel Davison** (1672). AUTHORITIES: Laws

and Resolves of Prov. of Mass. Bay, Vol. VII.; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Samuel Moseley** (1672). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Mather's *Magnalia*, Vol. II.



Philip's War, "He [Samuel Moseley] had beat up for volunteers in Boston, and with one hundred and ten men, who were called 'privateers,' had made a quick march," overtook the other companies, and all arrived together at Swansea. Probably they were called privateers on account of the former occupation of Capt. Moseley (1672). Again, Mr. Hale says, same volume, p. 320, "Of all these commanders, Samuel Moseley [1672] is he who would figure most brilliantly in a romance. He had been, perhaps, what we call a privateer. He had a rough-and-ready way with him, and indulged his prejudices to the country's injury. It was he who, in this western campaign, took fifteen friendly Indians from their fort at Marlborough, and sent them under guard, tied to each other, to Boston, to be tried for the attack on Lancaster. It was he of whom the old story is told, that he took off his wig and hung it on a tree that he might fight more coolly,—to the great terror of the enemy, who thought there was little use in scalping such a man. It was he who, next year, in proposing to raise another company, said he would take for pay the captives and plunder,—and was permitted to do so. He was a lesser Garibaldi, and, it need hardly be added, was always in hot water."

He married Ann, eldest daughter of Isaac Addington (1652); had three children, and died in January, 1679-80. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1673.

**Rev. Urian Oakes**, of Cambridge, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1672. He was born in England in 1631, came to New England with his parents in 1634, and graduated at Harvard College in 1649. Subsequently he returned to England, settled as pastor at Titchfield, where he married Ruth Ames. His wife having died, he came back to New England. He was installed pastor of the church at Cambridge, Nov. 8, 1671; became a freeman in 1672, and in April, 1675, was chosen president of Harvard College, succeeding Rev. Leonard Hoar. He was re-elected in February, 1679, and died suddenly, July 25, 1681.

---

The officers elected were: Thomas Clarke (1644), captain; Samuel 1673-4. Shrimpton (1670), lieutenant, and William Kent (1667), ensign. Samuel Moseley (1672) was first sergeant; John Wing (1671), second sergeant; John Morse (1671), clerk; John Audlin (1638), armorer, and Joshua Hughes, drummer.

In 1673, the General Court of Massachusetts desired Mr. Hezekiah Usher (1665) to purchase in England "five hundred new snaphances or firelock muskets." As an Indian war became probable, military men perceived that matchlocks and pikes, however efficient in European warfare, would be of little avail against nimble Indians, who never faced their foe in the open field.

The charter of the Company provided: "5thly. The said *Military Company* are to have one thousand acres of land," etc. At the session of the General Court which convened Oct. 7, 1641, a committee was appointed to accompany Mr. John Oliver (1637) "to see the Artillery land laid out, and make return to the next Court." No return is found in the records. Nov. 1, 1654, the General Court appointed another committee to "sett out the thousand acres," between Cambridge and Concord. That

**Rev. Urian Oakes.** AUTHORITIES: Histories of Harv. Coll.; Mather's *Magnalia*; Sprague's *Annals of American Pulpit*; Savage's *Gen. Dict.*; Paige's *Hist. of Cambridge*.

"1685, Tuesday Sept. 15. Take leav of Mr. Bond and give him Mr. Oakes Artillery Sermon to read at Sea, stitched in Marble paper."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 96.*

committee reported in June, 1655, that there were not a thousand acres of fit land there, but the Artillery Company might have five hundred acres there, and five hundred in "the southwest of Meadfield." May 15, 1657, the General Court re-affirmed this grant of the first five hundred, and ordered the second five hundred to be laid out adjoining the first five hundred, "else on the southwest of Meadfield." This grant does not seem to have been acceptable, and nothing more in regard to that grant appears upon the records of the colony until Oct. 15, 1673, when it was recorded,—

"Artillery of Boston, theire farme layd out September 11<sup>th</sup> 1673, one thousand of acres of vpland & meadow, and is from a red oake tree marked A, by a gully side, on the banke of Merrimake Riuer, on a straight lyin, wesb: south one mile and three quarters, by marked trees, vnto a pine at B, by a meadow called Spectacle Meadow; from B to C, and about the Meadow to D, taking in those two first patches of meadow, wch meadow is estimated at thirty acres; from D to E, by the brooke called Specticle Brooke, which brooke runs into Nashaway Riuer: from E to F, by Nashaway or Watananock Riuer into Merrimak Riuer. The Court doeth approve of this returne, and doe further grant the artillery Company, as an addition, the quantity of five hundred acres more, Y<sup>r</sup> grant being above thirty years since, prouided that the five hundred acres be laid out in some convenient place next adjoynig to the plantation now granted."

The grant was bounded east by the Merrimack River, south by the Nashua River, west by Spectacle Brook, and eastward about one mile northerly of Nashua River. This embraced the whole of the village of Nashville, and was called the "Artillery Farm." This last location of the grant by the General Court was acceptable to the Artillery Company.

Mr. John Josselyn, in his *Two Voyages to New England*, p. 159, describes the fort on Castle Island as it was in 1671, Roger Clap (1646), captain, commanding: "There is an island on the south side of the passage, containing eight acres of ground. Upon a rising hill within this island, is mounted a castle commanding the entrance; no stately edifice, nor strong; built with brick and stone; kept by a captain, under whom is a master-gunner, and others." This castle, or fort, was burned by accident, March 21, 1672-3. A new fort was therefore erected of stone, with four bastions, and armed with thirty-eight guns and sixteen culverins; there was also a small water-battery of six guns. A royal order was published this year, stating that "each Lieutenant was to carry a partisan, each sergeant was to carry a helbard, and each private was to carry a musquet, with a collar of bandiliers, and also to have and to carry one bayonet or great knife. Two drums were to be delivered to each company."

The new members recruited in 1673-4 were: John Atwood, Nathaniel Blake, Jonathan Bridgham, Benjamin Davis, Hopestill Foster, John Hayward, Thomas Jenner, Jacob Jesson, Francis Morse, James Pennyman, Nathaniel Pierce, John Sandys, John Sweeting, John Taylor, John Usher, and John Waite.

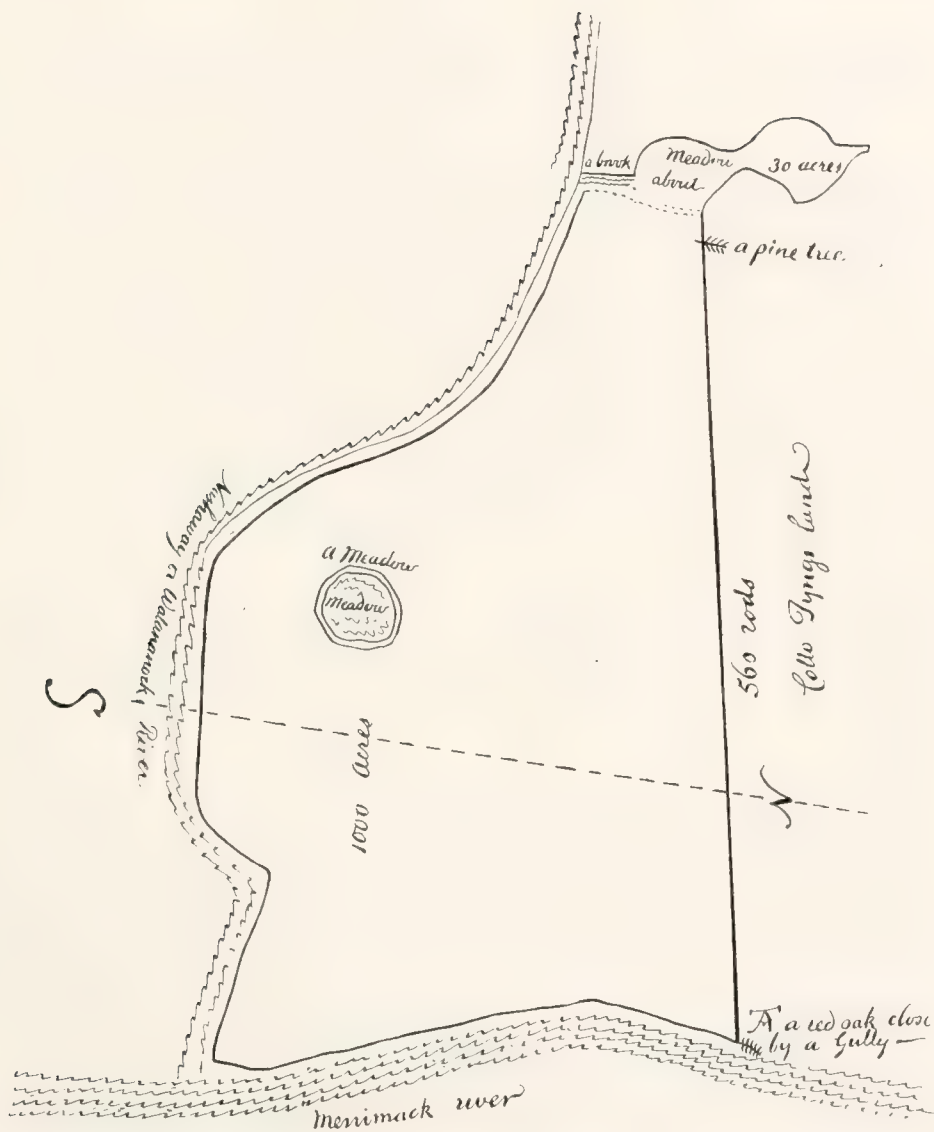
**John Atwood** (1673), of Boston, cordwainer, son of Herman Adwood (1644), of Boston, was born Oct. 5, 1647. He was a captain in the militia, and a deacon of the Second Church. He was elected inspector of houses of entertainment in 1676, a sealer

**John Atwood** (1673). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"[1687-8] Wednesday Feb. 8. . . . Jno Atwood fined by Judge West — marks for refusing

to lay his hands on the Bible in Swearing."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 202.

Under date of March 30, 1688, Judge Sewall writes that John Atwood was imprisoned because he did not pay the 13s. 4d. which he was fined



PLAN of the ARTILLERY FARM at DUNSTABLE,  
MADE FROM ORIGINAL DRAWING ——— N. H.





of leather in 1678-9, and for several years afterward, and, when called "L" in 1690, was a tithing-man. He was active in reviving the Company after Andros's usurpation. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1678, its lieutenant in 1695, and died Aug. 26, 1714.

**Nathaniel Blake** (1673), of Boston, son of William Blake (1646), of Dorchester, was a constable of Boston in 1675-6, and third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1676. He is named in his father's will of June 23, 1703.

**Jonathan Bridgham** (1673), of Boston, a tanner, was the eldest son of Henry (1644), of Boston. He became a freeman in 1675, and was a member of the Old South Church. March 31, 1673, the selectmen of Boston voted to "Let to Jonathan Bridgham [1673] the tan pitts his Father formerly rented of the towne, from the first day of Aprill next for the terme of 8 yeares next ensueinge, he payinge to the treasurer of the towne for the time beinge annually on or before the said 1<sup>st</sup> day of Aprill 30<sup>s</sup> in money." These tan-pits were on the south side of Water Street, near the water. Jonathan (1673) was a constable of Boston in 1677-8, and in 1685-6 was chosen to inspect the transportation of "Hydes." He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1681, and was apointed lieutenant of Capt. James Hill's (1677) company, Feb. 13, 1683-4. His brothers, Benjamin and Joseph, became members of the Artillery Company in 1674. He names them both in his will, made in 1689.

**Benjamin Davis** (1673), of Boston, was a son of Capt. William Davis (1643). He was a major in the militia, and became a member of the Old South Church Sept. 13, 1685. He was admitted a freeman in 1690, and was one of the founders, in 1699, and earliest deacons of Brattle Street Church. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1678, ensign in 1679, lieutenant in 1681, and captain in 1686. He died Nov. 26, 1704.

**Hopetill Foster** (1673), of Boston, soapboiler, son of Capt. Hopetill (1642) and Mary (Bates) Foster, of Dorchester, and father of Capt. Hopetill Foster (1694), of Boston, was born in Dorchester (baptized), March 10, 1645. He was admitted a freeman in 1673, and became a member of the Second Church. He married, Feb. 15, 1667, Elizabeth Payson, of Roxbury. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1675, and became a captain in the colonial militia. He served the town as constable in 1674-5, and Dec. 28, 1676, was appointed one of a committee, as suggested by the "Honored Council," to guard the town against a conflagration. He died in Boston, in 1678. His widow married Edmund Brown (1692).

Feb. 8. He, however, paid the fine and charges, and "Ly not in prison on night."

"Aug. 26 [1714], Amiable useful Deacon Atwood dies between 10. and 11. M. After Sermon a note was put up. Mr. Bridge in his prayer made an honorable mention of him; praying that God would sanctify the awfull stroke in removing one very useful to the Town, one of the props of it."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 16.

"Seventh-day Aug. 28, Deacon John Atwood is buried; was a Great Funeral. Mr Cook and Col Hutchinson went next the relations; Sewall, Ad-dington; Ens Hutchinson, Townsend; Mr. Com-

missary, Mr. Stoddard [pall-bearers]. Buried at the North; is much Lamented."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 17.

**Jonathan Bridgham** (1673). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Benjamin Davis** (1673). AUTHORITIES: Hist. Cat. of Old South Church, p. 278; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Hopetill Foster** (1673). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, p. 399; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**John Hayward** (1673), of Boston in 1671, scrivener, was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1678 and 1679, and second sergeant in 1680. In 1676, Mr. John Hayward (1673), "by a Major vote in papers," was nominated by the inhabitants to the county court, to be appointed clerk of the writs. The Court of Assistants appointed John Hayward postmaster for the whole colony, June 1, 1677, and June 11, 1680, he was confirmed as postmaster "until this court take other order." At the same session of the court, he was appointed ensign of Capt. Oliver's (1640) company, and he was promoted to be lieutenant in Capt. Townsend's (1674) company, May 11, 1681. He was later a notary. "October 28 [1686] Let to John Hayward [1673] of Bostone Notary or his Assigns, the small Shop or roome that is scituate and beinge in the Towne house, at the westerlie end thereof," etc. He died Dec. 2, 1687.

**Thomas Jenner** (1673), of Charlestown, "to whose father liberty of residence in that town was given in 1636," was born in England. He joined the church in Charlestown in 1681. He is called a captain, and probably was a master-mariner. Mr. Savage thinks he was that Thomas Jenner to whom Mr. Drake in his History of Boston thus refers: "At Gravesend he [John Dunton, the London bookseller] found 'a fleet bound for New England,' in which many had taken passage who had been engaged in Monmouth's cause. Mr. Dunton had shipped a large amount of books for Boston, and that he might divide the risk, or, as he expresses it, 'that Neptune might have two throws at him,' he puts his 'venture' into two ships. He was then 'in great suspense,' he says, in which ship to trust himself. However, he went in the 'Susannah and Thomas,' Thomas Jenner [1673], master, with thirty passengers and sixteen sailors." Mr. Dunton, in his Life and Errors, Vol. I., p. 88, says of the captain, "A rough, covetous Tarpaulin; but he understood his business well enough, and had some smatterings of Divinity in his head. He went to prayers very constantly, and took upon him to expound the Scriptures, which gave offence to several of the passengers. The Mate and the Boatswain were good sailors and made it their only study to dispute with tempests." The "Susannah and Thomas" sailed from Gravesend in October, 1685, and was four months in reaching Boston. Thomas Jenner (1673) died about 1699.

**Jacob Jesson** (1673), of Boston, was a merchant, and colonial agent of his brother, Abraham, an ironmonger of London. He was chosen a constable of Boston, March 16, 1673-4, but soon after returned to England.

**Francis Morse** (1673), of Boston, had a wife named Elizabeth, and they had four children born in Boston between July, 1667, and March, 1674. An error of the surname, Morse for Moore, need not be supposed, as Mr. Whitman (1810) suggests.

**James Pennyman** (1673), of Boston, eldest son of James, of Boston, was baptized March 26, 1633. He was a town officer in Boston in 1671-2, and the last of his three children was born Oct. 8, 1674, at which time his name disappears in the Boston Records.

**John Hayward** (1673). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Boston Records.

"Friday, Dec. 2. 1687. About 10. at night, Mr. Jno Hayward dies, having been speechless 48 hours." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 196.

**Thomas Jenner** (1673). AUTHORITIES: New

Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1865, 1882; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Jacob Jesson** (1673). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Francis Morse** (1673). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**James Pennyman** (1673). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Nathaniel Pierce** (1673), of Woburn, son of Robert Pierce, of Woburn, was born Dec. 4, 1655. He was a soldier in King Philip's War, and was engaged in the memorable Falls fight, May 19, 1676. He married (2) Elizabeth Foster, March 23, 1680. He died before Dec. 13, 1692, when his will was probated.

**John Sandys** (1673), of Boston, son of Henry, merchant, of Boston and Rowley, was born Aug. 28, 1646.

**John Sweet** (1673) — though given "John Sweeting" upon the oldest roll — was of Boston in 1640. He was by trade a shipwright, or calker. He became a member of the First Church Jan. 30, 1640-1, and a freeman June 2, 1641. His second wife was Susanna —, by whom he had Susanna, born April 3, 1647, who became the wife of John Oliver (1680).

**John Taylor** (1673), of Cambridge. Probably John Taylor who joined the Artillery Company in 1665, restored to the roll.

**John Usher** (1673), of Boston, and later of Medford, son of Ensign Hezekiah Usher (1638), was born in Boston, April 27, 1648. He was admitted a freeman in 1673, and at first pursued the business of his father, — stationer and bookseller. In 1672, the General Court gave him a monopoly, for seven years, of publishing the valuable edition of the laws of the colony. He was colonel of the Boston regiment in 1687, under Andros's administration; one of his councillors, and treasurer of the colony. Being son-in-law of Samuel Allen, a London merchant, who bought out the claims of the Mason heirs to the proprietorship of New Hampshire, he removed to Portsmouth, and was appointed lieutenant-governor of New Hampshire in 1692, and held the office for five years; but, becoming unpopular with the settlers, he was succeeded by Mr. Partridge. He was reappointed in 1702 by Gov. Dudley (1677). While residing in Portsmouth he carried on his business on Cornhill, Boston.

Mr. Belknap, in his History of New Hampshire, says, concerning Mr. Usher (1673), "John Usher, Esq. [1673], was a native of Boston. He was possessed of a handsome fortune, and sustained a fair character in trade. He had been employed by the Massachusetts government, when in England, 1689, to negotiate the purchase of the Province of Maine, from the heirs of Ferdinand Gorges, and had thereby got a taste for speculating in landed interest. He was one of the part owners in the million purchase, and had sanguine expectations of gain from that quarter. He had rendered himself unpopular among his countrymen, by accepting the office of treasurer under Sir E. Andros, and joining with apparent zeal in the measures of that administration, and he continued a friendly connection with that party after they were displaced.

"Though rather of an open and generous disposition, yet he wanted those accom-

**Nathaniel Pierce** (1673). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Sweet** (1673). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Usher** (1673). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1877; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Histories of Medford.

"[1711-2] Midweek Jan. 30. . . . met Jno' Usher Esqr, who insulted us about keeping the 30<sup>th</sup> Jan." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 333.

The 30th of January was the anniversary of the execution of King Charles I., observed by Royalists but repudiated by Puritans.

"Aug. 21, 1726. The honble John Usher esqr died 7<sup>th</sup> (September) 1. 1726 at his country seat near Meadford. Was brought in the Castle Pinnacle to Boston and buried from his own house. . . . Old Burying place. *Æt.* 79." — *Sewall Papers*.



plishments which he might have acquired by a learned and polite education. He had but little of the statesman and less of the courtier. Instead of an engaging affability, he affected a severity in his deportment, was loud in conversation and stern in command. Fond of presiding in government, he frequently journeyed into the province, and often summoned the council, when he had little or nothing to lay before them. He gave orders, and found fault like one who felt himself independent, and was determined to be obeyed. He had an high idea of his authority and the dignity of his commission; and when opposed and insulted, as he sometimes was, he treated the offenders with severity, which he would not relax, till he brought them to submission. His public speeches were always incorrect and sometimes coarse and reproachful. He seems, however, to have taken as much care for the interest and preservation of the province, as one in his circumstances could have done."

Mr. Whitman (1810) adds, "The Province of New Hampshire sometimes voted him thanks for his services, and others complained of his abusing and oppressing them. He could buy the best situated lands in the interior for 2*d.* to 4*d.* per acre, and, like most speculators, passed through a multitude of lawsuits."

He returned to Massachusetts from Portsmouth, and withdrew to Medford, where he died Sept. 1, 1726. His widow sold his estate of five hundred and four acres and his house to Col. Royal, Dec. 26, 1733, for ten thousand three hundred and fifty dollars.

His brother, Hezekiah, joined the Artillery Company in 1665.

**John Waite** (1673), of Malden, though settled for a short time in Charlestown, was admitted a freeman in 1647; was captain of the militia, and in 1685, by reason of age and blindness, was excused, on his petition, from further service as captain. He was a strenuous supporter of Rev. Marmaduke Matthews, in 1651, and was fined for his opposition to authority. He served as town clerk of Malden in 1662, and was representative to the General Court from 1666 to 1684, and the last year was speaker. He died Sept. 26, 1693, aged seventy-five years.

**Rev. Seaborn Cotton**, of Hampton, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1673. He was born on the ocean, Aug. 12, 1633, during the voyage of his distinguished father, Rev. John Cotton, teacher of the First Church, and his wife, from London to Boston. He graduated at Harvard College in 1651, became a freeman in 1655, and married Dorothy, a daughter of Gov. Bradstreet. He was ordained at Hampton in 1660, and died April 19, 1686.

---

1674-5. The officers elected were: Thomas Lake (1653), captain; Elisha Hutchinson (1670), lieutenant; Theophilus Frary (1666), ensign. Thomas Savage (1665) was first sergeant; Thomas Thacher, Jr. (1671), second sergeant; John Morse (1671), clerk; Ephraim Kempthorn, armorer, and Joshua Hughes, drummer.

A royal officer, who had been sent to America by the government of Charles II., said of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay in 1675, "There are men able to bear arms between thirty and forty thousand, and in the town of Boston about four thousand.

**Rev. Seaborn Cotton.** AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Mather's Magnalia; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, pp. 164-167, 325.



Their trained bands are twelve troops of horse, and six thousand foot; each troop consisting of sixty horses besides officers; all are well mounted and completely armed with back, breast, head-piece, buff-coat, sword, carbine, and pistols, each troop distinguished by their coats. The foot also are well furnished with swords, muskets, and bandoleers. There are no pikemen, they being of no use in the wars with the Indians. The Governor, Mr. Leverett [1639], is the only old soldier in the colony; he served in the late rebellion under the usurper, Oliver Cromwell, as a captain of horse. . . .

"Three miles from Boston, upon a small island, there is a castle of stone, lately built, and in good repair, with four bastions and mounted with thirty-eight guns, sixteen whole culverin, commodiously seated upon a rising ground sixty pace from the water-side, under which, at high water-mark, is a stone battery of six guns. There is a small brick fort lately made at the south end of Boston, with two tier of guns, six in each. One platform on the north side of the town, commanding the river to Charlestown, made of loose stones and turf, is mounted with five demi-culverin and two small guns. There are in the public stores commonly a thousand barrels of powder, with other ammunition and arms proportionly. . . .

"At Dorchester, seven miles from Boston, is a powder-mill, in good repair, well wrought. There is in the country great quantities of saltpetre, especially upon islands where fowl frequent and in swamps where pigeons roost. The powder is as good and strong as the best English powder. There is great plenty of iron ore, and as good iron made as any in Spain. There are six forges for making iron in that colony. The town of Boston contains about two thousand houses, most built with timber and covered with shingles of cedar, as are most of the houses in the country; some few are brick buildings and covered with tiles."

The new members recruited in 1674-5 were: Thomas Bill, Moses Bradford, Benjamin Bridgham, Joseph Bridgham, Edward Creeke, Ambrose Dawes, John Drury, Joseph Farnam, James Green, David Hobart, Joseph Porter, Joseph Prout, Ephraim Sale, Jabez Salter, Ephraim Savage, Robert Sedgwick, Penn Townsend, Daniel Turell, Jr., and Experience Willis.

**Thomas Bill** (1674), of Boston, came from London with his wife, Elizabeth (Sargent) Nichols, whom he married Jan. 14, 1653. He joined the Second Church in 1670, and was admitted a freeman in 1671. In 1673, he, with Daniel Turell, Jr. (1674), agreed to build forty-five feet of the two thousand two hundred feet of wharfing, extending from the Sconce to Capt. Skarlett's wharf.<sup>1</sup> In 1675, upon the death of "widow Upshall,"

<sup>1</sup> In the latter part of 1673, the Honorable Council of Massachusetts Bay recommended to the selectmen that a wall be erected from the Sconce to Skarlett's wharf, to protect the town from fire-ships, etc. The town declined to do so, but gave power to the selectmen to dispose of the flats before the town, and thus build the wall. The selectmen, therefore, offered the flats, or two hundred feet of them, from the wall toward the town, to such as would engage to build the wall. Every member of the board of selectmen except one was a member of the Artillery Company.

The following-named members of the Company engaged and promised to build the wall according to their several subscriptions:—

Capt. Thomas Clarke . . . . .	(1644),	50 feet.	Capt. Thomas Savage . . . . .	(1637),	40 feet.
Richard Way . . . . .	(1642),	25 "	Seth Perry . . . . .	(1662),	30 "
Daniel Turell, Jr. . . . .	(1674),	{ 45 "	Daniel Henchman . . . . .	(1675),	54 "
Thomas Bill . . . . .	(1674),		Theodore Atkinson . . . . .	(1644),	30 "
William Greenough . . . . .	(1675),	30 "	Obadiah Gill . . . . .	(1679),	20 "
Thomas Lake . . . . .	(1653),	30 "	Joseph Prout . . . . .	(1674),	30 "
John Sweet . . . . .	(1673),	30 "	Thomas Brattle . . . . .	(1675),	54 "
William Davis . . . . .	(1643),	40 "			
Gov. John Leverett . . . . .	(1639),	210 "	Total . . . . .		718 feet.

wife of the late Nicholas Upshall (1637), of the Red Lion Inn, Thomas Bill (1674) was approved by the selectmen to keep a house of public entertainment in her room and stead, for the time remaining of her license, from Nov. 1, 1675. His license was annually renewed, and May 22, 1679, he rented the house of Mrs. Mary Lake and was licensed to sell wine in addition. July 27, 1685, the selectmen voted, "Whereas Thomas Bill [1674], by the providence of God is disenabled & vncapeable to manage a publike house, and both he and his wife are content & resolved to lay downe that imploy<sup>m</sup><sup>t</sup>; The Selectmen of this towne doe aproue of Daniel Turell, Jr. [1674], to keepe a publike house of entertainm<sup>t</sup> & to sell wine, beere and cyder by retayle if the Hon<sup>d</sup> Countie Court shall be pleased to grant him licence to doe it in the roome and steed of Thomas Bill [1674]." The latter died Oct. 29, 1696.

**Moses Bradford** (1674), of Salisbury in 1669, of Boston in 1674, son of Robert Bradford, a tailor, was born in Boston, Aug. 2, 1644. He was a member of Major Savage's (1665) company in April, 1681, and was chosen tithing-man therefrom, also in April, 1684. He was drowned in Boston Harbor, March 23, 1692.

**Benjamin Bridgham** (1674), of Boston, son of Henry (1644), was born May 3, 1654. He was a brother of Lieut. Jonathan (1673) and Lieut. Joseph (1674).

**Joseph Bridgham** (1674), of Boston, son of Henry (1644), and brother of Benjamin (1674) and Lieut. Jonathan (1673), was born Jan. 17, 1651-2. He followed the trade of his father,—a tanner,—and became a freeman in 1678. He was a deacon and ruling elder of the First Church, clerk of the market in 1678-9; was elected selectman March 14, 1691-2, and at the same time the selectmen elected him recorder. He represented Northampton in the General Court in 1690, and Boston in 1697. Mr. Drake remarks, "He fell much short of Mr. Joyliffe in spelling." He afterward served on special committees of the town, and Aug. 31, 1702, the selectmen granted him liberty "to Newmake and repaire the Cestern at the Spring formerly Called the Governors Spring," and to carry the waste water under ground into his tanyard. Feb. 13, 1683-4, the General Court chose and appointed "James Hill [1677] captain, Jonathan Bridgham [1673] lieutenant, and Joseph Bridgham [1674] ensign of the foot company late under the command of Capt. John Walley [1671]." He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1691. His son, Henry, joined the Artillery Company in 1699. He died Jan. 5, 1708-9, and was buried in the chapel ground.

**Edward Creeke** (1674) was a tailor, of Boston. March 31, 1673, the selectmen fined him twenty shillings for entertaining Frances Child, a servant from Medfield. He was ensign of Capt. Turner's company in King Philip's War on the Connecticut River,

**Thomas Bill** (1674). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"Abigail [Willis] Bill, wife to Thomas Bill, aged 63 years, died Nov. 7, 1696."—*Bridgman's Copp's Hill Burial-Ground*, p. 64.

**Moses Bradford** (1674). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Joseph Bridgham** (1674). AUTHORITIES: Records of Mass. Bay; Boston Records.

"[1708-9] Jan 8. My worthy friend Mr. Bridgham is buried: Bearers Mr. Cook, Col Hutch-

inson: Elder Cop, Deacon John Marion; Deacon Isaiah Tay, Deacon Thomas Hubbard. Is buried in the Old burying place: Went up by Mr. Dudley's House into King street, and so up between the Town-house and Mr. Phillip's. He was a Righteous, Merciful, publick-Spirited man, very usefull in the Town: was born the 17<sup>th</sup> Jan. 1651-2."—*Sevall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 248.

**Edward Creeke** (1674). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1889; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

also lieutenant with a company of thirty-four men at Wells, Sept. 7, 1676, and later was promoted to be captain. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1685, and died May 6, 1702.

**Ambrose Dawes** (1674), of Boston, son of William Dawes, of Braintree, a bricklayer, was born in Braintree, July 24, 1642. Ambrose (1674) became a freeman in 1671, and married Mary, daughter of Thomas Bumstead (1647). He was probably a brick mason, for Jan. 21, 1669-70, the selectmen appointed him and his father, William, "to survey Chimnys." Ambrose (1674) held town office in 1678 and 1683; also was a constable in 1688, and inspector of brick in 1691. He was a member of Capt. Savage's (1665) company, 1680 to 1686, — probably longer, — and from it was chosen as tithing-man in 1680 and 1686. He held the same office in 1691 and 1697, when his name disappears from the Boston town records. In 1692, he served in "his Majesty's army at Pemaquid," as a soldier and as a workman. In this service he lost one of his eyes, whereupon, on his petition, June 19, 1695, the provincial Legislature allowed him ten pounds out of the public treasury.

He was the ancestor of the three patriots, Col. Thomas Dawes, Jr. (1754), William, Sr. (1760), and William Dawes, Jr. (1768).

**John Drury** (1674), of Boston, carpenter, son of Hugh Drury (1659), was born in Boston, May 2, 1646. • He became a freeman in 1673, was a member of the Old South Church, and died in 1678. He was a private in Capt. Samuel Moseley's (1672) company, which marched against the Indians at Mt. Hope in July, 1675, and returned to Boston after twenty days' service. He was an ensign of Capt. Nathaniel Davenport's company in King Philip's War; was in the Fort fight, Dec. 19, in which Capt. Davenport was killed, and Lieut. Tyng (1668) assumed command, after which Ensign Drury (1674) acted as lieutenant. He is mentioned in the town records but once, Aug. 27, 1677, when he was ordered to replace a post, set up by order of the selectmen, at the corner of the old meeting-house, which he, for some reason, cut down.

**Joseph Farnam** (1674), of Boston, became a freeman in 1674. Probably not a son of Henry (1644), of Roxbury, as Mr. Savage says he "left an only son, Peter." In the transcript from the tombstones in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Thomas Bridgman, this is recorded: "Joseph Farnum aged about 30 years dec<sup>d</sup> Nove<sup>r</sup> ye 30, 1678," followed by a sentence in Latin which is partially obliterated.

**James Green** (1674), of Boston, having been elected by the selectmen "culler of staves" in 1673, and re-elected in 1674, 1675, and 1676, was probably a cooper. His father, James, resided in Charlestown in 1646; was a member of the church there, and

"[1679] Sept. 7, being sabbath, about ten o'clock, all the churches were alarmed with a fire in Lieut. Edward Creeke's house, which begun in a garret, not near the chimney, but must needs be set on fire." — *Diary of John Hull*.

Oct. 15, 1679, Edward Creeke and wife, with eight other persons, were banished from the colony by the General Court, these persons being "vnder vehement suspicion of attempting to burne the towne of Boston." — *Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. V.*

**Ambrose Dawes** (1674). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Laws and Resolves of Mass. Bay, Vol. VII.; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Drury** (1674). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. Cat. of Old South Church; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

**James Green** (1674). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.



at Mystic Side in 1647, when he became a freeman. James, Jr. (1674), was a member of Capt. Hutchinson's (1670) company in April, 1681, and also was a tithing-man. He served as constable in 1684-5, and again as tithing-man in 1690-1. His son, Richard, joined the Artillery Company in 1694.

**David Hobart** (1674), of Hingham, son of Rev. Peter Hobart, was born in August, 1651, and married (1) Joanna, daughter of the second Edmund Quincy. She died May 18, 1695, and he married, (2) Dec. 4, 1695, Sarah Joyce, of Boston. He was admitted a freeman in 1681; was a constable in 1688; selectman eight years, between 1685 and 1714, and was representative in 1692 and 1696. He was known as "Lieutenant," and was also deacon of the church in Hingham. In his will he is called a tanner. He was a nephew of Capt. Joshua Hobart (1641), and his father delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1655.

Lieut. David Hobart died Aug. 21, 1717.

**Joseph Porter** (1674), of Roxbury, son of Edward Porter, was born May 25, 1644. His father's farm in Roxbury was between Hawthorne Street and Walnut Avenue, extending from Cedar Street on the north to Marcella Street on the south.

**Joseph Prout** (1674), of Boston, son of Timothy Prout, shipwright, of Boston, was born about 1651. From 1689 to 1715 he was prominent in town matters, and held the offices of town inspector, constable, assessor, selectman for several years, and town clerk for many more, also treasurer of the town. He was on special committees, and seems to have been efficient and popular. He died Jan. 13, 1721, leaving a widow and one son, Joseph.

**Ephraim Sale** (1674), of Boston, cooper, son of Edward, of Salem in 1635 and of Rehoboth in 1644, married, for his second wife, Mary, daughter of Hopestill Foster (1673). He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1679. He was appointed lieutenant in Capt. Townsend's (1674) company, May 11, 1681; held town office in 1682 and 1683, and was continued in town office in 1690. Judge Sewall (1679) says, "Lieut. Ephraim Sale [1674] died Dec. 2, 1690."

**Jabez Salter** (1674), of Boston, son of William, of Boston, a shoemaker, was born in September, 1647. He died Dec. 31, 1720, and was buried in King's Chapel Burial-Ground. He held office in the town in 1676-7, 1677-8, and 1701-2, and was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1684.

**Ephraim Savage** (1674), of Boston, son of Major Thomas Savage (1637), and brother of Ebenezer (1682), Benjamin (1682), Habijah (1665), and Thomas (1665), was born at Boston, July 20, 1645. He married (1) Mary, daughter of Edmund Quincy, of Braintree. She was a cousin of Judge Sewall's (1679) wife, hence the judge calls

**David Hobart** (1674). AUTHORITIES: Lincoln's Hist. of Hingham; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Joseph Prout** (1674). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Reports of Boston Rec. Com., 1660-1715; Bond's Hist. of Watertown, pp. 409, 911; Boston Records.

**Ephraim Sale** (1674). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, p. 139; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**Jabez Salter** (1674). AUTHORITIES: King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman, p. 38; Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.



Ephraim (1674) his "cousin." Ephraim Savage (1674) married, (2) in 1678, Sarah (Walker) Hough, of Reading, and, (3) in 1688, Elizabeth (Norton) Symmes, daughter of Francis Norton (1643). She died April 13, 1710, and he married, (4) Jan. 8, 1712-13, Elizabeth Brown, of Boston. He graduated at Harvard College in 1662, and was admitted a freeman in 1672. He was selectman of Boston six years, from 1693 to 1696 inclusive, and in 1709 and 1710, besides holding other town offices. He was representative of Boston from 1703 to 1708 inclusive, and in 1710. He was appointed ensign in his father's company in 1677, and succeeded his father as captain, March 17, 1681-2. With the rank of captain, he was second in command of the militia in Phips's disastrous expedition against Quebec in 1690. For several years he was an officer in the Boston militia. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1677, ensign in 1678, lieutenant in 1680, and its captain in 1683. He served with his father in King Philip's War, and at the head of a company was sent to Nova Scotia in the abortive campaign of 1707. He died in February, and was buried March 2, 1730-1. He was a member of the Old South Church.

Mr. Drake, in speaking of the great fire in Boston in 1711, says, "The outhouse in which the fire took is said to have belonged to Capt. Ephraim Savage [1674], who then lived in Williams Court," and that the "poor woman's name was Mary Moss," who occasioned the fire by her "careless sottishness."

**Robert Sedgwick** (1674), of Charlestown, son of Robert (1637), of Charlestown, was probably born in England. He married Sarah —, and had two children. He may have removed to Boston, for by the town records, March 20, 1678-9, a warrant was issued to levy upon the "Estate of Robert Sedgwicke [1674] 20s for entertaineing of Thomas Leachfield contrary to a towne order." He died on a return voyage from Jamaica, and administration was granted on his estate April 26, 1683.

**Penn Townsend** (1674), of Boston, wine merchant, son of William, of Boston, was born Dec. 20, 1651. He married Sarah, daughter of Isaac Addington (1652). His second wife was Sarah's cousin, Mary Dudley, widow of Paul (1677), and daughter of Gov. Leverett (1639). He was a member of the Old South Church. He became a freeman in 1674; was a leading man in town affairs, generally moderator of town meetings, selectman of Boston from 1688 to 1692 inclusive, and representative in 1686 and annually, except during Andros's rule, until 1689, and speaker of the House afterwards. He was one of the council under the new charter, and in 1691 went as a commissioner, with Col. Hutchinson (1670), to make peace with the Indians. He was offered, the year before, the command of the Quebec expedition, but, Phips "offering to go in person," Mr. Townsend (1674) "declined with thanks." He was appointed ensign in 1675, and lieutenant in 1676. He was promoted to be captain in 1680, and became a major in 1694, lieutenant-colonel in 1699, and colonel in 1703, holding the

**Ephraim Savage** (1674). AUTHORITIES: Eaton's Hist. of Reading, p. 111; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Boston Records; Hist. Cat. of Old South Church; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

"Feb. 4, 1712-13. Privat Meeting at our house, pretty number of men: Mr Tilly here: . . . Sung 3 staves 27th P's W[indsor]. . . . Cousin [Ephraim] Savage [1674] was here with his new wife." — *Sewall Papers*.

**Robert Sedgwick** (1674). AUTHORITIES: Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Penn Townsend** (1674). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, p. 184; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Boston Records; Records of Mass. Bay; Resolves of Prov. of Mass. Bay, Vol. VII.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

latter position until 1710. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1677, lieutenant in 1679 and 1690, and its captain in 1681, 1691, 1698, 1709, and 1723. He was actively engaged in its revival after Gov. Andros was deposed, and accepted the lieutenantancy in 1690, becoming captain again the next year. His son, Col. Penn Townsend, Jr., became a member of the Artillery Company in 1700. Col. Townsend (1674) was a member of the Company from 1674 until his decease, covering a period of fifty-three years. He died Aug. 21, 1727. His tombstone is No. 30 in the "Granary," close to the Park Street Church. There are delineations of his character in the *Boston News-Letter*, No. 35, and in the sermon at his funeral, by Rev. Mr. Foxcroft. His residence was on Ann Street, near Mill Creek. Mr. Dunton, the London bookseller, says Col. Townsend (1674) was "a gentleman very courteous and affable in his conversation."

**Daniel Turell, Jr.** (1674), of Boston, blacksmith, son of Capt. Daniel (1660), of Boston, was born Aug. 16, 1646. He joined the Second Church, Sept. 7, 1672, and was a captain in the Boston militia. He died, probably, Jan. 23, 1699.

**Experience Willis** (1674), of Boston, was a son of Michael Willis, of Dorchester in 1638, who removed to Boston, and was one of the founders of the Second Church. Experience (1674), by wife Elizabeth, had twelve children born in Boston between 1671 and 1696.

**Rev. Joshua Moody**, of Portsmouth, delivered the election sermon in 1674 and 1685. He was a son of William Moody, of Newbury; was born in Wales in 1633, graduated at Harvard College in 1653, and was the first minister of the First Church in Portsmouth, being ordained there in July, 1671, though he had preached there in 1658. His wife was a daughter of Edward Collins (1641), of Cambridge. He was called to preach the general election sermon of Massachusetts in 1675, and by the tyranny of Gov. Cranfield was imprisoned in February, 1683, for three months, and was driven to Boston, where he settled as assistant pastor of the First Church in May, 1684. The same year he was invited to the presidency of Harvard College, which he declined. In 1693, he returned to his former parish at Portsmouth, but died while on a visit to Boston, July 4, 1697.

---

**1675-6.** The officers elected were: Thomas Savage (1637), captain; Theophilus Frary (1666), lieutenant; Thomas Thacher, Jr. (1671), ensign. Hopestill Foster (1673) was first sergeant; Peter Bennett (1672), second sergeant; John Morse (1671), clerk; Ephraim Kempthorn, armorer, and Joshua Hughes, drummer.

Gov. Leverett (1639) received a letter by express, on the 21st of June, 1675, from Gov. Winslow, of the Plymouth Colony, announcing that King Philip, head chief of the Wampanoags, had retaliated for the execution of three of his men. Orders were at once issued to Capt. John Richards (1644) to go "as captain of the foot, who shamefully

**Rev. Joshua Moody.** AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Brewster's Annals of Portsmouth; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Hutchinson's Coll., 465.

refused the employment." Capt. Daniel HENCHMAN (1675) was then selected to command the foot company, and Capt. THOMAS PRENTICE to command the horse. The militia captains of Boston and the neighboring towns were ordered to furnish their proportion of one hundred able soldiers, each to have "his armes compleat and snapsack ready to march, and not faile to be at the randevous." On the 25th of July these men were ordered to appear "at their colors in the market-place at six in the evening, with their arms ready fixed for service." The next day, Gen. DANIEL DENISON (1660) was appointed commander-in-chief of all the forces of Massachusetts Bay. Capt. SAMUEL MOSELEY (1672) recruited his company of "privateers" at this time, and for this service. Another company was sent under the command of Capt. ISAAC JOHNSON (1645). King Philip was driven from Plymouth Colony, and the Narraganset country of Rhode Island, and took refuge with the Nipmunks in the interior of Massachusetts.

The war on the part of the Indians is described as one of ambuscades. They never met the English in open field, but always fled before them, retreating into swamps, or hiding in the thickets. By the rapidity of their descent, they seemed omnipresent among the scattered villages, which they ravaged like a passing cyclone, and for a full year they kept all New England in a state of terror and excitement.

The whole colony was aroused, and troops were sent from the seaboard towns into the interior. A company of young men, the "Flower of Essex," commanded by Capt. THOMAS LOTHROP (1645), of Salem, was cut off while escorting a provision train at a stream since known as Bloody Brook, Deerfield. The captain, with nearly his entire company of seventy men, was killed. Capt. SAMUEL MOSELEY (1672), hearing the firing, hastened from the upper part of Deerfield, and, coming upon the Indians as they were scalping the dead, after a severe fight, defeated and drove them.

Boston was filled with fugitives from the rural settlements, fearing and hating the "bloody heathen." Rev. JOHN ELIOT, the apostle, was exposed to insults in his efforts to protect the "Praying Indians," as his converts were called. The Natick tribe, "those poor, despised sheep of Christ," as their superintendent, Major-Gen. GOOKIN (1645), called them, were exiled to Deer Island, in Boston Harbor, where they suffered excessively during the following winter.

The commissioners of the United Colonies met at Boston in September, and formally declared war against King Philip, and in November an expedition was organized, with Gen. JOSIAH WINSLOW, Governor of the Plymouth Colony, as its commander-in-chief. He was efficiently aided in the organization of the expedition by Gov. LEVERETT (1639), by JOHN HULL (1660), colonial treasurer, and by JOHN MORSE (1671), the commissary of the Boston regiment. The men were not only supplied with "amunition," but with "wastcoats and drawers," "liquors," "rumme," "Tobaco & pipes," "biskit," "raisins," "porke," "beefe," "stockins and shoos," "and hats." JOSEPH DUDLEY (1677), of Boston, was the headquarters chaplain. The Massachusetts quota rendezvoused on Dedham plain, and was formally turned over to Gen. WINSLOW by Gen. DENISON (1660), on Thursday, Dec. 9. It consisted of a troop of horse and six companies of foot, under Major SAMUEL APPLETON, of Ipswich, who retained his command as captain of the first company. The second company was commanded by Capt. SAMUEL MOSELEY (1672); the third company was under Capt. JAMES OLIVER (1640), the lieutenant of the third company being EPHRAIM TURNER (1663), and its orderly sergeant, PETER BENNETT (1672); the fourth company was commanded by Capt. ISAAC JOHNSON (1645), of Roxbury, and in the fifty company was ENSIGN JOHN DRURY (1674). In addition to the above-named



members of the Artillery Company who held commissions in the Winslow expedition, there were others in the ranks, and many soldiers who afterwards became members.

The following names are gathered chiefly from that valuable work, *Soldiers in King Philip's Wars, 1675-1677*, by Rev. George M. Bodge. They are the names of persons who were, before or after the war, members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, and were more or less connected with that series of conflicts:—

Henry Adams (1652), killed.  
 Benjamin Allen (1677).  
 Sergt. Peter Bennett (1672), wounded.  
 Cornet Thomas Brattle (1675).  
 Matthew Bridge (1643), quartermaster.  
 George Broughton (1667).  
 Hugh Clark (1666).  
 William Clark (1646).  
 Lieut. Edward Creeke (1674).  
 Lieut. Philip Curtis (1666), killed.  
 Capt. John Cutler (1681).  
 Capt. William Davis (1643), wounded.  
 Major-Gen. Daniel Denison (1660).  
 William Dinsdale (1658).  
 John Drury (1674).  
 Joseph Dudley (1677), chaplain.  
 Benjamin Dyer (1691).  
 Col. Francis Foxcroft (1679).  
 Theophilus Frary (1666), commissary.  
 Capt. Benjamin Gibbs (1666).  
 Lieut. William Hasey (1652).  
 Capt. Daniel Henchman (1675).  
 Capt. Joshua Hobart (1641).  
 Nathaniel Holmes (1693).  
 Thomas Huckens (1637), commissary.  
 Thomas Hunt (1685).  
 Capt. Edward Hutchinson (1638), killed.  
 Capt. John Jacobs (1682).  
 Capt. Isaac Johnson (1645), killed.

Robert Jones (1679), killed.  
 Capt. Thomas Lake (1653), killed.  
 Capt. Thomas Lothrop (1645), killed.  
 Charles Lidget (1679).  
 Simon Lynde (1658).  
 John Morse (1671), commissary.  
 Capt. Samuel Moseley (1672).  
 Capt. James Oliver (1640).  
 Capt. Nicholas Paige (1693).  
 John Paine (1666).  
 Seth Perry (1662).  
 Nathaniel Pierce (1673).  
 Major William Phillips (1644).  
 Zechariah Phillips (1660), killed.  
 Corp. Solomon Phips (1681).  
 Capt. John Plympton (1643), killed.  
 William Pollard (1679).  
 Lieut. Nathaniel Reynolds (1658).  
 John Ruggles (1646).  
 Ephraim Savage (1674).  
 Major Thomas Savage (1637).  
 Thomas Savage, Jr. (1665).  
 Capt. Joshua Scottow (1645).  
 Capt. Robert Seeley (1642), killed.  
 Benjamin Thurston (1675).  
 Lieut. Ephraim Turner (1663).  
 Edward Tyng (1668), wounded.  
 Major Richard Waldron (1659).  
 Nathaniel Williams (1667).

The Massachusetts troops were joined at Providence by the Plymouth quota. After some preliminary skirmishing on the way, in which parties under Capt. Moseley (1672) and Sergt. Bennett (1672) captured forty prisoners, who were sold as slaves, Gov. Winslow's forces joined the Connecticut regiment at Pettisquamscot. He then had under his command one thousand and thirteen officers and men, with one hundred and fifty friendly Mohegan Indians. The troops bivouacked in the open field, that night, in a cold snow-storm, but early the next morning, Dec. 19, marched to attack the Narraganset stronghold, known as the Great Swamp Fort, in what is now the town of South Kingston, R. I.

The Massachusetts regiment led the column, followed by the Plymouth regiment, and the Connecticut troops brought up the rear. Early in the afternoon, the edge of the swamp in which the stronghold had been built was reached. The swamp was filled with low cedars, and in the centre was an island, with an area of five or six acres, on which a renegade Englishman had planned a fortification. "The side of it," says Mr. Hubbard, was "made of palisadoes set upright, and which was compassed about with a Hedge of



almost a rod Thickness." These rude works would have been almost impregnable to the assailants had not the swamp been frozen. The customary entrance was over a fallen tree, across a "place of water," over which but one could pass at a time. When the Indian outposts retreated into the fortification, the Massachusetts troops were able to follow on the ice as well as on the log. Capt. Johnson (1645) was mortally wounded while crossing on the log, and Capt. Davenport was shot dead as he entered the fortification. The storming party retreated, and lay on the ground until the enemy's fire slackened, when Capts. Moseley (1672) and Gardiner advanced with their companies to support them. They lost so heavily that they were about to retire when Major Appleton came up, with Capt. Oliver (1640), and, massing the two companies, carried the fortification by storm after a two hours' fight.

The wigwams and storehouses of the Indians were burned, and some of the old people and children perished in the flames. The colonists had six captains and two hundred and thirty privates killed or wounded, and, feeling they could not resist Indian reinforcements, the remainder withdrew at midnight, to march fifteen miles in a driving snow-storm. The infuriated Indians avenged themselves during the winter by attacks on the frontier settlements. Early in the spring, Canonchet was captured, and indignantly refused to bring about peace were his life spared. When told that he must then prepare to die, he replied, "I like it well; I shall die before my heart is soft or I have spoken anything unworthy of myself." Two Indians were detailed for the purpose, and he was shot at Stonington, Conn.

The Company appears to have discovered, at this time, that their "orders," or "by-laws," adopted in 1657, were of no official value, because they had not been approved or "allowed by the court." The following action was consequently taken:—

"April 5th, 1675. It was then voted by the Artillery Company, that the orders of the Company be presented by Thomas Clarke, Esq. [1644], to the General Court or Council, for their confirmation.

"JOHN MORSE [1671], *Clerk*."

The following endorsement was then made on the by-laws:—

"The Court, having perused the above written orders of the Artillery Company, do allow and approve thereof.

"Attest :

"EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary*."

The new members recruited in 1675-6 were: Thomas Brattle, Andrew Clarke, Joseph Davis, William Gibson, William Greenough, William Griggs, Daniel Henchman, John Jackson, Samuel Johnson, Simeon Messinger, John Moore, Ephraim Morse, John Nichols, Daniel Quincy, Simeon Stoddard, John Temple, Benjamin Thurston.

**Thomas Brattle** (1675), of Boston, was of Charlestown in 1656, but removed the next year to Boston. He married, in 1656-7, Elizabeth, daughter of Capt. William

**Thomas Brattle** (1675). *AUTHORITIES*: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1877, p. 57; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Account of the Descendants of Capt. Thomas Brattle, by Edward D. Harris, 1687; King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman, p. 259.

"[1710] Aug. 11. Sixth-day, I visited Mr. Tho Brattle, who is very low and languishing; He express'd great respect to me, yet plainly told me, that

frequent visits were prejudicial to him, it provok'd him to speak more than his strength would bear, would have me come seldom. He said to me his Thigh was no bigger than my Wrist. I said I hop'd as the weather grew Temperate, he might recruit, which he seem'd to assent to."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 286.

Tyng (1638). He was appointed cornet of the Suffolk troop, May 30, 1670, lieutenant Oct. 13, 1675, and captain May 5, 1676. Sept. 8, 1675, by order of the council, Cornet Thomas Brattle (1675), with a party of horsemen under his command, went to Groton. He was with the forces at Narragansett; May 15, 1676, he had a battle with Indians, killing twenty; May 24 following, he fought them again at the falls of the "Pocotuck River," and June 30, 1676, he was sent on an expedition towards Mount Hope.

Capt. Brattle (1675) was a valuable friend to the colony. He loaned it two hundred pounds, and in the first few months of the war he is credited with fifteen hundred pounds, expended in behalf of the colony to carry it on.

He was one of the founders of the Old South Church; non-resident representative for Lancaster in 1671 and 1672; for Concord in 1678 and 1679, and commissioner to King Philip, with Capt. William Davis (1643) and Capt. William Hudson (1640), at Taunton, in 1671. He was selectman of Boston thirteen years, from 1671 to 1683 inclusive, and was prominent in town affairs for many years.

His wife died very suddenly, at a wedding in her own house, Nov. 9, 1682; and he died April 5 following, leaving probably the largest estate in New England. Major-Gen. William Brattle (1729), the son of Rev. William, of Cambridge, was a grandson of Capt. Thomas (1675). Some of the estate of Thomas (1675) was in Brattle Street, for whom that street is named.

**Andrew Clarke** (1675), of Boston, was a son of Thomas Clarke, of Plymouth. He was married and had three children born in Boston; the first was born July 10, 1672, and the third Dec. 8, 1676. In 1677, moved to Harwich. He was elected a town officer, March 12, 1676-7.

**Joseph Davis** (1675), of Boston, — whom Mr. Whitman (1810) wrongfully calls "son of Capt. William Davis [1643] and born in 1645," — married, May 7, 1662, Elizabeth, daughter of David Saywell (1664), became a freeman in 1666, and appears as one of the founders of the Old South Church in 1669.

**William Gibson** (1675), of Boston in 1665, a cordwainer, was admitted to be a freeman in 1677. He held the office of sealer of leather several years, viz., 1665, 1671, 1677, and 1684 to 1690. He was constable in 1678-9, clerk of the market in 1666-7, and tithing-man in 1690. Mr. Savage says he supposes this Gibson is the gifted preacher mentioned by Backus, I., 435. Lieut. William Gibson (1675) was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1684.

**William Greenough** (1675), of Boston, shipwright, was born in England, and became a freeman in 1673. He was captain of one of the Boston companies, and served in King Philip's War in 1676; was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1679, and ensign in 1691. William Greenough (1675) was a member of Capt. John Richards's (1644) company, of Boston, in 1689; was constable in 1677-8. He died Aug. 6, 1693, aged fifty-two years. He was buried under arms, the same evening, in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground. His son, John, became a member of the Artillery Company in 1712.

**William Gibson** (1675). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**William Greenough** (1675). AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850, p. 78; 1863, p. 167.

"Sabbath Augt 6. 1693, Capt Wm Greenough died about 4 this morn, buried about nine at night. Three Vollies past nine at night. Neither Major General nor Major Hutchinson in Town. Bright moon-shine." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 381.

**William Griggs** (1675), of Boston, a cooper, became a freeman in 1672, and married a daughter of John Hannaford. He was a member of Major Savage's (1637) company, of Boston, in 1680, constable in 1683-4, town clerk in 1696-7, and for five years thereafter. The town records bear testimony to his interest in copying and preserving the old records. In 1713, Mr. Griggs (1675) was appointed to superintend the delivery of wheat from vessels to the families, and in 1714 was given charge of the granary at thirty pounds a year. This position he held until Dec. 10, 1717, when the selectmen voted, "Mr Will<sup>m</sup> Griggs is Ordered to Lodg the Key of the Granary w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Town Treasurer untill further Order." July 20, 1732, he was granted a license to sell "Strong Drink." Mr. Whitman (1810) says administration on his estate was granted Nov. 5, 1737.

**Daniel Henchman** (1675), of Boston, is first known in Boston by the following from the town records: "Agreed with M<sup>r</sup> Dannell Hincheman for £40, p Ann<sup>m</sup> to assisist M<sup>r</sup> Woodmancy in the grammer Schoole & teach Children to wright, the Yeare to begine the 1<sup>st</sup> of March 65-6." He continued in that profession until Jan. 3, 1671, when Mr. Ezekiel Cheever took charge of the school. He was admitted a freeman in 1672, and in the Boston town records is called "captain" the same year. In that position he was distinguished during King Philip's War, having command of the company of foot, June 25, 1675, in company with Capt. Prentice with a company of horse. An eclipse of the moon that evening discouraged the expedition much. They proceeded onward the next day, and arrived at Swansea before night, on the 28th. Major Thomas Savage (1637) soon arrived, brought up reinforcements, and took command of the forces. "A few skirmishes routed the Indians in that quarter. King Philip fled to the western part of the colony, and Capt. Henchman [1675] with some of the troops returned. In November, he started again from Boston, with another company. Near Mendon they heard of a party of Indians, and it was resolved to give them a camisado, as they called it, in their wigwams. The captain [1675] and his lieutenant, Philip Curtis [1666], accordingly led their men out to the fight, but most of them flinched in the moment of need, and Capt. Henchman [1675] and Lieut. Curtis [1666] were left with only five men to finish the combat. Lieut. Curtis [1666], with one man, was killed, and the object of the excursion was lost." He was also captain of a Boston company in 1679 and 1680.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "Capt. Henchman [1675] set out the great elm-tree on Boston Common,<sup>1</sup> for a shade to the military companies which might exercise there in after time." This tree was standing in 1825, and measured twenty-one feet and eight inches in circumference. Its final destruction took place Feb. 16, 1876.

Having served on a committee for surveying a new plantation,—now Worcester,—

**William Griggs** (1675). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Daniel Henchman** (1675). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1873, p. 311; Mather's Magnalia, Vol. II, p. 561; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Lincoln's Hist. of Worcester; Snow's Hist. of Boston; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church. Letter of Daniel Henchman, in regard to the Indian fight at Hassanamesit, Nov. 9, 1675, is printed in the New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1871, p. 10. Mr. Shurtleff, in his Topog. Des. of Boston, gives a

long account of the "Old Elm" on Boston Common.

"[1685] Monday, Oct<sup>r</sup> 19<sup>th</sup>. . . . About nine a'clock at night News came to Town of Capt Henchman's Death at Worcester last Thorsday; buried on Friday. Very few at his Funeral, bis own Servants, a white and black, carried him to, and put him in his grave. His wife and children following and no more or but one or two more."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 100.

<sup>1</sup> Boston Commercial Gazette, April 25, 1825.



about 1665, he became a proprietor, and in his last days resided in that town, dying there Oct. 15, 1685. He was a member of the Old South Church, and was prominent in town matters for several years. His estate inventoried one thousand three hundred and eighty-two pounds.

**John Jackson** (1675), of Boston, son of John, of Boston, a carpenter, was born June 26, 1643. He was a member of Capt. Daniel Henchman's (1675) company in 1680 and 1681.

**Samuel Johnson** (1675), of Boston, held some minor town offices, and in 1680 was a member of Capt. Davis's (1673) Boston company. In 1681 was clerk of the market; in 1684, constable; in 1686 was a member of the same military company, with Penn Townsend (1674) captain; tithing-man in 1691, as in 1681 and 1686, and measurer of grain in 1700 and 1701. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1692, ensign in 1697, and lieutenant of the colonial militia.

**Simeon Messinger** (1675), of Boston, son of Henry (1658), of Boston, was born March 19, 1645. He married, in 1667, Bethia Howard, of Boston. His name is on the tax lists from 1674 to 1688, and he was a member of Capt. Elisha Hutchinson's (1670) company in 1685.

**John Moore** (1675), of Boston, became a freeman in 1671. He was a brewer, and had a large estate. By wife, Lydia, he had children born in Boston, from 1673 to 1687 inclusive. In 1681, he was a member of Major Clarke's (1644) military company. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1680. Administration on his estate was granted to his wife, July 13, 1693.

**Ephraim Morse** (1675), son of John, of Dedham, was born in that town, July 19, 1648. His parents removed to Boston in 1654. Ephraim (1675) was in Boston in 1677, but was an early settler in Newtown, Long Island.

**John Nichols** (1675), of Boston, a joiner, son of Randall, of Boston, was born Jan. 16, 1654, and was a member of the Old South Church. He became a freeman in 1690. He was a constable of Boston in 1686-7, a member of Capt. Hutchinson's (1670) company, in Boston, and a tithing-man in 1692-3.

Ambrose Dawes (1674), in his will, Oct. 17, 1705, appoints "his brother Mr. John Nichols [1675]" an executor.

**Daniel Quincy** (1675), of Boston, a goldsmith, son of Edmund Quincy, of Braintree, was born Feb. 7, 1651, in what is now Quincy. The father, Edmund, was the common ancestor of the Quincys in Massachusetts. Daniel (1675) married, Nov. 9,

**Samuel Johnson** (1675). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Simeon Messinger** (1675). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1862, p. 310; Boston Records.

**John Moore** (1675). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Nichols** (1675). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

**Daniel Quincy** (1675). AUTHORITIES: King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman, p. 208; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1857; Harris's Descendants of Thomas Brattle, p. 4.

"[1690] Tuesday Aug. 12. About 7. P. M. we lay the body of Cous. Daniel Quinsey in my Father's Tomb." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 327.



1682, Hannah, daughter of Rev. Thomas Shepard, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1663. Daniel (1675) and Hannah left but one son, John (Harv. Coll., 1708), the great-grandfather of President John Quincy Adams. Daniel's (1675) brother, Edmund, was the ancestor of the distinguished orator and patriot, Josiah Quincy, who was the father of Josiah, the president of Harvard College.

"Daniell Quinsey [1675]" was a constable of Boston in 1683-4, and died Aug. 10, 1690. He witnessed the will of John Hull (1660), "a silversmith," March 13, 1683-4.

**Simeon Stoddard** (1675), of Boston, son of Anthony (1639), baptized May 25, 1651, was a member of the provincial council and of the Old South Church. May 11, 1681, he was appointed ensign of the foot company under command of Capt. Penn Townsend (1674), and to have his commission when his freedom was granted by the court. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1702.

His first wife died Aug. 13, 1708. In 1709, he married for his second wife the widow of Col. Samuel Shrimpton (1670). She died April 13, 1713. His third wife was Mehitable Minot, widow of Hon. Peter Sargent. His death is thus noticed in the papers: "On Thursday morning last [Oct. 15, 1730] died here [in Boston] the Honorable Simeon Stoddard, Esquire, formerly of His Majesty's Council of this Province, in the 80<sup>th</sup> year of his age."

**John Temple** (1675), a carpenter, was probably a son of Sir Thomas, who came to Boston in 1657. It was he who, tradition says, persuaded the King that the pine-tree on the coin struck in Boston represented the royal oak that saved his Majesty.

John (1675) was admitted a freeman in 1671, and was living in 1695. He held town office from 1679 to 1688 inclusive, and was tithing-man in 1680, being a member of Capt. William Hudson's (1640) Boston company; also in 1686, when he was a member of Capt. James Hill's (1679) company.

**Benjamin Thurston** (1675), of Boston, son of John, of Salem in 1638, was born July 8, 1640. He was a weaver by trade, became a freeman in 1665, was one of the founders of the Old South Church in 1669, and in 1674 the General Court made him an ensign. He took part in King Philip's War, and died Nov. 10, 1678.

He married Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Walker. He held town office in 1671 and 1677, and in 1676 was appointed one of the town inspectors to prevent disorders in unlicensed houses of entertainment, etc. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1677.

**Rev. Samuel Phillips**, of Rowley, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1675. He was a son of Rev. George Phillips, the first minister of Watertown, and came to New England with his father in 1630, being five years of age. He graduated at Harvard

**Simeon Stoddard** (1675). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851, p. 24 *et seq.*; Stoddard Genealogy; Sumner's Hist. of East Boston.

**John Temple** (1675). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Benjamin Thurston** (1675). AUTHORITIES: Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Boston Records. In 1678, Judge Sewall was very ill with small-

pox. He afterward wrote in his diary, "Multitudes died, two of my special Friends, viz: Mr. John Noyes [1676] and Benjamin Thurston [1675], who both died while I lay sick."

**Rev. Samuel Phillips**. AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Bond's Hist. of Watertown; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Hist. of Rowley; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit. 1

College in 1651, was ordained in June, 1652, and settled in Rowley as colleague with Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, who, with his company, founded in 1639 the town of Rowley.

Rev. Samuel Phillips died April 22, 1696. "The many distinguished men in Massachusetts who have for generations made the name of Phillips illustrious are his descendants."

The officers elected were: Elisha Hutchinson (1670), captain; 1676-7. Daniel Turell (1660), lieutenant, and Freegrace Bendall (1667), ensign. John Walley (1671) was first sergeant; Benjamin Gibbs (1666), second sergeant; Nathaniel Blake (1673), third sergeant; Nathaniel Williams (1667), fourth sergeant; John Morse (1671), clerk, and Joshua Hughes, drummer.

The Indian war was continued, the knowledge of the country possessed by the Indians enabling them to destroy several villages, and lead parties of the colonists into ambushes, where they were cruelly murdered.

While thus devastated by an American foe, Massachusetts was threatened with royal interference. After ten years of political quiet, during which time the British government had refrained from molesting the colony, a royal agent named Edward Randolph appeared. He was described by Cotton Mather as a "blasted wretch, followed with a sensible curse of God wherever he came, — despised, abhorred, unprosperous." Two objects he never concealed, — the overthrowing of the Massachusetts charter, and the setting up of the Church of England in Boston. The contest commenced by him culminated a hundred years later in the Declaration of Independence.

Edward Randolph, arriving in Boston in June, waited on Gov. Leverett (1639), announced "the cause of his coming," and desired "that, with what convenient speed might be, the magistrates might be assembled to hear his Majesty's letter read." The Governor replied that he could present himself to the magistrates on the afternoon of the same day, as they were then to meet on other business. At the time appointed, he was "admitted into the council, where he found the Governor, with the secretary and six other magistrates. He handed the King's letter to the Governor, who desired him to be seated. 'The Governor broke the seal, and reading the words, 'By his Majesty's command, Henry Coventry,' asked Randolph who Coventry might be, and was informed that he was the King's principal secretary of state."

Gov. Leverett (1639) then read the letter aloud. In it the King acquainted the magistrates with the representations that had been made to him in memorials of Gorges and Mason, of which he transmitted copies. The King said he had accordingly determined to require the colony to send agents to answer to these charges, and he commanded that Randolph should be admitted to the council of the magistrates to hear his letter read, and that he should bring back their answer. During the reading, three of the magistrates, following Randolph's example, "put off their hats, and sat uncovered, but the Governor, with the rest, continued to keep their hats on." The reading being finished, "the Governor told the council that the matters therein contained were very

"[1676] Monday June 5 Mr. Hutchinson chosen Captain, Mr Turin Lieut, Mr Bendal, Ensign of the Artillery. . . .

"Monday, Oct. 5, Cloudy, Lowering day, yet the Artillery Company goes over to Charlestown:

the 2 companies train: we divide into 2 and with the Cambridge Artillery oppose them upon the Hill in prospect of the Harbour. Mr. Cotton Mather prayed with us in the morn and at breaking up." — *Seewall's Diary*.

inconsiderable things, and easily answered, and it did in no way concern that government to take any notice thereof." Randolph said that he had the King's order to require an answer, and to wait one month for it. "The Governor answered that they should consider of those things," and the envoy withdrew.

The magistrates, after two days' consideration, resolved to return their thanks to the King for his "gracious letter," and to send a further answer to it by a vessel about to sail for London. They called Randolph in, and told him that, if he proposed to take passage in that vessel, they would intrust him with the letter which they had prepared to one of the secretaries of state; otherwise, he would have a duplicate of it whenever he should be ready to depart. He said that he "had other matters of concern under his charge, and should not return so soon; and withal asked them if they had well considered of his Majesty's letter, and the enclosed petition, in so short a time, and concluded on their agents, and the time of their going to England." The Governor, without answering the question, inquired whether he "had anything further to offer them" from the King. Randolph replied that he had nothing; and the Governor said only "that he looked upon him as Mr. Mason's agent," and then bowed him out of the council chamber. This was the beginning of trouble between the crown and the colony.

Meanwhile, King Philip had gone back to his stronghold. Capt. Church, when the news reached Rhode Island, hastened over to Bristol Neck, where he arrived at midnight. He marched a party to the neighborhood of the designated spot, and there, before dawn, they lay down in the bushes. When day broke, the Indians, perceiving themselves to be so closely beset, rushed from their hiding-place in a disorderly manner, under a heavy fire of those lying in wait. At one of the points likely to be passed by the fugitives, Capt. Church had stationed an Englishman and a friendly Indian, who presently saw King Philip approaching them, half dressed, and running at full speed. The Englishman's gun missed fire. The Indian's gun was effective, one bullet passing through the heart of the chief, and another lodging in his shoulder. "He fell upon his face in the mud and water, with his gun under him." King Philip's hands were cut off and carried to Boston. His head was taken to Plymouth, and there exposed upon a pole, on a day appointed for a public thanksgiving.

The new members recruited in 1676-7 were: Bozoun Allen, Nathaniel Barnes, Robert Butcher, William Colman, John Meader, John Noyes, William Phillips, William Tomlins, Samuel Wakefield, Isaac Walker, and Joshua Winsor.

**Bozoun Allen** (1676), of Boston, son of Capt. Bozoun Allen (1650), of Boston, was born Feb. 13, 1652-3, and married, in 1673, Rachel, a daughter of Jeremiah Houchin (1641). Capt. Allen (1676) succeeded to the large business of tanning leather which his father-in-law had carried on. The former was a man of influence, probably a leader of the mechanic interests of Boston; was frequently moderator of the town meetings, and held office in town. He was admitted to be a freeman Oct. 11, 1682; was constable of the town in 1680, selectman from 1691 to 1698 inclusive, and was representative in 1700. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1681, ensign in 1690, lieutenant in 1691, and captain in 1696. He was active in the revival of the Company after Andros's departure.

**Bozoun Allen** (1676). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"Sargt Bozoone Allen [1676] is appointed

ensigne to a foot company in Boston vnder the command of Capt Elisha Hutchinson [1670] & to haue comission when he hath his freedom granted him by the Court." — *Records of Mass. Bay, Vol. V.*



**Nathaniel Barnes** (1676), of Boston in 1675, was a merchant, who, Aug. 18, 1679, was chosen town clerk. He was a member of Capt. Sewall's (1679) company, and a tithing-man in 1685 and 1686. He was clerk of the Artillery Company from 1680 to 1682 inclusive, and was first sergeant in 1684.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says that by direction of the commander, Major Savage (1637), Nathaniel Barnes (1676) in 1680 made a complete roll of all members, with their bondsmen, and also a complete list of the officers from the beginning. This he certified to, as clerk, in 1681. To the preservation of this list we are indebted for all we know of the first years of the Company. His labors were great, and in 1746 his lists were thought worthy of being transcribed. Mr. Dunton, the London bookseller, says, "Mr. Barnes [1676] was clerk to the government, a matchless accomptant, a great musician, bookish to a proverb, very generous to strangers." In 1681, the General Court granted to Mr. Barnes (1676) two hundred acres of land.

**Robert Butcher** (1676), of Boston, was admitted a freeman in 1677, and was a member of the Old South Church. He was by trade a cooper. He was chosen clerk of the market in 1679-80, a member of "Capt Wally's [1671]" company, and a tithing-man in 1680-1, constable in 1684-5, and held minor town offices.

**William Colman** (1676), son of Matthew, was born Aug. 3, 1643. He came from Satterly, Norfolk County, England, with his wife, Elizabeth, in the "Arabella," in 1671. His first wife having died, he married, March 6, 1712, Lydia, daughter of Joshua Scottow (1645), and widow of (1) Benjamin Gibbs (1666) and of (2) Anthony Checkley (1662), attorney-general. Ensign William (1676) was the father of Rev. Benjamin Colman, D. D., who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1702. William (1676) became a member of the Second Church, July 6, 1688, but united with the Brattle Street Church in 1699, and continued a member thereof, under the preaching of his son, who was the first minister of that church. William Colman (1676) was third sergeant of the Company in 1683, and ensign in 1692. He held office in the town of Boston for several years, being a member of the first board of overseers of the poor, March 9, 1690-1. The seventh day, March 29, 1712, Judge Sewall (1679) wrote, "Mr. Colman [1676] the father died last Thorsday night."

**John Meader** (1676).

**John Noyes** (1676), of Boston, son of Rev. James Noyes, of Newbury, was born June 3, 1645. He was admitted a freeman in 1675. July 27, 1674, the selectmen voted, "John Noyse is prohibited to imploy his brother William Noyse as a Cooper vpon the penaltie of 10<sup>s</sup> a weeke haucinge serued but 4 $\frac{1}{4}$  yeares to the trade and not 21 yeares of age." Mr. John Noyes (1676) was constable in 1675. He married Sarah, daughter of Peter Oliver (1643), and their son, Dr. Oliver Noyes, joined the Artillery Company in 1699. Ensign John Noyes (1676) was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1678, and a member of the Old South Church. He died Nov. 9, 1678.

**Nathaniel Barnes** (1676). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Boston Records.

**Robert Butcher** (1676). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

**William Colman** (1676). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Noyes** (1676). AUTHORITIES: Reminiscences of a Nonagenarian, by Sarah A. Emery, Newburyport, 1879; Boston Records.



**William Phillips** (1676). This is probably a re-entry of Major William Phillips. He joined the Company in 1644, went to Saco, Me., about 1660, and returned to Boston to reside in 1675-6, having been absent fifteen years. See page 142.

**William Tomlins** (1676) was, Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "a son or grandson of Edward [1637]." When William Tomlin,<sup>1</sup> or Tomlyne (1676), joined the Artillery Company in 1676, Ensign Wing (1671) and Sergt. Walley (1671) were his sureties. In Ensign Wing's (1671) will, proved March 12, 1702-3, he mentions a daughter, "Sarah Tomlin."

**Samuel Wakefield** (1676) was a resident of Boston in 1675. Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "In his house one of the great fires in Boston began." In 1684, the General Court refused his petition "to set up a wooden frame." He was an officer of the town in 1685, 1686, and 1687.

**Isaac Walker** (1676), of Boston, son of Isaac (1644), was born Sept. 27, 1645. Sergt. Isaac Walker (1676) was appointed ensign in Capt. Daniel Henchman's (1675) company, Oct. 13, 1680, and was promoted to be lieutenant of the same company, Oct. 10, 1683.

**Joshua Winsor** (1676), of Boston, son of Robert, of Boston, was born June 6, 1647. Joshua (1676) was a member of the Second, or Mather's, Church, and became a freeman in 1678. He was a member of Capt. Henchman's (1675) company, and a tithing-man in 1680, and held town office for several years afterward. He died in November, 1717.<sup>2</sup>

**Rev. Samuel Willard**, of Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1676. He was a son of Major Simon Willard, of Groton; was born Jan. 31, 1640, graduated at Harvard College in 1659, and was ordained July 13, 1662. Mr. Willard married, (1) Aug. 8, 1664, Abigail Sherman, of Watertown, and, (2) July 29, 1679, Eunice, daughter of Edward Tyng (1642). He had been a fellow of Harvard College, and subsequently the second minister in Groton, from whence he came to Boston, when that town was raided by the Indians in March, 1676. He became a freeman in 1670, and March 31, 1678, he was installed as colleague of Rev. Thomas Thacher, at the Old South Church. On the resignation of Increase Mather as president of Harvard College, Sept. 6, 1701, Rev. Samuel Willard was made his successor as vice-president. He resigned Aug. 14, 1707, and died Sept. 12 of that year.

**Rev. Samuel Willard.** AUTHORITIES: Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; American Quar. Reg., XII.

<sup>1</sup> July 29, 1680, William Tomlin (1676) signed his mark ("W. T. his marke") as surety unto the

town that John Thomson should not be chargeable to the town. — See *Report of Boston Rec. Com.*, Vol. X., p. 67.

<sup>2</sup> See New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg. (will), 1866, p. 53.

**1677-8.** The officers elected were: Richard Woodde (1642), captain; Moses Paine (1644), lieutenant, and John Wing (1671), ensign. Penn Townsend (1674) was first sergeant; Anthony Checkley (1662) second sergeant; Benjamin Thurston (1675), third sergeant; Ephraim Savage (1674), fourth sergeant; John Morse (1671), clerk; Joshua Hughes, drummer, and Edward Smith, armorer.

Some friends of Massachusetts in Ireland, acting as individuals, and without any official authority, had solicited relief in that country for such as were "impoverished, distressed, and in necessity by the late war" in America. The Rev. Nathaniel Mather, of Dublin, had secured donations amounting to nearly one thousand pounds in value, contributed by "divers Christians in Ireland," and a ship-load of provisions had been thankfully received by those rendered destitute by the war. But while the colony had been defending the royal domain, no aid had been solicited from the King, nor had any been offered. "It is not altogether groundlessly reported," wrote their friend, Lord Anglesey, from London, "that you are poor yet proud."

This, which is called the "Irish Donation in 1676," was sent to New England in the ship "Katherine," of Dublin. The contributors consigned it to Mr. William Tyng (1638), Mr. James Oliver (1640), and Mr. John Hull (1660), "or as many of them as shall be alive." They were to sell enough to pay the freight, — four hundred and fifty pounds sterling, — and the remainder they were to give to those distressed by the Indian wars. Friendly Indians were also to have a share. The Colony of Massachusetts Bay received three hundred and sixty-three pounds sterling, which were divided among about six hundred families, in forty-seven towns.

The new members recruited in 1677-8 were: Benjamin Allen, Joshua Atwater, John Barnard, William Davis, Joseph Dudley, Paul Dudley, James Hill, and Henry Powning.

**Benjamin Allen** (1677), of Charlestown, son of Walter Allen, of that town, was born at Newbury, April 15, 1647. He was a member of Capt. Moseley's (1672) company for the December campaign in 1675. His father, in his will, dated Feb. 19, 1679-80, does not mention Benjamin (1677). A Benjamin Allen died in Charlestown, Sept. 20, 1678.

**Joshua Atwater** (1677), of Boston, son of Joshua, of New Haven in 1638, was born April 10, 1658, in Milford, Conn. His father removed to Boston in 1659. Ann, sister of Joshua (1677), married, in 1672, Jeremiah Dummer (1671), and was the mother of the famous Jeremy (Harv. Coll., 1699). The selectmen decided, "25, 7, 1671," that "Mr Joshua Atwater [1677] hath libertie granted him to his sellar dore to continue as it is, paying 5s p. ann. in money to begin the first of July last." He does not appear to have held any office in the town of Boston. He was drowned Feb. 12, 1691-2.<sup>1</sup>

**Benjamin Allen** (1677). AUTHORITIES: Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates; Bond's Hist. of Watertown.

**Joshua Atwater** (1677). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> "Feb 12, 1691-2. Joshua Atwater dies, falling off the outward Wharf: he was drowned about 2 or 3 in the morning, intangled in the wood as the

Jury brought it in; was going on board the sloop Mary. Was excommunicated." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., pp. 356, 357.

"[1688] April 20. Joshua Atwater's wife dies. It seems he carried her out of Town but last Monday [April 16]. She was a worthy Gentlewoman." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 211.

**John Barnard** (1677), of Boston, son of Matthew (1660), was born in Boston, Sept. 29, 1654. He was admitted a freeman in 1678, and died in December, 1732. He was the father of Rev. John Barnard (Harv. Coll., 1700), whose autobiography is given in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., V., 178. Lieut John (1677) was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1683, ensign in 1696, and lieutenant in 1700.

In 1678-9, a fire-engine was imported from England, and on the 27th of January the selectmen chose Thomas Atkins as foreman, and among his twelve chosen assistants were John Barnard (1677) and his brother, Thomas Barnard (1681). This was the first fire-engine in town, and John (1677) and Thomas (1681) were members of the first regular engine company in the town of Boston. John Barnard (1677) doubtless followed the trade of his father, that of a carpenter, for during eight years, between 1680 and 1700, he was appointed by the selectmen to measure boards and timber. In 1680, he was a member of Capt. Clarke's (1644) company, and a tithing-man; was a representative in 1696-7, and served as a selectman in 1701 and 1703-6. In 1701, the selectmen agreed with John Barnard (1677) to erect a new house for Mr. Ezekiel Cheever, the school-master, and to remove the old house, and in 1704 they agreed with Mr. Barnard (1677) to build a new school-house for the "Free School," or "Latin School." In the Boston town records, 1701-15, he is called both "Deacon" and "Captain."

**William Davis** (1677), son of William Davis (1643), was born in Boston, June 25, 1653. He was a brother of Major Benjamin Davis (1673), and a member of the Old South Church. He probably married Abigail Eliot, daughter of Jacob. William (1677) died Jan. 23, 1706-7.

Judge Sewall wrote: "Feb. 25, 1706-7; . . . After that I visit the widow Eliott who dwells with her daughter Davis."

**Joseph Dudley** (1677), of Roxbury, son of Gov. Thomas Dudley, also brother of Patience Dudley, wife of Major-Gen. Daniel Denison (1660), and of Sarah, wife of Major Benjamin Keayne (1638), was born July 23, 1647. Joseph Dudley graduated at Harvard College in 1665; was admitted a freeman in 1672; representative from 1673 to 1675; an assistant from 1676 to 1685, and was made president of the colonies of Massachusetts and New Hampshire in 1686.

In 1682, he had visited England, was deeply engaged in court intrigues there, became one of Andros's council, and was made chief-justice of an unconstitutional supreme court. After long imprisonment in New England, he returned, in 1689, to England, and for eight years was deputy-governor of the Isle of Wight, under Lord

**John Barnard** (1677). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**William Davis** (1677). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. Cat. of Old South Church.

**Joseph Dudley** (1677). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Drake's Hist. of Roxbury; Dudley Family; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1850, 1869; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

"[1720] April 2. Gov. Dudley dies about noon. . . .

"April 8. Gov. Dudley is buried in his father Gov. Dudley's Tomb at Roxbury. Boston and Roxbury regiments were under arms and 2 or 3 Troops: Bearers, His Excellency Gov. Shute, Sam-

uel Sewall, Col Townsend, Col Appleton: Mr. President Leverett, Col Samuel Brown. Scarvs, Rings, Gloves, Scutcheons. Councillors and Ministers had Scarvs, and Consularry Men. Col. Otis, Thaxter Quincey, Dows, Nordon, Judge Lynde, Col Paine were there out of Town. Judge Dudley in a Mourning Cloak led the Widow: when I took leave of her She desired my Prayers. Were very many people, spectators out of windows, on Fences and Trees, like Pigeons. The Bells in Boston were rung for the Funeral; which was finished when the Sun was near an hour high. I and my wife and son and daughter Sewall went and came in the Hackney coach very well. *Laus Deo.*" — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., pp. 248, 249.



Cutts. He returned, in 1702, with a commission from Queen Anne as Governor of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, in which office he remained until November, 1715. He died at Roxbury, April 2, 1720, and was, as he requested, "buried with his father." His brother, Paul (1677), joined the Artillery Company at the same time that Joseph (1677) did. The latter was captain of the Roxbury company, but probably obtained his rank of major and of colonel by service in the British army. Joseph Dudley (1677) was agent for the colony in England during 1682, jointly with Major Richards (1644), and returned Oct. 23, 1683.

The following appeared in the *Boston News-Letter*, April, 1720:—

"On Saturday, 2d current, died the very honorable Joseph Dudley, Esq., at his seat in Roxbury, in the 73d year of his age, being born September 23d, 1647; and on Friday 8th current, he was interred in the sepulchre of his father, with all the honor and respect his country was capable of doing him; there being two regiments of foot with two troops of horse in arms; and while his funeral was passing, the guns at his Majesty's Castle William were fired; and on the occasion all the bells of the town of Boston were tolled. There attended at the funeral, the members of his Majesty's Council, in Boston and the neighboring towns; a great number of Justices of the Peace, Ministers, gentlemen, merchants and others.

"Gov. Dudley was the son of Hon. Thomas Dudley, Esq. (for many years Governor of New England) and the son of his old age, being born after his father was seventy years old. During his childhood, he was under the care of his excellent mother, and the Rev. Mr. Allen, the Minister of Dedham, who married her. He was educated at the free school in Cambridge, under the famous master Corlet; from thence he went to the College in Cambridge, and there took his degrees in the Presidentship of Mr. Chauncy. The first of his public appearance for his country's service, was in the Narraganset Indian war, 1675. In 1686, the government of the Massachusetts Colony being changed to a President and Council, he had a commission to command in chief; and after the arrival of Andros in the government of New England, New York, etc., he continued President of the Council and Chief Justice. In 1690, he had a commission as Chief Justice of New York. In 1693, he went a third time for England. While in England, he had the honor to serve as a member of the House of Commons for the borough of Newton, on the Isle of Wight; but, staying in England till his Majesty's death, he was obliged to get his commission renewed from Queen Anne, with which he arrived at Boston, June 11th, 1702, and was received with great respect and affection, and continued in the government until November, 1715.

"Having been educated at Harvard College, he always retained for his *Alma Mater* an affectionate regard. It was, no doubt, fortunate for this institution that so warm a friend to it had so much power in the country, after the Province Charter was annulled in 1686.

"He was a man of rare endowments and shining accomplishments, a singular honor to his country. He was early its darling, always its ornament, and in his age its crown. The scholar, the divine, the philosopher, and the lawyer,—all met in him. Under his administration, we enjoyed great quietness, and were safely steered through a long and difficult Indian and French war. His country have once and again thankfully acknowledged his abilities and fidelity in their addresses to the throne. He truly honored and loved the religion, learning and virtue of New England; and was himself a worthy patron and example of them all."



When Andros's government was overturned by the people, Mr. Dudley (1677), one of the most obnoxious to them, was arrested and kept a close prisoner a long time, and the representatives in the General Court decided his offence was such that he was not bailable, and they sent up to the Council of Safety heads of charges against him and others.

Lieut.-Gov. Danforth wrote to Increase Mather: "Mr. Dudley [1677] is in a peculiar manner the object of the people's displeasure; even throughout all the Colonies, where he hath sat as Judge, they deeply resent his correspondence with that wicked man, Randolph, for overturning the government. The Governor and Council, though they have done their utmost to procure his enlargement, yet cannot prevail, but the people will have him in the jail; and when he hath been by order turned out, by force and tumult they fetch him in."

He himself wrote to Cotton Mather, on June 1: "I am told that this morning is the last opportunity for rolling away the stone from the mouth of this sepulchre, where I am buried alive," etc.

He wrote Gov. Bradstreet, Sept. 12: "After twenty weeks' unaccountable imprisonment, and many barbarous usages offered me, I have now to complain, that on Monday, the whole day, I could be allowed no victuals till nine o'clock at night, when the keeper's wife offered to kindle her own fire to warm something for me, and the corporal expressly commanded the fire to be put out."

On his third visit to England, we find him endeavoring to take advantage of complaints from the province, and supplant Gov. Phips, whom he caused to be arrested in England, and held to bail in twenty thousand pounds.

In 1705, Mr. Dudley (1677) became very unpopular, having negatived Thomas Oakes (1684) as speaker of the House, and being accused of encouraging an illicit trade with the French possessions in North America. The famous Bank party were his opposers, and wished his removal. He met the Assembly at the election, May, 1715, for the last time, but made no speech.

Mr. Hutchinson says, "No New England man had passed through more scenes of busy life than Mr. Dudley [1677]. He was educated for the ministry, and if various dignities had been known in the New England churches, possibly he had lived and died a clergyman; but, without this, nothing could be more dissonant from his genius. He soon turned his thoughts to civil affairs. Ambition was the ruling passion, and perhaps, like Cæsar, he had rather be the first man in New England than second in Old. Few men have been pursued by their enemies with greater virulence, and few have been supported by their friends with greater zeal. We have seen a second generation inherit the spirit of their ancestors, the descendants on one side preserving an affection for his family and posterity, and, on the other, retaining equal dissatisfaction against them. He applied himself with the greatest diligence to the business of his station. The affairs of the war, and other parts of his administration, were conducted with good judgment. In economy he excelled, both in public and private life. He supported the dignity of a Governor without the reproach of parsimony, and yet, from the moderate emoluments of his post, made an addition to his paternal estate. The visible increase of his substance made some incredible reports of gross bribery and corruption to be easily received; but, in times when party spirit prevails, what will not a Governor's enemies believe, however injurious and absurd?"

**Paul Dudley** (1677), of Boston, merchant, was a younger brother of Col. Joseph (1677), and was born at Roxbury (baptized), Sept. 8, 1650. He married, in 1676, Mary, daughter of Gov. Leverett (1639), and died Dec. 1, 1681. His widow married for her second husband, Col. Penn Townsend (1674). Mr. Dudley (1677) was a merchant, registrar of probate under the colonial *régime*, collector of customs for the ports of Boston and Charlestown, and a member of the Old South Church.

**James Hill** (1677), of Boston, was probably a son of John Hill (1647), of Dorchester. The latter mentions a son, James, in his will of April 11, 1660. Capt. James (1677) married, April 10, 1662, Hannah, sister of Daniel Hinchman (1675). He was a member of the Old South Church, was elected deacon Nov. 24, 1693, and was also its treasurer. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1678, and its lieutenant in 1685. Sergt. Hill (1677) was appointed ensign in the foot company commanded by Capt. John Walley (1671), May 11, 1681, and he was appointed to the command of the same company, Feb. 13, 1683-4.

He was, probably, a cooper by trade, as the selectmen appointed him a culler of staves in 1669, 1670, and 1671; he was a highway surveyor in 1680-1, captain of a military company, in Boston, from 1684 to 1692 inclusive, and selectman of Boston from 1688 to 1690 inclusive, and in 1693. He died Feb. 26, 1720-1.

**Henry Powning** (1677), of Boston, son of Henry, was born April 28, 1654, but is not mentioned in the records of the town. June 1, 1677, one hundred and ninety-nine "Handy craftsmen" petitioned the General Court for "protection" in their several callings, against intruders. One of the signers was Henry Powning (1677).

**Rev. Josiah Flint**, of Dorchester, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1677. He was a son of Rev. Henry Flint, of Braintree, was born Aug. 24, 1645, graduated at Harvard in 1664, and was ordained Dec. 27, 1671. Josiah was the father of Henry (Harv. Coll., 1693), who was a distinguished tutor in that institution from 1699 to 1754. Rev. Mr. Flint appears to have been a devoted and conscientious minister, whose service was frequently interrupted by ill-health. He died in Dorchester, Sept. 15, 1680, at the age of thirty-five years. His monument expresses the general regard:—

"A man of God he was so great, so good,  
His highest worth was hardly understood."

**Paul Dudley** (1677). **AUTHORITIES:** Dudley Family; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1856, 1869; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

"[1677] July 24. Rec'd of Mr. Paul Dudley [1677] to be distributed among the poor now residing in Boston, come from other parts impoverished by the war; 12 barrells of wheat, 1 barrell of malt, 12 barrells of flour, 15 barrells of oatmeal, 2 firkins of butter and 170 pounds of cheese, which was accordingly distributed."—*Boston Records*.

"Thursday, Xr. 1. 1681. The well accomplished Merchant and Accomptant, Mr Paul Dudley dyed, being little above 30 years old."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 17.

**James Hill** (1677). **AUTHORITIES:** Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"Feb. 23, 1720-21, Dined at Mr Sewall's, with Mrs Man, Grand-daughter of Capt Hill, who was pray'd for with his wife. . . . Feb. 25. Mrs Hannah Hill, wife of Capt James Hill, dyes about 5 p. m. *Ætat.* 83. . . . Feb. 26. Lord's Day, Capt and Deacon James Hill dyes about 6 a clock in the morning. *Ætat.* 82. Dyed Praying: *Optando si non affirmando.* . . . March 2: After Lecture Capt James Hill and Hannah his wife are buried. . . . South Burying place. Great Funeral."—*Sewall Papers*.

**Rev. Josiah Flint.** **AUTHORITIES:** Histories of Dorchester; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.

**1678-9.** The officers elected were: John Hull (1660), captain; John Walley (1671), lieutenant; Ephraim Savage (1674), ensign. John Atwood (1673) was first sergeant; John Noyes (1676), second sergeant; Benjamin Davis (1673), third sergeant; James Hill (1677), fourth sergeant; John Hayward (1673), clerk; John Scottow, drummer, and Edward Smith, armorer.

Gov. John Leverett (1639) died in Boston, March 16, 1678, and was buried on the 25th, then considered the first day of the legal year. For nearly forty years he was active in public matters; equally efficient in leading his company into conflict or presiding over the interests of the colony. He was fearlessly faithful to New England in peace and war, at home and abroad.

The new members recruited in 1678-9 were: Samuel Checkley, Nathaniel Elkin, Humphrey Luscomb, Thomas Smith, John Tay, Benjamin Thwing, William White.

**Samuel Checkley** (1678), of Boston, was born in Preston, Northamptonshire, England, Oct. 14, 1653, and was half-brother of Capt. Anthony Checkley (1662). He arrived at Boston, Aug. 3, 1670. Samuel (1678) was a physician and surgeon in Boston, also proprietor of an apothecary's store, to which business his son, Richard, succeeded. He married, in 1680, Mary, daughter of Joshua Scottow (1645). They had eleven children, only two of whom survived their father, viz., Richard and Samuel. An obituary notice of Samuel Checkley (1678) is given in the *News-Letter* of Jan. 4, 1739.

He was for many years active in the military of Boston, being appointed ensign of Capt. Wing's (1671) company, Feb. 16, 1685-6, and after the usual promotions became major of the Boston regiment in 1702, lieutenant-colonel in 1706, and colonel from 1710 to 1712. He is called "Col," however, in the Boston Records, as early as 1706. He received twelve different commissions, from that of ensign, given by Gov. Bradstreet, to that of colonel, by Lieut.-Gov. Tailler (1712). He was a member of the Old South Church, and was elected deacon Oct. 15, 1693, which honor he declined; selectman from 1693 to 1696 inclusive; representative in 1702-7, and town clerk from 1720 to 1733. After the revolution which overturned Andros's government, he was actively engaged in reviving the Artillery Company, and was fourth sergeant in 1685, third sergeant in 1690, lieutenant in 1694, and captain in 1700. He was also one of his Majesty's justices of the peace from 1714 to 1727 inclusive. He died Dec. 27, 1738.

Rev. Samuel Checkley, son of Col. Samuel (1678), delivered the sermon before the Artillery Company in 1725, and Rev. Samuel, grandson of Col. Samuel (1678), delivered the sermon in 1757.

**Nathaniel Elkin** (1678).

**Humphrey Luscomb** (1678), of Boston, a merchant, was one of the founders of King's Chapel in 1686.<sup>1</sup> His name appears in the Boston town records but once, April 6, 1686, when he and Theodore Atkinson (1644) came before the selectmen and

**Samuel Checkley** (1678). **AUTHORITIES:** Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Records of Mass. Bay; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848, 1861.

"[1719] 8<sup>r</sup> 14<sup>th</sup> . . . visited Col. Checkley who is very sick, says he is this day 66 years old; takes my visit very kindly, and desires Prayers." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 332.

**Humphrey Luscomb** (1678). "[1688] Monday June 11. About 3 this Morn, Major Luscomb dies of a Fever. . . ."

"Maj. L. was buried June 15, 1688, between 7 & 8 P. M. Six companies attended. After the Volleys several great guns were fired." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 217.

<sup>1</sup> See Foote's Annals of King's Chapel.



desired them to make a record of an agreement between them relating to the bounds of land near Bendall's Dock. The agreement is recorded, signed, and witnessed. Administration was granted on his estate by Sir Edmund Andros, June 23, 1688, in which Humphrey Luscomb (1678) was called "Major." He was doubtless appointed to military office by Gov. Andros. He died June 11, 1688.

**Thomas Smith** (1678), of Boston. His sureties were Capt. Hutchinson (1670) and Ensign Checkley (1678). His name appears in Boston Records, April 25, 1681, when he is chosen as a tithing-man from Capt. Walley's (1671) company.

**John Tay** (1678), son of William, of Boston, was born Nov. 16, 1647. He does not appear to be mentioned in the Boston town records, and his father, in his will, dated April 28, 1680, does not mention him.

**Benjamin Thwing** (1678), of Boston, son of Benjamin, was born in July, 1647. He was a carpenter by trade, a member of the Old South Church, and was admitted to be a freeman May 19, 1680. He married, about 1669, Abigail Dickson. The Boston town records say that liberty was granted, in 1679, "Benj<sup>a</sup> Thwinge to lay Timber" on the town land, and July 29, 1680, "Benj<sup>a</sup> Twinge" was chosen a tithing-man from Capt. Hutchinson's (1670) company.

On Friday, Jan. 14, 1681, as he was going from Mount Hope to Rhode Island in a canoe, with an Indian, the canoe was upset by the wind and ice, and Mr. Thwing (1678) was drowned.

**William White** (1678) was one of the founders of King's Chapel in 1686, and on the record of the first meeting, June 15, 1686, his name stands next after Mr. Luscomb's (1678). William White (1678) was born in 1646, and was named, with two others, in March, 1688, by Sir Edmund Andros, to obtain contributions for building an Episcopal church in Boston.

**Rev. Samuel Nowell**, a son of Increase Nowell, who was one of the founders of the First Church in Charlestown, and of the First Church in Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1678. Rev. Samuel Nowell was never a settled minister, but served as chaplain in King Philip's War. He became a freeman in 1677, an assistant in 1680, and in October, 1685, was chosen treasurer of the colony, an office from which he was relieved the next year by the commissioning of Joseph Dudley (1677) as Governor. Randolph wrote the Earl of Clarendon, July 14, 1682, that as leaders in the "high misdemeanors," he designated "Thomas Danforth, Samuel Nowell, a late fanatic preacher, and now a magistrate," etc. He went to England to act with Mr. Mather at court in favor of New England, Capt. Elisha Hutchinson (1670) being also present, but died at London in September, 1688. His wife was the widow of Hezekiah Usher (1638).

Rev. Cotton Mather, writing in the *Magnalia*, Book VII., Chap. 6, Sect. 10, of the Swamp Fort fight, says: "I wish I could particularly give an 'immortal memory' to all the brave men that signalled themselves in this action. But among them, how shall

**Benjamin Thwing** (1678). AUTHORITY: The Thwing Family, by Walter E. Thwing, 1883.

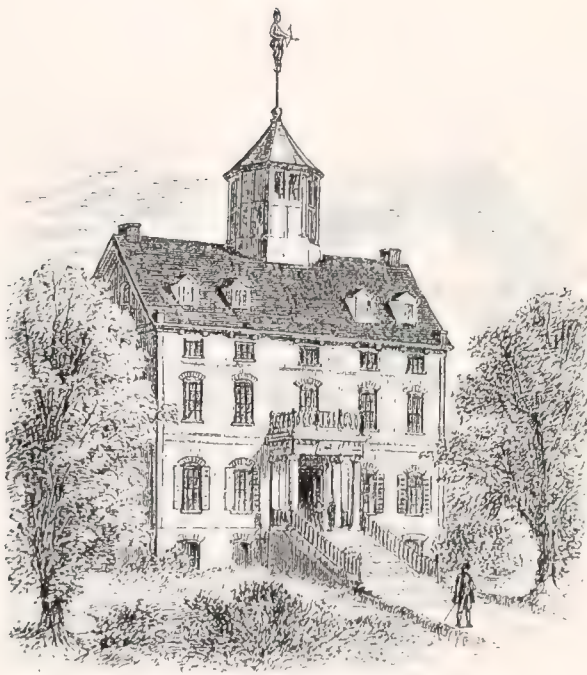
**William White** (1678). AUTHORITIES: Foote's Annals of King's Chapel; 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., Vol. I., p. 84.

"Capt William White commanded the South Company in 1687." — *Sewall's Diary*.

**Rev. Samuel Nowell**. AUTHORITIES: Mather's *Magnalia*; Savage's Gen. Dict.







PROVINCE HOUSE.

I speak thy praise ! thou excellent Samuel Nowel, never to be forgotten ! This now reverend, and afterward worshipful person, a chaplain to the army, was author to a good sermon preached unto the Artillery Company of the Massachusetts, which he entitled, 'Abraham in Arms,' and at this fight there was no person more like a true son of 'Abraham in Arms,' or that with more courage and hazardly fought in the midst of a shower of bullets from the surrounding savages. But —

"Time would not let me all his deeds recite,—  
His skill in council—prowess in the fight."

—♦—

1679-80. The officers elected were: John Walley (1671), captain; Penn Townsend (1674), lieutenant; Benjamin Davis (1673), ensign. William Greenough (1675) was first sergeant; Jeremiah Dummer (1671), second sergeant; Ephraim Sale (1674), third sergeant; Joseph Belknap (1658), fourth sergeant; John Hayward (1673), clerk; John Marion, drummer, and Edward Smith, armorer.

Boston had, meanwhile, become the principal seaport in North America, untrammelled as yet by a royal custom-house, and the flags of the maritime nations waved at her wharves.

Boston, in 1679, had about nine thousand inhabitants, occupying less than two thousand tenements. Some of the houses in the business portion of the town were of brick, with tile or slate roofs, and others were of wood, plastered roughcast on the outside with cement, in which was mixed finely-powdered black glass. The greater portion of the houses, however, were of wood, covered with clapboards, and roofed with cedar shingles. The chimneys were large, built in a stack in the centre of the house, and the windows were small.

The streets, of different widths (sometimes the same street bearing different names in different places), were paved with round beach stones. There were neither street-lamps nor sidewalks, but hitching-posts were numerous, and nearly every large house had its horse-block in front for convenience in mounting and dismounting. The cows of many of the freeholders were pastured on the Common, while others owned pasture-lands, orchards, and gardens on the road leading to Cambridge. There were in the centre of the town several large and handsome villas, surrounded by gardens, and one which eclipsed the others had just been completed by Peter Sergeant, a wealthy merchant, on land which he had purchased of Col. Samuel Shrimpton (1670). This edifice, afterward known as the Province House, was built in the most substantial manner, and the elaborately-wrought iron-work of the balustrade, over the front entrance, contained the initials of the owner, and the date, thus: "16 P. S. 79."

Mr. Sergeant died on the 8th of February, 1713-4, and his widow married, May 12, 1715, her third husband, Simeon Stoddard (1675). He died on the 15th of October, 1730, in his eightieth year. She survived him eight years.

When she married Mr. Stoddard (1675), she had no further use for the house erected by Mr. Sergeant, for her new husband had one as desirable, and the estate was purchased by the province.

The new members recruited in 1679-80 were: Samuel Bridge, Edward Bromfield, Nathaniel Byfield, John Cotta, John Foster, Francis Foxcroft, Obadiah Gill, Robert

Jones, Charles Lidget, Benjamin Mountfort, Joseph Parsons, William Pollard, Samuel Ravenscroft, Samuel Sewall, Thomas Smith, William Sumner, James Townsend, and David Waterhouse.

**Samuel Bridge** (1679), of Boston in 1671, a carpenter, was admitted a freeman in 1672. Between 1673 and 1701, he was elected or appointed to town office during fourteen years; also, being a member of Capt. James Hill's (1677) company, he was chosen a tithing-man in 1686, 1690, 1693, and 1696. He also worked at his trade for the town, and served on special committees, the last service being in 1713, to inspect the town in regard to the observance of the by-law for keeping ladders at each house. Mr. Whitman (1810) says he was "of Charlestown." If he was the son of William and Persis (Pierce) Bridge, of Charlestown, he was born Aug. 19, 1647.

His will (Suffolk Wills, Vol. XX., folio 123) mentions five daughters and two sons. The latter, Benjamin and Ebenezer, joined the Artillery Company in 1711 and 1717 respectively.

**Edward Bromfield** (1679), of Boston in 1675, son of Henry, was a merchant, whose name is perpetuated by the thoroughfare, Bromfield Street, in Boston. He was the father of Edward (1732), one of his Majesty's council, and was a man of "great integrity and singular piety." He was a member of the Old South Church, and died June 2, 1734, aged eighty-six years. His tomb is in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground.

In 1684, he is recorded as a member of Capt. Savage's (1674) military company, of Boston. Refusing to serve as constable in 1686, he was fined "accordinge to lawe." He was chosen commissioner for the town, Aug. 24, 1691, and representative in 1693, 1694, and 1695; also selectman in 1694 and 1695.

The *New England Journal*, at the time of his decease, said, "Edward Bromfield [1679] was born at Haywood House, the seat of the family, near New Forest, in Hampshire, in England, on Jan. 10, 1648-9, and baptized in the neighboring church, at Chancroft, on Jan. 16 following; served his apprenticeship in London; soon after, took a trading voyage to Jamaica, and afterwards to New England, whither he came in 1675 and finding this then very religious country agreeable to his pious genius, soon chose it for his own, and to live and die among us, and in the trade of merchandise.

"He served his town in many offices. Even in the time of our old charter, he was one of the commissioners of the peace, and trial of civil actions under ten pounds. In May, 1703, chosen into the council, and from that time annually elected till 1728,

**Samuel Bridge** (1679). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

"[1717, Saturday] Nov 30. Sam. Bridge died last night; was at work on Monday last. . . . Tuesday Dec. 3. P. M. I go to the Funeral of Mr. Sam<sup>l</sup> Bridge, Col. Townsend was one of the Bearers; Six Councillors follow'd the Relations. . . . The Aer was grown very Cold, and snow'd before we got to the grave." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., pp. 150, 152.

**Edward Bromfield** (1679). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1859, 1871, 1872; Boston Records; King's Chapel Burial Ground, by Bridgman, p. 255; Resolves, etc., of Mass. Bay, Vol. VII.

"Yesterday in the afternoon, died the Hon.

Edward Bromfield, Esq., in the 86<sup>th</sup> year of his age; who for many years was one of his Majesty's Council, a gentleman of great integrity and singular piety. He was buried on Thursday the 6<sup>th</sup> [of June] following [1734]. He was the third son of Henry Bromfield, Esq. . . . and was born at Haywood House, Hampshire, England, Jan. 10, 1648-9; served his apprenticeship in London; came to America in 1675. He was annually elected of the Council of Massachusetts from 1703 to 1728. . . . He was twice married: 1st, about 1678, to Mrs. Elizabeth Brading; 2d, to Miss Mary Danforth, daughter of Rev. Samuel Danforth, of Roxbury." — *New England Journal*, June, 1734.



when, being in the eightieth year of his age, his growing infirmities released him from public business. He joined the church of the reverend and famous Mr. Doolittle, about the seventeenth year of his age, entered into a special acquaintance with the renowned Mr. Baxter, and other eminent confessors of Christ; closely attended their ministry with great delight through all the difficulties of the then reigning persecution.

"Not long after his coming over, he joined himself to the [Old] South Church in this town, and has been therein a distinguished ornament. His heart was especially set for the propagation of the gospel in ignorant places, supporting ministers of low salaries, maintaining charity schools for children, and helping poor and hopeful scholars to academical learning.

"He turned the pasture behind his house into a very shady grove; and in the midst he built an Oratory, where, even in the most flourishing circumstances, and height of business, he would several times a day retire, that he might turn his eyes from beholding vanity. His temper was very active, cheerful, open-hearted, free and liberal. He made every one always easy about him, unless he had to do with bold transgressors, and then he rather wished their reformation than their punishment. In the education of his children he was exceedingly careful."

Edward Rawson, the colonial secretary, bought property of Theodore Atkinson (1644), and through the land was laid out Rawson's Lane. This name was changed, in 1796, to Bromfield Lane, which in 1829 became Bromfield Street, in memory of Edward Bromfield (1679), who "lived on the southerly side about half way up, where later the Bromfield House stood. This site was afterwards occupied by the Indian Queen Tavern."

**Nathaniel Byfield** (1679), of Boston in 1674, a lawyer, son of Rev. Richard Byfield, was born at Long Ditton, Surrey County, England, in 1653. He was the youngest of twenty-one children. He came to Boston in 1674, and married, in 1675, Deborah, daughter of Capt. Thomas Clarke (1638). April 25, 1676, he sent the following petition to the Governor and council: "The Petition of Nathaniel Byfield Humbly sheweth, That your petitioner is a stranger in the country & lately married, & is now Prest to go out to war against the Indians. And whereas the law of God is plain in Deut. 5, that when a man hath taken a new wife he shall not go out to war, neither shall he be charged with any business, but he shall be free at home one year, Your petitioner doth humbly request the favor of your Honours to grant him the Priviledge and benefit of the said law & to grant him a discharge from the present service." His second wife was Sarah, youngest daughter of Gov. Leverett (1639). His first wife died in 1717, his second in 1730, and he died June 6, 1733.

He became a proprietor, and among the first settlers, of Bristol, in Plymouth Colony, for which he was representative in 1691, and for the United Province in 1692, being also speaker of the House in 1693. He was representative from Boston in 1696, 1697, and 1698, a member of the council in 1699, and for thirteen years afterward prior to 1729; and six other years, between 1713 and 1724, he was elected but negatived by the Governor. He served as a special justice of the Superior Court by appointment in 1727, 1728, and Jan. 11, 1732-3. He was appointed judge of the inferior Court of Common Pleas, in Bristol County, Aug. 7, 1701, which he resigned in 1724, after nearly

**Nathaniel Byfield** (1679). **AUTHORITIES:** 1774; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Boston Records; Whitmore's Mass. Civil List, 1630- Ed. 1842.

a continuous service; was register of probate of Bristol County nearly twenty years, between 1702 and 1729, and was appointed for one year, from June 19, 1697, commissioner of import and excise. He obtained a commission as judge of the vice-admiralty for the provinces of Massachusetts Bay, New Hampshire, and Rhode Island, which he received in April, 1704, and continued in that office until 1715. In 1729, he was reappointed to that office. In 1715, he went to England, to endeavor to supplant Gov. Dudley (1677). Having been reprov'd by the Governor, in council, for some alleged errors in judicial proceedings, he was ever after in opposition to him, which Gov. Dudley (1677) revenged by negating his election as councillor. Being a favorite of Gov. Belcher, Mr. Byfield (1679) and Elisha Cooke, Jr. (1699), were appointed by the Governor, Dec. 29, 1731, judges of the Court of Common Pleas in Suffolk County, in the places of Col. Hutchinson (1670) and William Dudley removed. He was constable of Boston in 1678. On the Boston town records, 1699-1701, he is called "Captain." He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1682, and its lieutenant in 1699. In 1702, he was commissioned colonel of a regiment embracing all the militia of Bristol County. The distinguished Indian fighter, Benjamin Church, was his lieutenant-colonel, and Ebenezer Brenton, major.

**John Cotta** (1679), of Boston, a tailor, became a freeman in 1671. He married Mary Moore in 1668, and died Nov. 20, 1723, aged seventy-seven years. In 1665, May 29, John Cotta (1679) "was fined 10<sup>s</sup> for opeing shop, contrary to Towne order." In 1680, he was a member of Capt. Savage's (1674) company, of Boston, was a constable in 1685, and a member of the military in 1691. Mr. Whitman (1810) says he was active in the revival of the Artillery Company in 1690, and held a commission in the militia. His son, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1698. John Cotta (1679) was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1692.

**John Foster** (1679), of Boston, was an eminent merchant from Aylesbury, Bucks County, England, and was admitted a freeman in 1682. He joined the Artillery Company immediately after his arrival, and became very prominent in the affairs of the Company from 1690 to 1695. He was of the Council of Safety in 1689; was representative for Portsmouth in 1690; one of Gov. Dudley's (1677) councillors; named in the charter of William and Mary in 1692; one of the first council under it, in which office he continued until his death, Feb. 9, 1710-1.

He is mentioned in the Boston town records, the first time, March 15, 1679-80, when, being elected constable, he was fined for refusing to serve; and was selectman in 1690, 1691, and 1692. On the 7th of December, 1692, he was appointed a justice of the inferior Court of Common Pleas for Suffolk County, and served in that office until

**John Cotta** (1679). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"[1723] Novr 23 Mr. John Cotta, the father, is buried."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 327.

**John Foster** (1679). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1863; Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"Seventh-day Feby 3, 1710-11. Col Foster was taken with an Apoplectick Fit as he was at the privat house about 8 M. When he staid long they call'd, none answered; so they burst open the door, and found him fallen down and Speechless. . . .

"Febr 9. Seventh-day, between 11 and 12 M. Col John Foster expires. His place at the Council Board and Court will hardly be filled up. I have lost a good Left-hand man. The Lord save New England. Now just half the Counsellours mentioned in the Charter are dead. . . .

"Thursday Feb 15. John Foster Esqr is entombed. . . . Scarfs and Rings, Escutcheons. All of the Council had Scarfs: . . . many great Guns were fired."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., pp. 299, 300.

his decease. He is called "Capt." in the Boston town records, 1696-8, and Mr. Savage says he was colonel of the Boston regiment, "a wealthy merchant, and of a most fair and unblemished character."

**Francis Foxcroft** (1679), of Cambridge, originally settled in Boston. He is said to have been the son of Daniel, who was mayor of Leeds, York County, England, in 1665, and he arrived in America about that time. He married, Oct. 3, 1682, Elizabeth, daughter of Gov. Danforth, and had two sons, both of whom graduated at Harvard College. On the death of Gov. Danforth, Mr. Foxcroft (1679) removed from Boston to Cambridge, and occupied the Governor's homestead, which had been conveyed to him. He was a man of wealth and energy, and served the state in various offices. He died at Cambridge, Dec. 31, 1727, aged about seventy years.

Rev. Lucius R. Paige, D. D., in the History of Cambridge, says, "Mr. Foxcroft [1679] was a justice of the peace under Andros, and upon his warrant Winslow [1692] was committed to prison for announcing the revolution in England. A few days afterward he exchanged places with Winslow [1692], and became himself a prisoner with Andros and his adherents." He was soon after released, and April 20, 1689, he was confined in Gov. Danforth's house for one week, when he was set at liberty.

He represented Dunstable in the General Court in 1693; was judge of the Court of Common Pleas for Middlesex County from 1709 to 1719, and judge of probate from 1708 to 1725.

Henry Flint, in the preface to the funeral sermon delivered by Rev. Dr. Appleton, thus sketches Francis Foxcroft (1679): "He was a gentleman by birth, of a worthy family in the north of England, where he received a good school education. He was bred a merchant, and was very expert and skilful, as well as very just and upright in all his business. His natural powers were extraordinary; his acquired knowledge of various kinds was so too; his virtues were great and eminent. His generosity, prudence, sincerity, justice towards men, and piety towards God, were conspicuous to those that knew him. His temper indeed was sudden, and made almost uncontrollable by the violence of the gout and pain he was such an uncommon instance of; but this was his burden and lamentation. He was a person of grave and austere countenance and conversation, mixed with much of the gentleman and the Christian."

At a meeting of the selectmen of Boston, July 27, 1713, Francis Foxcroft (1679) is recorded as a captain. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1683, and is probably the Col. Foxcroft (1679) who commanded a regiment raised for fighting the Indians. He is called "Colonel" on the records of King's Chapel, Dec. 20, 1703.

**Obadiah Gill** (1679), of Boston, a shipwright, eldest son of John, of Boston, first appears on the Boston town records in November, 1673. He held a town office in

**Francis Foxcroft** (1679). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853, 1854, 1861, 1875, 1879, 1880; Annals of King's Chapel, p. 105; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., pp. 29, 30.

"[1727-8] Jan 4 Thorsday, Col. Francis Foxcroft was inter'd at Cambridge."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 389.

**Obadiah Gill** (1679). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

"[1687-8] Wednesday, Feb. 8, Obad. Gill . . . is fined by Judge West — Marks for refusing to

lay his hands on the Bible in Swearing."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 202.

"March 30, 1688. Obadiah Gill . . . is by a Writt from the Sheriff imprisoned, because he paid not the 13s. 4d which he was fined, Feb 8, for not laying his Hand on the Bible. . . .

"He paid the fine, and Ly not in Prison one night."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 208.

"Here lieth buried ye Bodi of Obodiah Gill Deacon of ye North Church in Boston Aged 50 years, decedes January ye 6—1700."—*From Copp's Hill Burial-Ground*.



1676, and in 1678 was a member of the first engine company in town. In 1680, he was a member of Capt. John Richards's (1644) military company in Boston. He was both highway surveyor and constable in 1682, and, besides holding other offices, was selectman in 1691, and continuously thereafter until 1701. The inventory of his estate was returned to the probate court April 1, 1702. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1691.

**Robert Jones** (1679), son of Robert, of Hingham, was probably born in England. In 1644, the family removed to Rehoboth, remained a few years, and then returned to Hingham. Robert Jones (1679) did not return to Hingham, but probably settled in Swansea. He married Anna, daughter of John Bibble. He was killed by the Indians June 24, 1675. Robert, Sr., in his will, mentions the children of his deceased son, Robert (1679).

**Charles Lidget** (1679), of Boston, son of Peter Lidget, "a rich merchant," of Boston, was born in that town, March 29, 1650. He married (1) Bethiah Shrimpton and (2) Mary Hester, of London. He is called a colonel, by Hutchinson, I., 374, at the downfall of Andros and his government, upon whose side Mr. Lidget (1679) prominently acted. He was one of the founders of King's Chapel, and his name, "Captaine Lydgett," appears on the record of the first meeting, June 15, 1686, with Mr. Luscomb's (1678) and Mr. White's (1678). Mr. Foote, in *Annals of King's Chapel*, says, "April 26, 1687, he was an assistant justice of the Superior Court, with Dudley as chief-justice."

He sailed for England in February, 1689-90, and died in London, July 13, 1698.

**Benjamin Mountfort** (1679) arrived at Boston in the ship "Dove," from London, in 1675. He was about thirty years of age. He was a strong Episcopalian and Royalist, and was one of the founders of King's Chapel. He was a member of its first vestry, and, in 1690 and 1696, one of its wardens. He was an uncle of John Mountfort, who joined the Artillery Company in 1697. Benjamin was an affluent and influential ship-owner. He built his warehouse on the site of the present granite building, corner of Change Avenue and Faneuil Hall Square, which became known as "Mountfort's Corner."

He married Rebecca Foster, of Dorchester. They had no children, and he willed his entire property to his wife. His will, executed Oct. 21, 1713, was proved Sept. 7, 1714. His remains were buried in King's Chapel Burial-Ground.

**Joseph Parsons** (1679), of Boston, merchant, married Bethia Brattle, daughter of Capt. Thomas (1675). They had four children, all of whom died young; the mother herself dying July 4, 1690, ten days after her last child died.

Mr. Parsons (1679) was a member of the patriotic council for the overthrow of Andros in 1689, and was made a freeman in March, 1690.

Of Joseph Parsons (1679), the father, after the death of the last of his family, nothing has been learned, except that he was alive in 1720.

**Robert Jones** (1679). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Lincoln's Hist. of Hingham.

**Charles Lidget** (1679). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1879, 1880, for letters of Charles Lidget (1679) and Francis Foxcroft (1679); *Annals of King's Chapel*.

**Benjamin Mountfort** (1679). AUTHORITIES: *Annals of King's Chapel*, pp. 93, 123; *King's Chapel Burial-Ground*, by Bridgman, p. 319.

**Joseph Parsons** (1679). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Harris's Descendants of Thomas Brattle.



**William Pollard** (1679), of Boston, son of William, an innholder, was born in Boston, March 20, 1653. He also kept an "ordinary," licensed in 1690. He was the father of Capt. Jonathan Pollard (1700), and grandfather of Col. Benjamin (1726); was a member of the Old South Church, and soldier in King Philip's War. He died in 1690.

**Samuel Ravenscroft** (1679), of Boston, married Dionysia, daughter of Major Thomas Savage (1637). Mr Foote, in *Annals of King's Chapel*, says he was, in 1689, one of the wardens of King's Chapel, which prevented his two youngest children being baptized at the Old South Church, to which he had belonged, and where his three eldest are recorded. He, too, was imprisoned in the revolution of 1689, and soon, after uniting in a loyal address to King William, moved from Boston. He was one of the founders of King's Chapel, and his name appears in the records of the first meeting, June 15, 1686. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1682, and ensign in 1686.

**Samuel Sewall** (1679), of Boston, bookseller, was born at Bishop-Stoke, England, March 28, 1652. He came to New England in 1661, and graduated at Harvard College in 1671. In a letter written in 1720 to his son, who had made some inquiries respecting the genealogy of the family, he wrote: "Mr. Henry Sewall, my great-grandfather, was a linen-draper in the city of Coventry, in Great Britain. He acquired a great estate, was a prudent man, and mayor of the city. Henry Sewall, my grandfather, was his eldest son, who, out of dislike to the English hierarchy, sent over his only son, my father, Mr. Henry Sewall, to New England, in the year 1634, with neat cattle and provisions suitable for a new plantation. On March 25, 1646, Richard Saltonstall joined together in marriage my father and my mother, Mrs. Jane Dummer, — my mother about nineteen years old. 'Your fathers, where are they?' In 1674, I took my second degree at Harvard College, and Mrs. Hannah Hull, my dear wife, saw me when I took my degrees, and set her affections on me, though I knew nothing of it till after our marriage, which was Feb. 28, 1675-6. Gov. Bradstreet married us."

It has been asserted in history and in romance, that when Mr. Sewall (1679) married Hannah Hull, on the 28th of February, 1675-6, her father requested her, after the ceremony, to stand on one side of his large scales, while he placed bags of shillings on the other side, until she was weighed down. The scales have been handed down, and grace a continental collection in Newbury; but modern iconoclasts say that the story originated in an ingenious computation of the weight of the sum which the bride actually received as her dowry. "From this marriage," remarks Quincy, "has sprung the eminent family of the Sewalls, which has given three chief-justices to Massachusetts, and one to Canada, and has been distinguished in every generation by talents and virtues of its members."

**William Pollard** (1679). — AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

**Samuel Ravenscroft** (1679). AUTHORITY: Foote's *Annals of King's Chapel*.

**Samuel Sewall** (1679). AUTHORITIES: Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Atlantic Monthly, February, 1880; Memoir of Samuel Sewall; New Eng.

Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, p. 105, with portrait; Sewall's Diary and Papers.

"[1712] Monday, May 5. I lay a stone at the South-east Corner of the Town House and had engraven on it S. S. 1712." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 346.

"The first Court was open'd in the New Town-house," April 27, 1713. — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 379.

Samuel (1679) attended school at Badesley, England, and later at Rumney. Arriving in Boston in 1661, not yet ten years of age, he proceeded to Newbury, and continued his studies under the tutorship of Rev. Thomas Parker, graduating in 1671. His original intention was to enter the ministry, and therefore he studied divinity, commenced preaching, and thought of settling at Woodbridge, N. J.; but his plans were changed, possibly by his fortunate marriage to Hannah Hull, daughter of Capt. John Hull (1660), the goldsmith and mint-master.

He was admitted to be freeman in 1678, and almost immediately began his public career. In the Records of the Town of Boston, he first appears, March 15, 1682-3, as one of a committee to draw up instructions for the deputies for the General Court. He was captain of a Boston military company from 1684 to 1693, and was major of the regiment in 1695-6. He was chosen assistant in 1684, 1685, and 1686. He served the town in various offices, and on many special committees. He visited England in 1688 and in 1689; the old charter having been revived, he was again assistant. He was a member of the old council in 1689, and also of the new, from 1692 to 1725, being the last survivor of the first-named councillors. In May, 1692, he was appointed one of the judges for the trial of persons charged with witchcraft. Nineteen of the persons arraigned before this court at Salem were executed. At a public meeting in the Old South meeting-house, on Fast Day, Jan. 14, 1697, the minister read publicly a note from Samuel Sewall (1679), — the latter standing in the congregation while Rev. Mr. Willard read it, — acknowledging the writer's guilt in the decisions of the court, and asking the pardon both of God and man.

Dec. 9, 1692, Mr. Sewall (1679) was chosen one of the judges of the Superior Court, and became chief-justice in 1718, retaining his seat on the bench until 1728, when, on account of advanced years, he resigned it. He was appointed judge of probate for the county of Suffolk in 1715, an office which he also resigned in 1728. He was a supervisor of the press in 1681, and, when the Cambridge press came under his control, is said to have printed the catechism with his own hands. In 1721, he entered his dissent to a declaration of war against the eastern Indians, and is entitled to the honor of being the first to oppose domestic slavery.

He was "a good friend to the aborigines of every tribe, not from mere humanity and compassion, but he was much inclined to think that they were part of the ancient people of God, and that the ten tribes, by some means or other, had strolled into America. He was a commissioner for propagating the gospel among them, and with his own substance built them a synagogue, and did many other charitable acts."

He was a man of distinguished piety, a diligent student of the Scriptures, and the author of two works on the Prophecies. In the year 1700, he expressed his sympathy with the enslaved Africans by the issuing of a tract, entitled "The Selling of Joseph." In 1701, with Hon. Isaac Addington (1652), he drew up rules for the regulation of Yale College, and was a member of the council, and one of the board of overseers of Harvard College for many years.

He died at Boston, Jan. 1, 1730, in his seventy-eighth year. The *Boston News-Letter* of Jan. 8, 1730, says, —

"After a month's languishment, died at his residence here, the Hon. Samuel Sewall, Esq. [1679], who has for forty years appeared a great ornament of his town and country. He was early chosen a tutor and fellow at Cambridge college, after taking his degree, but did not long reside there, on account of his marriage within a year. In

the disorderly time of Sir E. Andros's government, towards the end of 1688, he went a voyage to England; upon his landing there, met the surprising news of the happy revolution, and returned here the following year.

"He was universally beloved among us for his eminent piety, learning, and wisdom, his grave and venerable aspect and carriage, his instructive, affable, and cheerful conversation, his strict integrity and regard for justice, which with many other excellencies, rendered him 'worthy of a distinguishing regard in the New England histories.'

"He lived happily with the wife of his youth about forty-three years, who died Oct. 19, 1717. He afterwards married Mrs. Abigail Tilley and Mrs. Mary Gibbs, who is now a mourning widow."

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1680, ensign in 1683, and commander in 1701. Among his children were Rev. Joseph, pastor of the Old South Church, whom he lived to see settled there, and who, by shedding tears profusely during his prayers, gained the name of the "weeping apostle."

#### **Thomas Smith (1679).**

**William Sumner** (1679), of Boston, blacksmith, grandson of William, of Dorchester, and son of William, of Boston, was born in Boston, Feb. 9, 1656. He was a member of Major Clarke's (1644) military company in Boston in 1680, and held town offices for three years. July 28, 1684, the selectmen "agreed with William Sumner [1679], blacksmith to pay him 4*lds* in mony to keepe the clocke at y<sup>e</sup> North end of the Towne for one yeare." About 1687, he moved from Boston to Middleton, and died there, July 20, 1703.

From William, the grandfather, are descended Gov. Increase Sumner and his son, Gen. William H. Sumner (1819), also Thomas W. Sumner (1792).

**James Townsend** (1679), of Boston, a carpenter, son of William, and brother of Col. Penn Townsend (1674), was born Jan. 15, 1647, and became a freeman in 1672. He died before Dec. 17, 1689, when his widow refused letters of administration.

**David Waterhouse** (1679), of Boston in 1679, was very prominent in the outbreak of 1689 against Gov. Andros, and was one of the signers of the letter, dated April 18, requiring the Governor to give up his authority and surrender the forts to the people. He was one of the Council of Safety in 1689, "after which," says Mr. Savage, "we hear no more of him."

**Rev. Edward Bulkley**, of Concord, Mass., delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1679. He was the eldest son of Rev. Peter, the first minister of Concord, and was born in England. He was baptized at Odell, England, June 17, 1614, and came to this country before his father. He became a member of the First Church, Boston, March 22, 1635, and was admitted a freeman June 6 following. He was ordained in 1643, and was settled at Marshfield until 1658. In 1659, he succeeded his father at Concord, preached the sermon before the Governor and Legislature in 1680, and died at Chelmsford, Jan. 2, 1696, but was buried at Concord.

**William Sumner** (1679). **AUTHORITIES:** New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1851, 1854, 1855; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc., pp. 424, 436, 437.

**Rev. Edward Bulkley.** **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Eliot's Biog. Dict.



**1680-I.** The officers elected were: Thomas Savage (1637), captain; Ephraim Savage (1674), lieutenant; Anthony Checkley (1662), ensign. Samuel Sewall (1679) was first sergeant; John Hayward (1673), second sergeant; John Waite (1673), third sergeant; John Moore (1675), fourth sergeant; Nathaniel Barnes (1676), clerk; John Marion, drummer, and Edward Smith, armorer.

Meanwhile Randolph had continued to cross and recross the ocean, taking to the King statements showing the lack of loyalty to him in Massachusetts, the colonies of Plymouth and Connecticut having expressed their willingness to be "reduced under his Majesty's immediate government." Randolph also informed the King that, even "at Boston, the principal inhabitants, some whereof were the chief officers of the militia, and the generality of the people, complained of the arbitrary government and oppression of their magistrates, and did hope his Majesty would be pleased to free them from this bondage, by establishing his own royal authority among them, and govern them according to his Majesty's laws."

The new members recruited in 1680-I were: Stephen Burton, Giles Dyer, Enoch Greenleaf, Joseph Greenleaf, James Hawkins, Robert Mason, John Nelson, John Oliver, John Pell, John Phillips, Abel Porter, William Towers.

**Stephen Burton** (1680), was of Boston, Sept. 3, 1678, when he was called by Nathaniel Byfield (1679), with Edward Bromfield (1679) and Joseph Davis (1675), to appraise certain personal property. In 1680-I, he was constable of Boston, and in that year joined with John Walley (1671), Nathaniel Byfield (1679), and Nathaniel Oliver, "men of large estate and distinction, in purchasing the Mount Hope estate," the seat of King Philip, of Plymouth Colony. He married, Sept. 4, 1684, Elizabeth, only daughter of Gov. Josiah Winslow, having moved the year previous to Swansea, and was prominent in the settlement of Bristol. He was the first or earliest recorder for the county of Bristol, commencing at the date of its incorporation, viz., June 2, 1685. He represented the town of Bristol (then in Massachusetts, but now in Rhode Island) at the colonial court in 1685, 1686, and 1690, and was a selectman of Bristol in 1689 and 1690.

**Giles Dyer** (1680), of Boston, first appears in the Boston town records Feb. 23, 1673, when the selectmen engaged him "to keepe the clocke for one yeare." He had then had charge of the clock "10 months past." He continued to have charge of this clock on the First meeting-house until March 29, 1680, when he set up the clock on the North meeting-house and had the care of both. In 1684, he was a member of Capt. John Wing's (1671) military company and a tithing-man, and in 1708 was captain of the same company. He was afterward colonel of the regiment, and from Oct. 3, 1702, until his decease, was sheriff of the county. He was prominent in town matters, being assessor in 1703, and selectman from 1701 to 1704 inclusive. He was a member of King's Chapel, and a warden in 1690, 1696 and 1697. During Dudley's (1677) administration he was appointed, May 25, 1686, "receiver of duties on wines and liquors imported," and, Aug. 26, "deputy receiver of his Majesty's customs."

He died Aug. 12, 1713, his will of March 3, 1713, being proved on the 13th of December following. Judge Sewall (1679) says in his diary, that Capt. Dyer (1680) died

**Stephen Burton** (1680). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; MS. of Gen. Ebenezer W. Peirce (1852).

**Giles Dyer** (1680). **AUTHORITIES:** Boston Records; Foote's Annals of King's Chapel, Vol. I., p. 89; Dyer Genealogy; Savage's Gen. Dict.



"after long Languishing about 6 M. Church-Bell rings just before the School Bell, so both ring together. . . . Aug<sup>t</sup> 14. Am invited to be a Bearer to the Sheriff. I enquired of Mr. Secretary whether there was a Sermon; he told me yes, Mr. Harris was to preach, and seem'd to make no doubt of [my] going to hear him; I now begun to be distress'd." Mr. Foote, in *Annals of King's Chapel*, adds, "Judge Sewall [1679] accepted a pair of gloves for his sake, but refused to be a bearer, and though he followed in the procession, would not go into the church."

Mr. Edwin L. Bynner, in the *Memorial History of Boston*, after referring to the furnishings of King's Chapel and the costly presents that were made to it, says in regard to Mr. Dyer (1680), "Fired by this royal munificence, the worthy warden of the chapel has recorded with scrupulous care, but indifferent orthography, his own contribution: 'To my labor for making the Wather cock and Spindel, to Duing the Commandments and allter rome and the Pulpet, to Duing the Church and Winders, mor to Duing the Gallaray and the King's Armes, fortney pounds, which I freely give. G. DYER.'"

**Enoch Greenleaf** (1680), of Boston, son of Enoch, of Malden and Boston, was born about 1658, had two children born in Boston, and removed, or died, before 1700. He was by trade a saddler. In 1681, he was a member of Capt. Hutchinson's (1670) military company, and a jithing-man; in 1693, was a constable of Boston, and May 11, 1697, the selectmen voted, that "Mr. Enock Greenleaf . . . should have his just due." He was a brother of Joseph (1680).

**Joseph Greenleaf** (1680), of Boston, son of Enoch, of Malden and Boston, was a brother of Enoch (1680).

**James Hawkins** (1680), of Boston, son of James, was born in Boston, March 18, 1654. He first appears in the town records of Boston, May 26, 1681, when "W<sup>m</sup> Dawes, Ambrose Dawes [1674], James Hawkins [1680], were fined 20<sup>s</sup> for causeinge y<sup>e</sup> Towne ground to be dig'd vp, without leaue, & makeinge the wall of y<sup>e</sup> Cellar of y<sup>e</sup> Worp<sup>l</sup> Thomas Danfort Esq. Deputy Govern<sup>r</sup> 9 inches throughout frontinge toward y<sup>e</sup> Docke, vpon the towne lands, & still stands vpon the Towne propertie." March 29, 1686, he was again fined twenty shillings for "breakinge vp the Towne ground to make Mr. Thomas Clarke [1685], a Cellar, thereby digging too farr into the streete." He was a town officer in 1683, 1685, 1687, 1690, and 1691, and resided in Boston until his decease, Jan. 6, 1709-10.

**Robert Mason** (1680), of Portsmouth, N. H., was a grandson of John Mason, the patentee of New Hampshire, to which right he was an heir. Charles II., in 1677, confirmed his rights as proprietor of New Hampshire, and he was named, by the King, a councillor of the province in 1680. He was a councillor in 1682, while he resided in Portsmouth. He was named one of Sir Edmund Andros's council, but died in 1688. He was the father of John Tufton and Robert Tufton Mason, prominent in the history of Portsmouth.

**Enoch Greenleaf** (1680). AUTHORITIES: *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 1884, p. 300; Boston Records.

**James Hawkins** (1680). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

"[1709-10] Sixth-day Jan 6<sup>th</sup> James Hawkins

dyes very suddenly, about 56 years old." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 271.

**Robert Mason** (1680). AUTHORITIES: *Savage's Gen. Dict.*; *Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company*, Ed. 1842.

**John Nelson** (1680), of Boston, merchant, was a son of William, to whom Sir Thomas Temple, his nephew, made lease of his patent rights in Nova Scotia. John (1680) and Sir Thomas were, therefore, cousins. Mr. Nelson (1680) "was of a good family, nearly related to Sir Thomas Temple, — an enemy to tyrannical government, but an Episcopalian in principle; of a gay, free temper, which prevented his being allowed any share in the administration, after it was settled, although he was at the head of the party to whom the fort and Sir Edmund surrendered." He was, however, selected as one of the Council of Safety. In the new council, he was omitted. "Notwithstanding the slight put upon him, yet such was the regard for his country that he ran very great risk of his life in an attempt to give intelligence of the designs of the French. He went, not long after the surrender, upon a trading voyage to Nova Scotia, where he was taken by a party of French and Indians, and carried to Quebec."

Mr. Whitman (1810) adds: "It was here [Quebec] in confinement he contrived to send a letter of information to the court at Boston, which Hutchinson gives at length from their files, developing the hostile plans of the French in August, 1692. He had received a commission from the provincial government of Massachusetts in 1691, to be commander-in-chief in Acadia, when bound on this voyage; but when he came near the river St. John's he was taken prisoner. He was afterwards carried as a prisoner from Quebec to Paris, France, where he was confined in the Bastille.\* A valuable letter from Paris, written by him in 1698, when a prisoner, is given in 3 Mass. Hist. Coll., I., 196. His relative, Sir Purbeck Temple, procured his liberation, and he returned to his family after a separation of ten or eleven years.

In 1689, there was a popular uprising of the people to protect their liberties, and dethrone Andros and his subaltern, Randolph. On the eventful day, April 18, the Governor, and such of his friends as had not been put into Boston jail, retired to the Sconce, or South Battery, intending, doubtless, to board the English frigate, "Rose," whose captain, John George, was among the first seized by the enraged people. The Governor's friends and redcoats gathered at the fort; the Americans assembled at the town-house. Preparations for a conflict were made by both sides, the "Rose" running out her shotted guns. Failing to reach the frigate's boat, which had been sent to take the Governor off, because the Americans seized it, with its "small arms, grenades, and a quantity of match," the Governor and his party retired again to the fort. Nathaniel Byfield (1679), an eye-witness, says, "Whereupon Mr. John Nelson [1680], who was at the head of the soldiers, did demand the fort and Governor, who was loath to submit to them, but did at length come down," and he was escorted a prisoner to the house of Col. John Usher (1673).

Capt. John Nelson (1680), of the Artillery Company, stands forth as the chief military actor in the revolution of 1689. He was born in 1654, and died Nov. 15, 1734. Dr. Timothy Cutler delivered a sermon upon his career, service, and character, saying that "Capt. Nelson [1680] was neither troublesome, dangerous, or dishonorable, but universally affable, courteous, and hospitable." He "closed a life of fourscore and one years, fearing God, and calmly and quietly trusting in His mercy." He contributed five pounds toward the building of King's Chapel, July, 1689, and was a warden of the Episcopalian church, Boston, in 1705-7.

**John Nelson** (1680). AUTHORITIES: Foote's *Annals of King's Chapel*, pp. 89, 90, 179-181, with portrait and fac-simile of his autograph; Dedham

Reg., 1890, p. 130; Eliot's *Biog. Dict.*; Whitman's *Hist. A. and H. A. Company*, Ed. 1842; *Acts and Resolves of Prov. of Mass. Bay*, Vol. VII.

**John Oliver** (1680), of Boston, cooper, son of John Oliver (1638), was born in Boston, April 15, 1644. He was admitted a freeman in 1681; became a member of the Second Church in Boston, and lieutenant in the militia. He married Susannah, daughter of John Sweet (1673). He died in 1683.

**John Pell** (1680). It is difficult to trace this recruit. John Pell, who came to America in 1670 to receive an estate left him by his uncle, Thomas, at Fairfield, Conn., may have taken up his residence in Boston. Judge Sewall says, "John Pell [1680] was third sergeant in Capt John Hull's [1660] company in 1681."

**John Phillips** (1680), of Charlestown, a master-mariner, was born in 1631. He married, (1) July 19, 1655, Catherine Anderson, who died Feb. 24, 1699, and (2) Sarah Stedman, of Cambridge. He died March 20, 1725, aged ninety-three years and nine months. He was admitted a freeman in 1673, and represented Charlestown in the General Court from 1683 to 1686. He was one of the Committee of Safety, organized when Andros surrendered in 1689; assistant in 1689; treasurer of the province in 1692-3; one of the council named in the new charter, but was chosen by the people, before it came, as a councillor, and was re-elected yearly until 1715; was appointed judge of the inferior Court of Common Pleas for Middlesex County, June 29, 1702, and served on the bench until Dec. 9, 1715. In 1695, he was a commissioner to treat with the Indians; also, again in 1701, when he was associated with Penn Townsend (1674), Nathaniel Byfield (1679), and John Nelson (1680), in making a treaty with the eastern Indians. He was colonel of the First Middlesex Regiment from 1689 to 1715.

His daughter, Abigail, married Rev. Cotton Mather, May 4, 1686, and according to Judge Sewall's (1679) diary, it was to the house of Capt. John Phillips (1680), in Charlestown, that Rev. Increase Mather, father of Rev. Cotton, fled in March, 1688, being bitterly hostile to the royal Governor.

John Phillips (1680) was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1681, ensign in 1682, lieutenant in 1684, and captain in 1685.

Mr. Whitman (1810) is in error when he states, in his *History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company*, Ed. 1842, p. 212, that the Company held no election in June, 1686; and that Col. Phillips (1680) "did not assemble the Company after Andros was deposed, or resume his command on its revival." Col. Phillips (1680) served his year from June, 1685, to June, 1686, when Capt. Benjamin Davis (1673) was elected captain, and Rev. Nehemiah Hobart delivered the sermon. Col. Phillips (1680) had no authority to assemble the Company after Andros was deposed, not could he resume command at the revival of the Company.

**Abel Porter** (1680), of Boston, son of Abel, of Boston, was admitted to be a freeman in 1672, when he was called "junior." He was a member of a new military company in Boston in September, 1677, of Capt. Hudson's (1640) company in 1680, of Capt. Samuel Sewall's (1679) in 1685.

**William Towers** (1680), of Boston in 1668, was a butcher. He is first mentioned in the Records of the Town of Boston, March 14, 1669-70, being authorized to enforce

**John Oliver** (1680). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1865, p. 101; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Phillips** (1680). AUTHORITIES: Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. I., p. 29; Whitman's

Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Mather's Magnalia, Vol. II., p. 631.

**William Towers** (1680). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



the law in regard to wandering swine. He held minor town offices for four years, and in April, 1681, he was approved by the selectmen to keep a house of public entertainment. His license was annually renewed until 1692.

**Rev. William Adams**, of Dedham, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1680. He was born May 27, 1650, probably at Ipswich. He received a liberal education, graduated at Harvard College in 1671, studied theology, and was ordained pastor of the church at Dedham, Dec. 3, 1673. He received but sixty pounds annually as his salary, and one year he relinquished eight pounds of that moderate stipend, on account of expenses incurred by the town during King Philip's War.

He married, (1) Oct. 21, 1674, Mary Manning, of Cambridge, who died June 24, 1679, and, (2) March 27, 1680, Alice, daughter of Major William Bradford, of Plymouth. He died at Dedham, Aug. 17, 1685.

**1681-2.** The officers elected were: Penn Townsend (1674), captain; Benjamin Davis (1673), lieutenant; Thomas Savage (1665), ensign. John Phillips (1680) was first sergeant; Benjamin Alford (1671), second sergeant; Jonathan Bridgham (1673), third sergeant; Bozoun Allen (1676), fourth sergeant; Nathaniel Barnes (1676), clerk; John Marion, drummer, and Edward Smith, armorer.

The King, stimulated by the misrepresentations of Randolph, sent a peremptory demand to the colony to send over its agents fully empowered to act, and to answer for the irregularity of its proceedings, under the penalty of the forfeiture of its charter. Accordingly Col. Joseph Dudley (1677) and Major John Richards (1644) proceeded to London to answer the royal demand. They had a passage of twelve weeks, and on their arrival learned that the King and his counsellors had matured their plans for depriving Massachusetts of her charter.

The new members recruited in 1681-2 were: Thomas Barnard, Thomas Beavis, Samuel Brighton, Thomas Brinley, John Brookhaven, John Cutler, Jonathan Farnam, John Long, Joseph Lynde, Thaddeus Maccarty, Solomon Phips, John Pordage, Nathaniel Reynolds, Richard Sprague, and Samuel Worden.

**Thomas Barnard** (1681), of Boston in 1678, a carpenter, son of Matthew (1660), a carpenter, was born April 4, 1657. He first appears as a member of the first fire-engine company organized in Boston, on the 27th of January, 1678; held town office by election or appointment from 1683 to 1685 inclusive, from 1689 to 1692 inclusive, and in 1698 and 1699. He was a member of Major Clarke's (1644) military company in 1681, and a tithing-man; and in 1708, and again in 1713, was appointed to inspect the town in regard to ladders, for use in case of fire. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1692.

**Rev. William Adams.** AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Lamson's Historical Discourses.

**Thomas Barnard** (1681). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Bridgman, p. 33.



He died March 14, 1715-6, and was buried in the Copp's Hill Burial-Ground. On his gravestone he is called "Capt."<sup>1</sup>

**Thomas Beavis** (1681), of Boston in 1679, "a tobacconist," was that year a town officer, and in 1680 was a member of Capt. Richards's (1644) company and a tithing-man. In 1681, he was a clerk of the market, and a constable in 1683. Administration was granted on his estate in 1683.

**Samuel Brighton** (1681), of Boston, a cooper, was a member of a military company in Boston, and a tithing-man in 1690-1. He had four children born in Boston from 1684 to 1692. The last was born Sept. 30, 1692, and his estate was administered upon Oct. 21 next following.

**Thomas Brinley** (1681), of Boston, was the second son of Francis Brinley, and was born in Newport, R. I. He removed to Boston in 1681, and was one of the founders of King's Chapel in 1686. He went to England, married Mary Apthorp, and died at London in 1693. The widow, with three children, came to America to reside with their grandfather, and after his death she resided with her son, Francis, in Roxbury.

**John Brookhaven** (1681) was of Rhode Island in 1669, and in 1671 was there called "Captain."

**John Cutler** (1681), of Charlestown, a blacksmith, son of Robert, was probably born in England about 1628. He married (1) Anna Woodmansey, of Charlestown. She died Aug. 20, 1683, and he married, (2) Oct. 29, 1684, Mehitabel Hilton, daughter of Increase Nowell. She died Sept. 29, 1711, surviving her husband, who died "Sept. 12, 1694, aged 66 years," according to his gravestone.

He was a deacon of the Charlestown church in 1673, ensign of the Charlestown company the same year, and a representative for that town in 1680 and 1682. He was identified with the military, and served as captain in an expedition during King Philip's War. In 1689, he was deprived of his military command for supporting Capt. Laurence Hammond (1666) in opposing the acts of the convention of May 22, 1689. Capt. Cutler (1681) was a sympathizer with Andros, signed the petition to the King against the succeeding government, and was fined and imprisoned. He petitioned the Governor and council, Dec. 12, 1689, to be released from confinement, promising to be a good subject of their Majesties and of their government here. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1684.

Capt. Cutler was grandfather of Rev. Timothy Cutler, D. D., president of Yale College, and father of Major John Cutler, of Charlestown.

**Jonathan Farnam** (1681), of Boston, son of John, of Dorchester, was born at Dorchester, Jan. 16, 1639, and was a nephew of Henry (1644). He was a captain of a Boston company.

**Thomas Brinley** (1681). **AUTHORITIES:** Foote's Annals of King's Chapel, Vol. I., p. 89; King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman, p. 219.

**John Cutler** (1681). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Cutler Genealogy; Foote's Annals of King's Chapel, pp. 117, 118; Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. II.

<sup>1</sup> It appears among the valuable notes in Vol. VII. of the Province Laws, p. 569, that Capt. Barnard (1681) was commander of a company in the expedition which captured Port Royal, May 21, 1690; and, on p. 570, is given the account of Mr. Wing, tavern-keeper, for billeting Capt. Barnard's (1681) men during May, June, and July, 1690.

**John Long** (1681), of Charlestown, innkeeper, son of Robert Long (1639), came to America with his parents in 1635. The father, who had been an innkeeper in England, established an inn at Charlestown in 1636. At his death, in 1664, John (1681) became the landlord, and was at the head of the great "ordinary" until his death, after which his widow had charge of it until 1711, when she gave it to their son, Samuel, who sold it the next year. The tavern house was that "great house," built in 1629 for the Governor and company, which for more than eighty years was called the Long Tavern.

John Long (1681) married (1) Abigail, daughter of Francis Norton (1643), who died April 21, 1674, and, (2) Sept. 16, 1674, Mary, daughter of Increase Nowell. He died July 20, 1683.

**Joseph Lynde** (1681), of Charlestown, son of Thomas, of Charlestown, was born June 3, 1636, and became a freeman in 1671. He married, (1) March 24, 1665, Sarah, daughter of Nicholas Davison (1648), who died Dec. 13, 1678, and (3) Mary, widow of Adam Winthrop (1692). He represented Charlestown in the House of Deputies in 1674, 1679, and 1680; was one of the Council of Safety in 1689; "made a councillor by the King in the charter of 1691, but left out at the first election by the people," says Mr. Savage. He was active in military matters, and was promoted to the grade of lieutenant-colonel. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1682, and its lieutenant in 1692. He died at Charlestown, Jan. 29, 1726-7.

"In August, 1695, Lieut.-Col. Joseph Lynde, one of our most distinguished citizens, was commissioned to pursue the Indians who had attacked Billerica in the early part of the month, and who had killed or captured fifteen persons. But the pursuit was fruitless, the Indians eluding the search for them."<sup>1</sup>

**Thaddeus Maccarty** (1681), of Boston, shopkeeper, held a town office in Boston in 1674. He was one of the founders of King's Chapel; present at the first meeting, June 15, 1686; was warden in 1695, and died June 18, 1705, aged sixty-five years. He was buried in the Granary Burial-Ground.

**Solomon Phips** (1681), of Charlestown, son of Solomon, married, (1) Nov. 13, 1667, Hannah Pickard, who died Feb. 1, 1668, and (2) Mary, daughter of Deputy-Gov. Thomas Danforth. They joined the church there, April 3, 1670, and he was admitted to be a freeman May 11, 1670. He was captain of the Charlestown company.

Letters of administration were granted his widow, July 10, 1693.

**John Pordage** (1681) probably should be George Pordage. Mr. Savage mentions only "George Portage." He married Elizabeth Lynde, daughter of Simon (1658). In the Annals of King's Chapel the name is given as George Pordage. He was a merchant,

**John Long** (1681). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, p. 138; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.

**Joseph Lynde** (1681). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. I., p. 29; Frothingham's Hist. of Charlestown.

"May 7, 1709. About 6. or 7. P. M. Col. Lynde of Charlestown had his Malt-House and Dwelling house burnt down, wind blowing hard at South

west, and very dry." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 255.

**Thaddeus Maccarty** (1681). AUTHORITIES: Foote's Annals of King's Chapel; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Solomon Phips** (1681). AUTHORITIES: Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates; Savage's Gen. Dict.

<sup>1</sup> Mem. Hist. of Boston, Vol. II., p. 327.

and gave five pounds toward the erection of King's Chapel in 1689. He very soon after removed from the province. His daughter, Hannah, married, Sept. 16, 1714, James Bowdoin, and was the mother of James (Harv. Coll., 1745), the president of the convention of 1780, first president of the American Antiquarian Society, and second Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

**Nathaniel Reynolds** (1681), of Boston, is not mentioned in the town records from 1676 to 1680, though he is, several times, before 1676 and after 1680. Mr. Savage says "he lived in Bristol some years." His son, Nathaniel, born in 1662, would have been but nineteen years old in 1681. Probably Lieut. Nathaniel, who joined the Artillery Company in 1658, rejoined in 1681.

**Richard Sprague** (1681), of Charlestown, son of Ralph Sprague (1638), and nephew of Richard (1638), all of Charlestown, was born in England. In 1674, during the Dutch war, he commanded an armed vessel of twelve guns, and cruised in Long Island Sound for the protection of the coastwise trade. March 16, 1680-1, the Charlestown train-band was divided into two companies, Capt. Laurence Hammond (1666) commanding one, and Capt. Richard Sprague (1681) the other. He was a representative in 1681, and for some years after. In 1689, with Laurence Hammond (1666) and John Cutler (1681), he was deprived of his command for opposing the acts of the convention of May 22, 1689, which voted to restore the old charter, and reinstate the civil and military officers deposed in 1686 by Andros. On the day of the revolution, April 18, 1689, when the conflict with Andros was being carried on, Capt. Richard Sprague (1681) led his company of Charlestown men to Boston.

He died Oct. 7, 1703, having made by will generous bequests to the church, etc., and also four hundred pounds to Harvard College.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1683.

Mr. Whitman (1810) follows Mr. Budington's History, p. 192, and calls him "son of Richard," which is an error.

**Samuel Worden** (1681), of Boston, married a daughter of Gov. Thomas Hinckley, and had Samuel born in Barnstable in 1684. He removed to that town, and died not long after, for his widow married, in 1698, William, son of William Avery (1654), of Dedham.

**Rev. John Richardson**, of Newbury, delivered the Artillery sermon of 1681.<sup>1</sup> He was born at Boston in December, 1647, graduated at Harvard College in 1666, and Oct. 20, 1675, was ordained as a colleague of Rev. Thomas Parker, of Newbury. His salary was "one hundred pounds, one-half in merchantable barley, and the rest in merchant-

**Richard Sprague** (1681). AUTHORITIES: Budington's Hist. of First Church, Charlestown; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"8r. 13, 1703. Capt Rich'd Sprague . . . is buried in Mr. Morton's Tomb. I was there. Most of the Scholars, Joseph for one: My Gloves were too little, I gave them him. Gov. there." — *Seewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 89.

**Rev. John Richardson**. AUTHORITIES: Sav-Gen. Dict.; Coffin's Hist. of Newbury; Sibley's Graduates of Harv. Coll.

"1681. June 6, I went to Artillery Election. Mr. Richardson preached. — the ministers dined at Wings with the Artillery & I among them." — *Journal of Rev. Peter Thacher*.

able pork, wheat, butter or Indian corn." He died in Newbury, April 27, 1696. His monument bears the following inscription: --

"Resurrection to immortality — is here expected from what was mortal of the Reverend Mr. John Richardson (once Fellow of Harvard College, afterwards Teacher to the Church in Newbury), putt off Apr. 27, 1696, in the fiftieth year of his age.

"When Preachers dy, the Rules the pulpit gave,  
To live well, are still preached from the grave.  
The Faith & Life, which your dead Pastor taught,  
In one grave with him, Syrs, bury not."

"Abi viator.

A mortuo discere vivere moriturus  
E Terris discere cogitare de Cœlis."

1682-3. The officers elected were: Theophilus Frary (1666), captain; John Wing (1671), lieutenant; John Phillips (1680), ensign. Joseph Lynde (1681) was first sergeant; Samuel Ravenscroft (1679), second sergeant; Joseph Bridgham (1674), third sergeant; Nathaniel Byfield (1679), fourth sergeant; Nathaniel Barnes (1676), clerk: John Marion, drummer, and Edward Smith, armorer.

The relations between King Charles and the Colony of Massachusetts became more and more unfriendly. Stimulated by Randolph, he preferred claims and made encroachments which they resisted. The causes of irritation, both on the part of the King and of the colonists, gradually increased, until a writ of *quo warranto* was issued, summoning the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay to the bar of the Court of King's Bench, in London. The agents of the colony, unwilling to undertake the management of a question upon which the political existence, liberty, and property of their constituents depended, returned home. Instructions were sent over to Mr. Robert Humphreys, a London barrister of the Inner Temple, to appear for the colony at the approaching term of the Court of King's Bench, "to save a default and gain what time he might, . . . that a better day might shine."

The new members recruited in 1682-3 were: Thomas Baker, John Ballentine, Jonathan Call, Thomas Cole, Henry Deering, John Eyre, Edward Hunlock, John Jacobs, Ebenezer Pierpont, Benjamin Savage, Ebenezer Savage, Edward Smith, Giles Sylvester, Daniel Taylor, Michael Williams.

**Thomas Baker** (1682), of Boston, son of John (1644), was born Feb. 12, 1654. He was, like his father, a blacksmith. He held minor town offices, and was a member of Capt. John Richards's (1644) company, and a tithing-man in 1680. The last time his name is mentioned in the Boston town records is May 5, 1685. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1696. He died Jan. 3, 1697.

**John Ballentine** (1682), of Boston, son of William, was born Sept. 29, 1653. He was a member of Major Savage's (1637) military company, and a tithing-man in 1680; of Capt. Henchman's (1675) in 1681; a constable of Boston in 1683; was captain of a

**Thomas Baker** (1682). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1861, p. 124 (father's will); Boston Records.

"Sabbath, Dec. 19, 1686." Thomas Baker was the first person who informed Judge Sewall of the arrival, that morning, of Sir Edmund Andros.



company in 1705, afterward major; became lieutenant-colonel in 1710, and colonel in 1712. He represented Boston in the House of Deputies in 1726. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1694, lieutenant in 1697, and captain in 1703 and 1710. He was active in promoting the revival of the Company, and from his so frequently being a bondsman, must have continued a member until his death, which occurred April 27, 1734. His son, Capt. John, joined the Artillery Company in 1694. His mansion was near Mill Bridge, which, for years, at Ann Street, from its dangerous weakness, was a source of complaint by the selectmen. Col. Ballentine (1682), with others, was obliged to maintain it. His name was perpetuated in "Ballentine's Corner," Hanover Street, corner of Marshall's Lane. The latter extended from Capt. Ballentine's (1682) corner, Hanover Street, near the Mill Bridge, to the corner of Capt. Fitch's (1700) tenement, corner of Union Street.<sup>1</sup>

**Jonathan Call** (1682), spelled Cawle on the roll, of Charlestown, son of John, of Charlestown, was born Jan. 20, 1658. He married Martha Lowdon, and with her he joined the Charlestown church, March 6, 1687. He was representative from Charlestown in 1689. He was a lieutenant of the Charlestown company, and died May 4, 1713.

**Thomas Cole** (1682).

**Henry Deering** (1682), of Boston in 1663, a shopkeeper, was born Aug. 16, 1639. He married, (1) June 8, 1664, Ann, widow of Ralph Benning, and (2) Elizabeth, widow of Theodore Atkinson and daughter of Edward Mitchelson (1638). In 1678, he was fined ten pounds for refusing to serve as constable, and was a member of Capt. Davis's (1643) military company in 1680, and of Capt. Hutchinson's (1670) in 1684. He was clerk of the market in 1685, and held other town offices, besides being moderator of the town meetings several times, and also auditor of the town treasurer's accounts. In 1703, the selectmen appointed him "Master of the Engine Company." He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1683, 1684, and 1691; first sergeant in 1685; ensign in 1693, and lieutenant in 1696. He was also ensign, lieutenant, and captain, successively, in a Boston company. He died in 1717.

Mr. Hutchinson, in speaking of the great mortality among old people in that year, says, "He was buried with his wife in one grave."<sup>2</sup>

**John Eyre** (1682), of Boston, merchant, son of Simon, of Watertown, was born Feb. 19, 1654, and married, May 20, 1680, Catherine, daughter of Thomas Brattle (1675). He was one of the nine persons, all members of the Artillery Company, who,

**John Ballentine** (1682). *AUTHORITIES:* New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1852, p. 371; Boston Records; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Jonathan Call** (1682). *AUTHORITY:* Charlestown Records.

**Henry Deering** (1682). *AUTHORITIES:* Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**John Eyre** (1682). *AUTHORITIES:* Boston Records; Descendants of Thomas Brattle, by Harris, p. 25; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1855, p. 39 (his father's will); 1861, p. 13.

"[1700, Monday] June 17. Mr. John Eyre makes his Will in the morning and dies in the Afternoon, an hour or 2 before Sunset. Born Febr 19, 1653/4. I visited him on Satterday in the Afternoon: He was sitting up in his little Room, Took me by the hand at first coming in, Desired me to pray for him when took leave. . . .

"Fourth-day, June 19, 1700. Mr Jno Eyre is entomed in the new burying place." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. II., pp. 15, 16.*

<sup>1</sup> Drake's Hist. of Boston, p. 813.

<sup>2</sup> Hutchinson, I., 223.

with Bradstreet, Stoughton, and four others, — fifteen in all, — signed the first summons sent to Andros to surrender, when he retired with his council and friends to the fort on Fort Hill for safety. John Eyre (1682) and Nathaniel Oliver, father of Nathaniel (1701), were the bearers of that summons, to which Andros declined to yield; but he did surrender later, at the personal demand of Capt. John Nelson (1680). He was one of the Committee of Safety in 1689; a representative for Boston in 1693, 1696, 1698, and 1699; a selectman in 1694 and 1695, and held many positions of trust and usefulness in the town. He lived in Prison Lane, formerly called Queen, now Court Street.

He died June 17, 1700, and his widow married, in 1707, Waitstill Winthrop (1692).

**Edward Hunlock** (1682), of Boston, came over from Derbyshire about 1680. He, by wife Margaret, had three children born in Boston, the last being born Feb. 15, 1686. He soon removed to Burlington, in the province of New Jersey, whence he wrote, July 12, 1695, to his kinsman, John, of Boston. In December, 1699, he was appointed by Gov. Hamilton one of the three provincial judges, and in the first year of her reign Queen Anne, by commission dated Nov. 16, 1702, to her cousin, Lord Cornbury, Governor of New Jersey, named Edward Hunlock (1682) the first of his thirteen councillors.

**John Jacobs** (1682), of Hingham, born in England about 1630, was a son of Nicholas, of Hingham. He married, (1) Oct. 20, 1653, Margery Eames, who died April 7, 1659, and, (2) Oct. 3, 1661, Mary Russell. He resided in South Hingham, near the meeting-house of the Second Parish. He was a selectman in 1662, 1665, 1683, 1686, and 1689, and an active business man.

Capt. John's (1682) son, John, Jr., was a member of Capt. Johnson's company in the Narraganset campaign of December, 1675, and was killed by the Indians, April 19, 1676, near his father's house. Capt. Jacobs (1682) was engaged in King Philip's War, and for some time had command of a company.

He died Sept. 18, 1693, aged, as his gravestone in the High Street Cemetery, in Hingham, says, "about 63 years."

**Ebenezer Pierpont** (1682), of Roxbury, son of John, of Roxbury, was born Dec. 21, 1661. He married, Oct. 20, 1692, Mary Ruggles, and died Dec. 11, 1696.

**Benjamin Savage** (1682), of Boston, baptized Oct. 12, 1662, was the fifteenth child, and eleventh son, of Major Thomas Savage (1637). He is not mentioned in the Boston town records.

**Ebenezer Savage** (1682), of Boston, born May 22, 1660, was the thirteenth child, and ninth son, of Major Thomas Savage (1637). He was an upholsterer.

**Edward Smith** (1682), of Boston, was the armorer of the Military Company of the Massachusetts from 1677 to 1685 inclusive.

**Edward Hunlock** (1682). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**John Jacobs** (1682). AUTHORITIES: New

Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1888, p. 101; Lincoln's Hist. of Hingham.

**Giles Sylvester** (1682), of Boston, perhaps son of Nathaniel, of Shelter Island, married Hannah, eldest daughter of Major Thomas Savage (1637), and widow of Benjamin Gillam, in 1685. At that time, he is supposed to have moved to Shelter Island, where was the manorial estate of his father, who died in 1680.

**Daniel Taylor** (1682). A Daniel Taylor was in "Saybrook in 1689."

**Michael Williams** (1682).

**Rev. Samuel Whiting, Jr.**, of Billerica, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1682.<sup>1</sup> He was a son of Rev. Samuel Whiting, of Lynn, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1660, and was born in England, March 25, 1633. He graduated at Harvard College in 1653; became a freeman in 1656. He was the first minister of Billerica, settling there in 1658, and was ordained Nov. 11, 1663, after preaching there five years. He died Feb. 28, 1713.

---

1683-4. The officers elected were: Ephraim Savage (1674), captain; Anthony Checkley (1662), lieutenant; Samuel Sewall (1679), ensign. Richard Sprague (1681) was first sergeant; Francis Foxcroft (1679), second sergeant; William Colman (1676), third sergeant; John Barnard (1677), fourth sergeant; Henry Deering (1682), clerk; John Marion, drummer, and Edward Smith (1682), armorer.

The relations between the colony and the King did not improve. The General Court urged Mr. Humphreys, their legal representative, to "use his endeavor to spin out the case to his utmost," and they sent an additional address to the King, in which they prayed that he would not impute it to "the perverseness of their minds," that they could not make the submission which he demanded.

Meanwhile, there were several indications of a desire to conciliate royalty. The cross in the King's colors had been made a pretext for not using them, but now, by order of the major-general, the captains of companies were required, "with all convenient speed," to provide a suite of colors for their respective commands, "ye ground field or flight whereof is to be green, with a red cross with a white field in ye angle, according to the ancient custom of our English nation, and the English plantation in America, and our own practice in our ships and other vessels." The scruple against the use of the King's colors, however, still continued in many minds.

Judge Samuel Sewall (1679) was, in 1685, captain of the south company of militia in Boston. In his diary, under date of Aug. 20, 1686, he wrote: "Read tenth Jeremiah; was in great exercise about the cross to be put into the colors and afraid, if I should have a hand in it, whether it may not hinder my entrance into the holy land." On the 11th of November, he resigned his commission, "on account of an order to put the cross in the colors."

It does not appear that any new members were recruited in 1683.

**Rev. Samuel Whiting, Jr.** AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Eliot's Biog. Dict.

<sup>1</sup> "1682 June 5. I went to Artillery election. Mr. Whiting of Billerica preached, I dined with them at Wings." — *Journal of Rev. Peter Thacher*.

**Rev. John Hale**, of Beverly, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1683. He was the eldest child of Deacon Robert Hale, of Charlestown, and was born June 3, 1636. He graduated at Harvard College in 1657, and married, (1) Dec. 15, 1664, Mrs. Rebecca Byles, of Salisbury, who died April 13, 1683. He married, (2) March 31, 1684, Sarah Noyes, who died May 20, 1695, and on Aug. 8, 1698, he took Elizabeth (Somerby) Clark for his third wife. In 1664, he went to Beverly as a religious teacher, and, Sept. 20, 1667, a church was organized there. Mr. Hale became its first pastor. In 1690, by order of the General Court, he accompanied the expedition against Canada, and served as chaplain from June 4 to Nov. 20. He had a peaceful and successful ministry of thirty-seven years, and died May 15, 1700.

Rev. John Hale was a great-grandfather of Nathan Hale, of Connecticut, one of the martyrs of the Revolution.

The officers elected were: Elisha Hutchinson (1670), captain; **1684-5.** John Phillips (1680), lieutenant; Nathaniel Williams (1667), ensign. Nathaniel Barnes (1676) was first sergeant; William Gibson (1675), second sergeant; John Cutler (1681), third sergeant; Jabez Salter (1674), fourth sergeant; Henry Deering (1682), clerk; John Marion, drummer; Edward Smith (1682), armorer.

Capt. Hutchinson (1670), who had held the office of captain of the Company, was probably again chosen in these troublous times on account of his personal popularity, good judgment, and special fitness. John Phillips (1680) also enjoyed universal esteem. While these two officers were not unfavorably disposed towards the King, the ensign, Nathaniel Williams (1667), was more decidedly on the side of the colony.

On the 21st of June, a decree was rendered in Westminster Hall, which abrogated the charter granted by James I. to the Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay. Massachusetts, under the common law of England, again belonged to the King, by virtue of the discovery of the Cabots.

A lieutenant and governor-general was appointed, but before he could be installed Charles II. had surrendered his sceptre, as a "Merry Monarch," into the grasp of the "King of Terrors." The Roman Catholic Duke of York ascended the throne of England, with the title of James II., and the Prince of Orange awaited the turn of fortune's wheel.

On the day of the accession of King James II. to the throne, he issued a proclamation, directing that all persons in authority in his kingdoms and colonies should continue to exercise their functions till further order should be taken. A printed copy of the proclamation was transmitted to Boston by Blathwayt, together with an order to proclaim the new King.

The General Court was convened by the Governor to receive and register the edict. The court was prepared to reply that the royal pleasure had been anticipated. A fortnight before its meeting, on the reception of a less formal information to the same effect, "the Governor and Council had ordered his Majesty, with all due solemnity, to be proclaimed in the High street in Boston; which was done April 20. The Honorable Governor, Deputy-Governor, and Assistants, on horseback, with thousands of people, a troop of horse, eight foot companies, drums beating, trumpets sounding, his Majesty

**Rev. John Hale.** AUTHORITIES: Sprague's *Annals of American Pulpit*; Savage's *Gen. Dict.*



was proclaimed by Edward Rawson, Secretary, on horseback, and John Green, Marshal-General, taking it from him, to the great joy and loud acclamation of the people, and a seventy piece of ordnance next after the volleys of horse and foot."

The new members recruited in 1684-5 were: Roger Kilcup, Thomas Oakes, and William Robie.

**Roger Kilcup** (1684), of Boston, a master-mariner, though in his will he calls himself "merchant," was probably a son of William, of Boston. Roger (1684) was admitted a freeman in 1690; married, July 4, 1695, Abigail Dudson, and died, according to his gravestone in the Granary Burial-Ground, "October 1, 1702, aged 52 years." He was a constable of Boston in 1689-90, and third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1693. His widow married, Oct. 11, 1704, Ezekiel Lewis (1707).

**Thomas Oakes** (1684), of Boston, born June 18, 1644, was a son of Edward Oakes, and a brother of Rev. Urian Oakes, of Cambridge, who was president of Harvard College in 1675, and who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1672. Thomas (1684) graduated at Harvard College in 1662, and pursued the profession of a physician. He was early interested in the militia, and became a lieutenant. He was representative for Boston in 1689, being elected speaker the same year, and the next was an assistant. He went to England with Elisha Cooke, Sr., to obtain the restitution of the old charter. The attempt to revive it was fruitless, but finally he joined in the petition for the new one. On the issuing of the new charter, William and Mary, "under dictation of Increase Mather," left out Thomas Oakes (1684). In 1705, being again chosen speaker, the Governor negatived the choice; but he continued, notwithstanding, to hold that office. He was also, the same year, chosen a member of the council, but Gov. Dudley (1677) negatived that also. Mr. Oakes (1684) seems to have been a leader of the opposition. He was elected to the House from 1704 to 1707, and speaker again in 1706. The selection was negatived by Gov. Dudley (1677), who ordered the House to proceed to a new election, which it refused to do. As often as he was elected into the council, Gov. Dudley (1677) negatived the choice. He removed to Cape Cod, probably to be with his son, Rev. Josiah, and died at Wellfleet, July 15, 1719.

Mr. Dunton, the London bookseller, in his book of Travels thus speaks of Dr. Thomas Oakes (1684): "I was so happy as to find *particular friends* in Boston, whose characters I shall next give you, and I'll begin with Dr. Oakes [1684]. He is an eminent physician, and a religious man; at his first coming to a patient he persuades him to put his trust in God, the fountain of health; the want of this hath caused the bad success of physicians; for they that won't acknowledge God in all their applications, God won't acknowledge them in that success which they might otherwise expect. He was a great dissenter whilst he lived in London, and even in New England retains the piety of the first planters."

We are told in *Memorable Providences*, p. 3, edition of 1691, in speaking of matters connected with witchcraft: "Skilful physicians were consulted for their help,

**Roger Kilcup** (1684). AUTHORITIES: Foote's *Annals of King's Chapel*, Vol. I., p. 89; Savage's *Gen. Dict.*; Boston Records.

**Thomas Oakes** (1684). AUTHORITIES: Whitman's *Hist. A. and H. A. Company*, Ed. 1842; Mass. *Hist. Coll.*, Vol. II.; Snow's *Hist. of Boston*, p. 178.

"Sept. 6, 1703. Artill. Training, I train'd in the Forenoon. . . . Tho. Oakes had a Tin Granado shell broke in his Hand, which has shattered his hand miserably, his two last fingers are already cut off: This was in the Afternoon, as came from Council, was told of it."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 88.

and particularly our worthy and prudent friend, Dr. Thomas Oakes [1684], who found himself so affronted by the distempers of the children that he concluded nothing but hellish witchcraft could be the original of these maladies."

**William Robie** (1684), of Boston, wharfinger ("Roby" on the roll), was born in Yorkshire, England, April 26, 1648, and married at Boston, in 1686, Elizabeth, daughter of William Greenough (1675), whose wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Upshall (1637). William Robie (1684) was a constable of Boston in 1684, and held town office continuously until 1693; also in 1696-7. He died Jan. 23, 1718, having served the Artillery Company as clerk in 1685, and 1691 to 1696 inclusive, and as first sergeant in 1693.

**Rev. Samuel Cheever**, of Marblehead, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1684. He was a son of Ezekiel Cheever, the famous Boston school-master, and was born in New Haven, Conn., Sept. 22, 1639; graduated at Harvard College in 1659; became a freeman in 1669, and was the first settled minister in Marblehead. He was ordained in 1684, having previously preached seven years in that town. He married, June 28, 1671, Ruth Angier, of Cambridge, and died in Marblehead, May 29, 1724.

**1685-6.** The officers elected were: John Phillips (1680), captain; James Hill (1677), lieutenant; Benjamin Alford (1671), ensign. Henry Deering (1682) was first sergeant; Edward Creeke (1674), second sergeant; Seth Perry (1662), third sergeant; Samuel Checkley (1678), fourth sergeant; William Robie (1684), clerk; John Marion, drummer, and Edward Smith (1682), armorer.

The frigate "Rose" arrived at Boston, May 15, 1686, having as passengers Mr. Randolph, "the evil genius of New England," and Rev. Robert Ratcliffe, a minister of the Church of England. Soon afterwards, a request was made to the council that Mr. Ratcliffe might have the use of one of the Congregational meeting-houses of the town; which, being denied, "I got," says Randolph, "a little room in their town-house for such as were of the Church of England to assemble in." In the town-house of Boston, erected through the liberality of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), the first Episcopal church in New England was organized on the 15th of June, 1686.

The new members recruited in 1685-6 were: Thomas Bulkley, Thomas Clarke, Nathaniel Crynes, Thomas Hunt, Thomas Mallard, Samuel Marshall, Samuel Wakefield.

**Thomas Bulkley** (1685), of Boston. There was a Thomas Buckley located in Boston at this time, who, by his wife, Esther, had two children: Elinor, born Sept. 16, 1685, and Thomas, born Nov. 1, 1686.

**Thomas Clarke** (1685), of Boston, pewterer, is mentioned in the Boston town records, May 25, 1685. He was permitted to dig up the town ground near Lieut. Ephraim Sale's (1674) house.

Major Thomas (1638), according to Mr. Savage, had a son, Thomas (1644), who left two daughters only.

**William Robie** (1684). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Rev. Samuel Cheever.** AUTHORITIES: Sav-

age's Gen. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1879, p. 193.

**Nathaniel Crynes (1685).**

**Thomas Hunt** (1685), of Boston, anchor-smith, son of Ephraim, of Weymouth, had children born in Boston, by wife, (1) Judith Torrey, from 1674 to 1688. He married, (2) June 21, 1694, Susanna Saxton, and, (3) Nov. 17, 1709, Rachel Parker.

He was a member of Capt. Ephraim Savage's (1674) military company in 1685 and 1690, also a tithing-man; was selectman from 1696 to 1699, but declined to serve in 1699; in 1696 was lieutenant of a Boston company, and in 1699 was its captain. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1691; ensign in 1695; lieutenant in 1698, and first sergeant in 1706.

He died Feb. 11, 1721-2, aged seventy-three years and seven months. His grave-stone is on Copp's Hill. Mrs. Hunt (1) died Oct. 18, 1693, aged thirty-eight years. "Daughter of William Torrey, of Weymouth," is inscribed on her gravestone.

The inventory of Capt. Hunt (1685), made Nov. 12, 1722, included house and land on Linn Street, four hundred pounds; smith-shop, wharf, etc., in Linn Street, three hundred and fifty-five pounds; negro man and woman, forty pounds.

His sons, John and Col. Ephraim, joined the Artillery Company in 1709 and 1717 respectively.

**Thomas Mallard** (1685) was of Boston in 1685. A Mr. Mallett was present at the second meeting, July 4, 1686, of the first Episcopalian church in Boston, who is supposed to be the same as Thomas Mallard (1685). Mr. Savage supposes that he soon moved to New Hampshire, where the name occurs; but he is on the Boston tax lists of 1687-91, and he contributed to the erection of the Episcopalian meeting-house in Boston in 1689.

**Samuel Marshall** (1685), of Boston in 1681, a cooper, was active in the revival of the Artillery Company in 1690, and was admitted to be a freeman in 1691. He was third sergeant of the Company in 1691, and its ensign in 1698. He was clerk of the market in 1681; a member of Capt. Townsend's (1674) military company in 1684; a constable in 1685-6; assessor in 1698, and selectman in 1709 and 1710. He was subsequently prominent in town matters. His will, of Oct. 25, 1739, was proved Feb. 22, 1742. He resided on the south side of Milk Street, near "Mackril Lane."

**Samuel Wakefield** (1685), of Boston, probably the same as Samuel Wakefield who joined the Artillery Company in 1676.

**Rev. Joshua Moody**, of Boston, delivered the Artillery sermon of 1685. He also delivered the sermon before the Artillery Company in 1674, when he resided in Portsmouth, N. H. (See page 232.)

**Thomas Hunt** (1685). AUTHORITIES: Hunt Genealogy, p. 317; Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Bridgman, p. 57.

**Thomas Mallard** (1685). AUTHORITY: Annals of King's Chapel, by Foote.

**1686-7.** The officers elected in 1686-7 were: Benjamin Davis (1673), captain; Thomas Savage (1665), lieutenant, and Samuel Ravenscroft (1679), ensign.

Our knowledge of the anniversary day in June, 1686, is derived from the diary of Judge Sewall (1679), in which he wrote:—

“Satterday, June 5 [1686] I rode to Newbury to see my little Hull, and to keep out of the way of the Artillery Election, on which day eat Strawberries and Cream with Sister Longfellow at the Falls, visited Capt Richard Dummer, rode to Salem, where lodged 2 nights for the sake of Mr. Noye’s Lecture, who preached excellently of Humility, from the woman’s washing Christs feet. Was invited by Mr. Higginson to dinner, but could not stay, came along to Capt Marshalls, from thence with Mr. Davie, who gave me an account of B. Davis Capt. Thos Savage Lieut and Sam Ravenscroft, Ensign of the Artillery; Jno Wait was chosen but served not. Mr Hubbard preached from Eccles:—There is no discharge in that war.”

The Church of England was organized in Boston, June 15, 1686. At this first meeting, there were, according to the records of King’s Chapel, ten persons present, besides the rector. Of these ten, the following were members of the Artillery Company: Capt. Lidget (1679), Mr. Luscomb (1678), Mr. White (1678), Mr. Maccarty (1681), and Mr. Ravenscroft (1679). July 4, 1686, at a second meeting, two others, Thomas Brinley (1681) and Mr. Mallard (1685), were present. The above-named may be considered as among the fourteen founders of King’s Chapel.

A memorandum, under date of July, 1689, “of sure, honest, and well-disposed persons,” who contributed to the erection of the first King’s Chapel, is given in Annals of King’s Chapel, by Rev. H. W. Foote. It contains ninety-four names, with subscriptions amounting to two hundred and forty-nine pounds nine shillings. Among these are the following members of the Artillery Company:—

Benjamin Alford . . . (1671),	£2	Roger Kilcup . . . (1684),	10s.
Thomas Brinley . . . (1681),	5	Lt.-Col. Chas. Lidget . (1679),	15
Francis Burroughs . . (1686),	5	Samuel Lynde . . . (1691),	1
Duncan Campbell . . . (1686),	1	Thaddeus Maccarty . (1681),	7 10s.
Anthony Checkley . . (1662),	3	Thomas Mallard . . . (1685),	6s.
Thomas Clark . . . (1685),	1	Benjamin Mountfort . (1679),	2 2s.
John Coney . . . (1662),	1 1s.	John Nelson . . . (1680),	5
Edward Creeke . . . (1674),	1	Lt.-Col. Nicholas Paige (1693),	20
Benjamin Davis . . . (1673),	3	George Pordage . . . (1681),	5
Giles Dyer . . . (1680),	5	Samuel Ravenscroft . (1679),	5
Francis Foxcroft . . . (1679),	10	Edward Smith . . . (1682),	1 16s.
John George . . . (1702),	3	Capt. Wm. White . . . (1678),	7
Robert Gutteridge . . (1694),	10s.		

Twenty-five persons gave one hundred and ten pounds and fifteen shillings, or nearly a half of the entire amount.

The new members recruited in 1686-7 were: Francis Burroughs, Duncan Campbell, and Stephen Mason.

“[1686] Monday, Sept 6. Artillery Training. Not an old Captain there.”—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 151.





KING'S CHAPEL.



**Francis Burroughs** (1686), of Boston, a bookseller, who came from London in 1685, was a member of the Old South Church, but contributed to the building of King's Chapel.

Mr. Dunton, the London bookseller, says, concerning Mr. Burroughs (1686), "He heaped more civilities upon me than I can reckon up." Mr. Burroughs (1686) furnished the necessary security that Mr. Dunton should not be "chargeable to the town." He was elected constable of Boston in 1694, but declined to serve. His will was proved Dec. 11, 1713.

**Duncan Campbell** (1686), of Boston in 1685, was a bookseller from Scotland. Dunton, in his *Life and Errors*, says of Duncan Campbell, a "Scotch bookseller, — very industrious, dresses *a-la-mode*, and I am told a young lady of great fortune is fallen in love with him." Under commission from Scotland, he was appointed postmaster "for our side of the world." Administration was granted on his estate July 31, 1702, wherein he is called "Merchant."

**Stephen Mason** (1686).

**Rev. Nehemiah Hobart**, of Newton, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1686, — son of Rev. Peter Hobart, of Hingham, preacher of the Artillery sermon in 1655, — was born in Hingham, Nov. 21, 1648, and graduated at Harvard College in 1667. He married, March 21, 1678, Sarah, daughter of Edward Jackson. He was ordained pastor of the church at Cambridge village, Dec. 23, 1674, where he continued to labor till his death, which occurred Aug. 25, 1712.

Dec. 20, 1686, Sir Edmund Andros, "glittering in scarlet and lace," arrived at Nantasket in the "Kingfisher," a fifty-gun ship, with a commission from James II. for the government of all New England. One of the first "acts of his despotism" was the taking possession of the South Congregational meeting-house for the use of the Episcopalians. The two congregations occupied the South meeting-house by turns, — the Episcopalians in the forenoon and the Congregationalists in the afternoon, or according as it was more convenient for the Governor. On one occasion, when the Episcopal service had lasted until after two o'clock, Judge Sewall (1679) notes in his diary: "It was a sad sight to see how full the street was of people gazing and moving to and fro, because they had not entrance into the house."

**Francis Burroughs** (1686). **AUTHORITIES:** Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Foote's Annals of King's Chapel.

"Dec 10, 1713. Mr. Francis Burroughs buried after Lecture. . . . He is Lamented as having been an intelligent, Exemplary Christian. Buried in Mr. Heath's Tomb, New burying place." — *Sewall's Diary*.

**Duncan Campbell** (1686). **AUTHORITIES:** Foote's Annals of King's Chapel; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Thomas's Hist. of Printing, Vol. II., p. 414.

**Rev. Nehemiah Hobart**. **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Smith's Hist. of Newton; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.

"[1686] Monday Apr 5 Mr. Nehemiah Hobart chosen to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon, hardly any other had Votes, though Mr. Cotton Mather is even almost son-in-law to the Cap<sup>n</sup> and a worthy Man." — *Sewall's Diary*.

Judge Sewall (1679) says in his diary, under date of Sept. 13, 1686, "Mr. Cotton Mather preaches the Election Sermon for the Artillery at Charlestown, from Ps cxliv-1. Made a very good discourse. President and Deputy there. . . . The Artillery company had like to have been broken up — the animosity so high between Charlestown and Cambridge about the place of training."

The "President" above mentioned was Joseph Dudley (1677), and the "Deputy" was William Stoughton, son of Col. Israel Stoughton (1637).

Another of Sir Edmund's "acts" was the appointment of Randolph to be licenser of the press. Under his "licensing," one almanac, one proclamation by Andros, and five "reprints" constitute the entire issue of the Boston and Cambridge presses for the year 1688. The restraint upon marriage was more "grievous" than that upon the press, none being allowed to marry unless they gave bonds with sureties to the Governor. Andros regarded the Congregational ministers as mere laymen, and Randolph wrote to the Bishop of London, "One thing will mainly help, when no marriages hereafter shall be allowed lawful but such as are made by the ministers of the Church of England." At that time Mr. Ratcliffe was the only Episcopal minister in the country. Cotton Mather, in his "Remarkables" of his father, furnishes the following graphic description of the Andros "administration": —

"The administration was almost a complication of shameless and matchless villanies. The honest gentlemen in the council were overlooked and browbeaten and rendered insignificant. Three or four finished villains did what they pleased. Among other instances of the vile things in it, there was this comprehensive one: the banditti gave out that, the charters being lost, all the title the people had unto their lands was lost with them (for which a small defect in the legal and public settlements of them was pretended), and therefore they began to compel the people everywhere to take patents for their lands. Accordingly writs of intrusion were issued out against the chief gentlemen of the territory, by the terror thereof many were driven to petition for patents that they might enjoy lands which had been fifty or sixty years in their possession; but for these patents there were such exorbitant prices demanded that fifty pounds could not purchase for its owner an estate not worth two hundred; nor could all the money and movables in the territory have defrayed the charges of patenting the lands at the hands of the crocodiles, besides the considerable quit-rents for the King. Indeed, the brutish things done by these wild beasts of the earth are too many to be related, and would probably be too brutish to be believed."

The authority of Andros was supreme. He removed the members of the council and appointed others; with their consent, made laws, laid taxes, controlled the militia; tolerated no public printing-press; encouraged episcopacy, and sustained authority by force. Schools were neglected, religious institutions impaired, tyrannical measures instituted, and liberty disregarded. The rights and privileges of the people were trampled under foot.

The last records of the state, under the old charter, appear to be May 12, 1686, three days before Randolph's arrival. "Such was the baseness of the Andros government, that the people were universally dissatisfied, and despised him and his confidential associates. So sensible was he of this, that, by some means at this day unknown, he, or his secretary, Randolph, destroyed or stole all the records of his administration, and there is now no trace of them, or even a single paper relative thereto, left in the office of the secretary" of state.

Judge Sewall (1679), in his diary,<sup>1</sup> speaks of the Artillery Company in 1687. From that time until April, 1691, the Company seems to have been dormant. There were no spring and fall trainings, and no election on the first Monday in June. It has been stated that the meetings of the Company were suppressed by Gov. Andros. There

<sup>1</sup> "[1687] Monday April 4. Great Storm of Rain. Thunders several times. No Artillery Training; and I think would have been none if it had

not rained. Capt W<sup>m</sup> White [1678] appoints the Sergeants and corporals to meet at Sergeant Bull's at 3 P. M. April 4." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 172.







SOUTH BATTERY.

seems to be no direct evidence of this. The bitter quarrel which raged between the churches from 1686 to 1690 divided the Company. Several prominent Episcopalians united with the Company just previous to the arrival of Gov. Andros, and at the election of officers of the Artillery Company in 1686 the Episcopalians were triumphant. Probably the opposing party withdrew from the meetings and drills, and returned only when Gov. Andros had been deported to England, and the Episcopalians, several of whom — Messrs. Foxcroft (1679), Ravenscroft (1679), and White (1678) — were put into jail in 1689, had given up the contest.

Also in April, 1687, Gov. Andros sailed with a considerable armament against the eastern Indians. It is probable that his friends who were then officers of the Artillery Company went on that expedition, and were absent from Boston on the first Monday in June, 1687.

Rowe's Wharf coincides with the old South Battery, or Sconce, an outwork of Fort Hill, and terminus in that direction of the famous barricade. As early as 1632 a fort was begun on the eminence called Corn Hill, but soon the name was changed to Fort-field, and finally to Fort Hill. In 1636, the work was continued, and Messrs. Keayne (1637), Hutchinson (1638), Coggan (1638), Oliver (1637), Harding (1637), and others, loaned five pounds each to complete it. Mr. Coggan (1638) was chosen treasurer. The Sconce was constructed of whole timber, with earth and stone between, and was considered strong.

The battery and the fort gained celebrity as the resort of Gov. Andros, and the place of his seizure and deposition in 1689. In April of that year, the news of the landing of the Prince of Orange at Torbay, England, reached Boston, and threw the town into a ferment.

The first news of this event was brought to Boston by Mr. John Winslow, who joined the Artillery Company in 1692. He arrived from Nevis, April 4, 1689, and brought copies of the proclamation which William issued in the November previous. Gov. Andros demanded of Mr. Winslow (1692) a copy of it, but was refused. Mr. Winslow (1692) was brought into court, and, by Dr. Bullivant, Charles Lidget (1679), and Francis Foxcroft (1679), justices, was sent to prison, "for bringing into the country a traitorous and treasonable libel."<sup>1</sup>

Gov. Andros, Randolph, and some of their followers, sought the security of the fort. On the other hand, the drums beat to arms; the North End and South End rushed to the town-house, where every man joined his respective company, and an ensign was raised on the Beacon. The captain of the frigate was seized and held as a hostage. The train-bands circumvented the fort. Meanwhile Capt. Hill (1677), with his soldiers, escorted Messrs. Bradstreet, Danforth, and others, to the town-house. They drew up, signed, and sent to Sir Edmund Andros, a letter demanding the surrender of the government and fortifications, etc. This letter was signed by fifteen persons, — principal citizens of Boston, of whom the following were members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, viz.: John Richards (1644), Isaac Addington (1652), John Foster (1679), David Waterhouse (1679), Adam Winthrop (1642), John Nelson (1680), Wait Winthrop (1692), and Samuel Shrimpton (1670).

Subsequently, Gov. Andros complied with the request, and his surrender was received by Capt. John Nelson (1680), who was in command of the soldiers. Gov.

<sup>1</sup> New England Justified, pp. 11, 12.

Andros was conducted to the council chamber, and thence to the house of Mr. John Usher (1673), where he was detained as a prisoner. Bullivant, Ravenscroft (1679), White (1678), Lidget (1679), and others of the Governor's friends, were placed in jail. The fifteen principal citizens above named were joined, April 20, by twenty-two others, who together formed "a council for the safety of the people and conservation of the peace." They chose Mr. Bradstreet, president; John Foster (1679) and Adam Winthrop (1642), treasurers; Wait Winthrop (1692), commander-in-chief, and Isaac Addington (1652), clerk. Members of the Artillery Company took a leading part in the deposition of Gov. Andros, and the formation of a provisional government.

A ship arrived from England, May 26, 1689, with an order to the authorities "on the spot" to proclaim King William and Queen Mary. Never, since the "Mayflower" groped her way into Plymouth harbor, had a message from the parent country been received in New England with such joy. Never had such a pageant, as three days after, expressive of the prevailing happiness, been seen in Massachusetts. From far and near the people flocked into Boston; the government, attended by the principal gentlemen of the capital and the towns adjacent, passed in procession on horseback through the thoroughfares; the regiment of the town, and companies and troops of horse and foot from the country, lent their pomp to the display; there was a great dinner at the town-house for the better sort; wine was served out in the streets, and the evening was made noisy with acclamations of delight, till the bell rang at nine o'clock, and the families met at their home altars to thank God for causing their great sorrow to pass away, and for giving a Protestant king and queen to England.

The earliest attention of the new government was drawn toward the organization of the militia. On the 20th of April, 1689, they appointed Hon. Wait Winthrop (1692) major-general of the province, and Samuel Shrimpton (1670) colonel of the Boston regiment. The titles of sergeant-major-general and sergeant-major were abolished.

The first regular field-day observed by the Military Company of the Massachusetts, after the interregnum, was on the first Monday, the seventh day, of April, 1691, when, the old officers having died or left the Company, an election of officers, who were to serve until the succeeding anniversary, was held, and the celebrated Rev. Cotton Mather was chosen to preach the election sermon. From this time to the commencement of the Revolution, the Company held regular meetings, and performed regular field duty, except in the autumn of 1721, when the meeting was omitted by legislative enactment, which "forbid all trooping and training in Boston," by reason of the small-pox. The exertions to revive the Company were attended with great success, and many were immediately admitted whose public characters and recognized services served to add lustre to the distinguished reputation it had before sustained.<sup>1</sup>

Members of the Artillery Company were prominent in reorganizing and making efficient the military force of the colony. It was natural that such should remember that the Artillery Company to which they belonged had been, and was intended to be, a school for the training of men for military service. Col. Shrimpton (1670), the commander of the Boston regiment, was, therefore, prominent in reviving the Artillery Company in 1691. Elisha Hutchinson (1670) succeeded him in that office in 1694,

In 1689, Judge Sewall was in London, England. He makes, in his diary, the following mention of the Honourable Artillery:—

"[1689] July 16 Saw London Artillery Company pass by about 2 o'clock. Most had Buff Cloaths

and Feathers in their Hats. Marched 5, 6, 7, and Eight in a Rank. The Pikes. Had Musick besides the Drums."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. I., pp. 265, 266.*

<sup>1</sup> Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, 1st Ed., p. 45.



and Samuel Checkley (1678) succeeded the latter in 1705. These three members, loyally supported by others of no less experience and military knowledge, actively engaged in reviving the Company, and in confirming and increasing its former prestige and usefulness.

Among those who aided in this revival were: Lieut.-Gen. John Walley (1671), Cols. Penn Townsend (1674) and John Ballentine (1682), Major Samuel Sewall (1679), and Capts. John Wing (1671) and Bozoun Allen (1676), — all of whom, subsequent to the revival, the Artillery Company honored by electing commanders.

The expedition of Sir William Phips against Canada occurred in 1690. The New England colonies raised two thousand men for that fatal expedition, "of whom one thousand perished"; "not vagrants," says Dummer, "picked up in the streets and pressed into the war, but heads of families, artificers, robust young men, such as no country can spare, and least of all new settlements." The force sailed from Boston, Aug. 9, in about forty transports and small men-of-war. Major John Walley<sup>1</sup> (1671) had command of the land forces. His journal of this campaign against Canada is given in the first volume of Gov. Hutchinson's History of Massachusetts. "Sir William Phips returned to Boston, Nov. 19, having lost," Mr. Drake says, "by the enemy and sickness, near three hundred men. The fleet, on its return, was scattered by storms; one vessel was wrecked, and others driven toward the West Indies."

The small-pox prevailed in Boston; "Printer Green and his wife died of it," before the fleet sailed. It appeared among the soldiers on the transports, and many died.

The colony was not in a financial condition to enter upon war. Its treasury was empty. The expense of this expedition was paid partly by private subscription, and partly by a loan. In the Massachusetts archives there is an original petition of those Boston merchants who had loaned the colony money to carry on this expedition, and who, in 1692, asked to be reimbursed. The signers were: John Richards (1644), Edward Bromfield (1679), John Foster (1679), Peter Sergeant, Andrew Belcher, Edward Gouge, Simeon Stoddard (1675), Nathaniel Williams (1667), Thomas Brattle (1675), James Barnes, and Robert Gibbs.

Col. Benjamin Church made a diversion in favor of Sir William Phips and his expedition, by advancing against the French and Indians in Maine. The Brunswick (Me.) *Telegraph* says, that a metal button was recently ploughed up in that town, bearing the inscription, "Massachusetts Artillery," in a circle around the rim. There is on it a very excellent representation of a gun, with its rammer and sponges attached, and to the rear of the piece stands the British flag. Upon the reverse of the button is the inscription, "Gilt. London." This button probably belonged to one of the three hundred soldiers in this expedition under Col. Church, who captured and destroyed a fort on the site where Brunswick now stands.

<sup>1</sup> Another member of the Artillery Company, Col. Penn Townsend (1674), was first offered the command, and was appointed in March, 1690, commander-in-chief of the expedition; but Sir William offered "to go in person," whereupon the former declined "with thanks." — See *Sewall Papers*, I., 316.

The Memorial History of Boston, Vol. II., p.

98, notes: "Dr. Bullivant, in his Journal, says that Nelson [1680], who had played an important part in the overturning of Andros, had been applied to "for generalissimo, as the fittest person for such an enterprise; but the country deputies said he was a merchant, and not to be trusted; so it was offered to Sir William Phips."

**1690-1.** The officers elected in April, 1691, were: Elisha Hutchinson (1670), captain; Penn Townsend (1674), lieutenant; Bozoun Allen (1676), ensign. Joseph Bridgham (1674) was first sergeant; Nathaniel Williams (1667), second sergeant; Samuel Checkley (1678), third sergeant; Thomas Hunt (1685), fourth sergeant; Henry Deering (1682), clerk, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

Of the above, Ensign Henry Deering (1682), clerk, was first sergeant in 1685; Lieut. Samuel Checkley (1678), third sergeant, was fourth sergeant in 1685. The remainder were not officers of the Company when its meetings were suspended in 1687.

The lists of the Company which have come down to us do not distinguish between such as joined the Company in April or June, 1691. It might be inferred that all the recruits in 1691, except one, were received at the April meeting, for Major Hutchinson (1670), the commander, and Henry Deering (1682), clerk, were the bondsmen for all of the twenty new members, except one, of that year, and both of these officers were succeeded by others at the meeting in June, 1691.

**1691-2.** The officers elected at the June meeting in 1691 were: Penn Townsend (1674), captain; Bozoun Allen (1676), lieutenant; William Greenough (1675), ensign. John Ballentine (1682) was first sergeant; Edmund Brown (1691), second sergeant; Samuel Marshall (1685), third sergeant; Obadiah Gill (1679), fourth sergeant; William Robie (1684), clerk, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

The Company immediately began an era of prosperity; the surviving members became newly interested, and many additions were made to the ranks. Not less in personal worth and colonial fame than former members of the Company were some of the recruits who joined the Company very soon after it was revived. Col. Adam Winthrop (1692) and his son, Adam (1694); Hon. Wait Winthrop (1692); Thomas Hutchinson (1694), father of the Governor of that name; Cols. Thomas Fitch (1700), Edward Winslow (1700), Penn Townsend, Jr. (1700); Sir Charles Hobby (1702); Hon. William Dummer (1702), lieutenant-governor, and Hon. John Leverett (1704), who was elected president of Harvard College while holding the office of lieutenant in this Company, were among the distinguished additions soon after the revival of the Company.

The members recruited in 1691 were: John Adams, Edmund Brown, John Clough, James Cornish, Robert Cumby, Thomas Cushing, Benjamin Dyar, John Dyar, William Gibbins, Joseph Hill, John Kilby, Samuel Lynde, John Marion, Jr., Samuel Marion, William Paine, Daniel Powning, Timothy Pratt, Timothy Thornton, Timothy Wadsworth, Thomas Willis.

**John Adams** (1691), of Boston, a nephew of Henry (1652), was born in Braintree in 1661. He married (1) Hannah Webb, and, (2) Oct. 19, 1694, Hannah, daughter of Anthony Checkley (1662). The third child by his first wife was Samuel (1729), who

**John Adams** (1691). **AUTHORITIES:** Hist. of Braintree; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hist. of Adams Family, by Henry Whittemore, 1893.

History of Adams Family says, "Capt. John [1691] died intestate before June 20, 1712."

was the father of Samuel Adams, the patriot and orator, signer of the Declaration of Independence, and Governor of Massachusetts. John Adams (1691) was also grand-uncle of John Adams, the second president of the United States.

Mr. Adams (1691) was a tithing-man in Boston, and a member of Capt. James Hill's (1677) military company in 1693. He was a constable in 1699, and became a member of the Old South Church, Jan. 5, 1700, by letter from the church at Braintree. He is known in the records as Capt. John Adams. He died before June 20, 1712.

**Edmund Brown** (1691), of Boston, son of Deacon William, of Sudbury, was born in the latter town, Nov. 27, 1653. His uncle, Rev. Edmund Brown, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1666. Edmund (1691) settled in Dorchester, but afterward removed to Boston and became a shopkeeper. In 1694, he married his second or third wife, the widow of Hopestill Foster (1673), and he died soon after.

Edmund Brown (1691) was a constable of Boston in 1687; tithing-man in 1690; a member of the militia, and promoted to be lieutenant; an overseer of the poor in 1692, and the same year was a deputy from Boston to the General Court. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1691.

**John Clough** (1691), of Boston, a glover, son of John and Mary Clough, was born April 11, 1669. He was a tithing-man in 1698, and in 1704-5, and was therefore a member of a military company in Boston. Sept. 24, 1718, he joined the South Church, and Jan. 21, 1730, he met, with others, at the house of Hopestill Foster (1694), and formed the Hollis Street Church. He was afterward prominent in the erection of the Hollis Street meeting-house, and in the maintenance of that society. He was third sergeant of the Company in 1695.

**James Cornish** (1691), of Boston, was a son of Thomas Cornish, of Boston. He was chosen a sealer of leather in 1698.

The first child of James (1691) and Mary Cornish born in Boston, was born March 18, 1687, and the last, Nov. 22, 1694.

**Robert Cumby** (1691), of Boston, son of Humphrey, of Boston, was born Feb. 14, 1654-5. He married Rebecca Cromwell, daughter of John, one of the original members of the First Church in Charlestown. Robert (1691) was a member of Capt. John Richards's (1644) military company in 1680-1, and also a tithing man. He was a highway surveyor of Boston in 1701, a tithing-man again in 1704, and a town assessor in 1707. He was a member of the old North Church, and was elected a deacon of the new North in 1714. He was assistant clerk of the Artillery Company from 1692 to 1697, and fourth sergeant in 1692. He died July 17, 1717. His remains were buried in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

**Edmund Brown** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**John Clough** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Drake's Hist. of Boston.

"In Price's map of 1743, the street laid out by the Eliot heirs, from Frog Lane (now Boylston Street) to Hollis Street, was called Clough Street,

from John Clough, who owned the land where the Hotel Boylston stands."—*Note by Eds. in Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 320.*

**Robert Cumby** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Copp's Hill Burial Ground, by Bridgman; Boston Records.



**Thomas Cushing** (1691), merchant, of Boston, was the second son of Hon. John Cushing, of Scituate, where the former was born, Dec. 26, 1663. Lieut. Thomas Cushing (1691) was twice married: (1) Oct. 17, 1687, to Deborah, a daughter of Capt. John Thaxter, and, (2) Dec. 8, 1712, to Mercy Wensley, widow of Joseph Bridgham (1674). He was the father of Thomas Cushing, a prominent citizen of Boston, — who was representative for Boston from 1742 to 1746 inclusive, and speaker from 1742 to 1745, — and the grandfather of the distinguished patriot, Thomas Cushing, who was a member of the Continental Congress in 1774 and lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts from 1780 to 1788.

Thomas Cushing (1691) was a clerk of the market in 1691 and 1692; tithing-man from 1692 to 1694, and in 1696, being during those years a member of Capt. John Wing's (1671) military company of Boston, in which Mr. Cushing (1691) rose to the rank of lieutenant. Judge Sewall (1679) calls Thomas Cushing (1691) "Captain" in 1725. He was a selectman from 1705 to 1708 inclusive, 1710 and 1711, 1719 to 1722, and 1724 to 1726, chairman of the board in 1707, and representative from Boston to the General Court from 1724 to 1731 inclusive. During these forty years of public service, he served on many important committees, in company with the principal citizens of the town. He was a member of the council from 1731 to 1736 inclusive; was appointed special justice of the Superior Court, June 22, 1733, and justice of the peace, Dec. 29, 1731. He became a member of the First Church in 1688, and in March, 1705, he, with his wife, became members of the Brattle Street Church. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1697, and its ensign in 1709.

He died, universally regretted by his townsmen, Oct. 3, 1740; and his widow died in April, 1746, by whom the estate was bequeathed to the children of her first husband, Joseph Bridgham (1674).

**Benjamin Dyar** (1691), shopkeeper, of Boston, son of Thomas Dyar, of Weymouth, was born Nov. 6, 1653. He married, Dec. 10, 1691, Sarah Odlin, daughter of Elisha and Abigail Odlin, of Boston.

He was a tithing-man in Boston in 1685, and at that time a member of Capt. John Wing's (1671) military company, and previously of Capt. Henchman's (1675) company. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1695. His brother, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1691.

Benjamin (1691) died Dec. 29, 1718, aged sixty-four years, and was buried in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground. His will was proved March 9, 1718-9.

**John Dyar** (1691), ironmonger, of Boston, son of Thomas Dyar, of Weymouth, was born in that town, July 10, 1643. He married, June 6, 1694, Hannah Morton. His brother, Benjamin, joined the Artillery Company in 1691. John (1691) was a constable of Boston in 1681-2, a tithing-man in 1690, and in 1696 he held the latter office in place of John Clough (1691). Ensign John (1691) was a member of Capt. Daniel Henchman's (1675) military company in 1680, and of Capt. John Wing's (1671) in 1684. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1694. Administration on his estate was given June 11, 1696, to his widow and eldest son.

**Thomas Cushing** (1691). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, 1865, 1871; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Benjamin Dyar** (1691). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Dyar** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.



**William Gibbins** (1691), shopkeeper, of Boston, held various town offices between 1696 and 1705. He probably married Anne — in 1686. The first child of William and Anne Gibbins was born in Boston in 1687. He was a member of a Boston military company, and became a lieutenant. Administration was granted on his estate, Aug. 16, 1711. His son, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1711.

Mr. Whitman (1810) suggests that, "though there is a slight variation in the surname," he was "undoubtedly a descendant of Major-Gen. Gibbons [1637], a charter member" of the Military Company of the Massachusetts.

**Joseph Hill** (1691), varnisher, of Boston, probably son of Valentine (1638) and Mary, daughter of Gov. Eaton, of Boston, was born July 18, 1647, and was baptized at the First Church on the 26th of the same month.

Joseph Hill (1691) was approved by the selectmen, May 1, 1691, "to sell Coffee, Tea & Chuculetto." From this time to 1707 he held town offices, and in 1721 was granted permission by the selectmen "to erect a wooden building in Long Lane," now Federal Street.

May 27, 1702, Mr. Hill (1691) presented a petition to the General Court, saying: "Whereas there is very great probability of our Nations being speedily involved in a bloody War: which will affect all the Dominions and territories of the Crown of England as well in this Country as else where; And prudence requiring that all just and necessary preparation be made for the defence of the same; I crave leave, humbly to Informe this Hon. Court That the true Love which I have and bear to my King and Nation and the zeal I have for their service hath for some time past put me on invention to find out something that would be serviceable in time of War for the annoyance of the Enemy etc. . . . I can form such engines and make such composition of Fireworks" — as will do more damage to the enemy than many men. He asked for an appropriation to purchase the material to test his invention. The General Court, in Chap. 15, Province Laws, 1702, First Session, appropriated twenty pounds, "for the purpose of experimenting with fireworks for sinking ships," and appointed a committee to disburse the money.

Mr. Hill (1691) was active in the military, and rose to the position of captain. He died in 1727, aged eighty years.

**John Kilby** (1691), of Boston, was a son of Edward. By wife, Rebecca, he had eleven children born in Boston. Mr. Kilby (1691) was a tithing-man in 1693-4, and a member of Capt. Allen's (1676) military company. He held other town offices, and in 1713 was elected assessor, but declined. He owned real estate "at the northerly end of Cornhill, on the westerly side thereof," in 1711 and 1718. John Kilby (1691) was one of the twenty persons to whom Thomas Brattle (1675) conveyed land, Jan. 10, 1698, as a site for a meeting-house.

He was a member of the Old South Church until the formation of the Brattle Street Church in 1699. He was fourth sergeant of the Company in 1696, and ensign in 1705.

**William Gibbins** (1691). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Joseph Hill** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Province Laws of Mass. Bay, Vol. VII.

According to note in Sewall Papers, Vol. III.,

p. 88, Capt. Hill (1691) was forty-seven years old in 1694.

**John Kilby** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Early New England People, by S. E. Titcomb.

His death is noticed in a Boston newspaper of 1722: "John Kilby died May 29 [1722], aged fifty-four years." He was, therefore, born in 1668, and he married at the age of twenty years. He was buried in the old Granary Burial-Ground.

Christopher Kilby, son of John (1691), became a very prominent citizen of Boston. He was the agent for the province of Massachusetts Bay in England many years, and in recognition of his money subscriptions and other manifestations of interest after the fire of 1760, Mackerel Lane, when widened and improved, was called Kilby Street.

**Samuel Lynde** (1691), of Boston, a son of Simon (1658), was born in Boston, Dec. 1, 1653. He was a merchant, and owned a brick house and brick warehouse on Cornhill, and a pasture and an orchard on Cambridge Street. He also owned land, which he inherited from his father, in Freetown, and donated the lot on which the first meeting-house was built in that town. He also owned an island in the Kennebec River.

Samuel Lynde (1691) was very prominent from 1692 to 1708 in town affairs. From Nov. 19, 1702, to 1718, he was one of the "Majesties Justices." In 1690, Mr. Lynde (1691) was one of the grand jury which indicted Thomas Hawkins and nine others for piracy, all of whom were tried and executed. In 1692, according to the Boston Records, Samuel Lynde (1691) was chosen an overseer of the poor "by paper votes." In 1711, he petitioned the town for an abatement of taxes on account of his losses by the great fire of that year. He was a member of the Boston military, and became lieutenant.

His brother, Benjamin (Harv. Coll., 1686), studied at Temple Bar, and became chief-justice of the province. Benjamin (Harv. Coll., 1718), son of Benjamin, and nephew of Samuel Lynde (1691), also became chief-justice, and presided at the trial of Capt. Preston in 1770 for the State Street massacre.

Lieut. Samuel Lynde (1691) died Oct. 2, and was buried Oct. 5, 1721.

**John Marion, Jr.** (1691), cordwainer, was a son of John Marion, who was the drummer for the Artillery Company from 1679 to 1685. John, Jr. (1691) was born in 1650, and married Ann, daughter of John Harrison (1638). He resided for a short time in Cambridge, but soon, with his father, removed to Boston. He was admitted a freeman in 1679, and was subsequently prominent in town matters. He held several offices, but principally that of selectman, in which he served in 1697-1701, 1703-5, and 1714-25. He was four times moderator of the annual town meeting, and held special positions of honor and influence. In 1721 and 1722, he was one of a committee selected to instruct the representatives of Boston in the General Court. In 1677, John Marion, Sr., and his sons, John, Jr. (1691), and Samuel (1691), signed the petition to the General Court "for protection in their several callings."

**Samuel Lynde** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**John Marion, Jr.** (1691.) AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.

"Oct 13, 1690, John Marion Jr. was elected Clerk of the South Company and Sworn, had 23 votes." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 333.

"1710, July 10, Mr Jno Marion and I went to Rumney Marsh to the Raising of the Meeting House." — *Sewall Papers*.

"[1727-8] Jan 4. . . . About 9 a-clock on Wednesday night Deacon Jno Marion dies very suddenly: was well at his Son's the Tuesday night before, discoursing of Weighty Affairs; was seiz'd about 10 on Wednesday morning. . . . Monday Jan 8. buried. A very great Funeral. Was laid in a Grave a little above my Tomb in the South-burying place." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 389.

John Marion, Jr. (1691), became a member of the First Church in Boston, Aug. 26, 1677, and was ordained a deacon of that church, Sept. 6, 1696. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1694. He died Jan. 3, 1728, in his seventy-eighth year, and was buried in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground.

**Samuel Marion** (1691), of Boston, tailor, was a son of John Marion, who was drummer for the Company from 1679 to 1685, and a brother of John Marion, Jr. (1691). Samuel (1691) was born in Watertown, Mr. Bridgman says, "Dec. 14, 1655," and removed with his father to Boston. Judge Sewall (1679), in his diary, relates the sad manner of the death of Samuel's (1691) wife, Hannah, which occurred April 4, 1688. Samuel (1691) held minor town offices from 1695 to 1698 inclusive, and in the latter year was a member of the regular militia of Boston. He died Aug. 6, 1726, and his will, dated April 18, 1726, was proved Aug. 13, 1726. Like his father, he was a drummer, and served the Company in that office from 1691 to 1701.

**William Paine** (1691), whose father, Tobias, came from Jamaica to Boston in 1666, was born in Boston, Jan. 21, 1669. His mother was Sarah (Standish) Paine, widow of Miles Standish, Jr., and daughter of John Winslow, of Plymouth, who mentioned his grandson, William Paine (1691), in his will.

William Paine (1691) graduated at Harvard College in 1689, after which, for two years, he was in the employ of his stepfather, Richard Middlecot, and learned book-keeping. In 1698, Gov. Stoughton appointed him in the revenue service, and in 1699, Lord Bellomont made him collector. Mr. Paine (1691) held this office eleven years. In 1714, he became sheriff of Suffolk County. In 1716, he retired from business, and lived upon the income of his estate.

The first town meeting (Nov. 16, 1711) held after the great fire of 1711, in which the town-house, largely erected through the munificence of Robert Keayne (1637), was destroyed, considered proposals made by the General Assembly for the erection of a new house where the old town-house stood. Thomas Brattle (Harv. Coll., 1676) and William Paine (1691) were appointed a committee on the part of the town for jointly constructing a house to accommodate both the town and the colony. Aug. 3, 1713, the selectmen of Boston appointed William Paine (1691) and John Colman to have prepared "an Act suitable to lay before ye Gen'll Court," relating to the town of Boston being concerned in erecting and maintaining a lighthouse. This resulted in the erection of a lighthouse — the first in Boston Harbor — on the "Great Brewster," in 1715.

Mr. Paine (1691) became a member of the Second Church, March 20, 1692, and was one of the founders of the Brattle Street Church in 1699. He represented Boston in the General Court in 1715 and 1716, and was prominent and active in the concerns of the town, serving as a selectman in 1713. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1696.

Mr. Whitman (1810), in his history of the Artillery Company, says William Paine (1691) was brother-in-law of the celebrated Elisha Cooke, Jr. (1699), and being attached to his party, upon the removing of John White from the office of clerk of the

**Samuel Marion** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.

"[1726, Saturday] Aug. 6, Sam<sup>l</sup> Marion dies: was born Xr 1654." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 379.

**William Paine** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1856 (will); Drake's Hist. of Boston; Robbins's Hist. of Second Church; Sibley's Harvard Graduates.



House of Representatives for party reasons, in 1721, Mr. Paine (1691) was elected to that station.

He married, (1) in October, 1694, Mary Taylor, who died Jan. 6, 1700, and, (2) May 12, 1703, Anne Stuart. Mr. Paine (1691) died July 11, 1735.

**Daniel Powning** (1691), of Boston, shopkeeper, son of Henry (1677), was born in Boston, Aug. 27, 1661, and was baptized Sept. 1 following, at the First Church. He was a tithing-man, and a member of the military of Boston in 1698 and 1704; selectman from 1705 to 1710, and assessor from 1711 to 1726.

In 1707, a powder-house was erected by the town on the hill near the Frog Pond, "on the Common, or training-field." It seems from sundry votes passed by the selectmen in 1713, 1718, 1719-34, that Lieut. Powning (1691) had charge of the powder-house and its contents for more than twenty years.

May 3, 1708, when the streets of the town were named by the selectmen, "The way from mr. Pownings Corner by Dock Square leading Southerly into King Street" was called "Crooked Lane."

He was second sergeant of the Company in 1693, and a member and deacon of the New South Church. He died in 1735.

**Timothy Pratt** (1691), tradesman, of Boston, son of Timothy and Deborah Pratt, was born in Boston, Dec. 18, 1660. He married, Nov. 19, 1679, Grace Shippey. In 1684, he served as a tithing-man, and was a member of Capt. Turell's (1660) military company. He was a constable in 1692. His father, in his will of Aug. 16, 1694, mentions a daughter "of his son Timothy, deceased."

**Timothy Thornton** (1691), of Boston, merchant, son of Rev. Thomas Thornton, of Yarmouth and Boston, was born in England in 1647. He came to America with his parents in 1662-3, lived in Yarmouth, but moved to Boston in 1677. He held various town offices in Boston, having been scavenger, 1690; constable, 1682; assessor, 1694 and 1711-2; tithing-man, 1714 and 1715; highway surveyor, 1717; selectman, 1693 and 1694, and representative to the General Court in 1693, 1694, and 1695.

In 1707, Aug. 27, he was appointed by the selectmen to have charge of the town's wharf, docks, etc., at Merry's Point, North End, and retained their use and possession by subsequent leases until 1718. In 1708, he built a ship at the Point. He served the town on important committees, — as, regulating the price of corn for bakers, and purchasing additional land for a burial-place at the North End.

Timothy Thornton (1691), Elisha Hutchinson (1670), and John Walley (1671), were the committee, acting by order of the General Court, Feb. 3, 1690, charged with the service of issuing the first paper currency after the disastrous expedition of Sir William Phips against Canada. In 1690, by virtue of this action, bills of credit were issued by the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, being the first issue in the American colonies. Bill No. 4980, for five shillings, was issued Dec. 10, 1690, and was signed by John Phillips (1680), Adam Winthrop (1692), and Penn Townsend (1674). A specimen was in the possession of the late Hon. Robert C. Winthrop (1830). The first bills were probably written, and not engraved.

**Daniel Powning** (1691). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Timothy Thornton** (1691). AUTHORITIES:

Bond's Watertown; Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1862, 1870; Shurtleff's Des. of Boston; Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.



*Edw. Phillips*

N<sup>o</sup> (4980) 5<sup>s</sup>

THIS Indented bill of Five Shillings.  
 due from the Massachusetts Colony to:  
 the Possessor shall be in value equal to:  
 money & shall be accordingly accepted:  
 by the Treasurer & receiver's subordinate  
 to him in all publick payments and for:  
 any Stock at any time in the Treasury.  
 Boston in New-England December  
 the 10<sup>th</sup>. 1690; By Order of y<sup>e</sup> Generall  
 Court



*Engraved by W. H. P.*

*John Phillips*  
*Cicam Wintthrop*  
*Pem Townsend* } Com<sup>rs</sup>

SEGLVM: GVB: & SOC:  
 RE: MATTACHVSETS:  
 BAY: IN: NOV: ANGL:

PAPER MONEY.



Mr. Thornton (1691) was married twice : first, to Experience —, who died March 23, 1694, and, second, to Sarah —, who died Dec. 3, 1725, aged eighty-six years. He died Sept. 19, 1726, and was buried in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

His son, Ebenezer, joined the Artillery Company in 1716.

**Timothy Wadsworth** (1691), carpenter and gunsmith, of Boston, son of Samuel and Abigail (Lindall) Wadsworth, of Milton, was born in 1662. He was admitted a freeman in 1690, served in Boston as a tithing-man in 1691 and 1703, and was, therefore, identified with the military ; was constable in 1691 and 1706 ; clerk of the market in 1695-6, and surveyor of highways in 1704. Sept. 26, 1704, the selectmen "Ordered that Mr. Timo. Wadsworth be desired to take Care of doing what is necessary in repaireing the High way on ye neck & that as many of the free negroes & poor of ye Town may be employed therein as Shall be convenient."

Timothy's son, Recompense (Harv. Coll., 1708), was employed, June 20, 1709, "to instruct the Scholars at the Lattin school" during the indisposition of Mr. Nathaniel Williams.

In 1693, a fleet, under the command of Sir Francis Wheeler, arrived in Boston Harbor from Barbadoes. Upon its arrival, the yellow fever appeared in Boston for the first time. Judge Sewall (1679) alludes to the arrival of the fleet, and the appearance of the fever. He wrote : "Last night Timo. Wadsworth's [1691] man dies of the Fever of the Fleet, as is supposed, he having been on board and in the Hold of some ship. Town is much startled at it." July 24, he wrote, "Capt. Turell is buried." Capt. Turell was an active member of the Artillery Company, having joined it in 1660. He, also, died, it was supposed, from the fleet fever.

Timothy Wadsworth (1691) was by trade a gunsmith, a son of Capt. Samuel, who was killed by the Indians at Sudbury, April 18, 1676, and consequently a brother of Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth, president of Harvard College, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1700. Timothy Wadsworth (1691) was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1696. He removed to Newport, R. I., and died there.

**Thomas Willis** (1691), of Medford, son of Thomas and Grace (Tay) Willis, was born in Billerica, Aug. 15, 1666. He was a member of the militia, a deputy in 1701 and 1702, where he is called in the record, "Lieutenant." His grandfather was George Willis, of Cambridge, who lived near what was afterwards called the "Washington Elm." Thomas Willis (1691) moved from Billerica to Medford in 1672. In 1708, he conveyed to his brother, Stephen, houses and land by the Mill Creek in Boston.

**Rev. Cotton Mather** delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1691 and also of 1707. He was the eldest son of Rev. Increase Mather, who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1665, and was born in Boston, Feb. 12, 1663. He graduated at Harvard College in 1678, was admitted to his father's church, Aug. 31, 1679, and became a free-man in 1680, when at the age of seventeen years. He was ordained as colleague with his father at the Second Church, May 13, 1685. He married, May 4, 1686, Abigail, daughter of Col. John Phillips (1680), of Charlestown. The latter was commander of the Artillery Company in 1685-6.

**Timothy Wadsworth** (1691). AUTHORITIES: Teele's Hist. of Milton, p. 590; Boston Records.

**Rev. Cotton Mather.** AUTHORITIES: Eliot's

Biog. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Biography of Cotton Mather, by Samuel Mather; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Mass. Hist. Colls.

Judge Sewall (1679) wrote in his diary: "May 10, 1686. Went to Charlestown and wished Mr. Cotton Mather joy: was married last Tuesday."

Rev. Cotton Mather married, (2) Aug. 18, 1703,—his first wife having died Dec. 1, 1702,—Elizabeth (Clark) Hubbard, widow of Richard. He married, (3) July 5, 1715, Lydia Lee, widow of John George (1702).<sup>1</sup>

He was honored with the degree of doctor of divinity by the University of Glasgow, and was a fellow of the Royal Society of London. He had been an overseer of Harvard College, and at his decease was senior pastor of the Old North Church. He was recognized as the greatest scholar of his day in America, and was active and influential in the concerns of the colony. He was prominent in the town of Boston for forty-seven years, bringing persons of all ranks in life to listen to his word, and to admire the man. Learning, piety, charity, wit, and goodness of temper were the marked characteristics of his mind and life. There was universal sorrow at his decease, and extraordinary marks of respect were paid his memory at his burial.

The *Weekly Journal* of Feb. 28, 1728, says the six first ministers of the Boston lecture supported the pall at the funeral; several gentlemen of his flock bore the coffin; and after the immediate family and relatives came the Lieut.-Gov. William Dummer (1702), his Majesty's council (fourteen in twenty-eight of whom were members of the Artillery Company), House of Representatives, ministers, justices, and many others. "The streets were crowded with people, and the windows filled with sorrowful spectators, all the way to the burying-place." The family tomb is at Copp's Hill.

Rev. Mr. Cotton Mather seems ever to have been on cordial terms with the Artillery Company. He delivered the first sermon in the second fifty years of the Company,—1691,—and in 1707, when Rev. Mr. Sparhawk, of Bristol, R. I., was taken ill on his way to Boston to preach the Artillery sermon, Rev. Cotton Mather, with a notice of but a few hours, took Mr. Sparhawk's place, and delivered the sermon of 1707.

---

1692-3. The officers elected were: Wait Winthrop (1692), captain; Joseph Lynde (1681), lieutenant; William Colman (1676), ensign. Thomas Barnard (1681) was first sergeant; Samuel Johnson (1675), second sergeant; John Cotta (1679), third sergeant; Robert Cumby (1691), fourth sergeant; William Robie (1684), clerk; Robert Cumby (1691), clerk's assistant, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

After great labor and frequent disappointment, the new charter of Massachusetts was obtained. March 29, 1692, Dr. Mather, in company with the newly-appointed Governor, Sir William Phips, embarked at Plymouth for New England, and arrived at Boston the fourteenth day of May.

During the administration of Sir William Phips, who was appointed by King William in 1692, the fort on Castle Island was first called "Castle William." The Crown sent thither a famous engineer, Col. Romer, who first demolished the old works, and then raised a new fortification. A strong citadel was erected, and the King furnished it with ordnance. The new bastions were long known by the names of the "Crown," the "Rose," the "Royal," and the "Elizabeth" bastions. The ordnance

<sup>1</sup> [1692] May 2, No Artillery Training, so near the Election."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 360.

<sup>1</sup> See a curious letter from Mr. Mather to Mr. Colman, New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., V., 60.





*Wait Winthrop*



consisted of twenty-four nine-pounders, twelve twenty-four-pounders, eighteen thirty-two-pounders.

The year 1692 is historically memorable for the witchcraft delusion. The position and justly supposed judgment and candor of prominent members of the Artillery Company made some of them conspicuous in this trouble. A special commission was appointed for the trial of persons suspected of witchcraft. The court, which commenced its sessions at Salem, June 2, 1692, consisted of: William Stoughton, a cold and severe man, "partisan of Andros," and never a member of the Company, as chief-justice; Major Nathaniel Saltonstall declining from conscientious scruples to serve, Jonathan Corwin took his place; Major John Richards (1644), Major Bartholomew Gedney, Wait Winthrop (1692), Capt. Samuel Sewall (1679), and Peter Sergeant. Capt. Anthony Checkley (1662) was appointed attorney-general, but, declining to serve, Thomas Newton (1703) was appointed in his stead. By this court, nineteen persons were hanged, one pressed to death, and eight others condemned.

The first Superior Court, established by an act of 1692, met at Salem, Jan. 30, 1692-3. On the seventh day of December preceding, William Stoughton was appointed chief-justice, Thomas Danforth, John Richards (1644), Wait Winthrop (1692), and Samuel Sewall (1679), justices. Three persons were condemned by this court, but, on its adjournment to Charlestown, the Governor reprieved them.

The last court which tried witchcraft cases was held in Boston, April 25, 1693. Messrs. Danforth, Richards (1644), and Sewall (1679) presided. At this session, Capt. John Alden,<sup>1</sup> of Boston, was acquitted, and Mary Watkins was condemned. The court imprisoned her, "and she was finally sold into bondage in Virginia." Judge Sewall (1679) became conscious of an error in this matter, and made a public confession of his mistake on the fast day, Jan. 14, 1697, — appointed on account of the late tragedy, — standing before the congregation in the Old South.

The members recruited in 1692 were: Joseph Belknap, Jr., John Borland, Joseph Briscoe, Addington Davenport, Gibson Fawer, Robert Gibbs, Nathaniel Hall, Hezekiah Henchman, Thomas Jackson, John Keech, William Keen, Samuel Lilley, John More, David Norton, James Thornbury, John Winslow, Adam Winthrop, Joseph Winthrop, Wait Winthrop.

**Joseph Belknap, Jr.** (1692), of Boston, leather-dresser, or, as Mr. Savage says, "leather breeches maker," was the eldest son of Joseph Belknap (1658), of Salem and Boston, and was born Jan. 26, 1659. His son, Jeremy, had Joseph (1742), whose son, Jeremy, was the learned historian of New Hampshire, and the author of valuable volumes of American biography. Joseph, Jr. (1692), was a member of the Old South Church, of which his father, Joseph (1658), was one of the founders in 1669. Joseph Belknap, Jr. (1692), was a tithing-man in 1703, a member of the Boston militia, and

**Joseph Belknap, Jr.** (1692.) **AUTHORITIES:** Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

"[1716] Apr. 2. . . . heard of Mr. Belknap's [death] at Braintree. . . .

"April 3. Went to the Funeral of my good Friend Mr. Belknap." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., pp. 76, 77.

"[1716] April 23. Prov'd Mr. Joseph Belknap's Will." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 79.

His will mentions wife, Abigail, and his children. His house was "at the head of Prison Lane, now called Queen Street." He also had land "on the northwest side of Beacon Hill" and in Roxbury, besides a cornfield and fulling-mill. (Probate Files, Suffolk Co., Vol. XIX., folio 138.)

<sup>1</sup> "He was the son of the Pilgrim, John Alden, of Plymouth and Duxbury, and was seventy years of age." — *Mem. Hist. of Boston*, Vol. II., p. 155.

became a commissioned officer. He held other minor town offices. He married (1) Deborah, daughter of Jeremiah Fitch, by whom he had Jeremiah (1711). He married (2) Abigail, daughter of Thomas Buttolph, by whom he had Nicholas (1725) and Abraham (1735).

In 1708, the way leading from Mr. Pollard's corner, in Brattle Street, through Mr. Belknap's (1692) yard, into Queen Street, was named by the selectmen, Hillier's Lane. Joseph, Jr. (1692), died March 30, 1716, his will, dated Dec. 22, 1715, being proved April 23, 1716. He was third sergeant of the Company in 1699.

**John Borland** (1692), of Boston, merchant, came from Scotland to Boston about 1685. Mr. Whitman (1810) says, in his history of the Company, second edition, page 227, he was the "noted merchant" who was supposed to be principally concerned, with Gov. Dudley's (1677) connivance, in 1706, in trading with the French, then at war, in Nova Scotia and Canada. With others, he was brought to trial before the whole court, found guilty, and sentenced to a fine of one thousand pounds and three months' imprisonment. The court finally punished him the most severely of any concerned, by a fine of one thousand one hundred pounds. This proceeding was not approved by the Queen, and the fines were ordered to be refunded.

John Borland (1692) was a constable of Boston in 1691; tithing-man in 1699, 1701, and 1710; overseer of the poor from 1703 to 1706, and was quite active in town matters. March 2, 1701-2, the selectmen granted "Liberty unto Mr. John Borland to burn Brick & Lime in his orchard at the Northerly end of Adkinson's Lane for his House to be built there this next summer."

In 1708, the way leading "from the South Meeting House passing by Mr. Borlands & Mad'm Olivers & so down to the sea by Hallawayes," the selectmen named Milk Street.

The Memorial History of Boston, Vol. II., p. 106, informs us that, when Gen. Hill arrived at Boston in the frigate "Devonshire," June, 1711, after he had been saluted by the Castle, and had visited the council chamber, he was "entertained at Mr. Borland's, one of the prominent merchants of the town and the Queen's agent."

The town records state that Mr. Borland (1692) owned a warehouse "near Swing Bridge, and property opposite the Green Dragon Tavern."

He was elected assistant president of the Scots' Charitable Society in 1696, and its president from 1703 to 1716, and was a member of the Old South Church.

Sept. 6, 1726, the selectmen granted John Borland (1692) liberty to build a tomb in the South Burial-Ground, No. 37, and he died March 30, 1727, in the sixty-seventh year of his age.

**Joseph Briscoe** (1692), of Boston, a "loaf-bread baker," was born in Boston, Aug. 21, 1658; married, in 1678-9, Rebecca —, and their third child was Joseph (1703). The parents of Joseph Briscoe (1692) were Joseph and Abigail (Compton) Briscoe, of Boston. The father was drowned Jan. 1, before the birth of his child, and the grandmother Compton, left, in November, 1664, all her estate, sixteen pounds sixteen shillings, to the fatherless child.

**John Borland** (1692). AUTHORITY: Boston age's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

**Joseph Briscoe** (1692). AUTHORITIES: Sav-



He was a constable of Boston in 1694, served as a tithing-man, and was chosen by the town as a measurer of grain from 1706 to 1709. Mr. Briscoe (1692) was a neighbor and intimate friend of Judge Sewall (1679), who frequently mentions him in his diary. He was a member of the Old South Church, and fourth sergeant of the Company in 1695.

In 1708, the way leading from Briscoe's Corner, in Marlborough, now Washington, Street, passing by Justice Bromfield's (1679) "in to ye Comon," the selectmen named Rawson's Lane. The latter became Bromfield Street in 1829.

**Addington Davenport** (1692), of Boston, son of Capt. Eleazer and Rebecca (Addington) Davenport, was born Aug. 3, 1670, graduated at Harvard College in 1689, and until his decease, in 1736, was one of the active and prominent men of Boston. Mr. Davenport (1692) was a grandson of Capt. Richard Davenport (1639). Mr. Davenport (1692) was a selectman of Boston in 1711, and representative to the General Court, 1711-3; was appointed justice of the peace, Feb. 25, 1708-9; special justice, Sept. 16, 1715; a councillor, 1714, 1728, 1729, and 1734; was appointed a justice of the Superior Court, Dec. 19, 1715, and was continued in that office until his decease, which occurred in April, 1736. In 1714, he was appointed one of the trustees of "Bills of Credit," and in 1715, one of the commissioners for keeping the great seal, public records, and files of the secretary's office. He was one of the founders of Brattle Street Church in 1699.

**Gibson Fawer** (1692), of Dorchester, son of Eleazer and Mary (Preston) Fawer, of Dorchester, was born in 1666. In the Dorchester Records, the name is given Fower. His father, Eleazer, made his will, Nov. 13, 1665, "bound to see," and probably never came back.

**Robert Gibbs** (1692), of Boston, merchant, son of Robert, was born Sept. 28, 1665. He married, May 19, 1692, Mary Shrimpton, and had five children. He became a freeman in 1690; was then living at Salem, but died at Boston, Dec. 8, 1702. He served as constable in 1696, and as assessor in 1698. He was selectman of Boston from 1700 to 1702 inclusive, and during the same time acted as an assessor. He was a member of the Old South Church; was also fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1693, and clerk from 1697 to 1701. His son, Henry, joined the Artillery Company in 1726.

**Nathaniel Hall** (1692), of Medford, son of John and Elizabeth (Green) Hall, of Cambridge, was born July 7, 1666, and married, April 16, 1690, Elizabeth Cutter. He died April 14, 1725. They had six children born in Medford.

**Addington Davenport** (1692). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850, 1879; Boston Records.

**Gibson Fawer** (1692). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1851; Dorchester Records.

**Robert Gibbs** (1692). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1865.

"[1702] Xr. 8. Mr. Robt Gibbs dies, one of our Select men, a very good man and much Lamented; died suddenly of the Small Pocks. His death and the death of Jno Adams . . . is a great stroke to our church and congregation. The Lord vouchsafe to dwell with us and Not break up House-keeping among us. Xr 9. Mr Gibbs buried." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. II., pp. 69, 70.*

**Hezekiah Henchman** (1692), of Boston, bookseller, son of Daniel Henchman (1675), school-master, and father of Col. Daniel Henchman (1712), was born in Boston. He was admitted a freeman in 1690, and died May 1, 1694. He never held any office in the Artillery Company. The only town office he ever held was that of constable, having been elected March 13, 1693-4.

**Thomas Jackson** (1692), of Boston, son of Edmund (1646), of Boston, was born March 1, 1640. He served as a tithing-man in 1699 and 1700; was a member of a military company in Boston during those years. He held the office of selectman in 1704 and 1705, but declined in 1706, after his re-election to that office. He married, Oct. 15, 1690, Priscilla Grafton. His son, Thomas, joined the Artillery Company in 1716.

**John Keech** (1692), of Boston, merchant, was probably a son of John Keetch, of Boston. His name is spelled Keech in the Boston records of births. Lieut. John (1692) had, by wife Abigail, three children born in Boston. He died prior to Feb. 1, 1696, when his estate was inventoried for the probate court.

**William Keen** (1692), of Boston, rejoined the Company in 1702.

**Samuel Lilley** (1692), merchant, first appears in Boston in 1682. He was a son of Samuel and Mehitable (Frary) Lilley, of Boston. It was at the grave of Samuel, Sr., in 1689, that Deacon Theophilus Frary (1666) objected to the use of the burial service, by Rev. Mr. Ratcliffe, the Episcopal minister.<sup>1</sup> Samuel (1692) was chosen constable of Boston, March 10, 1689-90. His mother married, for her second husband, Edward Bromfield (1679).

**John More** (1692), of Boston, brewer, was admitted to be a freeman in 1671. He was elected clerk of the market in 1673, and until his decease held some one or more of the minor town offices. He was identified with the Boston militia, held the position of ensign, and was a tithing-man in 1691. He died in 1693. By his wife, Lydia, he had ten children. Administration on his estate was granted his widow, July 13, 1693.

**David Norton** (1692), of Boston, son of William and Susanna (Mason) Norton, of Boston, was born May 31, 1664. In 1708, the street leading northwesterly from Morrell's Corner, in Middle (now Hanover) Street, passing by Mr. David Norton's (1692), extending to the salt water at the ferry, was named by the selectmen Prince Street. In 1711, he, with his neighbors, was assessed by the selectmen for the draining of Prince Street, and in 1714, April 29, the selectmen gave him liberty to dig up the highway and enter his cellar drain into the common "shore" (sewer). He was a member of the military, and a tithing-man in 1694. He died Dec. 2, 1721, and was buried in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

**Hezekiah Henchman** (1692). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Thomas's Hist. of Printing.

"[1694] Wednesday May 2. . . . went to the Funeral of Hezekiah Henchman who died yesterday: was a Jury-man at the last Superior Court." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 390.

**John More** (1692). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**David Norton** (1692). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

<sup>1</sup> See Hutchinson, Vol. I., p. 356.

**James Thornbury** (1692), of Boston. Lieut. Daniel Powning (1691) refusing to serve as tithing-man in 1697, James Thornbury (1692) was chosen in his place. The latter also held town office in 1702 and 1711.

**John Winslow** (1692), of Boston, merchant, was a son of John Winslow, of Boston, and grandson of John, of Plymouth, a brother of Gov. Edward Winslow, of Plymouth. John Winslow, the grandfather, moved to Boston in 1657. John (1692) was born in Boston, May 22, 1669, and was a cousin of William Paine (1691). He brought the proclamation of the Prince of Orange to New England from Nevis, arriving in Boston April 4, 1689. John Winslow (1692) was thereupon imprisoned by Gov. Andros, although the former offered two thousand pounds security. The proclamation brought by Mr. Winslow (1692) was immediately issued in Boston, and scattered throughout the town and country, gladly welcomed by the people.

John Winslow (1692) was a cousin of Col. Edward Winslow (1700).

**Adam Winthrop** (1692), of Boston, merchant, only son of Adam Winthrop (1642), and grandson of Gov. John Winthrop, of Massachusetts, was born in Boston, Oct. 15, 1647, and graduated at Harvard College in 1668. He married Mary, daughter of Col. Luttrell, of Bristol, England, and, with his wife, was received into the Second Church, Boston, April 30, 1682. He became a freeman in 1683; was representative for Boston in 1689, 1691, and 1692; was a member of Mr. Mather's (Second) church, and, by the advice of Mr. Mather, the King named Col. Winthrop (1692) as one of the Governor's councillors under the new charter. He held that office but for one year. He was elected constable of Boston in 1681, but declined to serve. He was a commissioner in 1684-5 and 1690, and one of the selectmen in 1688, 1689, and 1690. He was a captain in the militia in 1689, and judge of the Superior Court in 1692. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1698. At the time of the Andros revolution in April, 1689, there were three companies of militia in Boston which assembled at the town-house. Adam Winthrop (1692) commanded one, Col. Shrimpton (1670) another, and Nicholas Paige (1693) the third.

Adam Winthrop (1692) died Aug. 3, 1700, in his fifty-third year, and was buried in the family tomb in King's Chapel Burial-Ground. His daughter, Mary, married, March 9, 1703, John Ballentine, Jr. (1694); and his son, Adam, joined the Artillery Company in 1694.

**Joseph Winthrop** (1692), of Boston, only son of Deane and Sarah (Glover) Winthrop, of Boston, who lived to manhood, was born May 3, 1666. He was named José, in honor of his grandfather, José Glover. Joseph's (1692) residence at Pulling Point, in the harbor of Boston, was within what is now the town of Winthrop.

Joseph (1692), whose right name was José, but who is called Jesse in Boston Records, was elected constable at Rumney Marsh, March 11, 1700; and, March 23,

**John Winslow** (1692). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; sketches of Winslow Family, in New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850, 1871, 1872.

**Adam Winthrop** (1692). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"Adam Winthrop [1692] dies Aug. 3, 1700, about 2 *post merid.* buried Aug. 7."—*Sewall's Diary*, Vol. II., p. 21.

**Joseph Winthrop** (1692). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.



1702, he was chosen, with eleven others, "to run the lines and renew the bound marks," between Malden, Lynn, Reading, and Boston, "on the 21st of April next." He died, unmarried, Nov. 15, 1702.

**Wait Winthrop** (1692), of Boston, son of Gov. John Winthrop, of Connecticut, and grandson of Gov. John Winthrop, of Massachusetts, was born in Boston, Feb. 27, 1641-2, and was baptized in the First Church, March 6 of the same year. His name as given in the church records is Waitstill, but he habitually signed his name "Wait Winthrop." He received the middle name, Still, probably in memory of his father's great uncle, Dr. John Still, Bishop of Bath and Wells. Mr. Winthrop (1692) married (1) Mary Browne, of Salem, who died June 14, 1690, and, (2) Nov. 13, 1707, Catherine, daughter of Capt. Thomas Brattle (1675), and widow of Hon. John Eyre (1682).

In 1646, he went with his parents to New London, Conn., which his father had founded the year before. Subsequently he entered Harvard College, but left before taking his degree in order to enter the military service of Connecticut, and afterwards had a command in King Philip's War. He returned to live in Massachusetts, and took a prominent part in its public affairs. He was one of the commissioners of the United Colonies in 1672, and held the same office in 1675 and 1676 — years made perilous by the Indians. He was one of the councillors named by the King to serve under Joseph Dudley (1677), president in 1686; was reappointed to serve in the council of Sir Edmund Andros, and he was continued a member of the latter until the Governor's overthrow in 1689. The name of Wait Winthrop (1692) is the first signed, April 18, 1689, to the demand for the surrender of Gov. Andros, and on the 20th of April, 1689, when the colonists formed a "council for the safety of the people and conservation of the peace," Wait Winthrop (1692) was chosen commander-in-chief of the militia, a position he held until his decease.

Mr. Hutchinson says, "Mr. Winthrop was a good sort of a man, and although he was of a genius rather inferior to either of his ancestors, yet he was popular, and the party against Mr. [Joseph] Dudley [1677] wished to have him Governor. Winthrop was a plain, honest man. . . . He was one of the old council who had drawn up and sent to England a narrative of the proceedings of Sir Edmund, and was chosen agent for the colony in the room of Sir H. Ashurst, and was ready to embark when the news of Gov. Dudley's [1677] appointment arrived and prevented his voyage."

Major-Gen. Winthrop (1692) was chosen an assistant, under the old form of government, in 1692, ten days before the arrival of Sir William Phips with the new charter. In this, Gen. Winthrop (1692) was appointed by the King one of the councillors, and was annually re-elected to that office until his decease. Dec. 7, 1692, he was appointed a justice of the Superior Court, and Aug. 1, 1701, after the death of William Stoughton, Justice Wait Winthrop (1692) was promoted to be chief-justice.

**Wait Winthrop** (1692). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Winthrop's Letters, pub. by Mass. Hist. Soc.; Reports Boston Rec. Com.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.

"[1717] Nov. 7. Last night died the Excellent Waitstill Winthrop, esqr., for Parentage, Piety, Prudence, Philosophy, Love to New England Ways and people very Eminent. His Son not come though sent for. . . .

"Nov. 14. . . . Attended the Funeral of Maj.

Gen. Winthrop; The Corps was carried into the Town House the night before; Now buried from the Council Chamber. Bearers, His Excel. the Gov., Gov. Dudley; Lt. Gov. Dumer, Col. Taylor, Col. Elisha Hutchinson, Sam. Sewall. Scarfs and Rings. The Regiment attended in Arms, Mr. John Winthrop led the widow. 'T was past five before we went. The Streets were crowded with people; was laid in Gov. Winthrops Tomb in Old Burial Place." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., pp. 146, 147.



Except from 1702 to 1707-8, he held the office of chief-justice until his death, which occurred Nov. 7, 1717. Samuel Sewall (1679) was promoted to fill the vacancy.

Major-Gen. Winthrop (1692) was elected captain of the Artillery Company the year he joined, — an unusual event. He inherited his father's taste for medical studies, and sometimes practised gratuitously, finding his own medicines. He was buried in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground.

In the inventory of his estate are included: coach, two horses, and harness, £30; silver plate, £115 10s.; farm at Billerica, £200; half an acre of land in Boston, £100; Elizabeth Islands, £2,000; "stock in slaves and salt works" (carried out), "nothing"; whole amount of inventory, £3,027 18s. 8d.

**Rev. John Bailey**, of Watertown, who was born near Blackburn, in Lancashire, England, Feb. 24, 1644, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1692. He is said to have preached at the Old South, in Boston, as an assistant, prior to his settlement in Watertown, and delivered his farewell sermon in Boston, July 25, 1686. "July 26 [1686], a considerable troop from Watertown come and fetch Mr Bailey; some of ours also accompany them."<sup>1</sup>

John Dunton says, in his journal, "I went to visit Mr. John and Mr. Thomas Bailey in Boston. These two popular preachers are very generous to strangers. I heard Mr. John upon these words: 'Looking unto Jesus'; and I thought he spoke like an angel."

Mr. Bailey was installed in Watertown, Oct. 6, 1686, the fourth minister of that church. He removed to Boston in 1692-3, where he lived until his decease, Dec. 12, 1697.

"Died Dec. 12, 1697, in Boston, Rev. John Bailey, who for many years preached the gospel in the city of Limerick, but having been persecuted and silenced, he removed to New England in 1684. He preached in Watertown when his wife died; then, being very melancholy, and having the gout, he removed to Boston about 1693. He preached at the South Church, Boston, once a month, and at the Old Church almost every Sabbath, and his turn in the lecture, till, falling sick last fall, he died as above written, and was honorably interred on the sixteenth day in the tomb of Mr. Thomas Deane. . . .

"The distinguishing traits of Mr. Bailey's character were ardent piety, great tenderness of conscience, and an absorbing interest in the spiritual welfare of men. It was his prayer, to use his own words, that 'he might not be of the number of those that live without love, speak without feeling, and act without life.'"

His wife, Lydia, died in Watertown, April, 1690. The following is her

#### "EPITAPH.

"Pious Lydia, made and given by God,  
As a most meet help unto John Bailey,  
Minister of the Gospel.  
Good betimes — Best at last,  
Lived by faith — Died in grace,  
Went off singing — Left us weeping,  
Walked with God till translated in the 39<sup>th</sup> year of her age.  
Ap 16. 1691.  
Read her epitaph in Prov. xxxi. 10, 11, 12, 28, 29, 30, 31."

**Rev. John Bailey.** AUTHORITIES: Bond's Watertown; Mather's Magnalia; Diary of Daniel Fairfield, of Braintree; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

<sup>1</sup> Sewall's Diary.

1693-4. The officers elected were: John Wing (1671), captain; Nathaniel Williams (1667), lieutenant; Henry Deering (1682), ensign. William Robie (1684) was first sergeant; Daniel Powning (1691), second sergeant; Roger Kilcup (1684), third sergeant; Robert Gibbs (1692), fourth sergeant; William Robie (1684), clerk; Robert Cumby (1691), clerk's assistant, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

The members recruited in 1693 were: John Combs, Moses Draper, James Fowles, Nathaniel Holmes, Nicholas Paige, Samuel Phillips, Thomas Savage, Samuel Wentworth.

**John Combs** (1693), of Boston, son of Jacob Combs, cooper, of Boston, was born July 20, 1664. He was admitted a freeman in 1690, was identified with the military, and served as a tithing-man in 1694. John Coombes (probably same as above) was a tithing-man of Boston in 1697. John Combs (1693) was again a tithing-man in 1707 and 1708. He was buried May 13, 1716.

**Moses Draper** (1693), shopkeeper, of Boston, son of James Draper, of Dedham, was formerly of Roxbury, where he joined the church Feb. 17, 1683, being about twenty years of age. He married, July 7, 1685, Hannah, daughter of John Chandler, and sister of Major John Chandler (1725). She was born Sept. 18, 1669. His wife died June 9, 1692, about which time he moved to Boston, and married, Nov. 3, 1692, a second wife, Mary Thatcher, by whom he had a son, Moses, who was baptized at the Second Church, Sept. 17, 1693.

**James Fowles** (1693), of Boston, was probably a son of Thomas Fowles (1639), of Boston. If so, he was born Dec. 3, 1644. James Fowles (1693) was a member of the fourth military company of Boston, and a tithing-man in 1696-7.

**Nathaniel Holmes** (1693), of Boston, joiner, son of Joseph Holmes, of Roxbury, was baptized July 10, 1664. Nathaniel's parents moved to Boston about 1660. His mother was Elizabeth Clap, daughter of Capt. Roger Clap (1646). He married Sarah Thaxter, Oct. 1, 1691. In January, 1705, Nathaniel Holmes (1693) was granted liberty to burn brick and lime, for the space of one year, over against the land of Joseph Allen (1694), at the South End of Boston. In 1706, he was a tithing-man of Boston.

"At a meeting of y<sup>e</sup> Sel. men Janry 23<sup>th</sup>. Sarah y<sup>e</sup> Wife of Capt Nathl Holmes her Petition to sell Strong drinck as a retaylor at her present dwelling House at y<sup>e</sup> South end of y<sup>e</sup> Town is allowed by y<sup>e</sup> Selectmen," is a transcript from the Records of the Selectmen for 1709. In 1711, the same license was granted to "Sarah Holmes, Widow."

Lieut. Holmes (1693) was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1695.<sup>1</sup>

**John Combs** (1693). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**Moses Draper** (1693). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

"[1693] Monday Augt 14, Moses Draper, a very hopefull young man [dies]."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 381.

**Nathaniel Holmes** (1693). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

<sup>1</sup> There were, in 1693, three persons in Boston and Roxbury by the name of Nathaniel Holmes. It is difficult to determine which was the member of

the Company. It seems most probable that it was Nathaniel, grandson of Capt. Roger Clap (1646), though it might have been Nathaniel, son of Nathaniel, of Roxbury, of whom Judge Sewall thus wrote:

"Second-day, June 12, 1699. The Gov. goes to the Castle with Col. Romer and several of the Council: Was saluted by the Fort and ships as passed by, and at the Castle. Afterwards Col. Romer desired a Shot might be made; the Gun broke and kill'd Nathaniel Homes, the Under-Guner, who was buried at Roxbury next day."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 498.

**Nicholas Paige** (1693), of Boston, came from Plymouth, Devon County, England, in 1665. He was a merchant, and at first dwelt at Rumney Marsh, now Chelsea. Ann Keayne, daughter of Benjamin (1638) and Sarah (Dudley) Keayne, and granddaughter and heiress of Robert Keayne (1637), founder of the Artillery Company, married, Dec. 11, 1657, Edward Lane, aged thirty-six years, a merchant from London, who came over in the "Speedwell" in 1656. He died soon after 1663, and his widow, Ann (Keayne) Lane, married Capt. Nicholas Paige (1693). The latter was engaged in King Philip's War, in 1675, having been appointed captain of a troop June 27 of that year. July 15, 1675, a treaty was negotiated by force or intimidation with the Narragansets, among the witnesses to which were Capt. Daniel Henchman (1675) and Capt. Nicholas Paige (1693), "of the dragoons." Nicholas Paige (1693), in the records, has, at different times, the titles, captain, major, lieutenant-colonel, and colonel, which imply a continued and successful military career. He was captain of one of the three military companies which assembled in Boston when the Andros government was overthrown, in April, 1689.

The only town office he held seems to be that of constable, to which he was elected March 16, 1673-4.

In 1659-60, the General Court granted to Ann (Keayne) Lane a tract of land, in consequence of the liberal donations of her grandfather, Robert Keayne (1637), to the country. Col. Paige (1693) was appointed by the court one of the executors of the will of Robert Keayne (1637). The estate was not settled until long after the marriage of Nicholas Paige (1693) and Ann (Keayne) Lane. They joined in a will, which was proved Jan. 3, 1717.

Mr. Paige (1693) seems to have been neglectful of others' convenience and rights, for the town entered complaint against him, April 24, 1676, for creating a nuisance in the highway; in April, 1688, he encroached upon the street; and again, in 1695, he caused a nuisance near his house, which he was ordered to remove by a certain time, or pay five shillings for the use of the poor. A similar complaint was made against him July 28, 1701.

His wife died June 30, 1704, and on the same day the selectmen "declare their Consent that in the Old burrying-place there be a Tombe made for Coll. Page [1693] to burry his deceased wife in." He died in November, 1717, and his will was proved the 3d of January following.

He was commander of the Artillery Company in 1695.

**Samuel Phillips** (1693), of Boston, son of Henry Phillips (1640), of Dedham, was baptized Nov. 2, 1662. In 1691, he was distinguished as a bookseller. Mr. Dunton, in his *Life and Errors*, calls him his old correspondent, and says, "He treated me with a noble dinner, and (if I may trust my eyes) is blessed with a pretty, obliging wife; I'll

**Nicholas Paige** (1693). *AUTHORITIES:* Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"[1717, Nov.] 29. Col. Paige is buried from Capt. Oliver's. Bearers John Usher esqr, Wm Tailer esqr; Sewall, Thomas; Col. Byfield, Col Checkley. Scarvs and Rings. Laid in a Tomb in the old Burying place. Gov. and Lt Gov. had scarvs and Rings." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. III., p. 150.*

In 1701, Elisha Hutchinson (1670), captain of his Majesty's castle on Castle Island, memorialized the honorable council in regard to things necessary

for his Majesty's service. The memorial, etc., is given in the notes to Province Laws (Resolves, etc.), 1701-2, pp. 710, 711. Among other things necessary, he cites an additional force. March 28, 1702, the council resolved that three hundred men should be enlisted out of the two Suffolk and one lower Middlesex regiments, for duty at the Castle; namely, "One hundred and twenty of the regiment under command of Col. Nicholas Paige [1693], eighty of the regiment under command of Elisha Hutchinson [1670], and one hundred of the regiment under command of Col. John Phillips [1680]."



say that for Sam (after dealing with him for some hundred pounds), he is very just, and (as an effect of that) very thriving. I shall add to his character, that he is young and witty, and the most beautiful man in the town of Boston."

He married Hannah Gillam, by whom he had six children. Gillam, the eldest son, born in 1686, joined the Artillery Company in 1714. Hannah, the eldest daughter, married Habijah Savage (1699), and her sister, Faith, married Arthur Savage, son of Thomas (1665).

Ensign Samuel (1693) died in October, 1720, aged fifty-eight years, his will being proved the 30th of that month. He, with his wife, Hannah, joined the Old South Church, Oct. 26, 1707.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1699, and served in minor town offices, especially as a tithing-man.

March 26, 1693-4, the selectmen of Boston agreed that "Mr. Samuel Phillips [1693] shall have the ground where the cage and watch hous stand leased to him for 21 years for to build a shop, he to dig a sellar under it he to pay 3<sup>1d</sup> p. ann. to the Town after one year and a halfe, and leave the cellar to their dispose as soon as finished, the building not exceeding 20 foot long and 12 foot wide, the stone work to be 12 inches above the ground, he to have 14 foot of the upper room for a shop and to leave 6 foot for a Watchhouse." The selectmen's records for May 9, 1694, show that the building occupied was of brick, and at the west end of the town-house, hence Mr. Phillips (1693) became known as the shopkeeper "At the Brick-shop at the West end of the Town House."

The Boston *Gazette* (1720) calls him "an exemplary Christian, an indulgent husband, a kind father, and a true friend."

**Thomas Savage** (1693), gold and silver smith, of Boston, son of Lieut.-Col. Habijah (1665), and nephew of Lieut.-Col. Thomas (1665), was born at Boston, Aug. 17, 1664. He married (1) Mehitabel Harwood and (2) Elizabeth ——. He became a freeman in 1690; was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1700; ensign in 1701;<sup>1</sup> lieutenant in 1703, and its captain in 1705. He united with the Old South Church, July 12, 1702. Lieut.-Col. Savage (1693) served as a tithing-man in 1696, and a constable in 1697.

**Samuel Phillips** (1693). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

July 5, 1714, at a meeting of the principal men of the Old South Church, "they began to speak about Deacons," those acting being old and infirm. Some one named "Mr. Sam'l Phillips." Judge Sewall (1679) adds, in his diary, "I said nothing."

"[1717] Nov'r 16, Mr Samuel Phillips drowned, was now Buried." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. III., p. 145.* (He was the son of Samuel (1693), and was "near home on his return from London"; aged twenty-four years.)

**Thomas Savage** (1693). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

Mr. Whitman (1810) is probably in error in calling Thomas (1693) son of Thomas (1665), as the former would have been less than twenty years old when he was elected ensign. He was, as above, the son of Habijah (1665).

"[1720-1] Midweek, March 8. Serene. Lt Col Thomas Savage was entombed. The Regiment were under Arms; was a Led-Horse. Bearers, Thomas Hutchinson esqr; Adam Winthrop esqr; Edward Lyde esqr; David Jeffries Esqr; Mr. Samuel Greenwood, Mr. John Pitts of the North. But few Gentlewomen follow'd. was buried in his Grandfather Savage's Tomb in the old Burying place. I was not at the Funeral." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. III., p. 284.*

<sup>1</sup> In 1701, when Judge Sewall (1679) was elected captain of the Artillery Company, all the officers elected but two were members of the Old South Church, and the pastor of that church delivered the sermon; so that it is called "a South Church occasion." Among other pleasantries in his speech of thanks, Judge Sewall (1679) says, "The savages were souldiers *ex Traduce*."







*Samuel Shrimpton*

Lieut.-Col. Savage (1693) died March 3, 1721. His inventory, April 21, 1721, contains: brick house and land in Dock Square, £1,400; brick house in Union Street, £500; wooden house, £730; other lands, etc.; total real estate, £2,830; real and personal, £3,899.

**Samuel Wentworth** (1693), son of Samuel Wentworth, of Portsmouth, and grandson of Elder William Wentworth, "the emigrant," was born in Portsmouth, N. H., April 9, 1666. He remained at home until after the death of his father, in 1690-1, when he removed to Boston, and became an eminent merchant. He married (1) Hannah Wiggin, of Exeter, who died Feb. 1, 1690-1; (2) Elizabeth Hobson, of Boston, and (3) Abigail, widow of Christopher Goffe, mariner. He died at Boston in 1736, his widow being appointed administratrix of his estate, July 21, 1736. Among his effects were: a negro man named Cato, valued at £100; negro, Tom, £70, and negro woman, Rose, £70.

Samuel Wentworth (1693) was an officer of the town in 1694, 1696, 1698, 1699, 1712, 1713, and 1718, and was a tithing-man in 1709, 1715, and 1717. He was a health officer for the Mill Bridge ward, and lived on Ann Street, near the bridge. In 1713, he was permitted to dig "a Cross Anne Street for the Laying his Cellar drain." The same year he was elected to have care and inspection of the Mill Bridge ward. He united with the Old South Church, March 14, 1707-8.

**Rev. John Danforth**, of Dorchester, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1693. He was a son of Rev. Samuel Danforth, of Roxbury, who preached the sermon before the Artillery Company in 1667, and was born Nov. 8, 1660, graduating at Harvard College in 1677. He settled in Dorchester, and was ordained, June 28, 1682, the seventh minister of the Dorchester church. He held that relation to the church until 1730, proving his worth and fidelity through a continuous pastorate of more than forty years. He died May 26, 1730.

Mr. Blake, in his *Annals*, says of him: "He was said to be a man of great learning; he understood mathematics beyond most men of his function. He was exceeding charitable, and of a very peaceful temper. He took much pains to eternize the names of many of the good Christians of his own flock; and yet the world is so ungrateful that he has not a line written to preserve his memory; no, not so much as upon his tomb, he being buried in Lieut.-Gov. Stoughton's tomb that was covered with writing before."

---

The officers elected were: Samuel Shrimpton (1670), captain; **1694-5.** Samuel Checkley (1678), lieutenant; John Ballentine (1682), ensign. John Keech (1692) was first sergeant; John Dyar (1691), second sergeant; John Marion, Jr. (1691), third sergeant; Enoch Greenleaf (1680), fourth sergeant; William Robie (1684), clerk; Robert Cumby (1691), clerk's assistant, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

**Samuel Wentworth** (1693). **AUTHORITIES:**  
Wentworth Genealogy; Boston Records.

"April 2, 1694, Monday, Artillery Training." —  
*Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 389.*

The members recruited in 1694 were : Jeremiah Allen, Joseph Allen, Thomas Baker, John Ballentine, Jr., Joseph Billings, Edward Brattle, Nicholas Buttolph, Samuel Clough, John Davenport, Hopestill Foster, Richard Green, Robert Gutteridge, Thomas Hutchinson, Thomas Phillips, George Robinson, John Savage, and Adam Winthrop, Jr.

**Jeremiah Allen** (1694), of Boston, was a son of Rev. James Allen, an "ejected minister," who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1664. Jeremiah Allen (1694) was born in Boston, March 27, 1673, and married, June 25, 1695, Mary Caball, by whom he had one daughter, who became the wife of John Wheelwright, of Boston. Jeremiah (1694) was elected overseer of the poor in Boston, May 13, 1712. By direction of the town, Col. Penn Townsend (1674), Jeremiah Allen (1694), and John Edwards (1699), visited the South School, kept by Mr. Ames Angier (1708), and reported to the town, May 22, 1722, that they "are of Opinion That it will be no Service to the Town to Continue Mr Angier [1708] in that Employ."

Mr. Allen's (1694) dwelling was near Mr. Colman's meeting-house, on Brattle Street. He was elected treasurer of the province, June 25, 1714, and served until July 5, 1736. He died, after a long illness, Jan. 6, 1741-2.

**Joseph Allen** (1694), was a son of Joseph and Ruth Allen, of Braintree, according to Mr. Savage. He is given on the Boston Records as son of Joseph and Rebecca Allen, — a family different from that of Jeremiah's (1694). Both Mr. Savage and Boston Records give the same date of birth, viz., Jan. 3, 1672. Joseph (1694), having removed to Boston, was elected to minor town offices in 1695, 1697, and 1698. Feb. 23, 1701, the selectmen voted that "Joseph Allen [1694], his acco't of 17. 15. 0 for bullets is allowed." Aug. 25, 1724, the town granted liberty to Mr. Joseph Allen (1694) "to take up the Pavement and dig up the ground to lay a drain from the house where he [dwells] in Hanover Street into the common sewer."

He married, July 7, 1701, Elizabeth Temple. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1697, and also one of the "undertakers," or grantees and promoters, of the Brattle Street Church in the following year. Mr. Allen (1694) was probably a printer. In the report of the legislative committee, "appointed to print and sign the bills of credit," under the Act of 1702, there is this item: "To Mr Jos Allen, for printing 3200 plates at 1½ Each, £20." Mr. John Coney (1662) engraved the plates, and Mr. Samuel Phillips (1693) furnished the paper.

**Thomas Baker** (1694), of Lynn, son of Edward, was born in Lynn in 1653, and married, July 10, 1689, Mary Lewis of that town. He was admitted a freeman in 1691. On the 13th of November, 1675, he, with fourteen others, was drafted in Lynn to serve in the war with the Indians. Mr. Baker (1694) was in the Narraganset fight, as appears by his affidavit: "June 8, 1730, Thomas Baker [1694] deposed and said that he was seventy-seven years old," and testified as to the presence of certain persons in the Narraganset fight in 1675. Feb. 28, 1698, he killed two wolves, and received a bounty of twenty shillings each.

**Jeremiah Allen** (1694). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Province Laws, Vol. VII., 1692-1702.

**Joseph Allen** (1694). AUTHORITIES: Province Laws, Vol. VII., 1692-1702; Boston Records.

**Thomas Baker** (1694). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Baker Genealogy.



**John Ballentine, Jr.** (1694), of Boston, merchant, son of Col. John Ballentine (1682), was born March 15, 1675, and married, March 9, 1703, Mary, daughter of Hon. Adam Winthrop (1692). He graduated at Harvard College in 1694, the same year he joined the Artillery Company. He was one of a committee of thirty-one persons, elected by the town Dec. 27, 1708, "to draught a Charter of Incorporation" for the better government of the town. In 1709, he was elected overseer of the poor, but declined, and in 1711 was elected and served as a tithing-man. He was one of his Majesty's justices of the peace, being appointed in 1728, and serving until his decease; also, he was "clerk of the Superior Court of Common Pleas," and register of deeds for the county of Suffolk, "all which posts," says the *New England Journal*, of Jan. 6, 1735-6, "he discharged with great prudence and fidelity, and was a gentleman beloved and esteemed among us."

Capt. Ballentine, Jr. (1694), was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1700, ensign in 1706, and lieutenant in 1708, and died Jan. 2, 1735-6.

**Joseph Billings** (1694), of Boston, grandson — as appears from Mr. Savage's Genealogical Dictionary — of Roger Billings, of Dorchester, was probably born in Braintree, but removed to Boston, for the births of five children of Joseph (1694) and Hannah Billings, born between 1691 and 1700, are recorded in the town books of Boston. His family, in Braintree, were leather-dressers or tanners. Joseph (1694) was a tithing-man in 1698, and a constable in 1700 and 1701. Dec. 3, 1711, liberty was granted to Joseph Billings (1694) by the selectmen, to dig in Hanover Street, "for repairing his cellar drain."

**Edward Brattle** (1694), of Boston, son of Capt. Thomas Brattle (1675) and Elizabeth (Tyng) Brattle, was born Dec. 18, 1670, and married, March 23, 1692-3, Mary Legge, of Marblehead. He served as constable in 1696 in Boston, and was promoted to be captain in the militia.

About 1712 he settled in Marblehead, "where he possessed considerable real estate, and acquired a high reputation as a successful and enterprising merchant." He died at Marblehead, Sept. 9, 1719. By his will, written Feb. 5, 1719, it appears that he owned vessels, land, houses, shop and goods therein, and warehouse, besides lands at "Kennebeck, Quaboag and in ye Narragansetts."

**Nicholas Buttolph** (1694), of Boston, bookbinder, son of Thomas Buttolph, of Boston, was born March 3, 1668, and married, June 28, 1699, Mary Gutteridge, daughter of Robert (1694). His place of business was on what is now Washington Street, the next door to his father-in-law's coffee-house. He was elected constable in 1704, but declined; and assessor in 1720, but was excused. From 1719 to 1728, he carried on the book-publishing and book-selling business, "near Guttridges Coffee-House," but was in business about fifty years. He died Jan. 29, 1737, and his tomb is No. 60 in the South Burial-Ground. Buttolph Street derives its name from this family.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1705. His son, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1718.

**John Ballentine, Jr.** (1694). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.

**Joseph Billings** (1694). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Edward Brattle** (1694). AUTHORITY: Descendants of Thomas Brattle, by E. D. Harris, 1867.

"Marblehead Sept. 12. On Wednesday last, the ninth Currant, Dyed here, Edward Brattle Esq. in the 49<sup>th</sup> Year of his Age, and was Yesterday decently interr'd." — *Boston News-Letter*, Sept. 14, 1719.

**Samuel Clough** (1694), of Boston, son of William and Mary (Adams) Clough, of Charlestown, was born Dec. 6, 1665. He was a tithing-man in 1695 and 1697. The selectmen ordered, Jan. 1, 1701, "That whereas Samuel Clough [1694] did formerly borrow the Town Globes, that he do now return them unto the Town Treasurer," and the next month he mended the town-house clock.

Nov. 17, 1707, Ruth, widow of Samuel Clough, deceased, was refused a license to retail strong drink.

**John Davenport** (1694), of Boston, son of John and Bridget Davenport, was born June 13, 1672. John Davenport, the father, born at Salem, Mass, Sept. 19, 1641, was a son of Richard Davenport (1639), the friend of Endicott, and captain of the Castle.

**Hopestill Foster** (1694), of Boston, shopkeeper (some say housewright), son of Capt. Hopestill Foster (1673) and grandson of Capt. Hopestill Foster (1642), of Dorchester, was born about 1670, and died Sept. 23, 1735. He was a constable of the town in 1705 and 1731; clerk of the market in 1710 and 1720; tithing-man in 1710, 1715, 1717, and 1722, and held other town office in 1720, and from 1725 to 1733, except in three years.

He had a son, Hopestill, a bookseller in Boston. Hopestill (1694) was identified with the militia, and, like his father and grandfather, rose to the grade of captain.

**Richard Green** (1694), of Boston, son of James (1674) and Rebecca (Jones) Green, was born April 7, 1669. His father lived at Rumney Marsh, now Chelsea, at Dorchester, and finally settled in Boston. His mother was a daughter of Thomas Jones (1643), of Dorchester. His brother, Samuel, joined the Artillery Company in 1711. Richard (1694) married, June 1, 1692, Hannah Sherrar.

He was chosen scavenger in 1697, which was his only town office.

**Robert Gutteridge** (1694), of Boston, probably a son of John (1640), was born in 1645. He kept a coffee-house on what is now Washington Street. His first wife, Mary —, by whom he had five children, died March 25, 1701, and he married, Feb. 11, 1703, widow Mary Thaxter, by whom he had three children. He was clerk of the market in 1701 and 1706, and constable in 1707. He died Nov. 4, 1717, aged seventy-two years.

Feb. 28, 1709, he was assessed one pound (total expense, three pounds sixpence) for repairing "the pump standing in the town's ground in Cornhill." The cost of repairs was assessed on, and paid by, those "who make use of said pump for their supply of water." This pump stood in the middle of Cornhill, now Washington Street, on a line with the north side of Court Street. This approximately locates the coffee-house of Robert Gutteridge (1694).

It was Robert, his eldest son, who was a witness in 1724, mentioned by Mr Whitman (1810) in his history of the Company, page 232.

**Thomas Hutchinson** (1694), of Boston, merchant, son of Col. Elisha Hutchinson (1670), and grandson of Capt. Edward Hutchinson (1638), was born Jan. 30, 1675,

**Robert Gutteridge** (1694). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Thomas Hutchinson** (1694). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.

at Boston. His mother was Hannah Hawkins, daughter of Capt. Thomas Hawkins (1638). He married, Dec. 24, 1703, Sarah, daughter of Col. John Foster (1679), by whom he had two sons, Thomas and Foster, and five daughters. The elder, Thomas, became Governor and historian of Massachusetts. Edward, half-brother of Col. Thomas (1694), became a member of the Artillery Company in 1702.

Thomas (1694) was selectman of Boston in 1706 and 1707; representative to the General Court from 1708 to 1712; was elected a councillor in 1714; and annually thereafter — except in 1724 and 1727 — until his decease, Dec. 3, 1739. During these years he was prominent in the public matters of the town and colony, and enjoyed the fullest respect of his townsmen. He lived in the mansion house<sup>1</sup> afterward occupied by his son, while Governor; situated on Hanover Street.<sup>2</sup>

Mr. Whitman (1810), in the history of the Artillery Company, page 231, quotes: "Regardless of the frowns of a Governor, or the threats of the people, he spoke and voted according to his judgment, attaching himself to no party further than he found their measures tended to promote the public interest."

In 1713, a scheme for private banking and the issuing of paper money was projected, which Col. Hutchinson (1694) violently opposed. "He was an enemy all his life to a depreciating currency, upon a principle very ancient, but too seldom practised upon, *nil utile quod non honestum*." At length, after a long struggle, the party for a public bank prevailed in the General Court for a loan of fifty thousand pounds, in bills of credit, which were put into the hands of five trustees, and loaned for five years only, to any of the inhabitants, at five per cent interest, one-fifth part of the principal to be paid annually. He and his brother, Edward (1702), were appointed two of these trustees; "but," says Mr. Whitman (1810), "their efforts were unavailing to keep up their value, and from this time may be dated the origin of the distresses of the country on account of depreciation and scarcity of money and 'old terror' troubles."

Though not a graduate of Harvard College, he gave that institution three hundred pounds, and died possessed of a large property. In his inventory are mentioned his coach and horses, which only the very wealthy in those days possessed. He lived to participate in the first centennial anniversary of the Artillery Company.

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1698, ensign in 1699, lieutenant in 1701, and captain in 1704 and 1718.

He was distinguished for independence of character in times of great party excitement; was much esteemed for his integrity and for his benevolence, freely giving of his means to both public and private interests. In 1711, the town voted thanks to Capt. Thomas Hutchinson (1694), "for as much as he hath offered at his own charge to build a School House at the North End of the town." A lot was purchased between Bennett and Love streets for one hundred and fifty-three pounds. But it was April 29, 1719, when the gift had been absolutely completed, and the town then voted, "The Thanks of this Town unto the doners of the Two North School Houses, vizt; — The Hon'ble Thomas Hutchinson Esqr [1694] for the Gramer Schoolhouse. And ye Sd Mr Thoms Hutchinson [1694] and also Edward Hutchinson [1702] Esqrs for ye Writing Sch. House." Such benefactors should be held in grateful remembrance by a municipality which names its school-houses in honor of men. No school-house in Boston bears the name of either of these generous citizens.

<sup>1</sup> See Mass. Hist. Soc. Procs., February, 1881.

<sup>2</sup> See American Magazine, Vol. II., for a view of the Hutchinson house.



**Thomas Phillips** (1694), shopkeeper, of Boston, son of Nicholas and Hannah (Salter) Phillips, was born Oct. 19, 1667. He received a license to sell wine and strong liquor, July 3, 1701; June 28, 1708, he again petitioned the selectmen for a license, saying that he had been "wounded in His Majesty's Service and there by rendered unable to do anything at his Trad toward his Support." The Selectmen granted him license as a "Retaylor at his House next door to Mrs Hauksworths at Cornhill in Boston." It was renewed in 1711, and allowed in subsequent years until 1724, when he was refused a license. He subsequently — 1730 — is licensed in "Corn Hill," and continued at the same place and in the same business until his decease, in 1734. His will, dated Aug. 16, was proved Sept. 9, 1734.

There were two or more persons of this name in Boston from 1700 to 1725. One held the office of selectman, and owned real estate.

**George Robinson** (1694), of Boston, carver, son of George and Mary (Bushnell) Robinson, was born in Boston, March 30, 1658. He married Elizabeth —, and their first child, George, who joined the Artillery Company in 1710, was born Dec. 28, 1680. On the 7th of November of that year, George (1694) united with the Second Church. May 5, 1686, he was chosen by the selectmen of Boston a tithing-man, at which time he was a member of Major Richards's (1644) military company. In 1694-5, he served as constable, and was third sergeant of the Company in 1697.

**John Savage** (1694), of Boston, the fourteenth child and tenth son of Major Thomas Savage (1637), was born Aug. 15, 1661, and graduated at Harvard College in 1694.

**Adam Winthrop, Jr.** (1694), son of Col. Adam Winthrop (1692), grandson of Hon. Adam Winthrop (1642), and great-grandson of John Winthrop, the first Governor of Massachusetts, was born in England, and married Anne —. He graduated at Harvard College in 1694.

He was very active in military affairs, passing through the various grades, and became major of the Boston regiment in 1706, and lieutenant-colonel in 1709, and at one time was commander at Castle William. He was also ensign of the Artillery Company in 1702, lieutenant in 1704, and captain in 1706. He was representative from Boston to the General Court in 1714 and 1715, and was a councillor from 1715 to 1718 inclusive; also from 1725 to 1729 inclusive, except in 1727. He was appointed a special justice of the Superior Court, June 22, 1733, having been a justice of peace since June 30, 1702. March 9, 1701-2, he was elected constable, but declined to serve, and Dec. 27, 1708, was chosen one of a committee of thirty-one to draw up a charter of incorporation for the town. May 15, 1710, he declined to act as moderator of the town meeting, and the next year declined the office of selectman, to which he had been elected. From 1715 to 1742, he served on the most important special committee of the town. He was one of a committee to advise the town in regard to the erection of a public market; of others, to see about the site of the school-house which Col. Thomas Hutchinson (1694) proposed to present to the town; to inspect the schools; select a

**Thomas Phillips** (1694). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**George Robinson** (1694). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Adam Winthrop, Jr.** (1694.) AUTHORITIES: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records.



school teacher ; to suggest a method for impanelling juries ; to oppose the formation of a new county in 1727. The last two committees upon which he served linked his name permanently with that which became the "Cradle of Liberty."

Sept. 13, 1742, the receiving of Faneuil Hall was officially recognized by the town. A committee was appointed, of which Col. Adam Winthrop (1694) was one, "to wait upon Peter Faneuil in the name of the town, to render him their most hearty thanks for so bountiful a gift, with their prayers that this and other expressions of his bounty and charity may be abundantly recompensed with the Divine blessing."

Sept. 17, 1742, when the Governor, through Hon. John Jeffries, presented the town with his Majesty's picture, "to be hung up in Faneuil Hall," it was unanimously voted that "the Hon. Adam Winthrop [1694], Samuel Waldo, and Ezekiel Lewis [1707], Esqs., be a committee to draw up a proper vote of thanks to his Excellency for his great goodness and generosity in making the present." The committee made a report which was accepted, and Col. Winthrop (1694) was chosen one of a committee to wait upon his Excellency with a copy of the same. His residence was on Atkinson Street, Boston.

He died Oct. 2, 1743, the inventory of his estate amounting to seven hundred and fifteen pounds.

**Rev. Moses Fiske**, of Braintree, a son of Rev. John Fiske, of Wenham, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1694. He was born at Wenham, April 12, 1642 ; graduated at Harvard College in 1662 ; was ordained at Braintree, Sept. 11, 1672, and died Aug. 10, 1708. From April 27, 1668, to Sept. 11, 1672, the church at Braintree was without a settled pastor, it being divided and contentious. Finally, Mr. Moses Fiske was sent to the church "to minister to it in holy things," by order of the County Court held at Boston. Freegrace Bendall (1667), clerk of the court, sent to Mr. Fiske a copy of the order of the court. Mr. Fiske obeyed, and, going to Braintree, took charge of the church, and preached his first sermon there Dec. 3, 1671. On Feb. 24, 1671-2, the united church gave him a unanimous call to settle, and Sept 11, 1672, Mr. Fiske preaching his own installation sermon, he became the third regular pastor of the church in Braintree.

"This excellent person was ordained pastor of the church in Braintree in September, 1672, in which sacred employment he continued until his dying day, a diligent, faithful laborer in the harvest of Jesus Christ ; studious in the Holy Scriptures ; having an extraordinary gift in prayer, above many good men, and in preaching equal to the most, inferior to few ; zealously diligent for God and the good of men ; one who thought no labor, cost or suffering too dear a price for the good of his people."<sup>1</sup>

He was buried in Braintree. The following is taken from his gravestone : —

"Here rests the body of Rev. Moses Fiske, deceased  
August 10, 1708 in the 66<sup>th</sup> year of his age and  
the 36<sup>th</sup> of his ministry."

"Braintree ! Thy prophets gone, this tomb inters  
The Rev. Moses Fiske, his sacred herse.  
Adore heavens praiseful art that formed the man,  
Who souls not to himself, but Christ oft won ;  
Sailed through the straits with Peter's family,  
Renowned, and Gaius hospitality,  
Pauls patience, James prudence, John's sweet love,  
Island'd enter'd, clear'd and crown'd above."

<sup>1</sup> Diary of Mr. John Marshall.

**1695-6.** The officers elected were: Nicholas Paige (1693), captain; John Atwood (1673), lieutenant; Thomas Hunt (1685), ensign. Nathaniel Holmes (1693) was first sergeant; Benjamin Dyar (1691), second sergeant; John Clough (1691), third sergeant; Joseph Briscoe (1692), fourth sergeant; William Robie (1684), clerk; Robert Cumby (1691), clerk's assistant, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

The members recruited in 1695 were: John Bucanan, Anthony Checkley, Jr., William Clough, David Dure, Richard Gridley, Ambrose Hunnewell, Samuel Shrimpton, Jr., William Sutton.

**John Bucanan** (1695) was a baker in Boston. He is probably the John, son "of John and Mary Bowhanon," born in Boston, Aug. 23, 1661. Children were born in Boston to John (1695) and Elizabeth Bucanon—the name is spelled several ways—between 1693 and 1699. John Bucanan (1695) held town office in 1700, 1706, 1707, and 1715, and in 1704 served as a tithing-man. John "Buckannon" (1695) is named with other "Loafe Bread Bakers" who were "convented before the General Court," Dec. 16, 1696, for violating the law in regard to "the due assize of bread."

Administration was granted on his estate, Feb. 28, 1731.

**Anthony Checkley, Jr.** (1695), of Boston, was, according to Mr. Whitman (1810), a son of Capt. Anthony Checkley (1662). Anthony, Jr. (1695), does not appear to be mentioned on the Records of the Town of Boston. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1698. He died Oct. 31, 1702.

**William Clough** (1695), of Boston, mason. He was a town officer in 1686; was a tithing-man in 1694, surveyor of chimneys in 1695, and a constable in 1699. By wife, Lydia, he had five children born in Boston between 1686 and 1698. A William Clough joined the Second Church, April 7, 1689. Administration on the estate of a William Clough was granted March 18, 1733, and a William Clough died Feb. 1, 1727, aged seventy-two years.

**David Dure** (1695),—this name should be Dewer,—of Boston, son of Sampson and Sarah Dewer, and brother of Sampson Dewer (1718), was born in Boston, Dec. 5, 1674. He does not appear to have held any town office.

**Richard Gridley** (1695), currier, of Boston, son of Joseph (1662) and Elizabeth Gridley, and grandson of Richard (1658), was born about 1660, and married Hannah (Morse) Dawes, widow of Jonathan, Feb. 27, 1694. He was a constable of Boston in 1696; surveyor of highways in 1698, 1699, 1701, and 1708; clerk of the market in 1705, and a tithing-man in 1710. He joined the Old South Church, June 25, 1693. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1697.

**Ambrose Hunnewell** (1695), of Boston.

**John Bucanan** (1695). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Province Laws, Vol. VII., p. 567.

**Richard Gridley** (1695). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"Sept 2, 1695, Artillery Training. Dine at George Monk's, invited by Col. Paige; Mr. Moody and Mr. Chieuer there, Addington, Foster." — *Several Papers*, Vol. I., p. 411.

**Samuel Shrimpton, Jr.** (1695), of Boston, son of Col. Samuel (1670) and Elizabeth (Roberts) Shrimpton, was born in Boston, April 20, 1673. Samuel, Jr. (1695), married, May 7, 1696, Elizabeth Richardson, a niece of Col. Samuel's (1670) wife, being the daughter of her sister, Sarah (Roberts) Richardson. They had one child, Elizabeth, born in Boston, Aug. 26, 1702. She married, May 6, 1720, John Yeamans, and died Dec. 4, 1721. All her grandchildren died young, and this branch of the Shrimpton family became extinct.

Samuel Shrimpton, Jr. (1695), was a merchant in Boston. "About the year 1702, he was in partnership with a cousin of his father, Epaphras Shrimpton, who was the son of Edward Shrimpton. On the 28th of December, 1702, Samuel Shrimpton [1695], in 'his humble complaint and petition' to the Hon. Isaac Addington [1652], Esq., and other justices of the peace, relates that he had been engaged in a partnership with the said Epaphras; that consignments had been given them to a considerable amount from merchants in England, and the accounts had been entered in sundry books, which had been at all times in the possession of said Epaphras Shrimpton; and that, on the Saturday previous, these books were so badly burned 'as to be of no manner of use' to the petitioner." He proceeds to say that he has great reason to suspect these books "were destroyed with the privity" of his aforementioned partner. The whole affair was examined, but we do not learn the result. The accused affirmed that he was innocent.<sup>1</sup>

About 1700, he engaged with Simeon Stoddard (1702) and others in the manufacture of salt, "on the Neck, in the town of Boston." The salt-works were in operation in 1720.

Samuel Shrimpton, Jr. (1695), died May 25, 1703. His widow married, Dec. 23, 1713, David Stoddard, son of Simeon (1675).

**William Sutton** (1695), of Boston, son of Bartholomew Sutton, of Boston, was born March 3, 1667, and married Mary Johnson, Jan. 31, 1694. He was chosen a constable of Boston, March 11, 1705-6, and was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1700. July 3, 1721, Capt. Jonathan Pollard (1700) petitioned the selectmen for a license to keep an inn in the house of the late William Sutton (1695), deceased.

**Rev. Peter Thacher**, of Milton, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1695. He was a son of Rev. Thomas Thacher, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1671; was born at Salem, Mass., July 18, 1651, and graduated at Harvard College in 1671. He was chosen third fellow of the college, June 15, 1674. In 1676, in company with Judge Sewall (1679) and Rev. John Danforth, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1693, he visited Europe, and was absent a year or more, pursuing his studies. On his return, he settled at Barnstable, where he remained one year, and in September, 1680, removed to Milton, by invitation of the church there, and settled over it. Ten members of the church went to Barnstable to conduct him to his new home, and a cavalcade of fifty-seven horsemen accompanied him as far as Sandwich. He accepted the invitation to settle with the Milton church, May 18, 1681, and was ordained over that church, June 1 following. Mr. Thacher wrote in his journal: "May 20. This

**Samuel Shrimpton, Jr.** (1695.) AUTHORITIES: Sumner's Hist. of East Boston; Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

<sup>1</sup> Sumner's East Boston, pp. 233, 234.

day the ordination beer was brewed." A full and interesting account of his life and work is given in the History of Milton, by A. K. Teele.

He died Dec. 17, 1727, after a pastorate of forty-six years. Judge Sewall (1679) attended the funeral of his life-long friend and classmate, having hired for the occasion "Blake's coach with four horses."

---

**1696-7.** The officers elected were: Bozoun Allen (1676), captain; Henry Deering (1682), lieutenant; John Barnard (1677), ensign. Timothy Wadsworth (1691) was first sergeant; Thomas Baker (1694), second sergeant; William Paine (1691), third sergeant; John Kilby (1691), fourth sergeant; William Robie (1684), clerk; Robert Cumby (1691), clerk's assistant, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

England and France continued at war. Each desired a complete conquest of the American continent. The French in Canada believed that the English would send a fleet against them to retrieve the misfortune of 1690, and intelligence came to Massachusetts that a French fleet was destined to make an attack on the province, and especially on Boston. This caused great alarm, but the projected expedition was not prosecuted. The fortifications of Boston were examined, and found to be "very much out of repair, and unfit for service." Therefore it was advised that the platforms and carriages for the great artillery be repaired, "so as they may be of service in case of invasion."

Col. Samuel Shrimpton (1670), Lieut.-Col. Hutchinson (1670), and Major Penn Townsend (1674), with the selectmen, six out of nine of whom were members of the Artillery Company, were appointed a committee "to make application unto the commander-in-chief for directions that the said platforms and carriages be speedily repaired, and fitted to be of service."

The three members of the Artillery Company above named were, in the following March, appointed to "examine after the town's powder that is lost," and fix the wages of the gunner. Subsequently, the town voted that William Tilley (1706) "should be allowed 20*l* per year for his service as gunner to the town, for 3 years past."

The members recruited in 1696 were: William Crow and Seth Smith.

**William Crow** (1696) was of Boston in 1691. He was married by Simon Bradstreet, Governor, to Eliza Sergeant, Dec. 10, 1691, and they had four children born in Boston, prior to 1700. He held a town office in 1702.

**Seth Smith** (1696), of Boston in 1693, was born in 1665, and was married, Jan. 10, 1693, by Rev. Cotton Mather, to Mehitable Heath. Four children were born to them in Boston. He held town office in 1696 and 1697, in 1704 and 1705, and was also a tithing-man in 1696. In 1707-8, he occupied a house belonging to the town, situated on Beacon Street, at "whetcombs corner." He died Nov. 29, 1721, aged fifty-six years.



**Rev. Michael Wigglesworth**,<sup>1</sup> of Malden, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1696. He was an only son of Edward Wigglesworth, of New Haven, and was born in England, Oct. 28, 1631. He received his first training in study under the direction of the famous Ezekiel Cheever, of Boston, and entered Harvard College in 1647. During his residence at college, Henry Dunster (1640), noted for his erudition and discipline, was its president. In 1651, he graduated, and was soon after appointed a tutor in the college. He was ordained at Malden in 1654, but after preaching a few years, his health failing, he was forced to relinquish the care of a church. During the twenty following years he practised as a physician, when, his health being restored, he resumed ministerial labors. He delivered the election sermon of 1686, and the Artillery election sermon of 1696, but is especially noted as being the author of a poem called "The Day of Doom." It was first printed in 1662, and the sixth edition appeared in 1716. It was twice reprinted in England. "The poem is of no value as poetry; . . . it is a description of the Day of Judgment in coarse, realistic strokes."<sup>2</sup>

He died on Sunday morning, June 10, 1705, in the seventy-fourth year of his age, after a career of great usefulness and honor.

1697-8. The officers elected were: Elisha Hutchinson (1670), captain; John Ballentine (1682), lieutenant; Samuel Johnson (1675), ensign. Thomas Cushing (1691) was first sergeant; Richard Gridley (1695), second sergeant; George Robinson (1694), third sergeant; Joseph Allen (1694), fourth sergeant; Robert Gibbs (1692), clerk; Robert Cumby (1691), clerk's assistant, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

The war was terminated by the treaty of Ryswick, and King William saw his efforts to arrest the progress of French conquests attended with complete success. The treaty was made Dec. 10, 1697, but, during the year of 1697, the records are redundant with "fortifications," "repairs," "batteries," "powder," etc., showing the earnestness and patriotism of the people. Prominent in every public work, and watchful for the interests of the town, were the leading members of the Artillery Company. Three of the four representatives to the General Court, six out of ten of the selectmen, all the members of the various committees whose duty it was to repair defences and provide necessary military supplies, were members of the Artillery Company.

The members recruited in 1697 were: John Mountfort and Zechariah Tuttle.

**Rev. Michael Wigglesworth.** AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1863; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Sibley's Harvard Graduates.

"[1697] Second-day, Apr. 5<sup>th</sup>. No Artillery Training, and consequently no choice of a Minister as usual. Last night and this morning were very cold, possibly that might be the reason. Street of earth and water was hard frozen."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 451.*

"Second-day, April 12, 1697. . . . This day Artillery meets; chuse."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 452.*

<sup>1</sup> "Second-day June 1, 1696, Mr. Wigglesworth

preaches the Artillery Sermon, from Ephes. 6, 11. Put on the whole Armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the Devil. In the Applications, said 't was necessary we should doe so by reason of the evil of the Times or else of Popery, or something as bad as Popery should come to be set up, what should we doe? Mentioned Rev. 16, 15 said the Garments there and Armour in the Text were the same. About Diner Time the Guns were fired at the Castle and Battery for joy that the Plot was discovered."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 427.*

<sup>2</sup> Prof. Charles E. Norton, at Hingham, August, 1881.

**John Mountfort** (1697), cooper, fourth son of Edmund, and nephew of Benjamin (1679), was born in Boston, Feb. 8, 1670. On the 17th of January, 1693, he married Mary Cock, granddaughter of Nicholas Upshall (1637). He was the owner of "Mountfort's Wharf," so called, and was engaged in the West India business, connected with which he had an extensive store and cooperage establishment. He died on the 23d of January, 1723, and was interred in the Mountfort tomb, No. 17, Copp's Hill Burial-Ground. This tomb was built by him in 1711.

John Mountfort (1697) was great-grandfather of Major Napoleon B. Mountfort (1826).

**Zechariah Tuttle** (1697), of Boston, called "Captain," son of John and Mary Tuttle, and grandson of Lieut. John (1644), was born in 1669. His name is spelled Tuthill, and is so written in his will.

He served as constable of Boston in 1698, and was one of the twenty persons, called "undertakers," to whom, in 1698, Thomas Brattle (1675) conveyed the lot upon which the Brattle Street meeting-house was erected in 1698. He was captain of a military company in Boston in 1707 and 1708. He died Jan. 7, 1721, aged fifty-two years. His will, dated Jan. 3, 1721, was proved on the 5th of February following. He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1700, and lieutenant in 1702.

Capt. Zechariah Tuttle (1697) was commander of the Castle in 1711, when the armament, consisting of fifteen ships of war, with forty transports and six store-ships, under the command of Gen. Hill and Admiral Walker, arrived in Boston Harbor. When Gen. Hill arrived, Hon. Samuel Sewall (1679) was sent down the harbor to meet him. The party came in boats to the Castle, when Capt. Tuttle (1697) saluted them with twenty-one guns. Thence they proceeded to the council chamber in Boston, after which Gen. Hill was entertained by Mr. John Borland (1692).

Capt. Tuttle (1697) was commander of the Castle from Jan. 16, 1710, to Nov. 28, 1720. Mr. Drake is in error in making John Larrabee commander from 1712 to 1762. He became lieutenant of the Castle, June 16, 1725, and was only a quarter-gunner in November, 1720.

Capt. Tuttle's (1697) sister, "Sarah, was wife of James Gooch, and Mary was the wife of Deacon Thomas Hubbard."

**John Mountfort** (1697). AUTHORITY: Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.

"1693-4, Jan. 17. This day John Mountfort [1697] marries Mr. Bridgman's wives Daughter." — *Sewall's Diary, Vol. I., p. 388.*

**Zechariah Tuttle** (1697). AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1868.

"[1698-9] 2d Day, Jan 2. I speak to Mr. Mico about 8 M. at his house, largely about Capt Tuttle. Saith he never heard any ill of him, in answer to my asking if he had any blot. Saith knows not his estate but thinks it may be about 6 or 700 £. . . . Jan. —, at night Capt Tuthill comes to speak with Betty, who hid her self all alone in the coach for several hours till he was gon, so that we sought at several houses, till at last came in of her self, and look'd very wild. . . . Jan 9. speaks with her in my presence. . . . Jan 10 at night sent Mr. Tuthill away, because company was here, and told him was willing to know her mind better." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. I., pp. 490-492.*

"June 5, 1699. . . . M. T. [Mr. Tuttle] Wednesday nights." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 498.*

In October following, "Betty" Sewall accepted the attentions of Grove Hirst, whom she afterwards married, and Mr. Tuttle's advances were rejected.

The following appeared in the *News-Letter*, Jan. 15, 1722: "Boston, On the Lord's Day Night, the 7<sup>th</sup> instant, Died here Capt. Zechariah Tuthill, aged 52 years. He was a Gentleman entirely and universally esteemed of, and favoured by, all Degrees of People, both High and Low that Knew him, being one of a Just, Affable, Courteous, and Generous Spirit: Adorning the Post he sustained, as Captain of His Majesty's Castle William (the chief Fort of this Province) for about 10 Years past: The duty whereof he singularly and diligently attended to and carefully and faithfully discharged, to the General content and satisfaction, both of the Government, his Superior Officers and Soldiers, as well as the Inhabitants, and therefore being greatly beloved by all in his Life, he is now as much lamented in his Death. He was Honourably Interred on Thursday last the 11th current."

**Rev. Nehemiah Walter**, of Roxbury, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1697. He was a brother of Thomas, of Roxbury, and was born in Ireland. Tradition, according to Mr. Savage, says "he was sent by his father to be apprentice to an upholsterer in Boston in 1674"; but, having been trained in one of the best schools in Ireland, he was enabled to graduate at Harvard College in 1684. At thirteen, he could converse fluently in Latin. Later, while sojourning in Nova Scotia, he gained such mastery of the French language as enabled him to preach occasionally, in the absence of their pastor, to the French congregation in Boston, in their own tongue.<sup>1</sup> He was ordained, Oct. 17, 1688, as colleague with Rev. John Eliot, pastor of the Roxbury church.

He married, in 1691, Sarah, daughter of Rev. Increase Mather, and sister of Rev. Cotton Mather.

The pastorates of Rev. John Eliot and Rev. Nehemiah Walter extended over a period of one hundred and eighteen years. The latter died Sept. 17, 1750, at the age of eighty-seven years.

In 1721, Rev. Mr. Walter published a small volume, entitled "The Grounds and Rules of Music explained; or, An Introduction to the Art of Singing by Note. Fitted to the meanest Capacity." It ran through several editions prior to 1764. Rev. Cotton Mather preached a commemorative discourse concerning Rev. Mr. Walter, which was printed under the title, "A Good Reward of a Good Servant."

**1698-9.** The officers elected were: Penn Townsend (1674), captain; Thomas Hunt (1685), lieutenant; Samuel Marshall (1685), ensign. — — — was first sergeant; Thomas Hutchinson (1694), second sergeant; Adam Winthrop (1692), third sergeant; Anthony Checkley, Jr. (1695), fourth sergeant; Robert Gibbs (1692), clerk, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

Rev. Cotton Mather, in his Boston lecture, May 7, 1698, said, "The small-pox has four times been a great plague upon us. In one twelvemonth about one thousand of our neighbors have, one way or other, been carried unto their long home; and yet we are, after all, many more than seven thousand souls of us at this hour living on the spot. Ten times has the fire made notable ruins among us, and our good servant been almost our master; but the ruins have mostly and quickly been rebuilt. I suppose that many more than a thousand houses are to be seen on this little piece of ground, all filled with the undeserved favors of God."<sup>2</sup>

The members recruited in 1698 were: David Buckley, John Cotta, Jr., Benjamin Emmons, Jr., and John Noyes.

**David Buckley** (1698) was of Boston in 1697. He was married to Hannah Tally, by Rev. Cotton Mather, June 3, 1697.

**John Cotta, Jr.** (1698), hatter, of Boston, son of John Cotta (1679), tailor, of Boston, was born Nov. 23, 1671, and married, May 4, 1698, Sarah, daughter of Richard Wharton, son-in-law of Capt. William Tyng (1638). In the administration of his estate,

**Rev. Nehemiah Walter.** AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1853; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Eliot's Biog. Dict.

**John Cotta, Jr.** (1698.) AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> Drake's Hist. of Roxbury, p. 172.

<sup>2</sup> Mather's Magnalia, Ed. 1855, Vol. I., p. 92.



June 17, 1728, he is called "felt-maker." He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1705, and clerk of the market in 1706.

July 10, 1722, "John & Sarah Cotta in Cornhill" were approved and recommended by the selectmen as retailers of strong drink, and July 5, 1728, the license was granted to "Sarah Cotta in Corn Hill."

John Cotta (1698) died June 9, 1728, aged fifty-six years.

**Benjamin Emmons, Jr.** (1698), trader, of Boston, son of Benjamin and Mary Emmons, was born Jan. 24, 1669, and by wife, Elizabeth, had two daughters born in Boston. He became a member of the Old South, March 27, 1698. He was a tithing-man and member of the Boston militia in 1704, and for several years held town offices. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1708, and its ensign in 1721. His will was proved Aug. 17, 1752.

**John Noyes** (1698), of Boston, son of John Noyes (1676), and brother of Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699), was born Nov. 4, 1674, and married, March 16, 1699, Susanna Edwards. His mother, wife of John Noyes (1676), was Sarah, daughter of Capt. Peter Oliver (1643). John, Jr. (1698), was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1699, and its ensign in 1704. In 1704, he was elected a constable of Boston, but declined to serve, and paid the usual fine for not serving.

Administration was granted on his estate, Aug. 15, 1749.

The first regular record remaining of the proceedings of the Military Company of the Massachusetts is dated April 4, 1698, all previous to that date having been lost. Recorded, however, in the same book, are the names of the members from the organization of the Company, and also the names of the officers elected and appointed for each year. From the above-mentioned date the records are complete, except 1775-85.

The first record is as follows: "April 4, 1698. The Artillery Company met and chose the Rev. Mr. Joseph Belcher to preach the next election sermon, and desired Lt Col'n Hutchinson [1670], Lt John Ballentine [1682] and Lt. Samuel Johnson [1675] to request him to preach it. Accepted by him."

The next record is: "June 6, 1698. The Rev. Mr. Belcher preached from 1<sup>st</sup> Cor. ix. 26. 27."

**Rev. Joseph Belcher**, of Dedham, delivered the election sermon of the Artillery Company in 1698. He was a son of John and Rebecca Belcher, of Braintree; was born May 14, 1671, and graduated at Harvard College in 1690. He was invited by the church and town of Dedham to be minister there at a salary of sixty pounds, to be increased to one hundred pounds per annum. Mr. Belcher was ordained Nov. 29, 1693. The last sermon was delivered by him Aug. 30, 1721, between which time and Dec. 28 following he had an attack of paralysis, from which he died at Roxbury, April 27, 1723, and was buried at Dedham.

**Benjamin Emmons, Jr.** (1698.) **AUTHORITIES:** Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**John Noyes** (1698). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Rev. Joseph Belcher.** **AUTHORITIES:** Cent. Dis., by Mr. Lamson, Dedham; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Records of Dedham.







John Galley

"Mr. Belcher," says his immediate successor, "lived much desired and died greatly lamented in the fifty-third year of his age and thirtieth of his ministry." Rev. Cotton Mather, who paid a tribute to his memory, May 2, 1723, says, "Mr. Belcher ranked high in the estimation of those who knew him. He was greatly admired and followed. He lived what he spoke and did what he taught."

The officers elected were: John Walley (1671), captain; 1699-1700. Nathaniel Byfield (1679), lieutenant; Thomas Hutchinson (1694), ensign. Samuel Phillips (1693) was first sergeant; William Griggs (1675), second sergeant; Joseph Belknap, Jr. (1692), third sergeant; John Noyes (1698), fourth sergeant; Robert Gibbs (1692), clerk, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

The first steps toward the formation of the Brattle Street Church were taken in 1697. Thomas Brattle (1675) conveyed the land for the meeting-house, Jan. 10, 1698. The number of persons or "undertakers" interested in the conveyance was twenty, of whom the following were members of the Artillery Company: Thomas Clarke (1685), John Mico (1702), Benjamin Davis (1673), Timothy Clarke (1702), William Keen (1692), Zechariah Tuttle (1697), Thomas Palmer (1702), Joseph Allen (1694), John Kilby (1691), and Addington Davenport (1692). A church was established, a meeting-house built, and Rev. Benjamin Colman, a native of Boston, was called to the pastorate. He accepted, and, arriving home from England the first of November, 1699, preached the first sermon in the new meeting-house, Dec. 24, 1699. Thomas Brattle (1675) was elected a deacon of this church in 1699; Benjamin Davis (1673) in 1699; John Kilby (1691) in 1701, and John Phillips (1725) in 1729. The old or first meeting-house of Brattle Street Church was built of wood, and was "never painted." It stood until 1772, when it was decided to erect a new building, the corner-stone of which was laid June 23, 1772.

John Marshall, "a mason of Braintree," recorded in his valuable diary, under date of May 26, 1699: "Great expectations we had of his excellency Richard earl of Bello-mont; and great preperations to entertain him; who came to Boston on Fryday the 26 of this May; and to receive him ther was I think twenty companys of souldiers, of which 3 weer troops, and such a vast concourse of people as my poor eyes never saw the like before; the life-guard went to Roadisland to wait on him; two troops went to Dedham to meet him their; and when he came to Boston we made a guard from the end of the towne to the South meeting-house. The lifeguard rode foremost then came some oficers; next his Lordship and Countess, then the troops and other gentlemen; the drums beat, the trumpets did sound, the Coullors weer displayed; the Cannons and ordinance from the ships and fortifications did roar; all manner of expressions of joy; and to end all Fireworks and good drink at night."

The members recruited in 1699 were: John Adams, Henry Bridgham, Charles Chauncy, William Clark, Elisha Cooke, Jr., John Edwards, Samuel Gaskell, Jr., Samuel Keeling, Oliver Noyes, Edward Proctor, Richard Proctor, Joseph Russell, Thomas Sandford, Habijah Savage, John Wharton.

**John Adams** (1699), maltster, of Boston, son of Alexander Adams (1652), a shipwright, of Boston, was born Feb. 26, 1653. He was a constable of Boston in 1699, and a tithing-man in 1704. He became a member of the Old South Church, March 24, 1700, and, Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "died about 1702."

**Henry Bridgham** (1699), tanner, of Boston, son of Joseph Bridgham (1674), nephew of Jonathan (1673), and grandson of Henry (1644), was born Dec. 16, 1676. He was an officer of the Boston militia, and, Oct. 3, 1703, became a member of the Old South Church. He was a tithing-man in 1703; clerk of the market in 1704, and constable in 1706; also third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1704; first sergeant in 1709, and clerk of the Company from 1707 to 1709. He died April 10, 1720, aged forty-four years, and was "buried April 14."

**Charles Chauncy** (1699), merchant, of Boston, was a son of Isaac and grandson of Charles Chauncy, president of Harvard College, who succeeded in that office Henry Dunster (1640), in 1654. Charles Chauncy (1699) was born in England, but came to America, and married Sarah, daughter of Hon. John Walley (1671). They had four children, the eldest of whom was Charles, who graduated at Harvard College in 1721. Mr. Savage calls him "one of the ablest divines Boston ever saw." He delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1734.

Charles Chauncy (1699) was an officer in the Boston militia, and a member of the Old South Church. He served the town as constable in 1702, and overseer of the poor in 1709 and 1710, and until his decease, in 1711. On the ninth day of May, 1711, the inhabitants voted in town meeting that "Mr. Anthony Stoddard is chosen to serve as overseer of the poor in the room of Mr. Charles Chauncy [1699] deceased." Administration on his estate was granted March 26, 1712.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1701.

**William Clark** (1699), merchant, of Boston, son of John Clark, M. D., of Boston, and brother of Hon. John Clark, speaker of the House, etc., was born in Boston, Dec. 19, 1670. He married Sarah Brondson, May 14, 1702, by whom he had two sons, Robert and Benjamin (1733), and three daughters. He lived in Clark Square, in a house afterward owned and occupied by Sir Henry Frankland, collector of customs. William Clark (1699) died in July, 1742.

He held several minor town offices, as constable in 1700; overseer of the poor in 1704—but declined that office in 1705; tithing-man in 1713, 1715, and 1718; was

**John Adams** (1699). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"John Adams [1699]. This is probably the man of whose death in November, 1702, Judge Sewall [1679] twice speaks. Nov. 2, 'John Adams, a very good man' dies of the small-pox. Dec. 8, . . . 'the death of Jno Adams . . . is a great stroke to our church and congregation.'" — *Hist. Cat. of Old South Church*, 1883.

**Henry Bridgham** (1699). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Charles Chauncy** (1699). AUTHORITIES: Savage's Gen. Dict.; Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"[1711] Friday, May 4 Mr. Charles Chauncy dies. . . . May 7, 1711, Mr Chauncy buried." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 308.*

**William Clark** (1699). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Mass. Records; Descendants of Hugh Clark; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"Last Saturday died here the Honorable William Clark Esq who has been one of the most considerable Merchants in this Town, and has formerly served as a Representative for the Town in the General Court, and was for some years one of the Members of his Majestys Council." — *The Boston Weekly News-Letter, July, 1742.*



one of a committee to consult for the common good in 1719; and was, also, selectman of Boston from 1719 to 1723, and representative to the General Court, 1719-22, 1724, and 1725.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "In 1721 there was some difficulty between the Governor and council on one side and the House on the other, about appointing the annual day for Fast. Mr. Clark [1699], being a representative, carried his opposition so far that he 'would not attend public worship, but opened his warehouse, as upon other days.' He was elected a member of the council in 1722, but he adhered so closely to Mr. Cooke's [1699] party, and had been so violently opposed to the Governor, that he negatived him; 'but did not serve his own interest, Mr. Clark's [1699] opposition being of greater consequence in the House.'"

He was a member of the Second Church, and was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1703 and 1706.

**Elisha Cooke, Jr.** (1699), lawyer, of Boston, was a son of Elisha, of Boston, a physician, but better known as a politician, and a grandson of Lieut. Richard Cooke (1643). He was, on his mother's side, a grandson of Gov. Leverett (1639), and was born Dec. 20, 1678. He graduated at Harvard College in 1697, and married, Jan. 7, 1703, Jane, daughter of Hon. Richard Middlecot, by whom he had one son, and a daughter, Mary, who married Judge Richard Saltonstall. He was active in town matters; was selectman from 1719 to 1723, and representative to the General Court, 1714-6, 1719-23, and 1727-37.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says concerning him: "He was an officer of the Boston militia, and his fame as an orator and politician was so great that his military title is lost sight of. He pursued such measures as rendered him obnoxious to the prerogative party. He was extremely popular in Boston, and principal leader of the opposition party in the House, the other Boston members and a majority of the country members adhering to him through several administrations. His eloquence swayed the public mind, and he continued in constant favor with the people until near his decease. His oratory is spoken of as animating, energetic, concise, persuasive, and pure.

"His opposition might have been caught from his father, who was of the violent party, adhering to the old, and opposing the new, charter. Mr. Cooke, Jr. [1699], was of the Land-Bank party in 1711, a disastrous speculation, but he sided with the prominent men of the day. He 'had the character of a fair and open enemy, was free in expressing his sentiments, and the Governor was informed of some contemptuous language in private company, with which he was so much offended as to procure Mr. Cooke's [1699] removal from the place of clerk of the Superior Court.' A dispute arising respecting the conduct of his Majesty's surveyor of the woods in Maine, Mr. Cooke [1699] immediately embarked in the controversy, and, with horse and foot, was ever after the great partisan warrior of the opposition. This accounts for his rejection from the council in 1718, and as speaker in 1720.

"He was chosen by joint ballot of the House and council, agent of the Province to England, and sailed Jan. 18, 1723. He had been a violent opposer of Gov. Shute, and, meeting him in England, refused to be reconciled with him. He continued in England two years, but his mission was unsuccessful. In May, 1725, he was chosen into the

**Elisha Cooke, Jr.** (1699.) AUTHORITIES: Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Boston Records. Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842;

council, and Lieut.-Gov. Dummer [1702] did not negative him. This may be considered as a mark of approbation for his conduct in England; his salary, while absent, was small, but he 'acquiesced therein, for the sake of peace.' In 1731, he seemed to favor the idea of a fixed salary for the Governor, and his popularity began to decline, so that in 1733 or 1734, he obtained but a very small majority, after repeated trials, to be representative. The usual votes cast in those days, even of excitement, rarely exceeded six hundred. Hutchinson says of him, 'that he differed from most who, from time to time, have been recorded in history for popular men. Generally, to preserve the favor of the people, they must change with the popular air. He had the art of keeping the people steady in the applause of his measures. To be careful never to depart from the appearance of maintaining or enlarging rights, liberties, and privileges, was all he found necessary.'

"When Gov. Burnet arrived, he lodged at Mr. Elisha Cooke's [1699] while the Province House was being repaired. He had become acquainted with him in England, and there was apparent friendship, but it did not last long. The shopkeepers and tradesmen (mechanics) directed the councils of the town, and were Mr. Cooke's [1699] supporters. The Governor had been somewhat free in his jokes upon them; this Mr. Cooke [1699] knew how to take advantage of in 1728. In 1730, Gov. Belcher, with whom he had been a favorite, appointed him chief-justice of the Court of Common Pleas in Suffolk County.

"Mr. Cooke [1699] died in August, 1737, aged fifty-nine years. The inventory of his estate, real and personal, amounted to £32,515 7s. 3d., — probably in paper currency. Among other things are enumerated, 437 ounces of silver plate, prized at £590 15s., and his library, valued at £81. He owned lands at the Eastward of nominal value. He never held any office in the Artillery Company."

**John Edwards** (1699), goldsmith, of Boston, was a son of John Edwards, of Boston, a "Chyrurgeon," who came from Lymehouse, Stepney, Middlesex County, England, and was taxed in Boston in 1688. John, Jr. (1699), was born March 13, 1686-7. He was the father of Capt. Thomas (1724), and of Capt. Joseph Edwards (1738). John Edwards (1699) was a member of the Boston militia and a tithing-man in 1701, 1708, and 1711; fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1704; constable in 1715, and an assessor from 1720 to 1727 inclusive. He is given in the Boston town records the title of "Mr.," and was prominent in the affairs of the town. In 1722, he, with Col. Penn Townsend (1674) and Jeremiah Allen (1694), constituted a committee, with the selectmen, to visit "the wrighting School at the Southerly End of Boston," and examine the scholars under the teaching of Mr. Ames Angier (1708). The committee did so, April 24, 1722, and reported to the town, they "are of opinion that it will be no service to the town to continue Mr. Angier [1708] in that employ."

At a meeting of the selectmen, Feb. 18, 1729, "the Selectmen executed a lease the same day to Mr John Edwards [1699], of Boston, goldsmith, of a shop or tenement now in his possession called number six situate and being in Boston, fronting upon Dock Square," having the square on the south, westerly by Mr. Dyar, the town dock on the north, and Mr. Casno on the east, for the term of seven years, at twenty pounds per annum.

The following is taken from the Selectmen's Minutes, March 5, 1722: —

**John Edwards** (1699). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"Upon a petition of mr John Edwards of Boston Sheweth.

"That whereas there is a Tomb in the South Burying place belonging to the Late Governour Endicot, which has bin unimproved for many years, and there being no family in Said Town nearer Related to the Said Governour Endicot famaly then his, Desires he may haue Liberty granted him to make use of it for his family. . . .

"Granted that the Said John Edwards has Liberty to improve the Said Tomb until a person of Better Right to it appears to claim it."

His will, dated in 1743, was proved April 22, 1746.

**Samuel Gaskell, Jr.** (1699), shopkeeper, of Boston, was probably a son of Samuel, and was born in Salem. He was approved by the selectmen to retail wines and liquors out of doors, July 13, 1691. He was a constable of Boston in 1696, and a tithing-man and member of a militia company in Boston in 1698. He became a member of the Old South Church, April 3, 1692.

The family became noticeable on account of the persecutions to which Samuel, the father, was subjected. He was a Quaker, or rather attended a Quaker meeting, and Sept. 16, 1658, "he had his right ear cut off in prison." No other family of the name seems to have been in the colony at that time.

**Samuel Keeling** (1699), merchant, first appears in Boston about 1695. He married, Sept. 14, 1699, Elizabeth Oliver, whose brother, Capt. Nathaniel Oliver, Jr., joined the Artillery Company in 1701. Her grandfather, Peter Oliver (1643), was captain of the Artillery Company in 1669. Samuel Keeling (1699) was a partner in business of Charles Chauncy (1699), both of whom, in June, 1701, signed a petition, with others, to Lord Bellomont, asking him for a bankrupt law.

Samuel Keeling (1699) was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1700, lieutenant in 1710, and captain in 1716. He served the town in various capacities, among which were: constable in 1699; overseer of the poor in 1707, 1708, and 1709; auditor of accounts concerning repairing fortifications in 1709 and 1710; captain of a military company in 1707 and 1708, and was appointed a justice of the peace, Dec. 24, 1715. He was on several special committees of the town, to whom important matters were entrusted. He was of that important though temporarily defeated committee of 1717, which reported in favor of the erection of a public market. The report was rejected, and the committee, enlarged, considered the matter for two years, and the same report was voted down again. The matter then rested until 1734.

Administration was granted on his estate, Jan. 26, 1729. Inventory of estate, two hundred and six pounds.

**Oliver Noyes** (1699), physician, of Boston, son of John and Sarah (Oliver) Noyes, of Boston, was born in 1675. His father, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1676,

**Samuel Gaskell, Jr.** (1699.) AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Bond's Watertown.

**Samuel Keeling** (1699). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

"Capt Keelings funeral attended by Rev. Mr. Cooper, Dec. 25, 1729."—*Sewall's Diary*.

**Oliver Noyes** (1699). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company; Descendants of Thomas Brattle.

"Dr. Noyes died 16 Mar. 1720-1, being taken very suddenly and awfully."—*Snow's MS. note*.

"He had 'a house and land near Fort Hill.' Wife Katherine, sons Belcher and Oliver; daus. Anna, wife of Mather Byles, and Sarah, wid. of — Pulcepher."—*Record of 1738, quoted by Drake, Hist. of Boston, p. 536*.

"[1720-1, Tuesday] March 14. Dr Oliver Noyes is seized with an Apoplexy at 10 at night. . . .



and his grandfather, Peter Oliver, became a member in 1643. Samuel Keeling (1699) seems to have had the pecuniary assistance of Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699) in the potash works of Chauncy (1699) and Keeling (1699), as shown by a deed of Nathaniel Byfield (1679), dated 1700. His brother, Ensign John Noyes, joined the Artillery Company in 1698.

Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699) graduated at Harvard College in 1695, and was by profession a physician, yet he found time to manifest a deep interest in everything that concerned the welfare of Boston.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "He must have entered into public life and enterprise, to improve his native town, early in life; and from the magnitude of his undertakings, resembled the great author of *India and Central wharves*, Broad, India, Market (now new Cornhill), Brattle streets, and the Milldam, solid causeway, — Uriah Cotting.

"He was one of the original projectors of Long Wharf, and the erection of that noble pier may justly be attributed to his enterprising spirit. The work was commenced soon after the great fire in 1711, called by Snow the fourth great fire in Boston, which commenced in Capt. Ephraim Savage's [1674] house, in Williams Court, and swept off both sides of old Cornhill, part of Court (Queen) Street and State (King) Street, to the dock, together with the town-house and the First Church (old brick) where 'Joy's buildings' afterward stood. The rubbish of this fire was chiefly used in filling up Long Wharf."

Mr. Hutchinson, who knew him well, speaks of his character, Vol. II., p. 249: "He was strongly attached to the popular party and highly esteemed by them; was of a very humane, obliging disposition, and in private life no man was more free from indelicacies." He was of the party which followed the leadership of Elisha Cooke, Jr. (1699), one of the most active and prominent men of his time.

Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699) married Ann, daughter of Hon. Andrew Belcher, of Cambridge, who was a son of Capt. Andrew Belcher (1642), of Boston. Jonathan, a brother of Ann (Belcher) Noyes, was Governor of Massachusetts from 1730 to 1741. Capt. Noyes (1699) was an officer of the Boston militia, having been promoted to the captaincy after years of service. He held various offices in the town, and was selectman in 1708, 1711, and from 1719 until his decease. He represented Boston in the General Court in 1714-6, 1719, and 1720. He died March 16, 1721. His inventory, real and personal, without lands at the Eastward, or in other counties, amounted to £17,193. He was a member of the Old South Church, second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1701, and ensign in 1708.

**Edward Proctor** (1699) was a tailor, of Boston. He married Elizabeth Cock, Nov. 24, 1691, to whom several children were born in Boston. He was grandfather of Col. Edward, who joined the Artillery Company in 1756. Edward (1699) was clerk of the market in 1700, 1701, and 1704; constable in 1706; assessor in 1728, and tithing-man in 1697, 1704, 1712, and from 1722 to 1727. In 1713, with Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702), he was collector of taxes. May 25, 1735, he gave five pounds in "Goods toward the erection of the new Workhouse." June 5, 1721, the selectmen permitted

[March] 16, Mr Foxcroft preaches, prays for Dr Noyes, who died at 4 P. M. . . . March 20, Monday, Dr Noyes is buried in his New Tomb in the South

Burying place." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., pp. 284, 285.

**Edward Proctor** (1699). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



Mr. Edward Proctor (1699) to erect a bark house near Snow Hill; and Aug. 25, 1731, he was one of a committee from the North Church for liberty to erect a small building fronting on Ship Street.

He resided on Wood Lane (Proctor's Lane), in 1736, where he was permitted to lay a drain from his house to the common sewer, having removed from Fish (North) Street, where he resided in 1711. Sept. 9, 1718, the selectmen granted liberty to Edward Proctor (1699) to build a tomb in the new range of tombs on the southerly side of the North burying-place; he to make the wall next to Hull Street sufficient for a fence. His will was proved Nov. 26, 1751.

**Richard Proctor** (1699), a shopkeeper in Boston, was born in 1652. He was a constable in that town in 1694; surveyor of highways in 1696; clerk of the markets in 1708, and tithing-man in 1706 and 1715. July 22, 1718, Richard Proctor (1699) and Obadiah Proctor (1718) were allowed to dig up the highway, to lay a drain in Queen (Court) Street, and thence in Cornhill (Washington Street) to the sewer. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1711.

Richard Proctor (1699) died Jan. 28, 1719, and his widow, Rachel, died June 11, 1748, aged eighty-eight years. Their remains were interred in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground.

His residence on Queen Street, so near the town pump standing in Cornhill, was probably the reason of his having charge of its repairs in 1709, when he expended £3 6s. upon the pump. He had charge of the same work in March, 1714-5, and expended £6 10s. June 20, 1711, the selectmen signed a lease, giving to Richard Proctor (1699) and John Cookson (1701) the monopoly of sweeping the chimneys. Three years later they were authorized to prosecute persons who swept chimneys contrary to law. In 1715, the partnership was dissolved, Mr. Proctor (1699) having charge of the chimney sweeping within the bounds of the four south military companies (or wards), and Mr. Cookson (1701) of the chimney sweeping within the bounds of the four north companies.

Richard Proctor's (1699) business place was burned in the fire of 1711. On account of his loss, the selectmen granted him, Dec. 20, 1711, the sum of ten pounds. At the previous meeting of the board, Dec. 17, they leased to him the shop which was the watch-house, at £3 10s. per annum.

**Joseph Russell** (1699), of Boston, was born in 1665, and he married, June 5, 1693, Susanna Cheever. She was a daughter of Ezekiel Cheever, the famous school-master. The latter mentioned his grandchild, Ezekiel Russell, in his will.

Joseph Russell (1699) was a constable of Boston in 1693; clerk of the market in 1696, 1697, and 1700; in 1706 was chosen a tithing-man, and was fined for not serving.

Aug. 9, 1704, John Mountfort (1697), Jonathan Mountfort, John Farnum, Timothy Wadsworth (1691), Joseph Russell (1699), John Buchanan (1695), and Edward Proctor (1699) petitioned the selectmen for liberty to sink a well and place a pump, at their own expense, in the highway, "at the southerly side of the house in which Mrs. Elizabeth Mountfort deceased lately dwelt at the parting of the two ways nigh to the North meeting-house in Boston." The petition was granted.

Joseph Russell (1699) died March 13, 1713, aged forty-eight years.

**Richard Proctor** (1699). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Joseph Russell** (1699). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Thomas Sandford** (1699), of Boston, son of Robert (1661) and Elizabeth Sandford, was born in Boston, April 27, 1673. He does not appear to be mentioned on the Boston records, except "Thomas of Robert Sanfford" was christened in the First Church, "4 day 3 mo," 1673.

**Habijah Savage** (1699), apothecary, of Boston, fourth son of Lieut.-Col. Thomas Savage (1665), was born in Boston, Sept. 10, 1674. He was a grandson of Major Thomas Savage (1637). The uncles of Habijah Savage (1699) — brothers of Lieut.-Col. Thomas Savage (1665) — were Benjamin (1682), Ebenezer (1682), Capt. Ephraim (1674), Capt. Habijah (1665), and John (1694). Capt. Habijah Savage, Jr. (1733), was a son of Lieut.-Col. Habijah (1699); and Col. Thomas Savage, Jr. (1693), was a brother of Lieut.-Col. Habijah (1699). The latter married, on the 8th of July, 1703, Hannah (Phillips) Anderson, daughter of Samuel Phillips (1693), bookseller. They had Habijah (1733), Thomas (1739), and Arthur (1738).

Lieut.-Col. Habijah (1699) graduated at Harvard College in 1695. He was an officer of the militia in Boston, captain of a company for several years; became major of the Boston regiment in 1717, and its lieutenant-colonel in 1727. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1701, lieutenant in 1709, and its captain in 1711, 1721, and 1727, continuing a useful member until his decease. After he commanded the last time, — being a field officer of the Boston regiment and in the ranks of the Company, — upon the day of field exercise, April 7, 1729, all the commissioned officers of the Artillery being absent "by illness and other avocations," he was, by hand vote, selected to lead and exercise the Company on that day. He united with the Old South Church, Jan. 16, 1708-9. He served as selectman of Boston from 1715 to 1718, and was a representative of Boston in the General Court in 1717, 1718, and 1732. He was chairman of a committee chosen in town meeting, Sept. 28, 1720, "to consider about promoting of a Spinning School or Schools for the instruction of the children of this town." The committee reported Dec. 27 following, and later the town devoted three hundred pounds to the project. The school was established on Tremont Street, between School and Winter, about where Hamilton Place now is. "Spinning wheels then became the hobby-horses of the public. The females of the town, rich and poor, appeared on the Common with their wheels and vied with each other in the dexterity of using them." He was an auditor of the town treasurer's accounts in 1731, moderator of the town meeting, Sept. 14, 1731, and, May 5, 1731, was one of a committee to draw up instructions for the representatives. He was appointed a special justice of the Court of Common Pleas, Dec. 15, 1732, and a justice of the peace, Dec. 19, 1728; reappointed July 6, 1732.

Lieut.-Col. Habijah Savage (1699) died Sept. 16, 1746, aged seventy-two years.

**John Wharton** (1699), of Boston, was probably a son of Richard, of Boston. He married, Oct. 14, 1698, Sarah Ballentine, who was born in Boston, Sept. 18, 1664. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1704. Col. Daniel Henchman (1712) died Feb. 25, 1761, at the age of seventy-two years. In his will he mentions a John Wharton, "who lived with him."

**Habijah Savage** (1699). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.

The entry on the Company record for 1699 is as follows: —

"April 3<sup>d</sup> 1699. The Artillery Company met and chose the Rev. Mr. Samuel Willard to preach the next election sermon and desired Lt. Col. Elisha Hutchinson [1670], Maj. Penn Townsend [1674], Lt Thomas Hunt [1685], and Ensign Samuel Marshall [1685] to acquaint him with it and desire him to do it. Accepted by him.

"June 5<sup>th</sup> 1699, The Rev. Mr. Samuel Willard preached from 1 Kings ix. 22 "

**Rev. Samuel Willard**,<sup>1</sup> of Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1699. He was a son of Simon, of Cambridge, and was born Jan. 31, 1640. He began to preach at Groton in 1662, was admitted a freeman in 1670, and was ordained July 13, 1664. He married, Aug. 8, 1664, Abigail, daughter of Rev. John Sherman, minister at Watertown. March 31, 1678, he was installed over the Old South Church as successor of Rev. Mr. Thacher, the first minister. He delivered the sermon on Fast Day in 1683, before the General Court, and, on the resignation of Increase Mather as president of Harvard College, he became his successor as vice-president, Sept. 6, 1701, and resigned Aug. 14, 1707. He died on the 12th of September following.

The officers elected were: Samuel Checkley (1678), captain; John 1700-1. Barnard (1677), lieutenant; Zechariah Tuttle (1697), ensign. Thomas Savage (1693) was first sergeant; John Ballentine, Jr. (1694), second sergeant; Samuel Keeling (1699), third sergeant; William Sutton (1695), fourth sergeant; Robert Gibbs (1692), clerk, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

The year opened hopefully and prosperously. Additional free schools were established in Boston and the outlying districts; generous provisions were made for town expenses, and five hundred pounds additional were levied on account of the great number of poor people, reduced to want on account of the eastern war with the Indians, who had come to Boston. In 1700, Boston instructed its representatives to endeavor for the abolition of slavery. Two years later a duty was laid on negroes imported into the province.

Judge Sewall (1679) wrote in his diary: "April 7, 1701. Last Satterday's News was brôt by the Post of my Lords [Bellomont] Interment, March 27; So 46. Guns were ordered to be fired at the Castle and 22. at the Sconce; were fired about 6 — p. m. . . . The Artillery Company gave three Volleys in the middle of the Town when they came out of the field, with regard to my Lord. Col Townsend wears a Wigg to day."

The members recruited in 1700 were: Silence Allen, Benjamin Cushing, Waterhouse Fernly, Thomas Fitch, John Gerrish, David Jesse, Henry Jones, Edmund Knight, Edward Oakes, Jonathan Pollard, Wigglesworth Sweetser, Penn Townsend, Jr., Edward Winslow, and Peter Wyer.

**Silence Allen** (1700), cordwainer, of Boston, believed to have come from Dorchester, was born in 1667, as he testified in 1731 that he was sixty-four years of age.

**Rev. Samuel Willard.** AUTHORITIES: Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Eliot's Biog. Dict.

**Silence Allen** (1700). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> "[1699] June 5. Mr. Willard preaches an

excellent Election sermon. Gov'r dines at Monks. Major Walley [1671] chosen Capt., Capt Byfield [1679] Lieut., Tho. Hutchinson [1694] Ens. Gov'r Bellomont delivers the Badges, saying that He approv'd of the choice." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. I., p. 497.*



He married, Jan. 20, 1692, Esther Wiswall, of Dorchester, who was born Dec. 28, 1669. He was active in town matters, being a clerk of the market in 1698; surveyor of highways in 1702; constable in 1703; assessor in 1715, but declined to serve; tithing-man in 1716 and 1717, and was a sealer of leather in 1700, 1706-13, 1715, 1722-5, 1730, and 1731. In 1724, March 30, the selectmen granted liberty to Mr. Silence Allen (1700) to build tomb No. 28 in the South Burial-Ground. April 19, 1732, he resided on Orange Street.

**Benjamin Cushing** (1700), merchant, of Boston, the youngest son of John and Sarah (Hawke) Cushing, of Scituate, was born Feb. 4, 1679. Mr. Savage says, "Benjamin [1700] traded to Barbadoes, perhaps never married, and is thought not to have left a family." He was a lieutenant in the militia. He gave a power of attorney, dated at Barbadoes in 1702, whence it is inferred he did business there.

#### **Waterhouse Fernly** (1700).

**Thomas Fitch** (1700), merchant, of Boston, son of Thomas and Martha (Fiske) Fitch, was born Feb. 5, 1668-9, in Boston. He married Abiel, daughter of Rev. Samuel Danforth, of Roxbury, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1667. Her mother, Mary (Wilson) Danforth, was the youngest child of Rev. John Wilson, of Boston, who is believed to have preached the first sermon before the Military Company of the Massachusetts in 1638, and who was a brother-in-law of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), the founder of the Company. Mr. Fitch (1700) was very prominent in town affairs, and held many offices during the thirty-six years of his active service. In 1700, he was captain of a company of Boston militia; in 1712, major of a Boston regiment, and subsequently became its lieutenant-colonel and colonel. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1701; ensign in 1703; lieutenant in 1705, and its captain in 1708, 1720, and 1725. He was selectman of Boston from 1703 to 1705 inclusive; representative to the General Court in 1709, 1711, and 1712; councillor from 1715 to 1730 inclusive, and in 1734, and was appointed a special justice of the Superior Court, Jan. 7, 1718-9.

He owned a part of what is now the Common, on Boylston Street. His heirs inherited this property, and added thereto by purchase, so they were the owners of all the north side of Boylston Street. In 1757, they sold the present burial lot to the town, and later, through William Foster, a portion of this land was sold to the town, viz., the present deer park.

From Judge Sewall's (1679) papers, as quoted in the Memorial History of Boston, Vol. II., p. 108, we learn that Gen. Phillips, the Governor of Nova Scotia, was in Boston for a conference in 1719. He arrived on Sunday, Sept. 27, and Col. Fitch (1700), the commander of the Boston regiment, who had orders to turn out his command to greet the visitor, was in church when word was brought to him. He turned inquiringly to Judge Sewall (1679), between prayer and singing. "I said 'No!'" records the judge, and the colonel, "strengthened," kept his seat. The regiment, however, paraded the next day, and was reviewed by the Governor of Nova Scotia. The field-officers entertained him at dinner at the Green Dragon.

Thomas Fitch (1700) united with the Old South Church, Feb. 7, 1691, of which,

**Benjamin Cushing** (1700). AUTHORITIES: Lincoln's Hist. of Hingham; Cushing Genealogy.

**Thomas Fitch** (1700). AUTHORITIES: Hill's Hist. of Old South Church; Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.



as of the Artillery Company, he was for many years a useful member. In 1731, he presented the church with a new set of flagons for the communion table. He died June 23, 1736. His will—in which he gave “£300 to Harvard College, for the education of scholars of good capacities for the work of the ministry”—was proved June 30, 1736. His inventory amounted to more than two thousand pounds. The expense of his funeral was one hundred and sixty-two pounds. He was buried in his tomb, No. 19, in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground,—the tomb now the property of the Pierce family, who descended from Col. Fitch (1700) in the female line.

**John Gerrish** (1700), merchant, of Boston, was a son of Capt. John and Elizabeth (Waldron) Gerrish, of Dover, and grandson of William, the captain of the first train-band in Newbury. His mother, Elizabeth Waldron, was a daughter of Major Richard Waldron, of Dover. Capt. Benjamin Gerrish (1714), of Boston, was a brother of Capt. John (1700), whose son, Capt. John, Jr., joined the Artillery Company in 1718. The family of John, of Dover, was a military family. There were six sons, all of whom held office, being either captain or colonel in the militia.

Capt. John (1700) was born about 1670, and was married in Boston, by Simon Bradstreet, Esq., Governor, to Lydia Watts, on the 19th of April, 1692. He was a tithing-man in 1696 and 1701; elected constable in 1702, but declined. He was a member of a company, with Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699), Capt. John George (1702), and three others, who, March 13, 1709-10, agreed, at their own cost and charge, to build a wharf at the end of King, now State, Street. This was the origin of Long Wharf, which on the map of 1714 (Bonner's) is represented as nearly covered with warehouses. He was in partnership with his brother, under the firm name of John and Joseph Gerrish. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1702, ensign in 1712, and lieutenant in 1714.

**David Jesse** (1700), goldsmith, probably came to Boston from Connecticut. He married, before Aug. 18, 1698, Mary Wilson, of Hartford, and they had five children born in Boston. He left a good estate to his wife in 1708. His name appears but once in the Boston town records. “April 19<sup>th</sup>, 1704, Mr. David Jess [1700] is chosen to serve as constable,” instead of Mr. John Noyes (1698), declined.

**Henry Jones** (1700).

**Edmund Knight** (1700). The date and place of his birth are not known. He married, Aug. 1, 1709, Grace Webb. He was chosen a constable of Boston, March 9, 1701-2, and, March 10, 1718-9, was one of a committee of seven, selected by the town “to consult the common good” and report to the town.

**Edward Oakes** (1700) was a shopkeeper in Boston, according to Mr. Whitman (1810). Mr. Oakes (1700) was a constable in 1702; a tithing-man and member of the Boston militia in 1704; clerk of the markets in 1709 and 1712, and held town office, also, in 1716. He was clerk of the Artillery Company from 1703 to 1706, and third sergeant in 1707.

**John Gerrish** (1700). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Jonathan Pollard** (1700), of Boston, son of William Pollard, innholder, of Boston, and brother of William Pollard (1679), was born in Boston, April 12, 1666, and married Mary Winslow, Dec. 26, 1693. Their first-born was Benjamin (1726). Capt Jonathan (1700) held town office in 1696, 1700, and 1720; was elected constable in 1702, but declined, and was chosen fireward, Feb. 7, 1711-2.

In 1708, the selectmen ordered that from Pollard's Corner, in Brattle Street, through Mr. Belknap's yard into Queen Street, should be called "Hilliers Lane."

July 3, 1721, according to the selectmen's minutes, Capt. Jonathan Pollard (1700) petitioned for a license as an innholder in the house of the late William Sutton (1695), deceased. Capt. Jonathan (1700) was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1714, and its lieutenant in 1716 and 1729.

July 11, 1726, Mary Pollard, doubtless the widow of Jonathan (1700), was granted a license to sell strong drink as an innholder on Brattle Street. Capt. Jonathan (1700) was probably a shopkeeper, also, as March 20, 1727, the selectmen "let to Thomas Clark [1733] tailor, the shop of the town on the south side of the Town Dock formerly occupied by Capt Jonathan Pollard [1700]."

His will of Aug. 9, 1725, mentions his house in Brattle Street.

**Wigglesworth Sweetser** (1700), tailor, of Boston, son of Benjamin and Abigail (Wigglesworth) Sweetser, was born May 28, 1677, at Charlestown. According to the Boston town records, Wigleworth Switser and Ussillah Coles were married by Mr. James Allen, Feb. 2, 1699. He was chosen to town office, March 14, 1714-5, and served as tithing-man in 1705 and constable in 1716. He was chosen clerk of the market in 1726, but "refused to serve." Mr. Whitman (1810) says his tailor shop was on King Street, and administration on his estate was granted in 1745. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1717.

**Penn Townsend, Jr.** (1700), of Boston, son of Col. Penn Townsend (1674), of Boston, was born July 31, 1674, and graduated at Harvard College in 1693. He was a captain of a military company in Boston; afterward became colonel, and held office in the town in 1703. He was a young man of excellent ability, whose circumstances and prospects were of the best, but was cut down so young that his own plans of life and his family's hopes were suddenly crushed. According to the Leverett Genealogy, "He went to England, and was accidentally drowned in the Thames in 1706."<sup>1</sup>

**Edward Winslow** (1700), goldsmith, of Boston, a son of Edward Winslow, of Boston (who was born at Plymouth about 1634), and grandson of John Winslow, of Plymouth (who came over in the "Fortune" in 1623), was born Nov. 1, 1669. Edward,

**Jonathan Pollard** (1700). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

"[1725] 7<sup>th</sup> day, July 31. . . . This morning Jonathan Pollard, Capt of the South-Company dyes, *Ætis* 60." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 363.

**Wigglesworth Sweetser** (1700). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Penn Townsend, Jr.** (1700). AUTHORITIES: *Savage's Gen. Dict.*; Boston Records.

**Edward Winslow** (1700). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 1863; *Hill's Hist. of Old South Church*.

Col. Edward Winslow (1700) and Hannah had a daughter, Elizabeth Pemberton, who was married to Richard Clarke, and their daughter married John Singleton Copley, the distinguished artist.

<sup>1</sup> "[1706] May 2. Mr. Penn Townsend jun. dies about 10 M. May 3 is buried: Bearers Mr Nathaniel Williams, Major Adam Winthrop, Capt Oliver Noyes, Capt Jno. Ballentine jun. Mr. Habijah Savage, Mr. Elisha Cooke; all scholars." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 161.

Sr., married (1) Sarah Hilton and (2) Elizabeth, second daughter of Edward Hutchinson (1638). Edward (1700) was the eldest child by this second marriage. John Winslow (162), son of John Winslow, of Boston, and grandson of John, of Plymouth, was a cousin of Col. Edward (1700). Edward (1700) married Hannah, daughter of Rev. Joshua Moody. He served as constable of Boston in 1699; fireward for several years; tithing-man in 1703; surveyor in 1705; overseer of the poor in 1711 and 1712, and selectman in 1714, declining a re-election in 1715. He was a captain of militia; major of the Boston regiment in April, 1729, and, May 30, 1733, became its colonel, with Jacob Wendell (1733) as lieutenant-colonel and Samuel Sewall (1718) as major. He was also second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1702, lieutenant in 1711, and its captain in 1714 and 1729. On the 5th of March, 1692, Edward Winslow and his wife, Hannah, united with the Old South Church. He became sheriff of Suffolk County, Dec. 12, 1728, and served until Oct. 20, 1743, when he was appointed judge of the inferior Court of Common Pleas, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of William Dudley, Aug. 10, 1743, which position he retained until his decease in December, 1753, at the age of eighty-five years.

**Peter Wyer** (1700), of Boston, son of Peter and Elizabeth Weare, of Boston, was born Nov. 28, 1682. In the Boston records his name is variously spelled, viz., Weare, Wear, Wyer, Ware, Wier, Wire, Wirer, etc.

Peter Weare (1700) held a town office in 1695 and 1696; was chosen constable in 1706, but he declined to accept the office, and served as fence-viewer in 1699, 1700-4, 1710-3, and 1718.

May 12, 1702, Peter Wire (Weare) (1700) was chosen constable, but, pleading his being sworn to the office of fence-viewer, he was excused by the town, and Mr. Edward Oakes (1700) was chosen in his place.

In 1713, Daniel Oliver reported to the selectmen of Boston that he had sold the old house then standing on John Matthews's land to Peter Wear (1700) for three pounds, to be paid in work.

He died Dec. 24, 1722.

In the book of records of the Artillery Company is given the following revision of the By-Laws of 1657, viz.:—

"Orders made and agreed upon by the Artillery Company in Boston, September 2d, 1700.

"Voted, *nemine contradicente*.

"Whereas the Ancient and Honorable Company of the Artillery of the Massachusetts have had several powers and privileges for their encouragement granted by several General Courts, under which they continued long a nursery for training up soldiers in Military discipline capable for, and that have been improved in service for the King and Country, which company of later years has been under some decays, which, if not timely remedied, may be of ill consequence: We, therefore, the successors of the ancient

**Peter Wyer** (1700). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

"Aug 7. 1707 Peter Weare set up the Stone Post to shew a Mile from the Town-House ends."  
— *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 193.

"[1722] Tuesday, Dec. 25. . . . Visited my old

friend and Carpenter, Peter Weare, but found him gone to h. He expired about one a-clock in the Morning. He was quiet, minded his own business, eat his own Bread, was *antiquis moribus, prisca fide*, about 73 years old."— *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 316.



members and first beginners of said Company, have revised our former grants and orders, and considered what thereof are not at present so proper for us, and what may be further done for encouragement of said Company, have drawn from the whole what we are of opinion may suit our present circumstances and humbly offer the same for further confirmation and allowance.

*“Imprimis.* That the successors of Robert Keayne, Merchant, Nathaniel Duncan, Merchant, Robert Sedgwick, Gentleman, and William Spencer, Merchant, and such as are by them admitted into the Artillery Company, are declared and allowed to be the present members of said Company, and such as from time to time they shall admit, shall enjoy the privileges and grants that have been, or that may be given and allowed to them, and as they have been, so shall continue to be called The Military Company of the Massachusetts.

“2ly. That the greater number of them upon the usual day of Election of Officers shall have liberty to choose their Captain, Lieutenant and Ensign, and other Officers; the three chief officers to be allowed by the Governor, or in his absence the Lieutenant Governor for the time being.

“3ly. That the said Company, or major part of them, have liberty and power to make orders for the better managing their Military affairs, which shall be of force when allowed by the Governor, &c.

“4ly. That they may appoint an officer to levy any fines they shall impose upon one of their own Company for breach of any such orders, so the same exceed not Twenty shillings for one offence.

“5ly. That said Company shall have liberty to assemble themselves for their Military exercise in any neighboring town at their discretion.

“6ly. It is further ordered by the Company, if any be chosen to any office in the Company, and have not before borne a like or higher office in this Company, and shall refuse to hold the office he is chosen unto, he so far slighting the Company, shall pay what arrears he is behind to the Company, and have his name put out of the Company Roll, and no longer be acknowledged a member of the Company.

“7ly. It is further ordered, that if any shall neglect to appear in their arms four training days together and not give an account of it to the satisfaction of the Company, he shall pay to the Company what is due for fines, and have his name put out of the Roll, and no more be accounted a member of the Company.

“8ly. That the Clerk shall every training day bring the Book of the Company's orders into the field, that it may be there, not only to call over the Company, but to enter any that are admitted, and to enter any Orders that shall be made.

“9ly. That the Clerk without any further order shall have full power to distrain for any fines due to the Company that shall be unpaid one month after they are due.

“10ly. It is further ordered, that the Clerk's accounts yearly, shall after the day of Election, and before the next training day in September, be audited by those that were the Commission officers the year before, with the Captain and Clerk new chosen; that the accounts may be delivered into the new Clerk's hands.

“11ly. That a perfect List shall be taken of the Members of the Company, and being perfected, shall be called over every training day.

“12ly. That hereafter the training days shall be annually, the Election day being the first Monday in June, the first Monday in September, the afternoon of the first Monday in October, the afternoon of the first Monday in April, and the whole day on the first Monday in May.



"13ly. That the Drummers beat in season each training day, and be at the place of parade the whole days at eight of the clock in the morning, and on the half days at one, on the penalty of two shillings sixpence fine, to be paid to the Clerk for the use of the Company, and the Sergeants to appear at the place of parade, before nine of the clock on the whole days, and by two on the half days, on the penalty of one shilling to be paid as aforesaid; and every soldier that appears not at the place of parade, ready to be drawn up by nine in the morning on the whole days, and by two on the half days, shall pay sixpence, unless his excuse be allowed by the Company.

"14ly. That every Soldier belonging to the Company, not under obligation to any of the Companies of Militia in Boston, shall for every day he omits, or neglects, to appear in arms in said Company, pay one shilling fine, and the officers of the other Companies in Boston, that do, or may belong to this Company, shall be liable to the like fine.

"15ly. It is further agreed, not only by former grants, but with the consent of the several Commanders of the Militia of Boston, that out of the several Companies of the town of Boston, there may be listed *forty Soldiers*, and no more, belonging to said Companies, which shall be excused from any fine or penalty on common trainings; always provided they appear on each of the Artillery training days, or for default to pay six shillings fine for the use of the Company.

"16ly. That every one that is admitted into the Company, at his listing, shall not pay less than one shilling entrance money to the Clerk, towards bearing the charge of the Company.

"17ly. That if any of the *forty persons* that shall be accepted by the Company, and are excused from common trainings, be chosen into any place that excuses them from training in the other Military Companies, they shall then, if they continue in the Artillery Company, be no longer under the penalty of six shillings for non-appearance, but liable to the fine of one shilling, as others under the like circumstances, and that others may be admitted in their room to make up the number of forty, as aforesaid.

"18ly. That upon reasonable request of any member of the Company, they may have their dismissal granted.

"19ly. That such as now, or hereafter, shall be accounted members of the said Company, shall subscribe to these Articles, the further to oblige themselves to the Clerk's power, *ex officio*, of distraining for fines, that any shall neglect or refuse to pay."

Following the above, in the records of the Artillery Company, are lists of those Artillery soldiers that were under the fine of twelve pence for non-appearance, and of the militia soldiers who were under fine of sixpence for non-appearance, all of whom had subscribed to the above articles. These lists were made out from 1705 to—probably — 1773, and will be given under their respective dates.

The record of the Artillery Company for the year 1700 is as follows:—

"April 1<sup>st</sup> 1700. The Artillery Company met and chose the Rev'd Mr Benjamin Wadsworth to preach the next Election sermon and desired Lt. Col. Penn Townsend [1674], Maj. John Walley [1671], Capt. Nathaniel Byfield [1679], and Mr. Thomas Hutchinson [1694] to acquaint him with it and to desire it of him. Accepted by him.

"June 3<sup>d</sup> 1700. Being the anniversary Election day, the Rev'd Mr. Benjamin Wadsworth preached from Isaiah iii. 2<sup>d</sup>."

**Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth**, of Boston, was the preacher of the election sermon to the Artillery Company in 1700. He was a son of Capt. Samuel and Abigail Wadsworth, of Milton; was born in 1669. His father, Samuel, was killed by the Indians in April, 1676, when leading his company to the relief of Sudbury.<sup>1</sup> Timothy Wadsworth (1691), of Boston, was a brother of Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth. The latter graduated at Harvard College in 1690, and devoted three years to the study of theology. He was invited, in November, 1693, to become assistant teacher in the First Church in Boston. He accepted, and continued in this office until Sept. 8, 1696, when he became pastor of the church.

After the death of President Leverett (1704), in 1724, there was difficulty in obtaining a suitable successor; and in June, 1725, Mr. Wadsworth was invited to the vacant chair. He finally concluded to accept, but continued to preach "in his turn" to his former parish, even after his removal to Cambridge. He was inaugurated president of Harvard College, July 7, 1725. Not long after he entered upon his duties his health became impaired, and during the rest of his life was an invalid. He died March 12, 1737, in the sixty-eighth year of his age and twelfth of his presidency. He delivered a sermon on the death of President Leverett (1704), which was printed.

---

The officers elected were: Samuel Sewall (1679), captain; Thomas Hutchinson (1694), lieutenant; Thomas Savage (1693), ensign. Thomas Fitch (1700) was first sergeant; Oliver Noyes (1699), second sergeant; Habijah Savage (1699), third sergeant; Charles Chauncy (1699), fourth sergeant; Robert Gibbs (1692), clerk, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

The following extracts concerning the trainings during the year 1701-2 are from the diary of the commander, Judge Sewall (1679):—

"Monday, June 2, 1701. Mr. Pemberton preaches the Artillery Sermon, from Luke 3-14. Dine at Monk's. Because of the Rain and Mist, this day, the election is made upon the Town-house, Sewall, Capt.; Tho. Hutchinson Lieut.; Tho. Savage Jun. Ensign; Tho. Fitch, 1 Sergt; Oliver Noyes, 2; Hab. Savage, 3; Charles Chauncey 4. Call'd down the Council out of the Chamber, set their chairs below; Col. Pynchon gave the Staves and Ensign. I said was surpris'd to see they had mistaken a sorry pruning Hook for a Military Spear; but paid such a deference to the Company that would rather run the venture of exposing my own inability, than give any occasion to suspect I slighted their call. To Sergt Fitch, Doubted not but if I could give any thing tolerable words of command, he would mend them in a vigorous and speedy performance; was glad of so good a Hand to me and the Company (Mr. Noyes abroad in the Gally). To Hab. S. The savages are souldiers *ex Traduce*; in imitation of his honr'd father, Uncle, and Grandfather, hop'd for worthy performances from him. To Ch Chauncy, Had such a honor for your Grandfather and father, that was glad was join'd with me in this Relation. Drew out before Mr. Ushers, gave 3 Volleys. Drew into the Town-house

**Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth.** AUTHORITIES: Funeral sermons by Sewall, Appleton, and Wigglesworth, on Mr. Wadsworth's death; Pierce's and Quincy's Hists. of Harv. Coll.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Emerson's Hist. of First Church; Teele's Hist. of Milton.

<sup>1</sup> The spot on which he fell is marked by a memorial which his son, Rev. Benjamin, in after life caused to be erected.



*Sam Sewall.*





again ; sent Sergt Chauncy for Mr. Pemberton, who said he was glad to see the staff in my hand ; pray'd with us. Had the company to my house, treated them with bread, Beer, wine Sillibub. — They order'd Capt Checkly and me to Thank Mr. Pemberton for his Sermon, which we did on Tuesday, desiring a copy. . . .

"Monday Oct. 6, 1701. Very pleasant fair Wether ; Artillery trains in the Afternoon. March with the Company to the Elms ; Go to prayer, March down and Shoot at a Mark Mr. Cushing, I think was the first that hit it, Mr. Gerrish twice, Mr. Fitch, Chauncy, and the Ensign of the Officers. By far most missed, as I did for the first. Were much contented with the exercise. Led them to the Trees agen, perform'd some facings and Doublings. Drew them together ; propounded questions about the Colours ; twas voted very freely and fully. I inform'd the Company I was told the Company's Halberds &c were borrowed ; I understood the Leading staff was so, and therefore ask'd their Acceptance of a Half-Pike, which they very kindly did ; I deliver'd it to Mr. Gibbs for their use.

"They would needs give me a volley, in token of their Respect on this occasion. The Pike will, I suppose, stand me in forty shillings, being headed and shod with Silver : Has this Motto fairly engraven : *'Agmen Massachusettense est in tutelam Sponsae Agni Uxoris, 1701.'*"<sup>1</sup>

"The Lord help us to answer the Profession. Were treated by the Ensign in a fair chamber. Gave a very handsome Volley at Lodging the Colours. The Training in Sept was a very fair day, so was this. . . .

"May 4, 1702. Artillery Company Trains. In the Afternoon went into the Comon ; Major Hobby, Will. Dumer, Ned Hutchinson, Oliver Williams and another, Listed. Major Hobby was introduced by Col Hutchinson, He and I vouch'd for him. Mr. Elisha Cooke Jun mov'd to be dismiss'd, which when he had paid his Arrears, was granted by Vote with a Hiss. Went to Pollards to avoid the Rain. March'd out and shot at a Mark. Before they began I told the Comp<sup>any</sup> that I had call'd them to shoot in October, and had not my self hit the Butt ; I was willing to bring myself under a small Fine, such as a single Justice might set ; and it should be to him who made the best Shott. Mr. Gerrish and Ensign John Noyes were the competitors, At Pollards, by a Brass Rule, Ens. Noyes's Shot was found to be two inches and a half nearer the centre than Mr. John Gerrishes ; His was on the right side of the Neck ; Ensign Noyes's on the Bowels a little on the Left and but very little more than G. on the Right of the middle Line. When I had heard what could be heard on both sides, I Judg'd for Ensign Noyes, and gave him a Silver cup I had provided engraven — May 4. 1702. *Euphratem Siccare potes.* Telling him, it was in Token of the value I had for that virtue in others, which I myself could not attain to. March'd into Comon and concluded with Pray'r. Pray'd in the morn on the Townhouse, Praying for the Churches by Name. After Diner, We Sung four staves of the 68<sup>th</sup> PS. viz, first Part and the 9 and 10<sup>th</sup> verses of the 2<sup>d</sup> with regard to the plentifull Rain on the 1 and 2 May and now, after great Drought ; Mr. Dering mov'd we might sing. Some objected against our singing so much ; I answer'd, 'Twas but *Four Deep.* Were treated at Major Savages."

According to the Boston town records, William Pollard, father of Jonathan (1700), was licensed to keep a house of entertainment in Boston. After his decease, his widow, Ann Pollard, was thus licensed. From her deposition, given Dec. 11, 1711, we

<sup>1</sup> Though the half-pike, with its staff, above mentioned, has disappeared, yet the original silver ferrule is still in the archives of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.

learn that William Pollard occupied and improved a certain parcel of land at the bottom of the Common, on the westerly side, with the sea southwest; that the owner (Pepys) built a house thereon which William Pollard occupied for fourteen years, and that William Blackstone used frequently to resort thereto.<sup>1</sup> It was to this house, probably, that the Company went to avoid the rain. Major Savage's place where they were treated was probably his distillery.

The first book printed in this country on military discipline was written by Nicholas Boone, of Boston. He was a celebrated bookseller, and sold his wares at "the sign of the Bible, in Cornhill, over against the Old Meeting House." He was also the first publisher of the *Boston News-Letter*, the first newspaper printed in the colonies. It is not generally known that Mr. Boone ever appeared before the public as an author. The title of the book is: "Military Discipline; the Complete Souldier, and Expert Artilleryman, &c. &c. To which is added the Military Laws of the Province of Massachusetts Bay. 16mo. Boston: Printed for and sold by Nicholas Boone, over against the Old Church. 1701."

Samuel Clough (1694) published, this year, the first number of his "New England Almanack." It was printed by B. Green and J. Allen (1694), and was sold by Samuel Phillips (1693) "at the Brick Shop." A new departure was made by the author, in noting upon the calendar pages, "Brief observations of the most noted things happening in Boston since its first settlement."

The members recruited in 1701 were: Francis Clarke, John Cookson, George Driver, Thomas Foster, Thomas Godfrey, Christopher Myngs, Nathaniel Oliver, Jr., Antipas Torrey.

**Francis Clarke** (1701), of Boston, was elected a constable of Boston in 1702, but declined. He served the town as overseer of the poor in 1706 and 1707, and as selectman in 1712 and 1713. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1704.

The command of Brig.-Gen. Hill, destined for the capture of Canada in 1711, tarried on its way from England, and went into camp on Noddles Island. There was a scarcity of provisions. The general and Admiral Walker applied to Capt. Belcher, the father of Gov. Belcher, to aid them in procuring the necessary rations. He declined. Application was then made to Andrew Faneuil, who undertook the task, but was obstructed by the merchants; whereupon the Governor issued an "order for searching for provisions," and William Clarke (1703) and Francis Clarke (1702) were selected as "searchers." Four weeks after, July 30, the expedition left Boston only to meet a terrific storm, which wrecked nine of its ships, and occasioned the loss of nine hundred men.

**John Cookson** (1701), gunsmith, of Boston, was elected constable in 1705, but declined, and served as tithing-man in 1706, 1715, and 1718. June 20, 1711, the selectmen signed a lease to Messrs. Richard Proctor (1699) and John Cookson (1701), "of the liberty and benefit of sweeping Chimnyes for 7 year from June 1<sup>st</sup> Cur't." In 1714, the above-named contractors were authorized to prosecute those who swept chimneys contrary to town by-laws. On the 24th of January, 1715-6, the business seems to

**Francis Clarke** (1701). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Province Laws, Vol. VII.

**John Cookson** (1701). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> Suffolk Deeds, Liber 26, folio 84.

have been divided, and the partnership dissolved. On that day, the selectmen approved of Mr. Cookson's (1701) negro man, named Tobie, to be employed by him for sweeping chimneys. Also, "Messrs Richard Proctor [1699] & John Cookson [1701] being present together with the Selectmen have agreed that the s'd Mr. Cooksons [1701] care for the sweeping of chimnies be limited to the bounds of the four North Military Companies as they are now bounded." The same liberty "to sweep chimnies by his negro man Tobey" was again granted John Cookson (1701) on the 31st of October, 1720. He continued in this business, certainly until Sept. 12, 1733, when he made complaint to the selectmen of a chimney in an old house "behind the Three Crowns in Fish Street." On the 29th of June, 1724, liberty was granted him to build a tomb in the "North Burying Place," *i. e.*, Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

He was clerk of the Artillery Company from 1722 to 1726.

#### **George Driver (1701).**

**Thomas Foster** (1701), brazier, of Boston, was the father of Thomas Foster (1722). He was constable of Boston in 1704. According to the sexton's bill, Thomas Foster (1701) was buried May 18, 1706.

**Thomas Godfrey** (1701) was a constable in Boston in 1704-5, clerk of the market in 1711, and a tithing-man in 1712. Dec. 12, 1716, he and Thomas Phillips (1711) were sureties for Thomas Jackler, a newly admitted inhabitant of Boston.

**Christopher Myngs** (1701) was of Boston. According to the Boston records, a son, Christopher, was born to Christopher and Joyce Mynges, Feb. 11, 1699.

Christopher (1701) was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1702.

**Nathaniel Oliver, Jr.** (1701), of Boston and Chelsea, son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Brattle) Oliver, and grandson of Peter Oliver (1643), was baptized Sept. 28, 1684. His mother was a daughter of Capt. Thomas Brattle (1675). His brother, Brattle, joined the Artillery Company in 1709.

He married, Nov. 30, 1709, Martha Hobbs, who, it would appear, was in some way connected with the family of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637). She inherited from Col. Paige and his wife, Anne Keayne, the Keayne estate at Rumney Marsh. She was executrix of that will, with Joseph Dudley (1677) and Col. Nathaniel Thomas as "overseers." In the will, the executrix is solemnly counselled "that she Match into a good Family and with one that feareth God, that so neither she and so fair an Estate be not thrown away in her match."

He lived on Milk Street, in Boston, near the junction of the present Kilby Street, and in his later days had also a home in Chelsea, on the Keayne farm. He graduated at Harvard College in 1701. He was associated in business with his brother, Peter Oliver. After his removal to Chelsea, about 1719, he was engaged in preparing young men for Harvard College. He was for many years a justice of the peace, and was the first town clerk of Chelsea, when that town was set off from Boston, in 1738.

**Nathaniel Oliver, Jr.** (1701.) AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1865; Boston

Records; Descendants of Capt. Thomas Brattle, by Edward D. Harris.



Nathaniel Oliver (1701) was a captain in the militia of Boston, fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1703, and its lieutenant in 1717. He died at Chelsea, Jan. 1, 1769.

### Antipas Torrey (1701).

The record of the Artillery Company for 1701 is as follows:—

"April 7<sup>th</sup> 1701. The Artillery Company met and chose the Rev'd Mr. Ebenezer Pemberton to preach the next Election Sermon, and desired the Commissioned officers to request him to preach. Accepted by him.

"June 2<sup>d</sup> 1701. Being the anniversary Election day, the Rev'd Mr Ebenezer Pemberton preached from Luke iii. 14.

"October 6 1701. Voted by the Artillery Company, that every Person belonging to this Company shall pay two shillings for the paying for Colours, the residue of the money to be for the use of the Company.

"Captain Samuel Sewall presented this Company, this day, with a Half Pike, with a Silver head and ferril at the butt end, with this Inscription on the ferrel, viz: *Agmen Massachusetensae est in tutelam Sponsae Agni Uxoris*, 1701."

**Rev. Ebenezer Pemberton**, the preacher before the Company in 1701, son of James Pemberton, of Newbury, was born Feb. 3, 1672, graduated at Harvard College in 1691, and was ordained as colleague by the Old South, in Boston, Aug. 28, 1700. Here he continued to labor, at first as colleague with Rev. Samuel Willard, who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1676, during the remainder of his life. He preached his last sermon Jan. 20, 1717. Mr. Pemberton died Feb. 23, 1717, aged forty-five years.

June 12, 1701, Mr. Pemberton married Mrs. Mary Clark, who afterward was married to Henry Lloyd (1703), of Lloyd's Neck, R. I. He delivered a sermon on the death of Hon. John Walley (1671), which was printed. Dr. Sewall said in his sermon, occasioned by the death of Mr. Pemberton, he "is justly celebrated as a great scholar, an excellent divine, and a good Christian."

His brother, Benjamin, joined the Artillery Company in 1707.



The officers elected were: Charles Hobby (1702), captain; **1702-3.** Zechariah Tuttle (1697), lieutenant; Adam Winthrop (1694), ensign. William Keen (1692) was first sergeant; Edward Winslow (1700), second sergeant; John Gerrish (1700), third sergeant; Edward Hutchinson (1702), fourth sergeant; Christopher Myngs (1701), clerk, and Samuel Marion (1691), drummer.

Richard, Earl of Bellomont, who as Governor of the colony arrived in Boston May 26, 1699, went to New York in May, 1700, and died the 5th of March following. Lieut.-Gov. William Stoughton, son of Lieut.-Col. Israel Stoughton (1637), of Dorchester, became acting Governor in May, 1700, and held that office until his decease, July 7, 1701. For nearly a year, the duties of Governor devolved upon the council. June 11, 1702, Joseph Dudley (1677) arrived in Boston on the frigate "Centurion,"

**Rev. Ebenezer Pemberton.** AUTHORITIES: Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Hill's Hist. Sewall's and Colman's sermons on his decease; of Old South Church.





Charles Hobbs



bearing a commission as Governor, dated April 1, 1702. He held that office until Feb. 4, 1714-5, when the council again assumed control, the Governor not having been reappointed by the new King. He had not forgotten the revolution of 1689, when the Andros government fell, nor that dreary imprisonment consequent upon his adhesion to the fortunes of the fallen Governor. He first rejected as members of his council those who were prominent in the revolution and opposed to Andros's government. Among these that were rejected were leading members of the Artillery Company.

In 1702, Queen Anne declared war against France, and very soon hostilities began between the people of New England and the Indians and French in Canada. The fortifications were examined and repaired, and the town prepared for defence. "Thirty hundred weight of bullets, and five thousand flints were ordered to be forthwith provided for a town stock; and Mr. Gyles Dyer [1680], Mr. Richard Draper, and Mr. Robert Gibbs [1692] were deputed to provide them."

The members recruited in 1702 were: Adino Bulfinch, Timothy Clarke, William Dummer, Seth Dwight, Calvin Galpine, John George, Charles Hobby, Edward Hutchinson, William Keen, Edward Lyde, Edward Martyn, John Mico, Thomas Newton, John Nichols, Thomas Palmer, Lovet Sanders, Benjamin Simpson, Thomas Smith, John Soames, Isaac Spencer, Simeon Stoddard, Jr., Oliver Williams.

**Adino Bulfinch** (1702), sail-maker, of Boston, came from England in 1680. He became a merchant, and, at his decease, left a valuable estate. He was surveyor of highways of Boston in 1700, 1708, 1709, and 1711. In 1708, the selectmen ordered that "the way leading from Brook's corner in Marshall's Lane passing by Mr. Bulfinchs to Scottow Alley, should be called Creek Lane," since called Creek Square.

Capt. Bulfinch (1702) was identified with the militia of Boston, and became a captain. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1705, and its ensign in 1715.

He was the ancestor of Thomas Bulfinch, of Boston, 1722, — a very eminent physician, — and of Charles, of Boston, 1786, the architect of the State House, City Hall, and General Hospital, who also greatly enlarged Faneuil Hall, and, on application by President Munroe, superintended the rebuilding of the Capitol of the United States, when burned by the British in 1814.

In 1720, the South burying-place was enlarged by the extension of it towards the Common, or training-field. Fifteen tombs were built the next year, one of which was assigned to Adino Bulfinch (1702). He died in 1746, and his will, in which he speaks of his advanced age, was proved June 17, 1746.

**Timothy Clarke** (1702), of Cambridge and Boston, was by profession a mariner. An obituary, published in the *Weekly Journal*, June 21, 1737, eight days after the death of Capt. Timothy (1702), describes him as a "son of the exemplary, pious and wellknown Mr Jonas Clarke, Ruling Elder of the Church at Cambridge, where he was born in 1657. He followed the sea till he was near forty years of age; when, settling on shore, he was successively employed by this town in the various offices of Assessor, Selectman, Over-

**Adino Bulfinch** (1702). AUTHORITIES: King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman; Drake's Hist. of Boston, pp. 663, 664; Boston Records.

**Timothy Clarke** (1702). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge; Drake's Hist. of Boston; Province Laws, Vol. VII., 1692-1702.

seer of the Poor, &c, and by the Government as Captain of our south and north batteries, overseer of the building of Castle William, with Col. Romer, director and overseer of the fortifications on the Neck, and of the building our Light-house, and as a Justice of the Peace. He had likewise served as a member of the Hon. House of Representatives in the time of the Non-resident Act; and he discharged the duty of every employment with singular wisdom, diligence and fidelity; and was esteemed among us as a pattern of every grace and virtue, a true and sincere lover of his country, and who took a singular pleasure in being useful to all about him."

Capt. Clarke (1702) held many offices in the town of Boston, and served on many special committees appointed for various purposes. He was a surveyor of highways in 1699 and 1704; assessor in 1706 and 1711; collector of rates in 1712 and 1713; moderator of town meeting in 1707; overseer of the poor from 1715 to 1732 inclusive; selectman in 1700-7, 1709, and 1710, and was representative to the General Court in 1700. His name first appears on the town records of Boston, March 13, 1692-3, when he was elected constable of the town.

As early as 1697-8 he was identified with the town's defence. May 4, 1698, the town voted that "any two of the Committee, namely, Col. Elisha Hutchinson [1670] Capt Samson Stoddard, and Capt Timo Clark [1702] shall have power to draw of the 500<sup>l</sup> voted by the town for the fortifications." In 1704, with four members of the Artillery Company, he was appointed a committee to review and advise about the repairs of the fortifications of the town; in 1709, he was one of a committee to repair the platforms and carriages at the South Battery; in 1711, he, with four others, was chosen to make a line of defence across the Neck, and plant "a convenient number of Great guns in said line of defence"; in 1718, he, with others, was empowered to repair the North Battery, and to consider the advisability of erecting a battery at the end of Long Wharf, and in 1721, he, with others, was authorized to make thorough repairs of the North and South batteries. The powder owned by the town was for a long time in his care. April 28, 1701, it was ordered by the selectmen that Capt. Clarke (1702) be allowed four pounds sixteen shillings, for thirty-two days' service as representative.

King William III. died March 8, 1701-2, and Anne, daughter of King James II., was proclaimed Queen. May 28, 1702, of that year, the news reached Boston, and the council ordered a salute of twenty-one guns to be fired. The order of the council was directed to Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702), and provided that twenty-one pieces of ordnance should be discharged from the fort under his command. March 9, 1701-2, according to the Boston town records, "Capt Timothy Clark is chosen Cannoneer."

May 28, 1717, Gov. Shute issued the following order:—

"To Capt. Clarke. This being his Majesties Birth Day, you are hereby required to discharge the Guns upon the Batery's under your command, after you hear the Cannons at the Castle are Discharged.

" (Signed)      SAML L SHUTE."

He resided on what is now Summer Street, Boston. In 1708, the selectmen ordered that "the Street Leading Easterly from Doctor Okes his Corner in Newbery [Washington] Street passing by the dwelling House of Capt Timo Clark, extending to ye Sea," should be known as Summer Street. He was one of the founders of Brattle Street Church. He died June 13, 1737, aged eighty years.

He was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1706.



**William Dummer** (1702), of Boston, son of Capt. Jeremiah Dummer (1671), was born in Boston in 1677, and married, April 26, 1714, Catharine, born Jan. 5, 1690, a daughter of Gov. Joseph Dudley (1677). He was a constable of the town of Boston in 1713. The next that we know of him, he was in Plymouth, England, holding an office there as one of the commissioners for the Massachusetts colony, when, in 1716, he was appointed through the interest of Sir William Ashurst to be lieutenant-governor of the Bay colony. He was probably appointed to this office at the time — June 15, 1716 — that Samuel Shute was appointed Governor. Lieut.-Gov. Dummer (1702) held the office until Gov. Shute departed from Boston, Jan. 1, 1722-3, when the former became acting Governor, and served until the arrival of Gov. William Burnet, July 13, 1728. Gov. Burnet died in Boston, Sept. 7, 1729, when Lieut.-Gov. Dummer (1702) succeeded to the office of Governor, and Sept. 10 was sworn in as commander-in-chief. He held the office until April 14, 1730, when he was succeeded by Hon. William Tailler (1712) as lieutenant-governor. William Dummer (1702) is recorded in the Massachusetts Civil List, 1630-1774, as councillor in 1717-20, 1722, and 1738-9.

In 1720, the court reduced the annual grant from fifty pounds to thirty-five pounds. "Mr. Dummer had so much spirit, that he enclosed the vote in a letter to the speaker, acquainting him that 'having the honor to bear the King's Commission for Lieutenant-Governor of the Province, and having been annually more than £50 out of pocket in that service, he did not think it for his honor to accept of their grant.'"

After the departure of Gov. Shute, Lieut.-Gov. Dummer (1702), "having spent some time in England, knowing what conduct would be approved there, and well acquainted with the tempers of his countrymen, very prudently aimed rather at an easy administration than at anything great and striking — acting in the most common affairs by advice of council."

Mr. Eliot, in his Biographical Dictionary, says of him, "He was a friend to the Dudley family and firmly supported the administration of Gov. Shute. Hence he was not a favorite of the popular party; nor of those who promoted private banks, but was highly respected by all parties when their prejudices did not operate. He maintained a most respectable character for virtue and talents, especially during his administration as the chief magistrate. Douglass always styles it 'the wise administration of Mr. Dummer [1702].' He was a man of such correct judgments and steady habits, such a firm and temperate conduct when he supposed himself right, that the vessel of state was secure though exposed to the dangers of tempestuous sea."

In 1725, a favorable treaty with the eastern Indians, — "his pacific measures and accommodation or suspension of some of the controverted points," — and his favoring a synod of the clergy, which, having been laid aside several years, had reduced their influence, rendered him quite popular at home. This last project of a synod, which the acting Governor favored, brought upon him the displeasure of episcopacy and royalty. The gathering of the synod was arrested through church representations; the Bishop of London took a hand in the fray, and Lieut.-Gov. Dummer (1702) was reprimanded for not sending to the home government the "account of such a remarkable transaction."

In June, 1738 and 1739, he was invited, with other citizens of the town, to accompany the selectmen in visiting the several public schools. He discharged that duty, and his name then disappears from the Boston town records.

**William Dummer** (1702). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Obituary in Boston newspapers, Oct. 26, 1761.

From this time (1739) until his decease, he resided in Newbury, Mass., having retired to his ancestral home, "living for the most part in retirement, but always dispensing a generous hospitality, and indulging his generous instincts by benefactions, of which the foundation of the Byfield (Dummer) academy was the most important and lasting." He died Oct. 10, 1761. He never sustained any office in the militia, but was captain of the Artillery Company in 1719, while lieutenant-governor. He bequeathed two hundred pounds to Harvard College, also the income of one hundred pounds sterling to the two Hollis professors in Harvard College, to be equally divided between them, and fifty pounds sterling to be laid out in books for the library.

Dummer Academy (Byfield parish), Newbury, is his best monument. He gave his dwelling-house and farm in Newbury to three trustees, the rents and profits of which were to be employed in erecting a school-house and in supporting a master. A building was erected in 1762, and the school opened. For the first seventy years of this school, its yearly average of students was twenty-one. Its roll of students, as they have been regarded, useful and influential, in the varied walks of life, is one of which any institution of learning might well be proud. Dummer Academy is still a flourishing institution.

"His house in Boston was in Nassau Street, afterward owned by Mr. Powell." He was a member of Hollis Street Church, and one of the contributors to build its meeting-house. Dr. Byles, pastor of that church from its foundation, in 1732, until 1777, preached the funeral sermon, which was printed. The following is from the appendix of the sermon:—<sup>1</sup>

"Boston, Oct 10th 1761. Departed this life, aged 83, the Hon. William Dummer, Esqr [1702], and on the 16<sup>th</sup> his funeral was attended with every mark of respect due to so eminent a person. Scarce any one ever passed this life with a more unspotted character or performed its various duties with more universal esteem. In the gayest scenes of youth, he was preserved from the destructive paths of vice; and in maturer age, was a shining example of the most amiable virtues. The wise, the incorrupt and successful administration of Mr. Dummer [1702] will always be remembered with honor, and considered as a pattern worthy the imitation of all future Governors;—uninfluenced by party prejudices—superior to all mercenary attachments, he discovered no passion in his public character, but love to his country and fidelity to his royal master. He retired to enjoy private life, with the approbation of a good conscience and the applause of his country. In his domestic character, he appeared the affectionate husband, the indulgent master, the benevolent friend. Inspired with a profound veneration of the Supreme Being,—firmly attached to the religion of Jesus; he received its doctrines with submission, attended its institutions with reverence, and practised its precepts with uniformity. At his death, he left a great part of his estate to pious and charitable uses. Having served his generation, by the will of God, he fell asleep in a joyful expectation of a resurrection to eternal life."

<sup>1</sup> "Funeral sermon on the Honorable William Dummer Esq., Late Lieutenant Governor and Commander in chief over the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, who died October 10. 1761 aged 84 years. Text Eccle xii. 7. 8: Subject 'The Vanity of every man at his best estate.'" It was printed by Green & Russell, in Boston, in 1761, pp. 27.

The principal events of Gov. Dummer's term were the establishment of a linen manufactory in the town, and the introduction of inoculation for the small-pox, during one of its periodical visits, by Dr. Boylston.

Jeremiah Dummer, who wrote the able *Defence of New England Charters*, was the Governor's brother. He died in London in 1739.—*See Gen. Mag.*, III., 490, 554.

**Seth Dwight** (1702), of Boston, son of Capt. Timothy and Anna (Flint) Dwight, of Dedham, and uncle of Gen. Joseph Dwight (1734), of Hatfield and Stockbridge, Mass., was born July 9, 1673. His wife, Abigail —, is supposed to have been Abigail Davis, as in his will he gave an annuity to his sister-in-law, Dorothy Davis. Mrs. Abigail (Davis) Dwight died May 24, 1719.

Seth Dwight (1702) was a shopkeeper, and sold china-ware. He left a valuable estate, which he divided among his four brothers, except the annuity above-mentioned. Seth (1702) and Abigail Dwight had two sons, Timothy, who died previous to the writing of the father's will, Oct. 1, 1726, having been run over and killed by a cart, and Joseph, who died May 8, 1719, a fortnight before his mother's decease.

On May 12, 1710, Capt. Timothy Dwight, of Dedham, divided his estate, and gave property to his sons, "Seth [1702] of Boston, shopkeeper," "Henry of Hatfield, clothier," the father of Col. Joseph Dwight (1734), and to Nathaniel, Josiah, and Michael.

Seth Dwight (1702) was a tithing-man in Boston in 1704 and 1713; a constable in 1706; a clerk of the market in 1710, and a minor officer in 1712. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1708, and was appointed coroner for Suffolk County, Dec. 19, 1728.

From the records of the selectmen, April 8, 1718, we learn: "Whereas Mr. Seth Dwight hath Signified to the s<sup>d</sup> Selectmen That he is about to Erect a Brick building on the Land in his possession, on the back Side of the House in which he dwells in Cornhill [now Washington Street], and next adjoining the Land of Mr. John Kilby [1691] etc.," between whom there was a difference as to the line, "the Selectmen Nominated and appointed Isaiah Tay, Thomas Cushing [1691] and Daniel Powning [1691]" to lay out the line.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1708, and died Jan. 22, 1731-2, "leaving neither wife nor children behind him."

**Calvin Galpine** (1702), clothier, of Boston, was born in 1669. He married, in Charlestown, Nov. 25, 1702, Katherine Knowles, by whom he had five children. "Mr. Calvin Galpin, Jr.," as given in Mr. Budington's History of the First Church in Charlestown, joined that church May 6, 1716.

"At a meeting of the Sel. men, 18<sup>th</sup> Dec. 1718. Agreed, that the Granaries be opened for the sale of Indian Corn on Fryday & Saturday next, vizt: the South Granary on Fryday, and the North Granary on Satterday, and on the next week following on Tuesday at the South and on Fryday at the North, And m<sup>r</sup> Galpine [1702] is directed to Sell out to the Inhabit<sup>ts</sup> of this Town not exceeding one bushel to each buyer, at five shillings p. bushel, and he is directed to put up before hand one bushel in each of ye Townes Baggs, and first receive each p'sons money and then Shift the Corn into their respective baggs, the hours appointed to attend the Same is from nine to twelve in the fore noon and from two to four in the after noon & he is to Imploy ye Cryer to cry at

**Seth Dwight** (1702). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

Mr. Porter, in his *Rambles in Old Boston*, N. E., page 149, gives a vivid picture of the Newman House, of which he says: "It stands at the southern corner of Salem and Sheafe streets, and has long been a landmark at the North End. In 1741,

Thomas Newman [1750], merchant, of Boston, bought this house, for eleven hundred pounds, of Jonathan Dwight, innholder. Dwight bought it, in 1737, of the heirs of Seth Dwight [1702], son of Timothy Dwight, of Dedham."

**Calvin Galpine** (1702). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



that price each buyer to bring good bill ready changed & to cry thro' the Town on thursday."

On the 23d of December following, the selectmen "Ordered, That ye Town Clerk do Endorss ye order to Mr Foy for 10 m Bread to be delivered to mr Calvin Galpine."

Dec. 28, 1719, they "Ordered, That the Granary be Opened on Wednes-dayes and Fry-dayes, and that on those dayes mr Calvin Galpine [1702] be directed to sell to ye Inhabitants of this Town, (Excepting to the Comon Bakers) at the following Prizes, vizt; Indian at 31.9<sup>d</sup> Rey at 51.0, wheat at 71.0. And that he cause Notice thereof be given by Crying."

Calvin Galpine (1702) died in Boston, Nov. 27, 1729.

**John George** (1702) was a merchant, of Boston. He was a constable of the town of Boston in 1695; selectman in 1701 and 1713; a tithing-man in 1711, and a member of the Old South Church. He was on several special committees of the town, of which the most important was to advise some proper method to prevent damage by the sea's wasting away the Neck. This committee was composed of prominent citizens. He was one of the thirty-one persons selected to draw up a charter of incorporation for the better government of the town in 1708, and was associated with Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699), John Gerrish (1700), and others, in the erection of Long Wharf.

At a meeting of the inhabitants of Boston, March 9, 1712-3, the following was introduced:—

"Whereas mr John George [1702] hath proposed to ye consideration of the Town whether the Alms House ought not to be restored to its Primitive & Pious design, even for ye reliefe of the necessitous, that they might Lead a quiet Peacable & Godly life there, whereas 't is now made a Bridewell & House of Correction, which Obstructs many Honest Poor Peoples going there for the designed Reliefe & Support, If therefore the Town would Lay out Some Other place, and refitt the Alms House for the Comfortable reception of the distressed it will be a great Act of Charity." The subject was referred to a committee of five persons, all of whom were members of the Artillery Company.

At a meeting of the selectmen, Oct. 16, 1716, voted, "Liberty is granted to ye Executors of Mr John George decease to Erect a Tomb for yt family in ye burying place nigh unto ye Alms House."

His widow, Lydia (Lee) George, married, July 5, 1715, Rev. Cotton Mather, pastor of the Second Church, Boston.

**Charles Hobby** (1702), of Boston, son of William and Ann Hobby, of Boston, was born about 1665, and was married, but left no children. Mr. Hutchinson says (II., 153) Sir Charles Hobby (1702) "had been knighted, as some said, for fortitude and resolution at the time of the earthquake in Jamaica," in 1692; "others, for the further consideration of £800 sterling. Col. Hobby [1702] was a gay man, a free liver and of very different behaviour from what one would have expected should have recommended him to the clergy of New England." He was sent over to London with letters from some of the ministers of New England to Sir William Ashurst, urging that he might be

**John George** (1702). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

"Nov 24, 1714. Very cold day. Mr. George [1702] laid in my Tomb till Madam George have an opportunity to build one. . . . Was a Well-accomplished merchant, and appears to have been

a good Christian, desirable usefull man. All the ministers had scarvs."—*Sewall Papers*.

**Charles Hobby** (1702). AUTHORITIES: Annals of King's Chapel, p. 175; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Prov. Papers of N. H., Vol. III.; Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.



appointed Governor in the place of Gov. Dudley (1677). Sir Charles (1702) did not succeed, but returned to America, and died in 1715.

In 1710, he and Col. William Tailler (1712) commanded the two Massachusetts regiments which formed a part of the expedition against Port Royal. The expedition was a success; Port Royal was besieged and captured, and in 1711 Sir Charles (1702) was appointed deputy-governor of Annapolis Royal, Nova Scotia. He also accompanied Col. Nicholson on his expedition to Canada. He soon returned to Boston, as he was a warden of King's Chapel from 1713 to 1715, or until his decease.

The author of the chapter on the "Royal Governors," in the Memorial History of Boston, says, "He was well known as a man of fashion and a rake." His picture is given in the second volume of that valuable work.

June 30, 1702, he was appointed a justice of the peace, and, in 1707 and 1708, he was captain of the fifth company of Boston militia. He is recorded as present at meetings of "Her Majesties Justices" in Boston, in February and March, 1711-2, Jan. 26, 1712-3, and Aug. 14, 1713.

His estate was insolvent. His wife survived him, but died in November, 1716. At one time, he owned and occupied a large house on King Street, which was destroyed in the great fire of 1711. His mansion-house was in Marlborough, now Washington, Street. In his inventory, dated April 23, 1716, "deeds for half the Province of N. H." is among the items, and is carried out as of no value. He purchased his New Hampshire estates of Thomas Allen, Esq., in 1706. From a statement in the speech of Lieut.-Gov. Vaughan, made at a session of the council and General Assembly of New Hampshire, Feb. 6, 1715-6, it appears that the administrator of Sir Charles Hobby's (1702) estate offered the purchase of the territory above mentioned to the assembly. Efforts were made for several years by his creditors, the most prominent of whom was Elisha Cooke, of Boston, to obtain letters of administration on his New Hampshire claim, but without success, it is believed.<sup>1</sup> His inventory also mentions six slaves, valued at three hundred pounds.

He united with the Artillery Company in 1702, and the same year became its captain; he was re-elected to that office in 1713.

**Edward Hutchinson** (1702), merchant, of Boston, son of Elisha (1670) and Elizabeth (Clarke) (Freak) Hutchinson, was born in Boston, June 18, 1678. He married, Oct. 10, 1706, Lydia, the second daughter of Col. John Foster (1679). Her sister, Sarah, married Edward's (1702) half-brother, Thomas (1694). His mother was a daughter of Major Thomas Clarke (1644), of Boston.

Edward Hutchinson (1702) for a half century was one of the most active, and for nearly forty years one of the most prominent and influential, men in the town. He was a constable in 1708, and a member of the board of selectmen from 1711 to 1715 inclusive, and a representative to the General Court from 1714 to 1716 inclusive, and in 1718. When paper money was issued by the provincial government in 1714, he was one of the five trustees. Dec. 9, 1715, he was appointed justice of the peace; June 18, 1728, justice of the peace and of the quorum, and March 20, 1722-3, he was appointed a justice of the inferior Court of Common Pleas for Suffolk County, and held that office

**Edward Hutchinson** (1702). **AUTHORITIES:** Boston Records; Savage's Gen. Dict.; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; New Eng.

Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1865, 1874; Province Laws, Vol. VII.

<sup>1</sup> New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., April, 1870.

until Dec. 29, 1731. He was reappointed to the same judgeship Oct. 27, 1740, filling a vacancy caused by the death of Thomas Palmer (1702), and served in that office until his decease. He was also judge of probate for Suffolk County in 1745, and for thirty years was treasurer of Harvard College. He was elected moderator of the town meeting in 1716, 1733, 1737, 1743-4, and 1746-7. He served on the most important special committees, for many years auditing the town treasurer's accounts; serving on such committees as "building a bridge to Noddles Island," "erecting three markets" (1733), "best place for new fortifications" (1733), "rights of the inhabitants to Long Wharf" (1736), "building workhouse" (1737),—which he turned over, completed, to the town in 1739,— "retrenchment of town expenses" (1739), "by-laws for government of workhouse" (1739), which are given in full in the record commissioner's report, and served on the committee selected to return thanks to Peter Faneuil for his gift to the town in 1742. In 1718, he acted with Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702) and three others in considering the plan of erecting a battery on Long Wharf and repairing the North Battery.

On the twenty-ninth day of April, 1719, the town voted, "The Thanks of this Town unto the doners of the Two North School Houses, vizt: The Hon<sup>ble</sup> Thomas Hutchinson Esq [1694] for the Gramer School-house. And ye S<sup>d</sup> mr Thoms Hutchinson [1694] and also Edward Hutchinson [1702] Esqrs for ye Writing Sch. House."

In 1728, April 1, Edward Hutchinson (1702) was one of a committee of two, appointed by the town, "To Take Care of the Great Artillery and all the Stores at the South Battery and secure them."

He was a captain in the Boston militia, afterward major, becoming lieutenant-colonel in 1717, and colonel in 1729. He resigned active duty in 1733, at the age of fifty-five years. He was appointed fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1702; was elected ensign in 1711, lieutenant in 1713, and its captain in 1717, 1724, and 1730. He continued his active interest in the Company until his decease.

He was a warm friend of the public schools, and was often invited to visit them. His last service to the town recorded in the town books was his visiting, with clergy and others, the schools of Boston, on the twenty-second day of June, 1751.

He died March 16, 1752, and his will was proved April 24, 1752. He left three children, viz.: Edward, who graduated at Harvard College in 1748, lived a great invalid for many years, and died unmarried; Sarah, who lived to old age unmarried, and Elizabeth, who married in 1751 the Rev. Nathaniel Robbins (preacher of the Artillery sermon in 1772), who were the parents of Edward Hutchinson Robbins. The latter graduated at Harvard College in 1775, was speaker of the House of Representatives, judge of probate for the county of Norfolk, and also lieutenant-governor.

**William Keen** (1702), a "Taylor," of Boston, joined the Artillery Company in 1692. He had a wife, Jane, and children were born to them in Boston. He held a minor town office from 1694 to 1707, except four years. He was one of the early members of Brattle Street Church (1699), and was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1702.

Feb. 23, 1701-2, the selectmen "granted unto Mr. William Keen to build over the town's property in the alley between his land and Mr. Thomas Fitch [1700], his house, said building not to be less than nine foot high from the ground and under said building the passage to be kept open and free for common passage, said Keen to pave the same

with stone and to pay to the town treasurer sixpence per annum as acknowledgment." In 1703, Mr. Keen (1702) built a new house on the site of the former house, and encroached somewhat upon the alley, which called for an order by the selectmen. In 1710, April 24, a fence which was placed in Pierce's Alley by Mr. Keen (1702) and Barrat Dyer (1711) was caused by the selectmen to be removed. Pierce's Alley ran, in 1732, from King Street into Corn Market; now it is Change Avenue, from State Street to Faneuil Hall Square.

**Edward Lyde** (1702), merchant, of Boston, son of Edward and Mary (Wheelwright) Lyde, married, Nov. 29, 1694, Susanna, daughter of Capt. George Curwen, of Salem, and, for his second wife, married, Oct. 22, 1696, Deborah, daughter of Hon. Nathaniel Byfield (1679). His third wife was Catherine Brinley. Edward Lyde, Sr., dying before 1663, his widow married, in October, 1667, Theodore Atkinson (1664).

Edward Lyde, Jr. (1702), first rented, and, in 1701-2, purchased of William Tailler (1712) the house on the west corner of Elm and Hanover streets. In 1708, the selectmen ordered that "the the way Leading from mr Pemberton's Corner at ye end of Dock Square to Justice Lyds Corner in Hanover Street" should be called "Wings Lane." Previous to that time, it had been called Hudson's Lane, out of respect to William Hudson (1640), but in 1799 the present name, Elm Street, was given to it.

Edward Lyde (1702) was elected an assessor of Boston in 1708, and an overseer of the poor in 1715. He was a prominent member of King's Chapel, and held the office of warden in 1701, 1702, and 1703. He was appointed a judge of the inferior Court of Common Pleas for Suffolk County, Dec. 9, 1715, and served until March 20, 1722-3, when he was superseded by Edward Hutchinson (1702). He was also appointed justice of the peace, Dec. 9, 1715. He died May 11, 1724.

**Edward Martyn** (1702), merchant, of Boston, son of Michael and Susanna Martyn, was born July 12, 1665. By wife, Sarah, he had several children born in Boston prior to 1700. In 1715, he married Sarah, the daughter of Rev. John Barnard, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1718. He was tithing-man for the second militia company in 1694, and held various offices, as assessor in 1707, 1708, 1712, and 1714; selectman in 1710; overseer of the poor in 1712, 1715, and 1716; fireward in 1711 and 1712; auditor in 1711 and 1713; also served on important special committees.

March 12, 1710-1, the town chose Mr. Timothy Thornton (1691), Capt. Thomas Hutchinson (1694), and Capt. Edward Martyn (1702), to purchase land convenient for the enlargement of the North burying-place. Aug. 13, 1717, the selectmen granted liberty to Capt. Edward Martyn (1702) to make a tomb in the new range of tombs in the North burying-place, and, in August following, the selectmen voted that Capt. John Fairwether be appointed fireward in the place of Capt. Edward Martyn (1702), deceased. In Copp's Hill and Burying-Ground, by Edward MacDonald, superintendent,

**Edward Lyde** (1702). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1857, 1863; Annals of King's Chapel, p. 178; Boston Records.

"May 11, 1724. Judge Lyde died this morning, after a long time of Distraction."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 337.

**Edward Martyn** (1702). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

"[1717-8] Febr 5. Capt Edward Martyn dyed this day about 11 A. M. . . . Febr 11. Went to the burying of Capt Martyn at the North in one of the New Tombs."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., pp. 165, 168.

The *News-Letter* says Capt. Martyn was in his fifty-third year, and that his military company attended his funeral.



we are told, "The first stone on the right of the Hull Street entrance is a stone bearing a coat of arms, in memory of Edward Martyn."

He was ensign of the Artillery Company in 1710, lieutenant in 1712, and captain in 1715. He resided on Hanover Street, near Richmond.

By a will, dated May 1, 1717, he gives the income of all his estate to his wife, to bring up his children, making the special bequests of "ten pounds to the North Church to buy a piece of plate," and "twenty pounds to be distributed to the poor of the flock."

Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "His tomb, No. 10, Copp's Hill, is now called Martyn's tomb," wherein his remains were deposited, Feb. 11, 1717-8.

**John Mico** (1702), merchant, of Boston, came to Boston about 1686. On the twentieth day of August, 1689, he married Mary, daughter of Capt. Thomas Brattle (1675). He was elected constable of the town of Boston, March 9, 1690-1, and was chosen to assist in valuing the estates of the town, Dec. 29, 1707. He served as tithing-man in 1711, 1716, and 1717, and as an auditor of treasurer's accounts in 1713.

The salt-works were set up on the marshes, by the Neck, in 1695-6, and, in 1716, the original proprietors admitted John Mico (1702), with other members of the Artillery Company, as partners.

He died in October, 1718 (was buried Oct. 16), and the inventory of his estate, rendered the court in 1719, amounted to £11,230 17s. His widow (childless) died Dec. 22, 1733.

**Thomas Newton** (1702), lawyer, of Boston, was born in England, June 10, 1660. He came to Boston from New Hampshire in 1688, and was secretary of that province until 1690. In the selectmen's records his name occurs, but in connection with his business as attorney for the town. Oct. 22, 1692, he was appointed a justice for the trial of cases within the county of York. By the town records it appears he was elected a constable March 13, 1703-4, but was excused from serving, and in 1708 was chosen one of the committee of thirty-one to draw up a charter of incorporation for the town. Dec. 24, 1715, he was appointed a justice of the peace for the county of Suffolk, and July 19, 1720, was appointed attorney-general of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, a position which he held until his decease.

He was prosecuting attorney in the celebrated witch trials in 1692. Mr. Savage remarks, "His opinion must have led to the cure of the infernal delusion, for in January, 1693, he wrote to Sir William Phips, the Governor, that of the fifty-two charged at Salem [by] that court, the three convicts should have been acquitted like the rest."

The first number of the first newspaper published in North America, the *News-Letter*, Boston, April 24, 1704, informed its readers that "Thomas Newton, Esq. [1702], is commissioned judge-deputy for the colony of Massachusetts."

He lived in Queen Street, now Court, was an Episcopalian, and signed the remonstrance to the Queen against Dudley's (1677) arbitrary conduct as Governor. He died May 28, 1721.

**John Mico** (1702). AUTHORITIES: Descendants of Thomas Brattle; Boston Records.

"[1718] Oct 16. . . . Go to the funeral of Mr. John Mico."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III, p. 199.

**Thomas Newton** (1702). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Annals of King's

Chapel, pp. 117, 182; Washburn's Judicial Hist. of Mass.

"Mr. Newton [1702], a new comer, was sworn, June 7, 1688, as an Attorney," by Judge Sewall.—*Sewall's Diary*.



The *News-Letter* of June 5, 1721, in announcing his decease says, "His Majesty's Attorney General for Massachusetts Bay, Deputy Judge and Judge of the Admiralty; Comptroller of the Customs and for many years one of the chief lawyers of Boston. He was born in England, June 10th, 1660, being Whitsunday and died at Portsmouth, N. H., May 28, 1721 (Whitsunday), aged 60. He was educated in England, and beloved, both there and here; one who carried himself just and well in every station, being affable, courteous and circumspect — of strict devotion towards God — exemplary for family government as well as humanity to all. A lover of all good men and therefore the more lamented at his death. His funeral was attended by the Governor, his Majesty's Council, with other principal gentlemen."

A tablet was placed on the walls of King's Chapel, in 1853, in memory of Thomas Newton, Esq. (1702). It contains the following: —

"Sacred to the memory of | Thomas Newton Esquire, | One of the | Original Founders of this Church, | A member of its first Vestry | In 1699. | And a warden | in 1704 | And afterwards: | Who died on the 18th June 1721 | Aged 61 years. | — He was many years one of the | Principal Lawyers in the Province, | And filled various places | Of honour and trust here; | And at the time of his death | Was Attorney-General, | Comptroller of the Customs, | And had been | A Judge of the Admiralty Court. | He was a Gentleman of exalted virtues, | And greatly beloved, | And respected, | Both in this Country | And in England, | Where he was born and educated."

**John Nichols** (1702), merchant, of Boston, was a tithing-man in 1693, when he was a member of Major Hutchinson's (1670) military company, and in 1705 and 1709. In 1695, he erected a dwelling-house in Boston, and on the 30th of September of that year was summoned before the selectmen for obstructing the streets. Oct. 31, 1709, the selectmen appointed him wharfinger of the town's wharf at the lower end of Cross Street, now from Commercial Street to Endicott Street, "to collect and receive wharfage for all goods or lumber landed or lying ther as is customary at other wharves," etc., "he to be allowed one third part thereof for his care and service." May 19, 1712, the selectmen voted, that "in case Mr. John Nichols (1702) do effect the paving before his land in Middle Street [now Hanover Street], the selectmen will pay its part." In 1713, he was elected a viewer and sealer of cord-wood, and was re-elected in 1714, 1715, and 1722. April 29, 1726, being continued in the same service, his assigned place to view and seal wood was Wentworth's Wharf, the next north of Mill Creek. He continued in this office at this place for some years, receiving twopence per cord for his services.

**Thomas Palmer** (1702), merchant, of Boston, married, Jan. 29, 1696-7, Abigail Hutchinson, — born March 7, 1677, — daughter of Eliakim Hutchinson, of Boston, and died Oct. 8, 1740. He was elected a constable March 11, 1695, but declined, paying the usual fine. He became a prominent citizen, and though for years there was a difference between himself and the town of Boston in regard to certain property near Dock Square, yet he was an esteemed and useful citizen. He was one of the committee selected "to

**John Nichols** (1702). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Thomas Palmer** (1702). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Drake's Hist. of Boston.

visit the families of the town and to prevent disorders," in 1706-11, 1713, 1715, 1716, and 1724. In 1707, the town placed the powder, kept to blow up buildings in case of fire, in the care of Thomas Palmer (1702) and Thomas Fitch (1700). He was one of the town auditing committee in 1704, 1714, 1718, 1720-1, 1723-4, and 1726, and an overseer of the poor from 1704 to 1711 inclusive. In 1721, he was elected one of the five trustees to receive, invest, and manage the fifty thousand pounds of bills of credit issued by the province, which constituted the proportion of Boston. He held the same office until 1725, and probably longer. He was a councillor from 1724 to 1726, and from 1730 to 1733.

John Foster (1679), judge of the Court of Common Pleas, died Feb. 9, 1710-1. The Governor nominated for the vacancy, March 23, 1710-1, Thomas Brattle (1675), but he was rejected by the council. The Governor, April 2, 1711, nominated Samuel Lynde (1691), but he, too, was rejected; but June 11, 1711, Thomas Palmer (1702) was nominated and confirmed as judge of the inferior Court of Common Pleas. He held that office until his decease, Oct. 8, 1740, and on the 28th of the same month the vacancy was filled by the appointment of Col. Edward Hutchinson (1702).

In 1733, he was elected by the town one of a committee "to think of and assign three suitable places for erecting markets," etc. With this movement Mr. Palmer (1702) was prominently identified. The last time his name appears on the town records is in connection with the meeting July 14, 1740, when he presented a petition, signed by three hundred and forty citizens, asking for a special town meeting to consider the generous offer of Peter Faneuil in regard to building at his own cost a complete edifice for a market. The proposal was finally accepted by a vote of three hundred and sixty-seven yeas and three hundred and sixty nays.

Feb. 27, 1720, the selectmen voted "That Tanners Lane be graveled for the conveniency of foot Passengers, Provided that Thomas Palmer Esq. [1702] (according to his proposall) be at the charge of keeping up posts to defend the Same from Carts." His warehouse was on Corn Market, which ran "From the Sun Tavern in Dock Square, East, to Merchants Row" in 1732. He was one of the founders of Brattle Street Church, 1699.

#### **Lovet Sanders (1702).**

**Benjamin Simpson** (1702), barber, of Boston, son of John and Abigail Simpson, of Charlestown, was born April 9, 1678, and settled in Boston. He was twice married, to (1) Elizabeth —, and (2) Hannah —. In 1707, he bought of the heirs his deceased father's house, and in 1714 sold the same to P. Cutler. Administration on his estate was granted to his widow, Hannah, in 1738.

He was clerk of the markets in 1710 and 1725, and a tithing-man in 1716 and 1717. At a meeting of the selectmen, March 29, 1714, "Liberty is granted to Mr Benj Simpson [1702] to Sett the windows of his Barbers Shop Ten inches into the Townes H. way on ye two Sides of that his Shop wch he Hires of Mr. Sam'll Bill. abutting on corn hill & on King Street in Boston." He united with the Old South Church, June 21, 1719, and was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1709.

**Benjamin Simpson** (1702). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates.

**Thomas Smith** (1702), merchant, of Boston, son of Thomas (1678) and Rebecca Smith, of Boston, was born May 13, 1678, and married, (1) May 9, 1701, Mary Corwin, who died July 29, 1716, and, (2) April 30, 1717, Sarah Oliver, sister of Nathaniel (1701).

He was elected scavenger in 1711 and 1712, and overseer of the poor in 1712, and thereafter until 1719. March 11, 1717-8, he was chosen with Col. Thomas Fitch (1700), Elisha Cooke (1699), Major Habijah Savage (1699), and Lieut.-Col. Minot, to "Consider and make report of Some Expedient for Securing the Marsh at the Lower end of the Comon." From 1713 to 1718, he is designated as "Capt." Thomas Smith (1702) was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1705; ensign in 1713; lieutenant in 1715, and captain in 1722. He joined the Old South Church, April 28, 1717, and was a benefactor of Harvard College.

Administration on his estate, which inventoried five thousand seven hundred and forty-three pounds, was granted to his widow, Sarah, and son, March 23, 1742.

**John Soames** (1702), of Boston, son of John and Hannah Soames, was born Jan. 14, 1680. His mother was a daughter of Samuel Shattuck, of Salem, "the happy messenger of Charles II.," says Mr. Savage, "who brought the order to stop the execrable policy of persecuting the Quakers."

John (1702) was of Quaker ancestry. The Society of Friends held meetings in Boston as early as May 4, 1664, when those present were to be arrested by a warrant from Edward Rawson, but the meeting was closed before the officers arrived. Edward Wharton, the minister, was arrested at the house of Nicholas Upshall (1637), and was whipped the next day. Their meetings, however, were held, and in 1694 a lot of land was purchased on Brattle Street, and a meeting-house was built of brick. This property was held for the society by six persons, one of whom was John Soames, Sr.

**Isaac Spencer** (1702), of Boston, son of Abraham and Abigail Spencer, was born March 17, 1678. His mother was Abigail (Atkinson) Spencer, daughter of Theodore Atkinson (1644). He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1707. He was chosen a constable of Boston, March 14, 1708-9, but refused to serve.

**Simeon Stoddard, Jr.** (1702), shopkeeper, of Boston, son of Ensign Simeon Stoddard (1675), was born in Boston, Aug. 20, 1682. Administration on the estate of Simeon, Jr. (1702), was granted to Simeon, Sr. (1675), Sept. 26, 1706, "his son dying near London."<sup>1</sup>

He became a member of the Old South Church, Jan. 25, 1701-2.

**Oliver Williams** (1702), of Boston, son of Capt. Nathaniel (1667) and Mary Williams, and grandson of Lieut. Nathaniel (1644), was born in Boston, Aug. 21, 1679. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1706.

**Thomas Smith** (1702). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Descendants of Thomas Brattle, p. 55.

**John Soames** (1702). AUTHORITY: Drake's Hist. of Boston.

**Isaac Spencer** (1702). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Simeon Stoddard, Jr.** (1702). AUTHORITY: Stoddard Genealogy.

<sup>1</sup> In the library of the Massachusetts Historical Society there is a sermon with the following title-

page: "The Just Man's Prerogative, a sermon preached privately Sept. 27, 1706, on a Solemn Occasion; for the Consolation of a Sorrowful Family, mourning over the Immature Death of a Pious Son, viz, Mr Simeon Stoddard, who was found Barbarously Murdered, in Chelsea-Fields, near London, May 14, 1706. By S. Willard. . . . Boston N. E. Printed by B. Green. Sold by Nicholas Boone at his Shop, 1706." 10 mo., pp. 28.



The record of the Artillery Company for 1702 is as follows : —

"April 6, 1702. The Artillery Company met and chose the Rev. Mr. Benjamin Colman to preach the Election sermon the Commission Officers were desired to request him. Accepted by him.

"May 4, 1702. At a meeting of the Artillery Company Mr. Elisha Cook Junr. [1699] at his request was dismissed.

"June 1, 1702. Col. Elisha Hutchinson [1670], Capt Samuel Sewall [1679], Major Charles Hobby [1702], Lieut Zechariah Tuttle [1697], and Ensign Adam Winthrop [1694] were chosen a committee to look after the 1000 acres of land laid out to this Company and find a Tenant for it, if they can, and enquire where the other 500 acres may be found and make report of the whole the next Training day.

"Voted, That the former Captain, Samuel Sewall, Esq [1679], and the new Captain, Maj. Charles Hobby [1702], return thanks to the Rev'd Benjamin Colman for his Sermon this day preached, and to desire a copy of it. The text preached from was Hebrews xi. 33.

"There is belonging to the Artillery Company — 1 Leading Staff ; 1 half pike, Tipt with Silver at both ends, presented by Captain Samuel Sewall, with this Inscription, viz : *Agmen Massachusetense est in Tutelam Sponsae Agni Uxoris*, 1701. 1 flight of Colours bought of Mr. William Clarke. Four Halberts, for which the Company paid £4. 16. 0."

**Rev. Benjamin Colman** delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1702.<sup>1</sup> He was born at Boston, Oct. 16, 1673, being the son of William and Elizabeth Colman, who came from London. Mr. Colman received his education at Harvard College, where he graduated in 1692. He was a studious youth, but of a very infirm constitution. Immediately after graduation he commenced preaching, but did not incline to settle over a parish until he had gained wisdom by age and experience. Two years after graduation he visited Europe, and it was supposed by his friends he would settle there.

"He suffered during the passage, the voyage being perilous, and the vessel being attacked by an enemy, a French privateer, which captured them after a severe engagement. Mr. Colman was on the vessel's deck during the fight, and received unkind usage from the enemy, on account of being a 'Protestant priest.' When he was in France, it was a satisfaction to the grinning multitude to insult a man who was an heretic, and preached against the Pope of Rome. But in every place there are humane people, who look with pity upon people in distress, and, among Christian nations, those who visit the prisoner. They resist the spirit of bigotry, and oppose the demon of persecution, whether clothed in the garb of a saint, or raging with the sword of violence. From having a wisp of straw to lie upon in the gloomy vaults of a prison, Mr. Colman received kindness from persons he never knew, and who only considered that he was a stranger. When there was an exchange of prisoners, he went to London."<sup>2</sup>

He remained in England a few years. He was invited, while residing in England, to become the first pastor of the Brattle Street Church. He accepted, arrived home Nov. 1, 1699, and preached the first sermon in the new meeting-house, Dec. 24 of that

<sup>1</sup> "June 1, 1702. Artillery election-Day. Mr. Colman preaches from Heb. 11. 33. Sermon is well liked of. Had much adoe to persuade Mr. Willard to dine with me. Said Ministers were disgusted because the Representatives went first at the Proclaiming the Queen; and that by order of our House. But at last he came; I went for him, leav-

ing my Guests. No Mather, Allen, Adams there, But there were Mr. Torrey, Willard, Simes, Thacher, Belchar and many more. No Mr. Myles, Bridge, No Capt of Frigat. Tho the last were invited." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 57.*

<sup>2</sup> Biography of Rev. Benjamin Colman, D. D., by Mr. Turell.



year. The covenant of that church, being objected to and "protested" against by Congregational churches in Massachusetts, gave the Brattle Street Church the name "Manifesto Church." Dr. Colman continued as pastor of that church from Aug. 4, 1699, to Aug. 29, 1747, when he died, aged seventy-three years.

Dr. Colman married, Oct. 26, 1731, Jane Clark, of Boston; and on the 6th of May, 1732, he married Sarah Clark, widow of Hon. John Clark, and previously of Hon. John Leverett (1704), president of Harvard College. She died April 24, 1744, and he married Mary Frost, of Newcastle, N. H. The family is now extinct.

He received the degree of doctor of divinity from Glasgow University in 1731. He was a warm friend of Harvard College, and, upon the death of Hon. John Leverett (1704), he was invited to the presidency, but his society opposed his acceptance, and he was too much attached to them to leave them without their consent.

To an edition of Dr. Benjamin Colman's sermons, printed in London in 1728, is prefixed his portrait, made in 1703, when he was thirty years of age.

He also delivered the sermon before the Artillery Company in 1738, Rev. John Cotton, of Newton, and Rev. Ebenezer Turell, of Mystic, having declined the invitation of the Company.

The officers elected were: John Ballentine (1682), captain; Thomas 1703-4. Savage (1693), lieutenant; Thomas Fitch (1700), ensign. Edward Martyn (1702) was first sergeant; Jonathan Pollard (1700), second sergeant; William Clarke (1699), third sergeant; Nathaniel Oliver, Jr. (1701), fourth sergeant, and Edward Oakes (1700), clerk.

In the year 1703, Boston was menaced by two dangers. One was the small-pox, which caused the death of three hundred persons in the town; the other was the war between the French and English. The Indians were an important factor in the periodical conflicts between those powers. To conciliate the Indians, and enlist their sympathy with the English, a committee, with Gov. Dudley (1677) at its head, proceeded eastward, to meet the Indians and formulate and ratify a treaty. Among the gentlemen who accompanied the Governor were: Col. Elisha Hutchinson (1670), Col. Penn Townsend (1674), Col. Thomas Savage (1693), and Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702).

The members recruited in 1703 were: John Baker, Thomas Baker, Henry Bridg-ham, Joseph Briscoe, Joseph Callender, William Clarke, William Frary, William Hutchinson, William Ivory, Thomas Leverett, Henry Lloyd, Thomas Newton, Isaac Queenoicault, Ambrose Vincent.

**John Baker** (1703), brazier, of Boston, was born Feb. 14, 1681. He was a tithing-man in 1703 and 1712; constable in 1704; clerk of the market in 1711, and selectman from 1715 to 1718 (declining in 1719), and from 1726 to 1728 inclusive. He was also moderator of the town meeting, Dec. 27, 1727, and, March 29, 1728, was elected a trustee of the town's funds.

When Hon. Thomas Fitch (1700) presented the town with two hundred and fifty firelocks, with bayonets fitted to them, March 10, 1728-9, a committee, consisting of

Hon. Elisha Cooke (1699), Adam Winthrop, Esq. (1694), and Mr. John Baker (1703), was appointed to wait on Hon. and Col. Thomas Fitch (1700), with their thanks and a copy of the votes passed by the town.

**Thomas Baker** (1703), of Boston, was born March 22, 1683.<sup>1</sup> He was clerk of the market in 1709 and 1719. July 10, 1722, he was approved and recommended by the selectmen to keep a retail shop on Linn Street. In July, 1733, he petitioned for a license as a "taverner," but was refused by the selectmen.

Mr. Whitman (1810) designates him as "Capt."

**Henry Bridgham** (1703), tanner, of Boston, son of Lieut. Jonathan (1673) and Elizabeth Bridgham, grandson of Capt. Henry Bridgham (1644), and cousin of Henry Bridgham (1699), was born in Boston, Nov. 2, 1677. In the Boston Records, March 10, 1711-2, he is called "Tanner"; March 12, 1715-6, "late Curier," and July 5, 1715, the selectmen disallowed his petition to sell strong drink as an innholder. The following August he was licensed to sell coffee, beer, ale, and cider, at a tenement near the town-house (next to Mr. Gerrish's building), which he hired of Capt. Nathaniel Oliver (1701). Aug. 10, 1714, Mr. Henry Bridgham (1703), currier, was appointed to enforce the town by-laws in regard to the keeping of ladders, swabs, and tubs of water for the speedy extinguishing of fires, and was allowed four pounds five shillings per month for that service.

He was a constable of Boston in 1712, and, July 2, 1717, the selectmen approved his petition as an innholder, at his house in King Street. July 8, 1718, he was licensed to keep an ale-house on Newbury, now Washington, Street, and July 28 the license was enlarged so he could "sell strong drink as an Innholder." In 1719, he was licensed as an innholder on Milk Street.

It is probable that the following sentence from the selectmen's minutes of May 3, 1734, does not refer to Henry Bridgham (1703): "Mr. Moulin informing [the selectmen] that the Watch men at the Powder House in the Common are very deficient in their Duty, and particularly the last Night, He found only Bridgham there — And he also asleep."

Henry Bridgham (1703) was surveyor of highways in 1709; assessor in 1712 and 1713, and sealer of leather in 1716 and 1723-5 inclusive.

**Joseph Briscoe** (1703), baker, of Boston, son of Joseph (1692) and Rebecca Briscoe, was born in Boston, Jan. 8, 1682. Both the father and son are called "bakers" in the Boston Records. On the arrival in Boston of four hundred bushels of wheat, Dec. 10, 1713, the selectmen ordered fifty bushels to be delivered to Joseph Briscoe, Sr., and twenty to Joseph Briscoe, Jr., "to bake the same into bread." The father was a constable in 1694, and one of them was a measurer of grain from 1706 to 1710. July 7, 1727, Joseph Briscoe, Jr. (1703), in Marlborough, now Washington, Street, petitioned the selectmen for permission to sell strong drink. He was a tithing-man in 1711 and 1718, and was a member of the Boston militia.

**Thomas Baker** (1703). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Joseph Briscoe** (1703). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> It is impossible to distinguish the Bakers. There were several at this time in Boston whose given name was Thomas. Whether the John Bakers and Thomas Bakers are related does not appear.

**Joseph Callender** (1703) was a constable of Boston in 1710. June 30, 1712, the selectmen ordered certain "Free Negroes &c" to work on the highway, and among them was "Cubit a free Indian at Jos. Callenders [1703]."

Oct. 6, 1712, the selectmen "agreed with Mr. Joseph Callender [1703] and let to him the Little Old House on Fort Hill, where John Wilkie lately dwelt, to be improved as a Granary, and a piece of land on said Hill, of about sixty feet square, for setting a windmill, for the term of seven years at forty shillings per annum."

**William Clarke** (1703), merchant, of Boston, son of William (1699) and Rebecca Clarke, was born in Boston, March 31, 1681. He was tithing-man from 1713 to 1715 inclusive; selectman from 1719 to 1723, and representative from 1719 to 1722, 1724, and 1725. In 1718-9, March 10, Mr. William Clarke (1703) was one of a committee "to consider and debate what can be done to relieve the town from its present distresses."

Nov. 3, 1713, the charges and assessment for a sewer locate Mr. Clarke (1703) in Wood's Lane, later Proctor's Lane, between Middle and Fish streets, now that part of Richmond Street between Hanover and North streets. In 1711, there were living upon that lane, John Buchanan (1695) and Joseph Prout, son of Joseph (1674); and William Clarke (1703) moved there before 1713. He became a member of the Old South Church, May 14, 1704. July 2, 1711, Francis Clarke (1701) and William Clarke (1703) were named by the Governor to "search for provisions" to supply men under Gen. Hill and Admiral Walker, temporarily encamped on Noddles Island, who were on their way to reduce Canada to British authority.

There were several William Clarks, or Clarkes, in Boston at this time, and even Mr. Savage calls them "confusion." One Dr. Clarke lived on Wing's Lane; a second William Clarke on Common Street, and a third, as above, on Proctor's Lane.

### **William Frary** (1703).

**William Hutchinson** (1703), of Boston, son of Eliakim and Sarah (Shrimpton) Hutchinson, and brother-in-law of Thomas Palmer (1702), was born in 1683. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Brinley (1681).

William (1703) graduated at Harvard College in 1702. Mr. Hutchinson, the historian, to whom he was nearly related, says of him, "He was a gentleman of a very fair character, sensible, virtuous, discreet, and of an independent fortune. He began his political life at a time when persons thus qualified were wanted for the service of their country, to moderate the passions of those who were less temperate and who had the lead in the House. In general, he adhered to the popular party. Longer experience might have convinced him that he would have shown his gratitude to his constituents more by endeavoring to convince them that they were running to an extreme, than by encouraging the same extremities himself."

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1706. He died of small-pox

**Joseph Callender** (1703). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**William Clarke** (1703). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**William Hutchinson** (1703). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman, p. 221.

"[1721] Nov. 30. . . . William Hutchinson esqr, dying at Cambridge, of the Small Pox, is brought to Town in Stedman's Calash. Decr 2. Buried, had a great Funeral." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 296.



in 1721, while a representative in the General Court. His will, dated Nov. 20, 1721, was proved Dec. 23, 1721.

The father, Eliakim, in his will of Feb. 3, 1716, names only his son William (1703), and his grandchildren, who were a son of Thomas Palmer (1702) and children of Elizabeth Phips.

**William Ivory** (1703), carpenter, of Lynn and Boston, son of Thomas and Mary (Davis) Ivory, was born in Lynn, June 10, 1674. His name does not appear on the Records of the Town of Boston. He married, Jan. 6, 1701, Sarah Thornton.

**Thomas Leverett** (1703), of Boston, son of Hudson Leverett (1658), and grandson of Major-Gen. John Leverett (1639), Governor, was baptized June 7, 1674. Thomas Leverett (1703) was a brother of Hon. Lieut. John Leverett (1704), the eighth president of Harvard College. Nothing has been discovered bearing upon his fame and fortunes, except a probate court record. He married, Dec. 11, 1701, Rebecca Winsor. By occupation, he was a barber. He died in 1706, "a little beyond thirty years of age." Administration on his estate was granted June 21, 1706.

**Henry Lloyd** (1703), merchant, of Boston, son of James and Griselda (Sylvester) Lloyd, was born in Boston, Nov. 28, 1685, and died March 18, 1763.

James came from Bristol, arrived at Newport about 1670, and settled in Boston in 1673. By marriage he received an estate at Long Island from his father-in-law, Nathaniel Sylvester, of Shelter Island. His first wife, Griselda, having died, he married for his second wife, Nov. 3, 1691, Rebecca, daughter of Major-Gen. John Leverett (1639), Governor.

Henry Lloyd (1703) married (1) Rebecca Nelson, — who was born Nov. 15, 1688, and died July 27, 1728, — a daughter of Capt. John Nelson (1680); and (2) Mary —, who died Nov. 10, 1749. The eldest son of Henry Lloyd (1703) was Dr. James Lloyd, of Boston, who died in 1810, aged eighty-two years, whose son, James, a graduate of Harvard College in 1787, an eminent merchant, was a United States senator from Massachusetts, and died in 1831.

Henry Lloyd (1703) was bred a merchant in Boston, but in 1711, by inheritance and purchase, located himself at Lloyd's Neck, and resided there until his decease. He left his property at the Neck to his four sons.<sup>1</sup>

**Thomas Newton** (1703).

**Isaac Queenoicault** (1703).

**Ambrose Vincent** (1703) married, Jan. 6, 1703, Sarah Barber. He held office in Boston in 1706, and in 1709 was clerk of the market. Jan. 17, 1709, the selectmen accepted him as security for Jane Buck, a new inhabitant, and July 8, 1712, he was security for Daniel Stevens.

**William Ivory** (1703). AUTHORITY: Savage's Gen. Dict.

**Thomas Leverett** (1703). AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1879.

**Ambrose Vincent** (1703). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> See Genealogy of Lloyds, of Lloyd's Neck, and King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.



Aug. 25, 1712, he subscribed six pounds to assist in enlarging the Church of England in Boston, and in 1713-4 was a communicant of that church. He also contributed two pounds for repairing King's Chapel in 1718. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1709. In 1715, he resided on Wing's Lane, now Elm Street, Boston.

Under date of March 30, 1725, Mr. Drake says, in the History of Boston, p. 572: "Early this spring died Mr. Ambrose Vincent [1703], a gentleman of note and much respected. He was for many years 'A Waiter of the Customs' and at his decease was 'Marshal of Admiralty.'"

He died at the age of forty-seven years, leaving a wife, Sarah, who died very suddenly, March 14, 1728: "As she was walking home from making a visit, she dropped dead in the street."

The record of the Artillery Company for 1703 is as follows:—

"April 5<sup>th</sup> 1703. The Rev'd Mr. Grindall Rawson was chosen to preach the next Election sermon and the Commission officers were desired to request him to preach. Accepted by him.

"Voted, that Colo. Hutchinson [1670], Colo. Hobby [1702], Capt Samuel Sewall [1679], Colo. Townsend Esqr [1674], and Mr. Samuel Keeling [1699], merchant, should be a committee to lease out the land for a term of years, which was given by the General Court to the Artillery Company, and that what the major part of the Committee doth in that affair shall be as effectual as if there were a full Concurrence."

**Rev. Grindall Rawson**, the preacher of the Artillery election sermon for 1703, son of Edward Rawson, for many years registrar of deeds and secretary of the colony, was born in Boston, Jan. 23, 1659-60. He was named Grindall for Edmund Grindall, Archbishop of Canterbury, "between whom and his father," according to Mr. Drake's History of Boston, p. 553, "there was a relationship."

Rev. Grindall Rawson graduated at Harvard College in 1678, and in 1683 married Susanna, daughter of Rev. John Wilson, of Medfield, who was a nephew of Capt. Robert Keayne (1637), the founder of the Artillery Company. Mr. Rawson was ordained about the year 1680, and became the second settled minister in Mendon. He died Feb. 6, 1715. He was very perfectly versed in the Indian language, and labored with the Indians for nearly thirty years. Rev. Cotton Mather preached a sermon on the death of Mr. Rawson, which he dedicated to Judge Sewall (1679).

—→—

The officers elected were: Thomas Hutchinson (1694), captain;  
**1704-5.** Adam Winthrop (1694), lieutenant; John Noyes (1698), ensign. Francis Clarke (1701) was first sergeant; John Wharton (1699), second sergeant; Henry Bridgham (1699), third sergeant; John Edwards (1699), fourth sergeant, and Edward Oakes (1700), clerk.

The year 1704 was a notable era in Boston. The fortifications of the town were examined and repaired under the direction of a committee, consisting of Elisha Cooke, Esq., Col. Elisha Hutchinson (1670), Col. Penn Townsend (1674), Col. Thomas Savage (1693), and Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702).

The Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England was organized in England, and the following gentlemen were authorized by the corporation to carry out its provisions in New England, viz.: Wait Winthrop (1692), Rev. Increase Mather, Gabriel Bernon, Nehemiah Walter, Samuel Sewall (1679), Peter Sergeant, John Foster (1679), Thomas Bannister, Col. John Higginson, Edward Bromfield (1679), Eliakim Hutchinson, Penn Townsend (1674), Jeremiah Dummer (1671), and Simeon Stoddard (1675).

The members recruited in 1704 were: John Leverett, Jonathan Loring, John Sale, and Thomas Salter.

**John Leverett** (1704), of Cambridge, son of Hudson Leverett (1658), grandson of Gov. John Leverett (1639), and brother of Thomas Leverett (1703), was born in Boston, Aug. 25, 1662. He graduated at Harvard College in 1680, after which, for several years, he remained at the college, and was a tutor during part of the presidency of Dr. Increase Mather. "Dr. Mather was absent in England nearly four years, from 1688 to 1691, and Mr. Leverett [1704] and William Brattle," son of Capt. Thomas Brattle (1675), "had the instruction of the students." During these years the college flourished. The two teachers aboved named "were among the most learned men of their age, and were members of the Royal Society in London."

Mr. Leverett (1704) first studied theology in connection with his tutorship, and preached occasionally for several years; but he finally studied law, and practised in the courts. He represented Cambridge in the General Court, and was speaker in 1700. He was appointed judge of the Superior Court, July 8, 1702, and held that office until his election as president of Harvard College; was judge of probate from Oct. 23, 1702, to July 8, 1708, when he was succeeded by Francis Foxcroft (1679), and a member of the council in 1705. On the death of Rev. Samuel Willard in 1707, he was elected president of Harvard College (being lieutenant of the Artillery Company the same year), and continued to act in that office until his decease. He died peacefully, May 3, 1724. His eulogists represent him as a man of vast learning and of genuine piety. Dr. Appleton, in a funeral discourse a few days after the death of President Leverett (1704), said, "He was a pillar both of the Church and State, an honor and ornament to society, and the glory of New England."

"His qualifications" for the presidency "were not only eminent in degree but singularly various. He had a great and generous soul. His natural abilities were of a very high order. His attainments were profound and extensive. He was well acquainted with the learned languages, with the arts and sciences, with history, philosophy, law, divinity, politics; and such was his reputation for knowledge of men and things, that, in almost every doubtful and difficult case, he was resorted to for information and advice.

"To his wisdom and knowledge he added great firmness, resolution, and energy of character. His great abilities being consecrated to the service of God and of his generation, he was never deterred by difficulties or dangers from any undertaking which

**John Leverett** (1704). **AUTHORITIES:** NEW Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1847, 1850; Histories of Harv. Coll.; Eliot's Biog. Dict.

"Tuesday Oct. 28, 1707. The Fellows of Harvard College met and chuse Mr. Leverett President: He had eight votes, Dr. Increase Mather three, Mr Cotton Mather one and Mr Brattle of Cambridge one. Mr White did not vote and Mr Gibbs came when voting was over." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 196.

"Sept. 6, 1703, Artil. Training. I Train'd in the Forenoon, As I was going, Mr. Oakes met me and ask'd if I had not heard the News? He said French King; he had his Neck broken by a fall from his Horse as he was viewing an Army Rais'd to goe against those of the Cevenes." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 88.

Providence seemed to impose upon him. He was liberal and catholic in his sentiments and feelings; and though, among the various institutions of the Commonwealth, he had the preservation of its religious establishments greatly at heart, he did not place religion so much in particular forms and modes of worship, or discipline, as in those substantial and weighty matters of the gospel, righteousness, faith, and charity."

He married (1) Mrs. Margaret (Rogers) Berry, — whose mother was Elizabeth, only daughter of Major-Gen. Denison (1660) and granddaughter of Gov. Thomas Dudley, — and (2) Mrs. Sarah Harris, daughter of Richard Crisp. After the decease of Mr. Leverett (1704), his widow married Hon. John Clarke in 1725, and subsequently, in 1731, she married Rev. Benjamin Colman, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1702. Mr. Leverett (1704) had several children, but all of his sons died in infancy.

"For forty years," says Dr. Colman, "he has shown in this place and in the eyes of this Society, in near a meridian lustre. The young saw him and hid themselves, and the aged arose and stood up. Then men gave ear to him and waited and kept silence at his counsel."

Mr. Flint's funeral oration ascribes to him Aristotle's words to Plato.<sup>1</sup> His literary merits procured him honors from abroad, particularly membership in the Royal Society of London.

He was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1707.

**Jonathan Loring** (1704), of Boston, son of Josiah and Elizabeth (Prince) Loring, of Hingham, was born at Hingham, April 24, 1674, but settled in Boston, where he died Oct. 15, 1752.

He was elected clerk of the market in 1704; constable in 1707; assessor from 1714 to 1728, except in 1719, and selectman for three years, 1729-31. He married, about 1700, Elizabeth Austin, born May 6, 1673, daughter of Richard Austin, of Charlestown. In 1732, he lived on Salem Street. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1710, and became a member of the Old South Church, Nov. 22, 1730, when he withdrew from the First Church.

**John Sale** (1704), innholder, of Boston, son of Obadiah and Sarah Sale, of Boston, was born in Boston, July 23, 1680. He married Rebecca, daughter of Col. Penn Townsend (1674). He first kept an inn at the lower end of King Street in 1723; but in 1725 he asked for a license to continue as an innholder on Newbury (Washington) Street. July 5, 1728, he was licensed as an innholder in Corn Market, and March 3, 1735-6, he again opened a tavern at the lower end of King Street. He was a scavenger in 1725, and occupied a cellar under the town-house from May 22 to Oct. 7, 1714, at a rental of £5 5s. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1714, and its ensign in 1719. He was surety on the bond of the tax collector of Rumney Marsh, in 1734, to the amount of four hundred and sixty pounds.

**Thomas Salter** (1704), shopkeeper, of Boston, married, May 4, 1693, Mary Habberfeeld, and May 11, 1707, both of them joined the Old South Church. He served the

**Jonathan Loring** (1704). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Hist. of Old South Church.

**John Sale** (1704). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Thomas Salter** (1704). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

"[1714] Oct. 19. Went to the Salt works and

Run the bounds; . . . came away to Lt Tho. Salters Funeral." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. III., p. 22.*

There were two persons having this name in Boston at this time. It is difficult to distinguish between them.

<sup>1</sup> "*Hic jacet homo, quem non licet, non decet, impiis vel ignorantibus laudare.*"



town as constable in 1705, and as surveyor of highways in 1707. In 1711, he was first sergeant of the Artillery Company. In 1712, he was a member of the Boston militia, and was appointed a tithing-man. The inventory of his property, returned to the court in 1714, was £12,187 9s. 10d.

In the Boston *News-Letter* of June 12 to 19, 1704, is the following statement: "Capt. Thomas Hutchinson, Captain; Capt Adam Winthrop, Lieutenant; and Mr. John Noyes, Ensign; officers of the *Honourable* Artillery Company, have caused the printing of the Election Sermon."

The record of the Artillery Company for 1704 is as follows: "April 3<sup>d</sup> 1704. The Rev'd Mr. Henry Gibbs<sup>1</sup> was chosen to preach the next Election sermon, and the Commission officers, with Samuel Sewall [1679], Esqr and Capt. Samuel Checkley [1678] were desired to request him to preach. Accepted by him."

**Rev. Henry Gibbs**, of Watertown, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1704. He was a son of Robert and Elizabeth (Sheaffe) Gibbs, of Boston, and was born Oct. 8, 1668. He graduated at Harvard College in 1685, and after graduation continued his studies at the college. He married, June 9, 1692, Mercy, daughter of William Greenough (1675). Her mother, wife of William, was Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Upshall (1637). Henry Gibbs was ordained Oct. 6, 1697, and settled in Watertown, where he died Oct. 21, 1723.

The officers elected were: Thomas Savage (1693), captain; Thomas 1705-6. Fitch (1700), lieutenant; John Kilby (1691), ensign. Thomas Smith (1702) was first sergeant; Adino Bulfinch (1702), second sergeant; Nicholas Buttolph (1694), third sergeant; John Cotta, Jr. (1698), fourth sergeant, and Edward Oakes (1700), clerk.

The year 1705 was laden with doubts and fears for the people of Boston, on account of the war then in progress, and the Artillery Company, as well as business and public interests, felt the depressing effect. There were no members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1705-6. The usual meetings of the Company were held, however, as appears from the following record:—

"April 2<sup>d</sup> 1705. The Rev'd Mr. John Sparhawk was chosen to preach the next Election sermon and the Commission officers were desired to request him to preach. Not accepted by him, by reason of indisposition; but by request made to the Rev'd Mr. Thomas Bridge, he preached in his stead."

<sup>1</sup> "[1704] April 3. Artil. Company chuses Mr. Henry Gibbs of Watertown to preach their Sermon; chuse Capt Checkley and me to join Commiss'd Officers to acquaint him with it, and desire him to undertake it. . . .

"April 5<sup>th</sup>, Capt John Ballentine, Lt Tho Savage and Ens Tho. Fitch, Sewall and Checkley, set out at 2 P. M. bound for Watertown; Find Mr. Gibbs at home, Acquaint him with our Message,

press him earnestly: but can get no Answer, He will give an Answer the 13<sup>th</sup> after Lecture. I invited him to dine with me. Had comfortable going and returning: Call'd at Brooklin as came home. Baited at Remington's. I used Dr. Witsius's Title of's Oration *De Theologo Modesto*: told him the more Modesty we saw the more vehement we should be in our Assaults." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., pp. 98, 99.







*Adam Wintrop*

**Rev. Thomas Bridge**,<sup>1</sup> born at Hackney, near London, about 1657, came to America, after obtaining a liberal education and travelling in the Mediterranean countries. He settled in Boston, and continued his studies at Harvard College, where he received the degrees of bachelor of arts in 1675, and master of arts in 1712. He first gathered and taught a flock at Jamaica, but removed to the island of New Providence, and from thence to the islands of Bermuda and West Jersey. He removed thence to Boston, the metropolis of English America, where the First Church invited him to become pastor, that they might enjoy the abilities of so experienced a person in the pastoral office which had heretofore been held by famous and able men. He accepted, and was there ordained, May 10, 1705, becoming colleague pastor with Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth.

Rev. William Cooper, in his diary,<sup>2</sup> wrote of Mr. Bridge: "He was a man of much piety, devotion, love, humility, meekness, etc., and of great fidelity in the discharge of his office."

The Memorial History of Boston quotes: "'He made a sudden exit from the scene of his labors, leaving behind him a name which is better than precious ointment, and four publications, evincing his concern for the cause of righteousness and the welfare of mankind.'"

He died very suddenly, Sept. 26, 1715, aged fifty-nine years, and in the eleventh of his pastorate over the First Church. Rev. Cotton Mather delivered a funeral sermon on his death, and it was printed in Boston in 1715.



**1706-7.** The officers elected were: Adam Winthrop (1694), captain; Timothy Clarke (1702), lieutenant; John Ballentine, Jr. (1694), ensign. Thomas Hunt (1685) was first sergeant; William Hutchinson (1703), second sergeant; William Clarke (1703), third sergeant; Oliver Williams (1702), fourth sergeant, and Edmund Oakes (1700), clerk.

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the town, held June 10, 1706, it was voted, "That a Committee be appointed to Consider of what shall be needfull to be done about Fortifieing the Town for its defence against the Enemie: and that the S'd Committee do make application to his Excellency the Governor for his approbation therein. . . ."

"Elisha Cook Esqr. Elisha Hutchingson Esq. [1670] Penn Townesend Esq. [1674] Collo. Samuel Checkley [1678], and Capt. Oliver Noyes [1699] were chosen to be said committee."

At the next town meeting, held June 12, the committee reported that the Governor signified his approval of fortifying the town, and they proposed that the North Battery be carried out one hundred and twenty feet in length, forty feet in breadth, and eighteen feet to high-water mark. The report was accepted. One thousand pounds were levied on property for the purpose, and the above committee, with the addition of Thomas

"[1705] Seventh day 8r. 27th. . . . It seems the Castle is ordered to be call'd Fort William; and the Governor went down yesterday, and caused the inscription to be set up, a pretty many Guns fired." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 141.

<sup>1</sup> "[1715] 7r [Sept.] 26. Between 11 and 12, Mr. Bridge Expires; with him how much primitive Christianity is gone; The old Church, the Town, the Province have a great Loss. He was particularly dear to me." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 59.

<sup>2</sup> New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1876.

Brattle, Esq., and Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702), were given full power "to manage the affairs of the Fortifications." In October following, another thousand pounds were assessed on the estates of the town for a similar purpose.

The members recruited in 1706 were: Daniel Epes, Samuel Gray, John Smith, and William Tilley.

**Daniel Epes** (1706), son of Daniel and Elizabeth Epes, of Ipswich, was born in that town March 24, 1649, and graduated at Harvard College in 1669. He married, (1) April 17, 1672, Martha Bordman, of Cambridge, who died Feb. 9, 1692, and, (2) in 1693, Hannah Wainwright, widow, mother of Col. Francis Wainwright (1709).

In 1670, Mr. Epes (1706) began to teach, and for twenty years had charge of the grammar school in Salem. Mr. Dunton, in his *Life and Errors*, calls him "the most eminent school-master in New England." In 1699, he was succeeded in teaching by Samuel Whitman (Harv. Coll., 1696).

Mr. Epes (1706) was town clerk of Salem, and selectman for several years. It is said that he was "a magistrate and a counsellor for seven years." He was a member of the Essex County militia, became a captain, and was in active service against the Indians. He probably removed to Boston and lived there for a time, as Judge Sewall (1679) wrote, "Mr Epes and family moved to Salem [from Boston], Nov. 12, 1714." He was a representative in the General Court in 1708, 1715, and 1721, and was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1710. He died at Salem, Nov. 23, 1722.

**Samuel Gray** (1706), goldsmith, of Boston, son of Samuel and Susanna Gray, was born in Boston in October, 1684. He was a tithing-man, and a member of the militia in Boston, in 1705. Not long after, he removed to New London, Conn., where he settled, and married Lucy, daughter of Edward Palmes, of that town, and died May 26, 1713, aged twenty-nine years.

**John Smith** (1706), merchant, of Boston. A John Smith appears as a member of the watch in Boston in 1701. Administration was granted on his estate in 1706.

**William Tilley** (1706), "rope-maker," of Boston, son of William, was a tithing-man of Boston in 1704, surveyor of highways in 1707, and several times was elected constable, but was excused after each election.

March 30, 1713, William Tilley, Jr. (1706), petitioned the selectmen for liberty to make ropes in South Street (from Summer to the sea, in 1708), where a Mr. Grey formerly did. His petition was granted. March 4, 1717-8, at a meeting of the selectmen, "Liberty is granted John Young and John Vale rope-makers, to improve the Easterly side of South Street, for making of ropes there (as William Tilley [1706] lately did) for and during the Town's pleasure."

William Tilley (1706) was second sergeant of the Company in 1707, and probably died before March 4, 1717-8.

Next following the charter and by-laws of the Company in the "Transcript of the Records of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company," are several lists of the names of members who were fined. The following list seems to have been made

**Samuel Gray** (1706). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



out in 1706 or 1707. It is valuable as giving the names of some active at that time. The list and its heading are as follows (the year attached signifying the year of joining the Company) : —

“A List of Forty Soldiers that are under 6/ fine for non-appearance, who subscribe to the foregoing Articles.

“Samuel Keeling [1699], David Jesse [1700], John Edwards [1699], Charles Chauncey [1699], John Cotta Jun. [1698], John Adams [1699], Hopestill Foster [1694], Benjamin Dyar [1691], Richard Proctor [1699], William Clarke, N. Boston [1699], Thomas Hutchinson [1694], John Gerrish [1700], Thomas Fitch [1700], Edward Winslow [1700], Edmund Knight [1700], Waterhouse Fernley [1700], Henry Jones [1700], Jonathan Pollard [1700], Wigglesworth Sweetsir [1700], Edward Proctor [1699], Edward Oakes [1700], Benjamin Cushing [1700], George Driver [1701], Thomas Godfrey [1701], Thomas Foster [1701], Francis Clarke [1701], Antipas Torrey [1701], John Cookson [1701], Samuel Gaskill, Jun. [1699], Edward Hutchinson [1702], William Dummer [1702], Oliver Williams [1702], Benjamin Simpson [1702], John Mico [1702], Simeon Stoddard Jr. [1702], Seth Dwight [1702], William Keen [1702], John Soames [1702], Lovett Sanders [1702], Isaac Spencer [1702], Ambrose Vincent [1703], William Clark [1703], Thomas Newton [1703], Joseph Briscoe [1703], Henry Bridgham [1703], Henry Lloyd [1703], John Baker [1703], Isaac Queenoicalt [1703], Jonathan Loring [1704], John Smith [1706], Daniel Epes [1706].”

The record of the Artillery Company for 1706 is as follows : —

“April 1. 1706. The Rev'd Mr. William Cotton was chosen to preach the next Election sermon, and the commission officers were desired to request him to preach. Accepted by him.”

By an error of the transcriber, probably, the given name William was substituted for Roland.

**Rev. Roland Cotton**, son of Rev. John Cotton, of Plymouth, and grandson of the famous John Cotton, minister of the First Church in Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1706. Rev. Roland Cotton was born at Plymouth, Dec. 27, 1667, and graduated at Harvard College in 1685. He married Elizabeth, only daughter of Nathaniel Saltonstall, of Haverhill, and widow of Rev. John Denison. They had five sons, all of whom were ministers. Mr. Cotton settled over the church at Sandwich, and was there ordained, Nov. 2, 1694. He died March 22, 1722.

1707-8. The officers elected were: John Walley (1671), captain; John Leverett (1704), lieutenant; Simeon Stoddard (1675), ensign. Benjamin Eliot (1707) was first sergeant; William Tilley (1706), second sergeant; Edward Oakes (1700), third sergeant; Isaac Spencer (1702), fourth sergeant, and Henry Bridgham (1699), clerk.

The Boston town records of March 8, 1707-8, relate that the appropriation to be laid out in fortifications in 1704 was exceeded by the amount of £12 8s. 4d. It was therefore voted that this deficiency, “including £11. 11. 0. due to Mr. Nathaniel Oliver [1701] for bred & beer, . . . be payd out of ye Town Treasur.”

**Rev. Roland Cotton.** AUTHORITY: Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.

At the same meeting, Capt. Thomas Hutchinson (1694) called the attention of the inhabitants assembled to the waste lands at Braintree, concerning which there had been a dispute for several years, between the town of Boston and sundry gentlemen, who esteemed themselves as proprietors of said land. It was suggested by him that a committee be appointed by the town to treat with the proprietors and adjust the differences. The proposal was accepted by the town of Boston, and the following committee of five was chosen for the purposes stated. They were all members of the Artillery Company except one, viz.: Daniel Oliver, Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702), Capt. Thomas Fitch (1700), Thomas Cushing (1691), and Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699).

The members recruited in 1707 were: Richard Bill, Edward Bromfield, Benjamin Eliot, Richard Hall, Joseph Hubbard, Ezekiel Lewis, Benjamin Pemberton, William Whitcomb.

**Richard Bill** (1707), merchant, of Boston, son of Samuel and Elizabeth Bill, and grandson of Thomas Bill (1674), was born in Boston, March 25, 1685. He married a daughter of Capt. Benjamin Davis (1673). He was elected a constable of Boston, March 13, 1709-10, but refused to serve. May 26, 1718, liberty was granted by the selectmen "to Mr. Richard Bill to dig open the highway in Water Street," where he lived, to lay a drain into the sewer. April 3, 1734, he was appointed an auditor of the town treasurer's accounts, and May 25 of that year he gave fifty pounds towards the erection of the new workhouse. He was a councillor from 1737 to 1741 inclusive, and was appointed a justice of the peace, Aug. 28, 1729. He was a visitor, with the clergy and others, to the public schools in June, 1736; June, 1740; June, 1753; July, 1754; June, 1755; June, 1756, and June, 1757.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1710, ensign in 1716, and lieutenant in 1720. He died in 1757, in which year an inventory of the estate of "Hon. Richard Bill, Esq.," was filed.

**Edward Bromfield** (1707), merchant, of Boston. Doubtless he was the Edward Bromfield who joined the Artillery Company in 1679. See page 252.

**Benjamin Eliot** (1707), bookseller, etc., of Boston, son of Jacob Eliot, Jr., a "captain in high esteem" and deacon, and grandson of Jacob, elder brother of Rev. John Eliot, of Roxbury, was born in 1665. Ensign Benjamin (1707) was a grand-nephew of Rev. John, the apostle to the Indians, and of Philip Eliot (1638). Jacob, son of Jacob, Jr., died in 1713, at the age of forty years, and left all his estate to his brother, Benjamin Eliot (1707), "the bookbinder." Benjamin (1707) married (1) Susannah —, who died June 8, 1715, and, (2) Feb. 14, 1722, Elizabeth Jeffries, widow of Charles Shepreve.

June 28, 1703, the selectmen "granted to Benj. Eliot [1707] the shop under the Town House, formerly let to John Howard, Scribener, deceased, for the term of Seven years from this day at 40 Shill. p annum, June 28<sup>th</sup> Ye dimensions are with inside 9 foot 8 inches in length and 4 foot 1½ inches in breadth."

**Richard Bill** (1707). AUTHORITY: Boston Records; Province Laws, Vol. VII.; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1869.

**Benjamin Eliot** (1707). AUTHORITIES: Bos-

He died Nov. 9, 1741, aged seventy-six years, and by his will, proved Dec. 8, 1741, left his property to the grandchildren of his sister, Abigail (Eliot) Davis, and of Benjamin Lowder.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1707.

**Richard Hall** (1707), baker, of Boston, son of Richard and Elizabeth (Holbrook) Hall, of Roxbury, was born in Roxbury, Jan. 31, 1683. He was elected a constable of Boston, to which town he had removed, in 1709, and also in 1724, but was excused the latter year. Oct. 7, 1717, Richard Hall was given liberty "to dig open the Highway and so through into Dock Square for laying" a cellar drain.

Lieut. Richard Hall (1707) lived on King Street. April 25, 1718, having changed his business, he petitioned the selectmen for a license to sell strong drink, as an innholder, at a tenement of Simeon Stoddard's (1675), in Cornhill, now Washington Street. His application as an innholder was disallowed, as it also was in 1719. July 15, 1719, his petition for license to keep "common victuallin" house and coffee-house, at his house "nigh the town-house in King Street," was allowed, which was regranted in 1720. Having been repeatedly refused an innholder's license, he petitioned again, July 29, 1723, saying, "that he may be further indulged with a license for a trial of his behaviour, and promising to observe the good and wholesome laws of the Province and take especial care to prevent all disorders," etc. The license was granted, but refused the next year. In 1728, July 5, his last application to retail strong drink in "Maulboro," now Washington, Street, was disallowed. For one year, 1722-3, he occupied a part of the cellar of the town-house, paying nine pounds per annum.

He was a member of the Boston militia, and fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1710.

**Joseph Hubbard** (1707), blacksmith, of Boston, was a constable of Boston in 1706, and a tithing-man in 1712 and 1718. In 1708, the way leading from the upper end of Cow Lane, easterly, passing Joseph Hubbard's (1707), down to the sea, was called Gibbs' Lane, which, in 1845, became Belmont Street.

May 15, 1722, the town voted that "a guard be forthwith set at the house of Mr. Joseph Hubbard [1707], blacksmith, to prevent the removal of Mr. Samuel Sewall and sundry others at said house, without orders, . . . they having been inoculated for the small-pox." On the same day as the town-meeting, May 15, 1722, the selectmen met and voted, "Whereas Samuel Sewall, of Boston, merchant, his wife and two of his children, and one other of his family, have lately been inoculated for the small-pox, and are now at the dwelling-house of Mr. Joseph Hubbard [1707], blacksmith, in Boston," etc., the said Samuel Sewall and others be removed to the hospital on Spectacle Island. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1719, and was a captain in the militia.

Joseph Hubbard (1707) died April 9, 1761, aged eighty-five years.<sup>1</sup>

**Ezekiel Lewis** (1707), school-master and merchant of Boston, son of William and Mary (Cheever) Lewis, was born in Boston (whither his father had moved from Farming-

**Richard Hall** (1707). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Joseph Hubbard** (1707). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Ezekiel Lewis** (1707). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1854, p. 47; 1879, p. 175; 1880, p. 190.

<sup>1</sup> Boston Gazette.



ton, Conn., but a few years before), Nov. 7, 1674. His mother was a daughter of Ezekiel Cheever, of Boston, the distinguished school-master, in honor of whom he was named.

Ezekiel Lewis (1707) graduated at Harvard College in 1695, and began teaching at Westfield, Mass., where he united with the church May 16, 1697. He was dismissed therefrom Sept. 24, 1703, and Jan. 20, 1705, he united with the Old South Church, of Boston.<sup>1</sup> He married, March 18, 1702, Mary Breadon, who died the 20th of February, 1703. He next married Abigail Kilcup, Oct. 11, 1704, who, Mr. Savage supposes, was the widow of Roger Kilcup (1684). He had one child by the first wife, and six by the second. Of the latter, Ezekiel graduated at Harvard College in 1735. In 1699, Mr. Ezekiel Cheever was in need of an assistant in the Latin School, and his mind would naturally turn to his grandson.

At a meeting of the selectmen of Boston, held Aug. 28, 1699, the board, in pursuance of a vote of the town, May 8, agreed with Mr. Ezekiel Lewis (1707), and admitted an assistant to his grandfather, Mr. Ezekiel Cheever, in the Latin free school, "his salary at present to be £40 per year." March 10, 1701, the new submaster asked for an increase of salary; but his petition was referred to the next general town meeting. May 12, 1701, his salary was increased five pounds. He continued as assistant for about two years, when he was succeeded by Nathaniel Williams, son of Nathaniel (1667), and grandson of Nathaniel (1644). Ezekiel Lewis (1707) turned his attention to business, and became a merchant.

He was chosen constable in 1705, overseer of the poor in 1708 and 1709, and assessor in 1713, — all which he declined to accept, but was an assessor in 1707. He acted, however, on several important committees, and visited officially the public schools. He was one of the selectmen of Boston from 1724 to 1726 inclusive, and was representative from 1723 to 1731 inclusive. In 1720 and 1721, he was one of a committee to draw up instructions for the representatives, and was especially prominent in those cases at law where citizens encroached upon the town's rights. He was elected a member of his Majesty's council in 1731, and served to 1736; was elected again in 1738, and served until 1741; was re-elected in 1742, and was continued as councillor from 1747 to 1752 inclusive. He was appointed special justice of the Superior Court, June 22, 1733, having been commissioned a justice of the peace, Dec. 29, 1731.

One of his most pleasant duties, doubtless, was serving on the committee of Sept. 13, 1742, to draw up a vote of thanks to Peter Faneuil, Esq., for his generous gift to the town, and then presenting the same to Mr. Faneuil. Later, Sept. 17, he was one of the committee to receive, in behalf of the town, and duly acknowledge in a "vote of thanks," "His Majesty's Picture, to be hung up in Faneuil Hall."

After a busy life, helpful in public interests for more than half a century, he died at Boston, Aug. 14, 1755, aged eighty years.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1708.

**Benjamin Pemberton** (1707), a brewer, of Boston, son of James and Sarah Pemberton, who moved to Boston from Newbury, Mass., and who became one of the founders of the Old South Church, was born March 11, 1666. His brother, Rev. Ebenezer, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1701.

**Benjamin Pemberton** (1707). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Hill's Hist. of Old South Church.

<sup>1</sup> "Lord's Day, Jan'y 20, 1705-6 Mr Ezek Lewis dismiss'd from Westfield and enter'd into covenant with them." — *Seawall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 153.







*John Tristram*

Benjamin Pemberton (1707) married Elizabeth Dixie. He was a tithing-man and member of the Boston militia in 1703, highway surveyor in 1705, and overseer of the poor in 1707 and 1708. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1708, and became a member of the Old South Church, Feb. 4, 1693-4. He died March 9, 1708-9.

Pemberton's Corner, so called in Boston in 1708, was formed by the junction of Wing's Lane (Elm Street) and Dock Square.

**William Whitcomb** (1707), of Boston, son of James and Elizabeth Whitcomb, was born in Boston, April 21, 1680. He married, (1) July 4, 1706, Rebecca Townsend, who died April 18, 1708, and, (2) March 1, 1709-10, Mary Belither, of Boston.

He does not appear to have held any office in Boston.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1707 is as follows:—

"April 7. 1707. The Rev'd Mr. John Sparhawk was chosen to preach the Artillery Sermon and the commission officers were desired to request it of him. Accepted by him.

"By reason of indisposition as he was on the road, he came not to town, and Mr. Cotton Mather preach'd in his room."

Rev. John Sparhawk,<sup>1</sup> who was invited to preach the Artillery election sermon in 1705, but declined to do so, was again invited to preach the annual sermon in 1707. He accepted, but being taken ill on the way from Bristol, R. I., to Boston, he was unable to preach, and his place was filled by Rev. Cotton Mather. Mr. Sparhawk was the youngest son of Nathaniel and Prudence Sparhawk, and was born in Cambridge about 1672. He graduated at Harvard College in 1689, and settled at Bristol, R. I. Mr. Alden gives his epitaph thus: "Here lyeth interred the body of the Rev. Mr. John Sparhawk, a minister of this place 23 years last past, and died the 29 of April, 1718, in the 46 year of his age."

**Rev. Cotton Mather**,<sup>2</sup> then in the forty-fifth year of his age, supplied the place of Rev. Mr. Sparhawk, and delivered the Artillery sermon of 1707. He also preached the annual sermon before the Company in 1691. See page 289.

The officers elected were: Thomas Fitch (1700), captain; John Ballentine, Jr. (1694), lieutenant; Oliver Noyes (1699), ensign. Ezekiel Lewis (1707) was first sergeant; Benjamin Pemberton (1707), second sergeant; Benjamin Emmons, Jr. (1698), third sergeant; Seth Dwight (1702), fourth sergeant, and Henry Bridgham (1699), clerk.

All the sermons printed down to 1700 bear the name of the "Artillery Company" on the title-page, but the sermon printed in 1700 is delivered before the "Honourable Artillery Company." This was generally the style in the title-pages until 1738. The preacher of the sermon for 1720 uses the appellation "Ancient and Honourable,"

<sup>1</sup> "[1707] April 7. Mr. Sparhawk is again chosen to preach the Artillery Sermon."—*Swall Papers, Vol. II., p. 183.*

<sup>2</sup> *Memoir, New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1852, p. 9.*

and in that for 1737, the words "Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company" are once introduced. Dr. Colman's century sermon, in 1738, has on the title-page the words "Preached before the Honourable and Ancient Artillery Company." From that period to the present, all the sermons are said to have been preached before the "Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company."

The records of the Company do not mention either the words "Honorable" or "Ancient" until long after these appellations had been applied to them by the public. The *News-Letter*, in 1704, uses the phrase "Honourable Artillery Company," and in 1729 a committee of the Company, in its report, uses the title "honourable Artillery Company of the Province of the Massachusetts." The present name appears but once (in 1762) previous to the year 1789, when the Company was revived after the Revolution; the Legislature, in their militia laws, have since confirmed it to them.

In December, 1708, it was thought by the town that the by-laws already made and in force for the government of the town were insufficient or defective. There was neglect in the execution of these laws, and the need of a proper head, or town officer, to enforce them. It was therefore proposed that a committee of the freeholders and other inhabitants draw up a scheme, or "draught of a Charter of Incorporation for the better government of the town." The committee was to consist of thirty-one persons. The naming of the committee will best prove the influence, position, and prominence of the members of the Artillery Company, and the respect in which they were held.

The committee consisted of the following: Elisha Cooke, Elisha Hutchinson (1670), Isaac Addington, Samuel Sewall (1679), John Foster (1679), Penn Townsend (1674), John Clark, Paul Dudley, Col. Samuel Checkley (1678), Col. Adam Winthrop (1692), Capt. Thomas Fitch (1700), Capt. Thomas Hutchinson (1694), Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702), Capt. Samuel Keeling (1699), Capt. John Ballentine, Jr. (1694), Elder Joseph Bridgham (1674), Deacon John Marion (1691), Addington Davenport (1692), Thomas Newton (1702), Elisha Cooke, Jr. (1699), John George (1702), John White, Richard Draper, Francis Clarke (1701), together with the selectmen, viz., Daniel Oliver, Daniel Powning (1691), Thomas Cushing (1691), Stephen Minot, Francis Thresher, Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699), and Joseph Prout (1674).

Of the above-named committee of thirty-one persons, twenty-two were members of the Artillery Company. In the month of March following, notwithstanding the town voted thanks to the above-named committee "for their care and paines in drawing up the said Scheme," the scheme itself was negatived.

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1708 were: Ames Angier, James Davie, William Lowder.

"[1708] 7<sup>r</sup> [Sept.] 6, I Train under Capt Fitch, and by that means dine with Maj. Turner at Norths. He was I think the only Guest. Mr. N. Williams pray'd in the field in the morn; and Mr. Allen at his own Gate P. M. As were Shooting at the Mark, the Rain oblig'd us to put on our cloaks. Went to Capt. Lieut. Ballentines; made an excellent Volley at Lodging the Colours, Mad. Ballentine rec'd them in at window. . . .

"[1709] Monday, April 4. Gen'l Council, which prevented my Training in the Artillery. I sent my Pike, and went myself; and the Secretary

followed me into Shrimptons Lane, and took me off. Mr Pemberton had discouraged me before, but I had thought to have Train'd this once; had I not been thus call'd away. . . .

"[1709] May 2 Being Artillery day and Mr. Higginson dead, I put on my Mourning Rapier; and put a black Ribband into my little cane. . . . I din'd with the Artillery at Powell's, whether Maxwell came and warned me to Council at 3. There I waited all alone, as many times I do." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., pp. 235, 252, 254.



**Ames Angier** (1708), school-master, of Boston, son of Rev. Samuel and Hannah Angier, of Rehoboth, was born at Rehoboth, June 29, 1681, and graduated at Harvard College in 1701. His mother was the only daughter of Urian Oakes, president of Harvard College, 1675-81, who delivered the election sermon before the Artillery Company in 1672. Ames Angier (1708) was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1709. He married, May 20, 1708, Margaret Maccarty, of Boston, probably a daughter of Thaddeus (1681).

March 15, 1719-20, the town "voted: that Mr. Ames Anger be admitted a school-master at ye new writing school-house<sup>1</sup> at ye South," at a salary of one hundred pounds quarterly. Several petitions having been presented the town complaining of the South School and of its teacher, the town voted, March 13, 1721-2, that the selectmen, and such others as they may invite, visit the school, make inquiries, and report at the next general meeting. The selectmen invited Penn Townsend (1674), Jeremiah Allen (1694), and John Edwards (1699) to accompany them. They visited the South Writing-School, April 24, 1722, and, after examination, reported that Mr. Angier (1708) should not be continued as master. He died in 1722, in England.

**James Davie** (1708), merchant, of Boston, was probably a son of Capt. Humphrey Davie (1665), who came to Boston in 1662. After the decease of his first wife, Capt. Humphrey (1665) married Sarah, widow of James Richards, of Hartford, Conn. He died Feb. 18, 1689. By his wife, Sarah, he had two sons or more. The father came into possession of a large estate in Hartford, and it is quite probable that James (1708) also removed thither.

**William Lowder** (1708), an innholder, of Boston, married, May 2, 1706, Lydia Balston. He was a clerk of the market in Boston in 1710, a fireward in 1712, and in 1715 was elected a constable, but refused to serve. He "was discharged by the Justices in Court of General Sessions," at the April term. He was probably a storekeeper until July 11, 1726, when he petitioned the selectmen for a license as an innholder. It was granted, "at the horssheiw in the Comon." Probably this tavern was in the vicinity of Horse Pond, on the Common. July 27, 1730, Mr. Lowder (1708) petitioned for liberty "to remove his license of a tavernor from the house where he lives in Comon Street to the place where Mr. Mason's Grainery was," which was granted. The "Grainary belonging to Mr. Arthur Mason, butting on the Common or Training field," was used by the town in 1702 to store powder in, on account of its remoteness from the town, Mr. Lowder (1708) remained there but little more than three years, when he removed from Common Street "to the house wherein George Cyre dwelt in Marlborough Street," now Washington Street, between Summer and School streets. He remained here until his decease, in 1736, when administration was granted unto his son.

William Lowder (1708) was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1710, third sergeant in 1711, and lieutenant in 1723.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1708 is as follows:—

"April 5<sup>th</sup> 1708. The Rev'd Mr. Samuel Danforth was chosen to preach the

**Ames Angier** (1708). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**William Lowder** (1708). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> "This was the school established about 1717, at the corner of West and Common streets."—*Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.*

Artillery Sermon, and the then commission officers, with Mr Samuel Sewall, Esqr [1679] and Mr. Edward Bromfield Esqr [1679], were desired to request it of him.

"May 3<sup>rd</sup>, It was returned accepted pr him."

**Rev. Samuel Danforth**, of Taunton, who delivered the sermon before the Artillery Company in 1708, was a son of Rev. Samuel Danforth, of Roxbury (colleague with Rev. John Eliot), who delivered the sermon before the Company in 1667, and was a brother of Rev. John Danforth, of Dorchester, who delivered the sermon before the Company in 1693. Rev. Samuel, of Taunton, was born Dec. 6, 1666, and graduated at Harvard College in 1683. He was ordained in 1687, and married Hannah, daughter of Rev. James Allen, of Boston, who delivered the sermon before the Company in 1664. He died Nov. 14, 1727, and his widow, Dec. 3, 1761.

The officers elected were: Penn Townsend (1674), captain;  
**1709-10.** Habijah Savage (1699), lieutenant; Thomas Cushing (1691), ensign.  
 Henry Bridgham (1699) was first sergeant; Ames Angier (1708), second sergeant; Benjamin Simpson (1702), third sergeant; Ambrose Vincent (1703), fourth sergeant, and Henry Bridgham (1699), clerk.

In 1709, the British government directed the northern colonies to raise forces to unite with those of England, and attack Canada by sea and land; but the promised fleet and troops from England did not arrive, and the enterprise failed. Massachusetts had nine hundred men under arms near Boston, and many vessels employed, from May to October. The expense to the province was about twenty thousand pounds.

At the meeting of the freeholders, and other inhabitants of Boston, held at the town-house, Monday, Dec. 19, 1709, a petition was presented to the town, signed by Oliver Noyes (1699), Daniel Oliver, James Barnes, John George (1702), John Gerrish (1700), and Anthony Stoddard, of whom one half were members of the Artillery Company. Dr. Oliver Noyes, who joined the Artillery Company in 1699, was the originator and impelling spirit in the undertaking which was projected.

The petitioners asked permission of the town to build a wharf, at their own cost and charge, at the end of King Street, to be the width of the street, and "unto low-water mark, leaving a way thirty feet wide on one side as a highway, and keeping the end of the wharf free for the town, when they shall see reason to plant guns there for the defence of the town." The work was to be completed within four years. The petition is given entire in the Record Commissioners' Report of Boston Town Records, 1700-1728, pp. 66, 67.

The town thought favorably of the project, and appointed the following committee to consider the petition, viz.: Isaiah Tay, Jonas Clark, Samuel Marshall (1685), James Barnes, Daniel Powning (1691), Richard Draper, Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702), Capt. Ephraim Savage (1674), and Joseph Wadsworth. At the town meeting, March 13, 1709-10, the above committee presented its report, which was signed by Joseph Prout (1674): "T. Clerk in ye name of said committee." They recommended, and the town approved, that "the grant asked for by Capt. Oliver Noyes [1699] and Company be

"[1709] June 6 Artillery day. I went with Mr. John Williams of Deerfield to the funeral of Mr Pierpont at Reading."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. II., p. 257.

granted." This was the origin of Long Wharf, which appears so conspicuous on the maps of Boston from the time of Bonner's map, in 1714; especially on Paul Revere's "View of a part of Boston," showing Long Wharf, the buildings upon it, and the landing of the British troops in 1768.

Capt. Uring, in his *Voyages and Travels*, describes the Boston of 1709-21, the years of his first and last visits. He says, "The town is near two miles in length, and three-quarters of a mile broad in some places, in which are reckoned 4000 houses; most of them are built of brick and have about 18000 inhabitants. It is much the largest of any in America under the British government; they have built several wharfs; one of which goes by the name of the Long Wharf, and may well be called so, it running about 800 foot into the harbour, where large ships, with great ease, may both lade and unlade; on one side of which are warehouses almost the whole length of the wharf."

At the town meeting held March 13 and 14, 1709-10, it was voted, "That the Town will proceed to the choyce of a Committee to Consider about building a line of Fortification on the Neck, to make an Estimation of what may be the charge thereof, and also to Consider of the most convenient place & manner how the Sam: may be built So as to be a means of Safety to ye Town and to make report to the Town at their next meeting of what they Shall thinck proper for the Town to do therein." The following committee was chosen: Elisha Cooke, Samuel Sewall (1679), Thomas Brattle, Capt. Thomas Fitch (1700), and Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699). Aug. 31 next following, the inhabitants in town meeting voted that the line of defence should be made about two hundred feet to the southward of Mr. Samuel Phillips's (1693), "his land on ye Neck," and that the fortification should be faced with stone from the bottom of the ditch to the height of the rampart, and the parapet to be sod work. The line of defence was at the termination of Orange Street, corresponding to the present intersection of Dover and Washington streets.

At the meeting in March, 1709-10, Joseph Prout (1674) represented that he had served as town clerk for the space of nine years, and as town treasurer for seven years, and that the work of these offices had required so much care and attention as to exclude his doing anything else. The pay was small, and the town granted him one hundred and fifty dollars.

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1709 were: John Ellis, Samuel Gerrish, Joseph Hiller, John Hunt, Brattle Oliver, James Smith, Jr., Francis Wainwright.

**John Ellis** (1709), of Boston, son of Henry and Joanna Ellis, of Boston, was born Aug. 18, 1683. His father, Henry, was a mariner. He was a corder of wood in 1704, and was elected constable in 1717.

**Samuel Gerrish** (1709), bookseller, of Boston, son of Rev. Joseph and Ann (Waldron) Gerrish, of Wenham, married Mary, daughter of Hon. Samuel Sewall (1679). She died Nov. 16, 1710, aged nineteen years and twenty days. He married, second, May 8, 1712, Sarah, daughter of Capt. John Coney (1662). His mother was a daughter of Major Richard Waldron, of Dover. Samuel (1709) is designated by Mr. Savage as "the bookseller." He united with the Old South Church, March 14, 1707. He was elected constable of Boston March 9, 1723, but declined, paying the fine. March 11,

**John Ellis** (1709). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Samuel Gerrish** (1709). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



1733, he was chosen town clerk, and was annually re-elected until his decease. May 18, 1741, the warrant contained an article, to elect a town clerk in place of Samuel Gerrish (1700), deceased. He was also, from 1735 to his death, registrar of deeds for Suffolk County, and was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1712.

**Joseph Hiller** (1700), shopkeeper, of Boston, son of Joseph and Susanna Hiller, was born in Boston, Sept. 9, 1685. He was a brother of Benjamin Hiller (1714). He was granted a license as a retailer in Cornhill, Aug. 7, 1710, which was regranted. His house in Cornhill was on the easterly corner of Cornhill, now Washington Street, and Tyng's Alley. In 1719, he was one of the sureties for William Pitson, a new inhabitant. He was chosen, March 25, 1718, sealer of weights and measures for the town of Boston, in place of Capt. Ephraim Savage (1674), "who had moved out of town." Jan. 30, 1720-1, James Collison was chosen sealer of weights and measures, in place of Joseph Hiller (1700), deceased. The latter was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1713, ensign in 1718, and lieutenant in 1719.

**John Hunt** (1709), trader, of Boston, son of Capt. Thomas (1685) and Judith (Torrey) Hunt, was born in Boston in 1676. He married, June 14, 1711, Rebecca Shrimpton. His marriage was solemnized by Ephraim Hunt, Esq. They had nine children, one of whom, Elizabeth, married, Dec. 6, 1736, Col. Jacob Wendell (1733). Ephraim Hunt (1717) was a brother of Capt. John (1709).

Capt. John (1709) was clerk of the market in 1712; constable in 1713; tithingman and a member of the militia in 1719 and 1722; selectman from 1727 to 1730; overseer of the poor from 1731 to 1736 inclusive, and a trustee, March 29, 1728, of the town's proportion of the sixty thousand pounds granted by the General Assembly. There were five trustees charged with the loaning and care of this fund, four of whom were members of the Artillery Company.

March 25, 1735, Capt. Hunt (1709) gave one hundred pounds toward the erection of the new workhouse. He was a man of considerable wealth, and noted for his generosity. He was the owner of the brigantine "Supply," recorded as one of the vessels hailing from Boston in 1748. In 1734, Capt. Hunt (1709) was a member of that select Fire Society in Boston, incorporated in 1717, whose membership was limited to twenty persons. He became a member of the Old South Church, Nov. 22, 1730; was appointed a justice of the peace, June 27, 1735, and served as third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1713.

**Brattle Oliver** (1709), merchant, of Boston, son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Brattle) Oliver, of Boston, was born June 1, 1689. He was a grandson of Peter (1643), and a brother of Nathaniel, Jr. (1701). His mother was a daughter of Capt. Thomas Brattle (1675). He became a member of the Old South Church, Feb. 16, 1728-9. Brattle Oliver (1709) married, March 11, 1713-4, Anne Gillam.

But little is known of him. In 1734, he mortgaged some real estate on Fort Hill to his brother, James. The last record found concerning him is the fact of his forbidding the marriage banns of his eldest daughter, in 1736.

**Joseph Hiller** (1709). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Hunt** (1709). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Hunt Genealogy.

**Brattle Oliver** (1709). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Descendants of Thomas Brattle.



**James Smith, Jr.** (1709), merchant, of Boston, son of James and Prudence Smith, was born in Boston, June 12, 1689. He was constable of Boston in 1715. He died Aug. 4, 1769, aged eighty years, and was buried in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground. His gravestone says, "Æ. 82." His widow, Elizabeth, married Ralph Inman. She died May 25, 1785, aged fifty-nine years.

**Francis Wainwright** (1709), merchant, of Ipswich and Boston, son of Francis and Phillippa Wainwright, was born in Ipswich, Aug. 25, 1664, and graduated at Harvard College in 1686. He married Sarah Whipple, March 12, 1686-7. Their son, John, died in his eighteenth year, when a senior at Harvard College. Francis (1709) partook of the paternal military spirit, and when quite young joined the militia of Essex County, passed through the various positions, and was promoted to be colonel. He was also town clerk, representative to the General Court, justice, commissioner, and collector of excise for Essex County. His wife died March 16, 1709, aged thirty-eight years. He made an engagement to marry Mrs. Elizabeth Hirst, of Salem, but died Aug. 3, 1711, before the marriage was consummated. He bequeathed five pounds to the First Church. His estate was appraised at one thousand nine hundred and fourteen pounds.

He never held an office in the Artillery Company. In the unsuccessful expedition against Port Royal, he was second in command.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1709 is as follows:—

"April 4. 1709. The Rev'd Mr. Joseph Gerrish was chosen to preach the Artillery Sermon and the then Commission officers, with Capt Samuel Sewall, Esq [1679], Colo Samuel Checkley [1678] and Lt Colo. Adam Winthrop [1694] were desired to request it of him.

"May 2<sup>d</sup>. It was returned. Not accepted by him; and the Rev'd Mr. Ebenezer Pemberton was chosen to preach the Artillery Sermon, and the last mentioned Committee was desired to request it of him."

Rev. Joseph Gerrish, who was invited to preach the Artillery sermon in 1709, but who declined, was a brother of John Gerrish, of Dover, the father of Capt. John Gerrish (1700) and of Benjamin Gerrish (1714). Rev. Joseph and his wife, Ann, daughter of Major Richard Waldron, of Dover, were the parents of Samuel Gerrish (1709), of Boston. He settled over the church in Wenham in 1673, and died Jan. 6, 1720.

**Rev. Ebenezer Pemberton**, the preacher of the sermon before the Company in 1709, also delivered a sermon before it at its June anniversary in 1701. The latter was printed, and appears in a volume of Mr. Pemberton's sermons, but is misleading on account of a typographical error, which states that it was delivered on "Jan. 1," instead of June 1, 1701. See page 334.

**James Smith, Jr.** (1709.) **AUTHORITIES:** Boston Records; King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.

**Francis Wainwright** (1709). **AUTHORITIES:** Hurd's Hist. of Essex Co., Vol. I, Art., Ipswich; Savage's Gen. Dict.

"Aug 3, 1711. Col. Francis Wainwright dies at his own house at Ipswich. Left Salem for his last July 25, the day before his first appointed Wedding-day; which Appointment was remov'd to the last of July. He was taken Sick at Ipswich on the Lords Day, July 29, and died on the Friday follow-

ing at 10 M; his Bride being with him. Tis the most compleat and surprising Disappointment that I have been acquainted with. Wedding Cloaths, to a Neck-cloth and Night-cap, laid ready in the Bride-chamber, with the Brides attire; Great Provision made for Entertainment; Guests, several came from Boston and entertain'd at Mr. Hirst's; but no Bridegroom, no wedding. He was laid in a new Tomb of his own making lately; and his dead wife taken out of another and laid with him."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. II, p. 320.*

The officers elected were: John Ballentine (1682), captain; Samuel Keeling (1699), lieutenant; Edward Martyn (1702), ensign. Richard Bill (1707) was first sergeant; Daniel Epes (1706), second sergeant; Jonathan Loring (1704), third sergeant; Richard Hall (1707), fourth sergeant, and William Lowder (1708), clerk.

The members recruited in 1710 were: Robert Calfe, Jr., George Robinson, William Tidcomb, Abiel Walley.

**Robert Calfe, or Calef, Jr.** (1710), merchant, of Boston, and later of Roxbury, son of Robert, of Roxbury, was born about 1678, and therefore was only about fourteen years of age at the time of the witchcraft delusion, and was but twenty-two years of age in 1700. Mr. Whitman (1810), in his history of the Artillery Company, edition of 1842, p. 253, and Mr. Savage, in the *Genealogical Dictionary*, Vol. I., p. 329, credit him with being the author of *More Wonders of the Invisible World*, printed in London in 1700, the authorship of which, as Mr. Drake claims in his *History of Roxbury*, should be awarded to Robert Calfe, Sr. The latter was born in 1648, and died, says his gravestone, "April 13, 1719, aged 71." The name of the author given on the title-page is "Robert Calfe," and not Robert Calfe, Jr.

Rev. Cotton Mather drew up an account of the witch trials, and published it with the title, *Wonders of the Invisible World*. Mr. Calfe replied with *More Wonders of the Invisible World*. The latter gave great offence, and was the occasion of bitter and angry feelings on the part of the Mathers. Rev. Increase Mather, president of Harvard College, caused the "wicked book" to be publicly burned in the college yard, "the scene of the holocaust being the area between Massachusetts, Harvard, and Stoughton Halls." The book was reprinted in Salem in 1823. Mr. Savage remarks, "Ever honored will be his name for . . . giving the history of the baneful superstition of 1692; that served to prevent a renewal of the horrid tragedies that the patrons of the delusion, unsatisfied with their sad experience, would surely have attempted."

Robert Calfe, Jr. (1710), married, Dec. 23, 1699, Margaret, daughter of James Buxton, of Newton, and had at least eight children.

Mr. Whitman (1810) gives the date of the death of the Mr. Calfe, Sr., for the decease of the junior. The latter died between April, 1722, and Feb. 18 next following, when his will of Jan. 2, 1720, according to Mr. Savage, was probated.

Robert, Jr. (1710), was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1712.

**George Robinson** (1710), carver, of Boston, son of George (1694) and Elizabeth Robinson, was born in Boston, Dec. 28, 1680. He married Sarah Maverick, April 7, 1698. He was a tithing-man and member of a Boston militia company in 1715. He died in August, 1737.

**William Tidcomb, or Titcomb** (1710), of Newbury, the eldest son of William Tidcomb, was born Aug. 14, 1659. He is called "Sergeant William" in the Newbury records. He married, May 15, 1683, Ann Cottle. He died Feb. 4, 1740, and his widow died Aug. 15, 1747.

**Robert Calfe, Jr.** (1710.) **AUTHORITIES:** Whitman's *Hist. A. and H. A. Company*, Ed. 1842; *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 1876, 1884.

**George Robinson** (1710). **AUTHORITY:** Boston Records.

**William Tidcomb** (1710). **AUTHORITIES:** Savage's *Gen. Dict.*; *Early New Eng. Families*.

Mr. Coffin, in his history of Newbury, mentions Mr. Tidcomb (1710) as an assessor in 1716, and, Sept. 20, 1721, "Ensign William Tidcomb was one of a committee to receive and to loan the town's part of the fifty thousand pounds — granted by Massachusetts, July 13, 1720." This was the famous "land-bank" scheme, which resulted so injuriously to the estates of many persons. Mr. Whitman (1810) calls him "Col. William Tidcomb," and after quoting from Mr. Hutchinson's history, concludes, "'He was killed,' says Farmer, 'in the French war of 1755.'"

It was Col. Moses, son of William (1710), who was at Louisburg in 1745, and who was killed in the French war of 1755. As Col. Moses was born June 19, 1700, he could not have joined the Artillery Company in 1710. William Tidcomb (1710) was not at Louisburg in 1745, as his death occurred five years previous to that expedition.

**Abiel Walley** (1710), merchant, of Boston, son of John (1671) and Elizabeth (Alden) Walley, was born Aug. 30, 1686. His mother was a daughter of the second John Alden. Abiel Walley (1710) married, June 17, 1710, Margaret Corwin.

He was a constable of the town of Boston in 1715 and 1723. May 25, 1735, he contributed, "to be paid in goods," thirty pounds towards the erection of the new work-house. He resided on Hanover Street in 1737. He was a selectman of Boston in 1746 and 1747, and was on several important committees, visiting schools, instructing representatives, etc. He was moderator of the town meeting, June 29, 1747, and became a member of the Old South Church, March 3, 1716, but "took dismission to the New North Church."

May 22, 1741, he was chosen one of a committee to wait on his Excellency the Governor, "desiring that some measures may be taken to protect such coasters as may be bringing provisions, wood, etc., from being impressed on board of his Majesty's ships of way, laying in the harbor."

May 15, 1750, he was chairman of a committee to prepare a memorial "to the Great and General Court, for the repeal of the law lately passed," laying a duty on tea, coffee, coaches, chaises, etc. The report of the committee was accepted, and it was voted that "an agent be also chose by the town to appear in their behalf at home to prevent said acts being confirmed by his Majesty." Christopher Kilby, Esq., of London, was chosen agent. Of the committee of five, who wrote the vivid portraiture of the distressed condition of Boston in 1752, as given in the Report of Record Commissioners (City Document No. 170, pp. 220-222), three were members of the Artillery Company, viz.: Abiel Walley (1710), Daniel Henchman (1712), and John Phillips (1725). The protests were the same as those in defence of which the colonies resorted to arms. The document is stamped with as great a spirit of firmness and determination as those written by the patriots of a quarter of a century later. In these public concerns, Mr. Walley (1710) took a great interest, and he bore a prominent and honorable part in opposing the heavy burdens levied by the British government.

He was appointed a justice of the peace and of the quorum for Suffolk County, Nov. 5, 1740, and was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1711. He died without issue, and his will was proved Aug. 31, 1759.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1710 is as follows:—

"April 3. 1710. A committee chosen and Impowered by the Artillery Company of

**Abiel Walley** (1710). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Hist. Cat. of Old South Church.



the Massachusetts to Treat with, and lease out to any Person that may present [himself], the farm belonging to said Company, not exceeding the term of twenty-one years; viz: Capt Penn Townsend [1674], Capt Habijah Savage [1699], Ensign Thomas Cushing [1691], Colo Elisha Hutchinson [1670], Capt Samuel Sewall [1679], Colo. Samuel Checkley [1678], Capt Samuel Keeling [1699].

"The Rev'd Mr. Increase Mather was chosen to preach the Artillery Sermon, and the then Commission Officers were desired to request it of him. May 4<sup>th</sup>. It was accepted by him."

**Rev. Increase Mather**, of Boston, who preached before the Company forty-five years before, in 1665, delivered the Artillery election sermon<sup>1</sup> in 1710. A sketch of his life will be found under that date. See page 204.

One of his successors, Rev. Dr. Pond, speaks of Mr. Mather as "a man richly endowed by nature, richly furnished by education, and deservedly numbered with the most pious, learned, and industrious men of New England."

The elected officers were: Habijah Savage (1699), captain; Edward Winslow (1700), lieutenant; Edward Hutchinson (1702), ensign. Thomas Salter (1704) was first sergeant; Richard Proctor (1699), second sergeant; William Lowder (1708), third sergeant; Abiel Walley (1710), fourth sergeant, and Jonathan Williams (1711), clerk.

This was the year of a conflagration, called the "great fire," until eclipsed by that of March 20, 1760. Mr. Whitmore, in the Old State House Memorial, edition 1887, says, "To add to the general depression, a great fire in Boston occurred 'about 7 or 8 o'clock of the night between the 2d and 3d of October.' 'It broke out in an old Tenement within a back Yard in Cornhill (*i. e.*, Washington Street), near the First meeting-house, occasioned by the carelessness of a poor Scottish woman (one Mary Morse), by using Fire near a parcel of Ocum, Chips, and other combustible Rubbish.' This spot was in or near Williams Court. 'All the houses on both sides of Cornhill [Washington Street] from School Street to what is called the stone-shop in Dock-square, all the upper part of King Street [State Street] on the south and north side, together with the Town House, and what was called the Old Meeting House above it, were consumed to ashes.' " Thus ended the first town-house in Boston, originally suggested by, and largely erected through the thoughtful generosity of, Robert Keayne (1637), the founder of the Artillery Company.

One hundred buildings were consumed, and one hundred and ten families were turned out of doors. Snow's History of Boston says, "The house in which the fire took is said to have belonged to Capt. Ephraim Savage [1674], who then lived in Williams Court." How many members of the Artillery Company suffered directly by the fire is not known. Two petitions, however, containing some of the names of the sufferers, are on file in the clerk's office, Boston. Included therein are the names of Samuel Lynde

<sup>1</sup> "[1710] Second day, April 3 [during a session of the council in the town-house], As we look toward the Artillery passing by, I said to Mr. Pemberton the passage of Ulysses: '*Si mea cum vestris*

*valuisse nota Pelasgi.*' Before we went away word was brought that Dr. Mather was chosen to preach the Artillery Sermon. Mr. Pemberton said, 'Must choose agen.' " — *Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 279.*





THE OLD TOWN-HOUSE



(1691), Ephraim Savage (1674), Henry Deering (1682), Ezekiel Lewis (1707), Thomas Phillips (1694), and Enoch Greenleaf (1680). The saved goods, unclaimed, were placed by the selectmen in the care of Edward Hutchinson (1702).

The town took immediate steps toward procuring a new town-house, and addressed the Legislature, by which a joint committee was selected, viz.: Elisha Hutchinson (1670) and Penn Townsend (1674), councillors; Addington Davenport (1692), Samuel Thaxter (1728), and Capt. Phips (1681), deputies, with two persons representing Boston, viz.: Thomas Brattle and William Payne (1691), which committee, under the direction of the Legislature and the town of Boston, supervised the erection of a town-house, — the present Old State House, so called, — at the head of State Street.

In 1711, Timothy Thornton (1691), Capt. Thomas Hutchinson (1694), and Capt. Edward Martyn (1702), were chosen by the town, with full power, to purchase land for the enlargement of the North burying-place. A purchase was accordingly made of land adjacent, belonging to Hon. Samuel Sewall (1679), for one hundred and twenty pounds.

The line of defence, or the fortification, proposed across the Neck, was a matter of absorbing interest to the town. At the August meeting, it was determined that the "line of Defence be forthwith made," and that Col. Giles Dyer (1680), Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702), Messrs. Richard Draper, Joseph Wadsworth, and Joshua Gee were appointed a committee to manage the affair of making it. A thousand pounds were appropriated for it, and the field-officers of the militia of the town were desired to make suggestions in regard to it, as was also his Excellency the Governor. The field-officers of the militia were veteran members of the Artillery Company.

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1711 were: Jeremiah Belknap, Benjamin Bridge, Barrat Dyer, John Eustace, Ephraim Fenno, John Gibbins, John Goldthwait, Nathaniel Goodwin, Samuel Green, Estes Hatch, Samuel Haugh, Richard Hunnewell, Ebenezer Lowell, William Parkman, Thomas Phillips, Habijah Savage, James Tileston, James Varney, Ezekiel Walker, Nathaniel Wheeler, Jonathan Williams.

**Jeremiah Belknap** (1711), leather-breeches maker and leather-dresser, of Boston, son of Joseph (1692) and Deborah (Fitch) Belknap, and grandson of Joseph Belknap (1658), was born in Boston, Jan. 1, 1687. Jeremiah (1711) was a half-brother of Nicholas (1725), and of Abraham (1735). He married Sarah Fosdick, born Feb. 19, 1684-5, sister of Lieut. James Fosdick (1722). Jeremiah (1711) and Sarah (Fosdick) Belknap had two sons, Joseph (1742), named for his paternal grandfather, and Jeremiah (1745), named for his maternal grandfather, Jeremiah Fitch, of Boston. They were the grandparents of Jeremy Belknap, born June 4, 1744 (Harv. Coll., 1762), "the amiable and learned historian of New Hampshire," and author of valuable volumes of American biography. Jeremiah (1711) and his wife were members of the Old South Church. He was admitted to membership March 9, 1711-2, and she, the 8th of April preceding. He followed the trade of his father and grandfather, and acquired a considerable property. He was a man of marked ability, and took a prominent part in town affairs and public matters. He held minor town offices for twelve years, between 1716 and 1741; was one of the purchasers of grain for the town from March 11, 1739, to 1746; was one of the committee to raise, by taxation, ten thousand pounds for the building of batteries and fortifications for the town in 1744; frequently made the annual visit to the public

**Jeremiah Belknap** (1711). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

schools, with the clergy and others, and was selectman in 1747. His residence was on Cornhill (Washington Street) in 1723. Sept. 27, 1725, liberty was granted him by the selectmen to build a tomb on the south line of the South burying-place. The tomb was No. 33. He died in 1751, aged sixty-four years.

**Benjamin Bridge** (1711), tailor, of Boston, son of Samuel (1679) and Hannah Bridge, and brother of Capt. Ebenezer Bridge (1717), was born Feb. 18, 1684. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1715, and ensign in 1728. In the latter year, July 4, he was one of the coroner's jury "who being Sworn, upon their oaths say, that Benjamin Woodbridge came to his death" with a sword in the hands of Henry Phillips, on Boston Common, July 3, 1728. He died in June, 1739.

**Barrat Dyer** (1711) was a cooper, of Boston. He was a tithing-man and member of a Boston military company in 1707 and 1708; measurer of grain in 1707-8 and 1709; constable in 1711, but resigned; scavenger in 1723, 1726, and 1734, and culler of staves in 1744. In 1708, the selectmen appointed him a gauger and viewer of casks made for tar, pitch, turpentine, and rosin. In April, 1710, he was ordered by the selectmen to remove the fence which he and William Keen (1702) had erected in Pierce's Alley, now known as Change Avenue. Liberty was granted Barrat Dyer, Sept. 6, 1726, to build a tomb "on the new line in the South burying-place." He presented a clock to the New Brick Church. He died Dec. 7, 1753.

A Barrat Dyer married Elizabeth Bull, Dec. 21, 1730.

**John Eustace**, or **Eustis** (1711), housewright, of Boston, son of William Eustis, was born Dec. 8, 1659. He married (1) Elizabeth Morse, who died about Nov. 20, 1714; (2) April 4, 1715, Mercy Tay, who died April 3, 1718, and, (3) July 7, 1719, Mary Moulds. He died April 5, 1722, and was buried in King's Chapel Burial-Ground. His name is spelled Eustis on his gravestone. He resided on Back, now Salem, Street, in 1722, where he owned two houses, inventoried at nine hundred pounds.

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1712.

**Ephraim Fenno** (1711) was of Boston. He married Elizabeth Smith, July 22, 1706. In the selectmen's records of 1708, reference is made to the house of Ephraim Fenno (1711), at the South End. Robert Calfe, Jr. (1710), was his neighbor. July 15, 1718, petition for license as an innholder was disallowed; but Aug. 5, 1718, he was licensed to sell ale, beer, and cider within doors, "at his house in Marlborough [now Washington] Street." In 1720, he was licensed as an innholder. He again applied in 1736 for a license, but it was disallowed. He was clerk of the market in 1712, constable in 1713, sealer of leather in 1724, 1725, and 1726.

His son, Ephraim, Jr., was a member of the Old South Church, and not Ephraim (1711), as Mr. Whitman (1810) states.

**Benjamin Bridge** (1711). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Barrat Dyer** (1711). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Boston *Post-Boy*; Rev. Mr. Ware's Hist. Discourse.

**John Eustace** (1711). AUTHORITY: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1878, p. 205.

**Ephraim Fenno** (1711). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



**John Gibbins** (1711), apothecary, of Boston, son of Lieut. William Gibbins (1691) and Anne, his wife, was born Jan. 11, 1687, and graduated at Harvard College in 1706. He married Rebecca Gray, Oct. 4, 1711. He was clerk of the market in 1712, and was elected constable in 1715, but declined to serve. Feb. 23, 1736, he petitioned for a tomb in the South burial-ground, and Jan. 10, 1738, the selectmen granted tomb No. 85 to "Dr. John Gibbins [1711]."

He was one of the founders of Trinity Church, 1734.

**John Goldthwait** (1711), a brick mason, of Boston, son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Cheever) Goldthwait, was born in Salem in 1677. He was a grandson of the celebrated Ezekiel Cheever. He married Sarah Hopkins, March 13, 1701. She died Oct. 31, 1715.

He was elected constable in 1713, but declined; and served as tithing-man in 1721, clerk of the market in 1724, scavenger in 1725, and in 1726 was appointed, with others, by Edward Bromfield (1707) and others, and by the selectmen of Boston, an appraiser, to make a true "apprizement of the tenements standing on the towns land and wharf, on the South side of town dock, now in the possession of Mr Bromfield [1707], Belcher and others." He was called in 1708 to appraise a partition brick wall near the Swinging Bridge, and in 1712 to examine chimneys, which would indicate that he was a mason. Feb. 25, 1716, he was directed to make such alterations in the chimney of Mr. Sheaffe's house as were necessary, and March 25, 1717, the selectmen agreed that "Mr. John Goldthwait [1711] be employed in carrying up a Small Stack of chimnyes" at Mr. Sheaffe's house.

In 1735, he contributed thirty pounds in mason work toward the erection of the workhouse. Tradition says that he lived at the North End.

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1721; ensign in 1730, and its lieutenant in 1732. Of his sons, Joseph joined the Artillery Company in 1732 and Benjamin in 1740.

He died June 25, 1766, aged eighty-eight years and six months.

**Nathaniel Goodwin** (1711) was of Boston. He was not born or married in Boston. He appears in Boston in 1696, and had wife, Elizabeth. Their first child was Nathaniel, born Nov. 23, 1696. Nathaniel (1711) married, (2) July 6, 1708, Bridget Salisbury.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1718, and its ensign in 1724, and became a member of the Old South Church, Sept. 27, 1730.

**Samuel Green** (1711), cooper, of Boston, son of James (1674) and Rebecca (Jones) Green, of Boston, was born in Boston, July 20, 1680. His mother was a daughter of Thomas Jones (1643), of Dorchester. He married Elizabeth Brazier, Jan. 27, 1703. His brother, Richard, joined the Artillery Company in 1694. Samuel (1711) was by trade a cooper, but Aug. 27, 1711, he applied for a license as an innholder, which was disallowed. Nov. 24, 1713, he was appointed by the selectmen to board sloops or vessels bringing corn, and see to the delivery of the corn, according to the by-laws of the town, — "so much to each family." His last petition for a license was July 9, 1714, where he is named "Samuel Green. Coop<sup>r</sup>."

**John Gibbins** (1711). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Goldthwait** (1711). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1880, p. 94; MS. of Joseph Cutler Whitney.

**Samuel Green** (1711). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Estes Hatch** (1711), of Dorchester, was born in 1689. He married, Nov. 9, 1716, Mary Rolfe.<sup>1</sup>

Col. Hatch (1711) was a prominent man in town affairs; held the principal military offices, and at the time of his decease was a "brigadier-general of horse." He was captain of the Tenth Company in the Third Massachusetts Regiment at Louisburg, in 1745.

The Artillery Company has in its museum a valuable relic in the form of a mourning ring, made in memory of Gen. Estes Hatch (1711). It is of fine gold, panelled on the outside, and inscribed with the words, " | B<sup>d</sup> Gen | E : Hatch | OB : 6 | Feb | 1759 | Æ 70 |."

**Samuel Haugh** (1711), of Boston, son of Samuel and Ann (Rainsford) Haugh, was born Feb. 1, 1676. "Samuel Haugh [1711] was indentured to Mr. Thomas Savage [1665]."<sup>2</sup> He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1713, and is said to have died "before middle age."

**Richard Hunnewell** (1711), master-mariner, of Boston, son of Ambrose Hunnewell (1695), was born in 1681. He married (1) Sarah —, who died July 23, 1723, and, (2) March 12, 1724, Elizabeth Bradford. He was chosen to town office, March 12, 1710-1, and also the year following. He resided in North Street in 1710. Oct. 25, 1715, he presented to the selectmen his account of disbursements in laying a common sewer, three hundred and fourteen feet long, from the common sewer in North Street, through Charter Street to Thomas Chitney's, which was approved by the selectmen, and assessed upon the property holders. It amounted to £35 7s.

He died Nov. 27, 1742, aged sixty-one years, and was entombed in King's Chapel Burial-Ground.

**Ebenezer Lowell** (1711), cordwainer, of Boston, son of John and Hannah (Proctor) Lowell, was born in 1675. Ebenezer (1711) married, Jan. 30, 1694, Elizabeth Shaler, and they had at least two sons, John and Ebenezer, who grew up. The father was clerk of the market in 1704, constable in 1707, and, in 1711, was licensed to sell "strong drink." He died before Sept. 11, 1711, and his widow, Elizabeth "Lowle," petitioned the selectmen for a license, which she received in 1711 and 1712. In 1713, objection was made to its renewal, and, July 23, Philip Bongarden, having married Mrs. Lowell, petitioned for the license she had, and it was granted.

The son, Ebenezer, remained in Boston, sold "strong drink" for several years, and,

**Estes Hatch** (1711). AUTHORITIES: Chase's Hist. of Haverhill, p. 220; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1871, p. 258, and 1893.

**Samuel Haugh** (1711). AUTHORITY: Eaton's Hist. of Reading, p. 87.

"[1717, June] 9. Mr. Sam. Haugh buried; Mr. Edwards, Ellis, Williams Retailer were 3 of the Bearers. I had a scarf. Mr Eliakim Hutchinson & I follow'd next after the Mourners, 42 upon the Coffin." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 132.

**Richard Hunnewell** (1711). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; King's Chapel Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.

**Ebenezer Lowell** (1711). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Pilgrims of Boston, by Bridgman.

<sup>1</sup> Mary Rolfe was a daughter of Rev. Benjamin Rolfe, of Haverhill. Aug. 29, 1708, the Indians

attacked Haverhill. Mr. Rolfe was killed by the Indians, and his daughters, Mary and Elizabeth, were saved by the sagacity of Hagar, a negro slave, who was an inmate of the family. She carried the children into the cellar, covered them with two tubs, and then concealed herself. They thus escaped the brutality of the savages. Elizabeth became the wife of Rev. Samuel Checkley, who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1725, and was the mother of the wife of Samuel Adams, the patriot.

<sup>2</sup> "Thursday, November the Sixth, 1690, at my House in Boston Samuel Haugh and Mr. Thomas Savage mutually sign'd and deliver'd Indentures to each other: Sam. to serve him from Oct 7 last, Seven years and six Moneths." — *Sewall Papers*, Vol. I., p. 333.

in 1742, was allowed to sell "Flour, Butter, Cheese & Rice" in stall No. 10, south side of the market. The son, John, graduated at Harvard College in 1721, was ordained as pastor of the First Church in Newbury, Jan. 12, 1726, and held that position forty-two years. John, son of John, and grandson of Ebenezer (1711), graduated at Harvard College in 1760, and became distinguished as a judge. Several eminent benefactors of the Commonwealth are the descendants of Ebenezer (1711).

**William Parkman** (1711), joiner, of Boston, son of William and Elizabeth Parkman, was born in Boston, Dec. 19, 1685. He married, May 5, 1708, Hannah Goodwin. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1717. Dec. 12, 1709, "the selectmen let unto William Parkman, Jr. (1711), a strip of land belonging to the North Battery, on the easterly side of his dwelling-house, at one shilling per annum." Feb. 27, 1709-10, the selectmen engaged Mr. Parkman (1711) to collect and receive the wharfage and dockage fees at Merry's Point. In 1732, he resided in Ship, now North, Street. A strip of land, eighty feet long and two feet wide, was sold by him to the town in 1734, to widen Battery Alley, now Battery Street, for the sum of forty shillings.

He was scavenger in 1721, 1723, and 1725; constable in 1721; assessor in 1731; measurer of boards and timber, and viewer of shingles, in 1732, 1744, 1745, and 1746. June 17, 1734, William Parkman (1711) and others petitioned the town for liberty to lay down and maintain, for twenty or thirty years, good and sufficient ways for the landing of passengers from Winnisimmet, at the town's slip, at the lower end of North Street. The petition was granted, and the term was fixed at thirty years.

Probably William Parkman, Sr., was the person of that name who was one of the founders of the New North Church in 1712, but William, Jr. (1711), was a member of that church, a deacon, and its last ruling elder. He was elected to the latter office in 1743, and died in 1775 or 1776, in the country.

**Thomas Phillips** (1711), was a tavern-keeper, of Boston. He married, Dec. 31, 1702, Rebecca Blaney.

Thomas Phillips (1711) first appears as an innholder in 1709, when, June 9, the selectmen billeted ninety of the soldiers, "now in her Majesty's service upon this present expedition," within the town of Boston. These soldiers were assigned to the several houses of entertainment, and five were billeted to Thomas Phillips (1711). The town records inform us as to his tavern and its situation. Oct. 31, 1712, Thomas Phillips (1711) received liberty "to dig up the highway from his dwelling-house, being the Sun Tavern, to the dock, which is about thirty feet," to lay a drain. Feb. 21, 1714-5, Thomas Phillips (1711) was notified by the selectmen to remove "the heap of dirt lying in the highway, before or nigh his house, at the entrance of Corn Market, which hath been made by dirt from his yard."

The dwelling-house of Thomas Phillips (1711) was the original Sun Tavern, on Dock Square. He kept it, certainly, from 1708 until 1724, when he was succeeded by Samuel Mears, who was followed by Andrew Halliburton and James Day (1733), and probably others. The Sun Tavern was on the corner of Dock Square and what is now Faneuil Hall Square.

The will of Thomas Phillips was proved in 1726.

**William Parkman** (1711). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Drake's Hist. of Boston.

**Thomas Phillips** (1711). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



**Habijah Savage** (1711) was the same as Habijah Savage (1699). See page 322.

**James Tileston** (1711), housewright, of Boston, son of Timothy and Sarah (Bridgman) Tileston, of Dorchester, was born in Dorchester, July 2, 1678. He was a brother of Col. Thomas Tileston (1724), of Dorchester. James (1711) was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1713, its ensign in 1723, and one of the founders of the new Brick Church, Boston. He was a constable in 1712, viewer of shingles, boards, etc., in 1716, 1717, 1719, 1720, 1724, and 1725, and fence-viewer in 1718, 1721, and 1728. In 1714, he resided on Bennet Street. Tileston Street perpetuates the name of this family. He died prior to February, 1740.

**James Varney** (1711) was a bricklayer in Boston. He came to Boston about 1700, and married, Nov. 6, 1701, Mercy Hiskett, who died May 22, 1702. His name appears again in the records in 1706, and he had, by wife Jane, James Varney, born Aug. 8, 1706.

James (1711) was a constable of Boston in 1717. In 1708, he received official notice to "make his Brick wall in high conformable to his Lycence." Jan. 21, 1725, he received permission of the selectmen to erect a dwelling-house on Copp's Hill, fronting Sheafe Street.

Mr. James Varney (1711) died "Jan. 24, 1752, aged 74," and his widow, Jean, died "April 8, 1752, aged 80." Both were interred in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

**Ezekiel Walker** (1711), currier, of Boston, son of Samuel, of Woburn, was born March 5, 1679. He married (1) Sarah Wyman, and, (2) Aug. 7, 1701, Ruth Cook. He was constable of Boston in 1712, and sealer of leather from 1714 to 1722 inclusive, except in 1719. He became a member of the Old South Church, May 11, 1707. Sept. 24, 1716, the selectmen "Voted, That Mr Ezekiel Walker [1711] be desired and he is here by Impowered to Prosecut Such persons as shall transgress any of the Laws of this Province against Intemperance, Immorality & Prophaness, and for Reformation of Manners." The next month, Oct. 23, he applied to the selectmen for a retailer's license, but his petition was dismissed "as out of season." His application of July 5, 1717, for a license was refused, but subsequently was allowed to sell beer and cider in Queen (now Court) Street; and in March following, the selectmen "Voted. A period to Mesu'rs John Marion [1691] & Ezekiel Walkers [1711] Service in Prosecuting the Breach of Laws & Town orders, untill further Order." They were allowed, beginning May 29, "to prosecute the breach of the laws," for one "moneth." Ezekiel (1711) continued his cider and beer business. He died before June, 1724, when the license was granted Ruth Walker, his widow.

**Nathaniel Wheeler** (1711), by wife, Mary, had five children born in Boston between 1699 and 1712. He was clerk of the market in Boston in 1715.

**Jonathan Williams** (1711), merchant, of Boston, son of Robert, was born Sept. 22, 1673, and died in Boston, March 27, 1737. His parents were members of the First Church, and of that Jonathan (1711) and Jonathan, Jr. (1729), were deacons. Jonathan Williams (1711) began life as a wine cooper, and carried on that business in Boston for

**James Tileston** (1711). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Dorchester Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1859.

**James Varney** (1711). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, by Bridgman.

**Ezekiel Walker** (1711). AUTHORITIES: Boston and Woburn Records.

**Jonathan Williams** (1711). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



some years. His first wife was Mary Hunlock, a granddaughter of Samuel Sendall, by whom he had two sons, Jonathan (1729) and Sendall (1738), and a daughter, Mary. Mary (Hunlock) Williams died in September, 1707, and Jonathan Williams (1711) married, June 24, 1708, Mrs. Rebecca Townsend. She was the widow of James Townsend, of Boston, wine merchant. Jonathan Williams (1711) succeeded to the business of Mr. Townsend, and sold wines, etc., at the famous wine store, under the sign of the "Blackboy and Butt," in Cornhill (Washington Street), Boston. By his second wife, Deacon Williams (1711) had several children, one of whom, Rebecca, married Thaddeus Mason, and they were the grandparents of the distinguished Rev. Thaddeus Mason Harris, of Dorchester.

He was clerk of the Artillery Company from 1711 to 1713 inclusive, and second sergeant in 1714.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1711 is as follows:—

"April 2. 1711. The Rev. Mr. Nehemiah Walter was chosen to preach the Artillery Sermon and the then Commission Officers, with Colo Samuel Checkley [1678], were desired to request it of him.

"May 7<sup>th</sup>. It was accepted by him."

**Rev. Nehemiah Walter**, of Roxbury,<sup>1</sup> who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1711, preached before the Artillery Company in 1697. See page 313.

Following the charter of 1638, and the orders "made and agreed upon" Sept. 2, 1700, at the beginning of the book of records of the Artillery Company, is given the following list, which was probably made out in 1711:—

"The List of those Artillery Soldiers, that are under the fine of 12<sup>d</sup> for non-appearance, who subscribe to the above articles.

"Elisha Hutchinson [1670], John Walley [1671], Penn Townsend [1674], Nathaniel Byfield [1679], Bozoun Allen [1676], James Hill [1677], Nathaniel Williams [1677], Samuel Checkley [1678], John Ballentine [1682], Thomas Hunt [1685], Samuel Johnson [1675], John Barnard [1677], John Cotta [1679], Daniel Powning [1691], John Noyes [1698], J. Ballentine Jun [1694], Thomas Savage Jun [1693], Oliver Noyes [1699], William Sutton [1695], Thomas Savage [1665], Henry Bridgham [1699], John Kilby [1691], Penn Townsend, Jun. [1700], Peter Weare [1700], Silence Allen [1700], John Buchanan [1695], William Briggs, John Mountfort [1697], Thomas Cushing [1691], Joseph Belknap [1692], Benjamin Emmons [1698], Henry Deering [1682], Elisha Cooke Jun. [1699], Thomas Barnard [1681], Adam Winthrop [1691], Thomas Phillips [1694], Nicholas Buttolph [1694], C. Myngs [1701], Timothy Wadsworth [1691], Joseph Russell [1699], Robert Cumby [1691], Nathaniel Oliver [1701], Charles Hobby [1702], Timothy Clarke [1702], Thomas Palmer [1702], Thomas Newton [1702], E. Lyde [1702], Calvin Galpine [1702], John Nichols [1702], John George [1702], Edward Martyn [1702], Thomas Smith [1702], Adino Bulfinch [1702], Zechariah Tuthil [1699], Thomas Leverett [1703], Thomas Baker [1703], William Frary [1703], William Hutchinson [1703], Joseph Hubbard [1707], Benjamin Eliot [1707], Ezekiel Lewis [1707], James Davis [1708], William Lowder [1708], Ames Angier [1708], Francis

<sup>1</sup> "[1711] Second day, April 2 Mr Walter is chosen to Preach the Artillery Sermon." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 305.*

Wainwright [1709], Joseph Hiller, Jun. [1709], Thomas Salter [1704], John Sale [1704], John Eustace [1711], Nathaniel Wheeler [1711], Samuel Haugh [1711], Benjamin Bridge [1711], Habijah Savage [1699], Ephraim Fenno [1711], John Gibbon [1711], Nathaniel Goodwin [1711], Jonathan Williams [1711], Thomas Phillips [1711], Ebenezer Lowle [1711], Samuel Green [1711], Ezekiel Walker [1711], Barrat Dyer [1711], William Parkman [1711], Richard Hunnewell [1711], James Tilestone [1711]."

The officers elected were: William Tailer (1712), captain; Edward 1712-3. Martyn (1702), lieutenant; John Gerrish (1700), ensign. John Greenough (1712) was first sergeant; John Eustace (1711), second sergeant; Robert Calfe (1710), third sergeant; Samuel Gerrish (1709), fourth sergeant, and Jonathan Williams (1711), clerk.

The Blue Hills having been sold by the town, it was voted to choose a committee to invest the proceeds, one thousand five hundred pounds. Addington Davenport (1692), Isaiah Tay, Daniel Oliver, Thomas Cushing (1691), Oliver Noyes (1699), Joseph Wadsworth, and Edward Hutchinson (1702), with the selectmen, four of whom were members of the Artillery Company, were chosen for that purpose; and to the same committee, March 9, 1712-3, the town referred the consideration of "what is proper for the town to do about a lighthouse."

The members recruited in 1712 were: Samuel Durham, Joseph Essex, Daniel Goffe, John Greenough, Daniel Henschman, Samuel Oakes, William Tailer.

**Samuel Durham** (1712), by trade a mason, appears first in Boston Records, July 6, 1691, where it is recorded, "Samuel Durham and Eliza Reed were married by Sam'l Sewall [1679] Esq. Assist." They had a son, Samuel, born March 1, 1692, but his name does not again appear on the records of Boston. Samuel (1712), July 12, 1706, was requested to survey the defective chimneys in the house of Mr. Obadiah Proctor (1722). Dec. 20, 1708, he was appointed by the selectmen to appraise a brick wall, on petition of Capt. John Fairweather, and April 14, 1712, he was required to perform a similar service, in answer to a petition of William Paine (1691).

**Joseph Essex** (1712), jack maker, of Boston, married Hannah Bill, March 30, 1713. The only time his name appears on the Records of the Town of Boston is July 20, 1719, when he applied to the selectmen for a license as an innholder. Administration was granted on his estate in 1719. "His trade," says Mr. Whitman (1810), "like that of a pewterer, and some others, is extinct."

**Daniel Goffe** (1712), merchant, of Boston, son of Christopher and Abigail Goffe, was born in Boston, May 27, 1690. He married, Aug. 16, 1711, Elizabeth, daughter of Benjamin (1707) and Elizabeth Pemberton.

He was a constable of Boston in 1713, and collector of taxes in 1733, receiving one hundred and twenty-one out of the one hundred and twenty-six ballots cast. May 9, 1733, he was chosen one of the committee "to make a computation of the cost and charges of erecting the several markets." Oct. 31, 1733, a special meeting of the town

**Samuel Durham** (1712). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Daniel Goffe** (1712). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

was called to elect a tax collector in the place of Daniel Goffe (1712), who declined to serve. He was active in the colonial militia, and passed through the various grades to lieutenant-colonel. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1714, and its lieutenant in 1734.

"In 1740, he manifested his good-will to Harvard College by bequeathing to it two hundred pounds; but, his estate proving insolvent, this legacy was not paid." Administration was granted on his estate in 1742.

**John Greenough** (1712), shipwright, of Boston, son of Capt. William (1675) and Ruth (Swift) Greenough, was born Feb. 17, 1672-3, and followed the business of his father. He married Elizabeth Gross, Oct. 18, 1693, and had a family of eleven children, two of whom became members of the Company, viz.: Major Newman Greenough (1740) and Thomas Greenough (1744).

John (1712) was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1712, ensign in 1717, lieutenant in 1718, and its captain in 1726.

Samuel Greenough (1786) was a son of Major Newman Greenough (1740), grandson of Capt. John (1712), and great-grandson of Capt. William Greenough (1675).

Capt. John (1712) was highway surveyor of the streets of Boston in 1708 and 1709. June 14, 1708, he represented to the selectmen that the alley lately named Greenough's Alley was his private property. May 3, 1708, the selectmen had voted, in the naming of streets and alleys, that "the alley leading from Charter Street down through Mr. Greenough's building yard into Lyn Street [should be named] Greenough's Alley." Nov. 29, 1708, he hired of the town the slip at the lower end of North Street, and the wharf thereto belonging. He used this slip for floating, laying, and hauling up timber to be used in his ship-yard. In 1712, he was a fireward of the town. Feb. 14, 1715, the selectmen made a memorandum, from which it appears that Capt. Greenough (1712) occupied the town slip to Nov. 1, 1715, when there was due the town two years and nine months rent at thirty shillings per annum. July 30, 1722, he had liberty granted by the selectmen to build a tomb on the southeast side of the North burial-ground.

His will was proved Nov. 14, 1732.

**Daniel Henchman** (1712), book publisher and bookseller, of Boston, son of Hezekiah (1692) and Abigail Henchman, and grandson of "the valiant Capt. Henchman [1675]," who figured prominently in King Philip's War, was born in Boston, Jan. 21, 1689.

He was clerk of the market in 1716; an incorporator of the Fire Society in 1717; tithing-man, and a member of a militia company in Boston in 1722, 1726, and 1727; was overseer of the poor from 1735 to 1756, when he declined to serve longer; was one of the committee to erect a workhouse in Boston in 1735, toward which project he gave twenty-five pounds; was one of a committee to repair the almshouse in 1741, and to repair the fortifications of the town in 1746. In 1744, 1751, 1753, and 1757, he was one of the several gentlemen selected to visit the public schools. He became an officer of the militia; was called "Capt." in 1735; was promoted to be major of the Boston regiment in 1742, and afterwards was its lieutenant-colonel. He was clerk of the

**John Greenough** (1712). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Daniel Henchman** (1712). AUTHORITIES: Teele's Hist. of Milton; Boston Records; Thomas's Hist. of Printing; Drake's Hist. of Boston.



Artillery Company in 1714, third sergeant in 1715, lieutenant in 1733, and its captain in 1738 and 1746.

He also established the first paper mill in the colony, in which undertaking he was favored by the General Court. It was in Milton, and was established in 1728. Isaiah Thomas, in his *History of Printing*, says that "Daniel Henchman [1712] caused the first edition in America of the English Bible to be printed [in 1749], and with a false title-page to evade the right of the King's printer."

While captain, he ordered the Company's records to be transcribed, and thereby the most of Mr. Barnes's transcript of 1680, especially the roll of members and list of officers, is preserved. The transcript ordered by Capt. Henchman (1712) has come down to our time, and in a good state of preservation.

Col. Henchman (1712) continued all his life much attached to the Company. He lived to enjoy, in its youthful vigor, the shade of the great elm-tree on the Common, which his grandfather, Capt. Daniel (1675), planted. "He was long distinguished as an eminent bookseller in Cornhill," and in 1726 his shop was "over against the Brick Meeting house in Cornhill." The title-page of the sermon which Rev. Mr. Prince pronounced on the death of Rev. Cotton Mather, D. D., bears this imprint: "Boston in New England: Printed for D. Henchman, near the Brick Meeting house in Cornhill M.D.CCXXVIII."

He gave in his will to the poor fund of the Old South Church, of which church he had been a deacon for many years, £66 13s. 4d. In 1742, he presented Harvard College with one hundred ounces of silver, and in 1747, with two hundred and fifty pounds, Old Tenor. He gave by will his estate, after his wife's decease, to his son-in-law, Thomas Hancock, Esq., and wife. Thomas Hancock, when young, was a clerk in Daniel Henchman's (1712) book-store, and married his daughter, Lydia.

Thomas Hancock, who died in 1764, uncle of John Hancock, Governor, patriot, and president of the Continental Congress, willed the latter fifty thousand pounds sterling, besides the reversion of twenty thousand pounds at the decease of his widow. According to Mr. Whitmore's "Civil List," Daniel Henchman (1712) was appointed a justice of the peace Jan. 26, 1738-9, and was reappointed Sept. 14, 1756.

"Daniel Henchman [1712] was the most eminent and enterprising bookseller that appeared in Boston, or indeed in all British America, before the year 1775; and since that time few have exceeded him as a publisher. He furnished much employment for the presses of Boston, and several books printed for him in London, which were sent over in sheets."

He lived in Queen, now Court, Street, in what was the Brattle Street Society's parsonage, which was willed to that society by his daughter, Mrs. Hancock.

Col. Daniel Henchman (1712) died in Boston, Feb. 25, 1761. The following obituary notice of him is taken from the *Boston Gazette and Country Journal* of March 2, 1761: "Last Wednesday night, died here, Daniel Henchman Esq. [1712] one of his Majesty's Justices of the Peace for Suffolk, and many years Deacon of the (Old) South Church in this town, Overseer of the Poor, &c. He was esteemed one of the most noted and eminent booksellers and stationers on this continent. We hear his remains are to be interred this afternoon."

"First Monday in March 1761," says the regimental book, then kept by Col. Dawes (1754), "he was buried, not being in commission, yet the officers of the Regiment all walked in procession before the corpse."



**Samuel Oakes** (1712), saddler, of Boston, son of Lieut. Thomas (1684), was born about 1688. Samuel (1712), by wife, Jamina, had a child born in Boston in 1709.

He was elected a clerk of the market in 1727; constable in 1728; and, May 6, 1729, the petition of Samuel Oakes (1712) to the town was read in the town meeting and dismissed. The records do not give the subject-matter of the petition. July 4, 1729, his petition for a retailer's license in Cornhill (Washington Street) was approved, and again, July 15, 1730, in Marlborough (Washington) Street.

Administration was granted on his estate in 1733.

**William Tailer** (1712), of Dorchester, was a son of William and Rebecca Tailer. The father, "distinguished for his active enterprise, fell into melancholy and died by his own hand, July 12, 1682." Col. William (1712) married, (1) March 2, 1699, Sarah Byfield, daughter of Col. Nathaniel Byfield (1679); and (2) Abigail, daughter of Benjamin Gillam, and widow of Thomas Dudley. His mother, Rebecca, was a daughter of Israel Stoughton (1638), and a sister of Lieut.-Col. Israel Stoughton (1645) and of Lieut.-Gov. William Stoughton, the chief-justice in the witchcraft cases of 1692.

Col. William (1712) resided in Boston, but had a country-seat in Dorchester. He was identified with the military, and commanded one of the regiments raised for the capturing of Port Royal. In the fall of 1711, he arrived with her Majesty's commission as lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts, a position which he held from Oct. 4 of that year until Nov. 9, 1715, when he became acting Governor, and served until the arrival of Gov. Shute, Oct. 4, 1716, whose friends bought for him the Governor's commission for one thousand pounds. Col. William Tailer (1712) was then superseded by Lieut.-Gov. Dummer (1702), but was reappointed lieutenant-governor April 14, 1730, and held that office until his decease, March 8, 1731-2. He was in England in 1721, and was sent with Spencer Phipps as commissioner to treat with the "Six Nations" Indians at Albany, and "empowered to promise a bounty for every scalp, if they would go out against the enemy (French); but they met with little success." He favored the private-bank party, and Mr. Hutchinson says he was "a gentleman of no great fortune and whose stipend from the government was trifling." He was a member of the council from 1712 to 1729 inclusive, and was appointed a justice of the peace June 30, 1702, and reappointed Dec. 19, 1728. He became a member of the First Church in Boston, and served many years as a deacon. He died at his country-seat in Dorchester, while holding the office of lieutenant-governor, March 8, 1731-2, aged fifty-five years.

The *New England Journal* of March 13, 1731-2, contained the following obituary notice: "The corpse of the Hon. William Tailer, Esq [1712], Lieut. Governor of this Province, was interred at Dorchester, with great honor and respect. The bells of this town [Boston] were tolled from eleven o'clock to five. The cannon of his Majesty's Castle William, of which he was the beloved Captain, were discharged at their funeral distance, the flag being half raised. The pall was supported by his Excellency, Gov. Belcher, the Hon. William Dummer [1702], Addington Davenport [1692], Thomas Hutchinson [1694], Elisha Cooke [1699], and Adam Winthrop [1694] Esqr's. The funeral was attended by a great number of gentry in their coaches, &c." All of the pall supporters except Gov. Belcher were members of the Artillery Company.

**Samuel Oakes** (1712). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**William Tailer** (1712). AUTHORITIES: Annals of King's Chapel, p. 184; Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Mem. Hist. of Boston; Drake's Hist. of Boston.

"The inventory of his estate was, — real £8282 ; personal, £1049. 19. 3 — of which there were 177 ounces of silver plate."

He was captain of the Artillery Company in 1712, the year in which he joined the Company.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1712 is as follows : —

"April 7. 1712. Then voted by the Artillery Company, that the four training daies shall be on the Second Tuesday in each Training month, the Election day only excepted, which is to continue to be on the first Monday in June.

"Then the Rev'd Mr. Peter Thacher of Weymouth was chosen to preach the Artillery Sermon, and the then Commission officers, with Col : Samuel Checkley [1678] and Lt Colo Savage [1699] and Maj. Thomas Fitch [1700] were desired to request it of him.

"May —. It was accepted by him."

**Rev. Peter Thacher**, of Weymouth, who preached the Artillery election sermon in 1712, was a son of Thomas Thacher (1671), of Boston, and nephew of Rev. Peter Thacher, of Milton, who delivered the election sermon before the Artillery Company in 1695. Rev. Thomas Thacher, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1654 and 1671, was a grandfather of Rev. Peter, of Weymouth. The last named was born (baptized) in Boston, Aug. 26, 1677, and graduated at Harvard College in 1696. He was ordained Nov. 26, 1707, as the pastor of the church at Weymouth, where his grandfather, Rev. Thomas, was first settled. After a pastorate there of fifteen years, he removed to Boston and took charge of the New North Church. He had many opposers. "The services of installation were interrupted by tumult and force," and one result was a seceding of members from the New North Church and the formation of another which eventually became known as the "New Brick." He served as pastor of the New North Church from Jan. 27, 1723, until his decease.

His mother was Mary Savage, daughter of Major Thomas Savage (1637). His father died in 1686, but his mother survived until 1730, when she gave all her property to her son, Rev. Peter, of the New North Church, who married Hannah Curwin, Oct. 14, 1708, but had no children. He died Feb. 26, 1738.



The officers elected were : Charles Hobby (1702), captain ; Edward 1713-4. Hutchinson (1702), lieutenant ; Thomas Smith (1702), ensign. Joseph Hiller (1709) was first sergeant ; Samuel Haugh (1711), second sergeant ; John Hunt (1709), third sergeant ; James Tileston (1711), fourth sergeant, and Jonathan Williams (1711), clerk.

In 1713, the Treaty of Utrecht was signed, by which Nova Scotia or Acadia was made over and ceded to Great Britain, including Port Royal or Annapolis, and all other places belonging to or claimed by France in those parts, except Cape Breton. A treaty was also made with the eastern Indians soon after. Thus peace came at length to the long harassed colonists, but they were sorely pressed by the results of war. Bread and wood were especially scarce and high in Boston.

Judge Sewall (1769) wrote under date of May 30, 1713, "[Court] adjourned to June 2, because of the Artillery."

The members recruited in 1713 were : James Alford, Francis Parnell.





*Edward Winslow*



**James Alford** (1713), of Boston, son of Capt. Benjamin (1671), and brother of Col. John (1714), of Charlestown, was born in Boston, July 19, 1691. He was elected constable in 1721, and clerk of the market in 1723, but, declining to serve, paid the usual fines. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1737.

**Francis Parnell** (1713), merchant, of Boston, son of Francis and Dorothy Parnell, was born Sept. 26, 1693. He married, Oct. 27, 1715, Elizabeth Southac. He was elected clerk of the market in 1718 and 1720, declining to serve the latter year, and was a tithing-man and a member of a Boston militia company in 1719. In the latter, he rose to the rank of captain.

He was one of those disaffected by the installation of Rev. Peter Thacher as pastor of the New North Church, in Boston, in 1719; was one of the founders of the New Brick Church, and prominent in the erection of its meeting-house, which was dedicated in May, 1721. Mr. Ephraim Eliot says, in his work, "They placed the figure of a *Cock* as a vane upon the steeple [of the New Brick] out of derision of Mr. Thacher, whose Christian name was *Peter*."

Capt. Francis Parnell (1713) was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1718, its ensign in 1720, and lieutenant in 1721.

He died suddenly at Boston, in October, 1724.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1713 is as follows:—

"April 14, 1713. Then the Rev'd Mr. Sampson Stoddard was chosen to preach the Election Sermon and the Commission officers, with Colo. Checkley [1678] were desired to manifest the same to him. Then voted by the Artillery Company That the training daies shall be on the first Monday in each training Month as formerly.

"October 5 1713. Then voted by the Artillery Company of the Massachusetts, That Colo. Samuel Checkley [1678], Lt. Colo. Thomas Savage [1693], Major Thomas Fitch [1700] and Capt Thomas Hutchinson [1694], with the present Commission officers for this Company, be appointed a committee to Treat with and lease out, to any person or persons that may present, the farm belonging to said Company, not exceeding the term of twenty-one years."

**Rev. Samson Stoddard**,<sup>1</sup> who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1713, was a son of Samson Stoddard, of Boston, and grandson of Anthony Stoddard (1639). Simeon (1675) and Simeon, Jr. (1702), were respectively uncle and cousin of Rev. Samson Stoddard. The latter graduated at Harvard College in 1701. He settled in Chelmsford, July 25, 1706, and died there, Aug. 23, 1742. His birth date is not given in the records of Boston. According to the Records of the First Church, he was baptized Jan. 12, 1691, when he was twelve years of age.

---

The officers elected were: Edward Winslow (1700), captain; John  
**1714-5.** Gerrish (1700), lieutenant; Jonathan Pollard (1700), ensign. John  
 Alford (1714) was first sergeant; Jonathan Williams (1711), second

**James Alford** (1713). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Francis Parnell** (1713). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

<sup>1</sup> "[1713] June 1. Mr Stoddard of Chelmsford preaches the Election Sermon I. Sam. II: 30, 'Them that honor Me I will honor.' Made an Excellent Discourse." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. II., p. 386.*

sergeant; John Sale (1704), third sergeant; Daniel Goffe (1712), fourth sergeant, and Daniel Henchman (1712), clerk.

In the year 1714, another church was established in Boston, by a division in the Old North Church. The new one was called the New North Church. Mr. Drake, in his *History of Boston*, p. 544, gives the names of its seventeen original founders, of whom Erasmus Stevens (1720), Caleb Lyman (1732), John Pecker (1733), John Goldthwait (1720), William Parkman (1711), Joshua Cheever (1732), were, in the years indicated, members of the Artillery Company. The three deacons first elected were members of the Old North Church, viz.: Robert Cumby (1691), Edward Proctor (1699), and James Clark. Rev. Cotton Mather, not willing these brethren should be dismissed to the New North Church, three other deacons were elected, one of whom was Caleb Lyman, who joined the Artillery Company in 1732. Col. Ephraim Hunt (1717) was elected a deacon March 8, 1726. William Parkman, son of William (1711), was the last ruling elder in this church. He was elected in 1743, and died about 1776. Every pastor of this church, from 1714 to 1852, except one, was a preacher before the Artillery Company, viz.: Rev. Peter Thacher, in 1712 (when minister at Weymouth); Rev. John Webb, in 1719; Rev. Andrew Eliot, in 1750, and Rev. Francis Parkman, in 1815.

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1714 were: John Alford, Nathaniel Balston, Jonathan Barnard, Thomas Chamberlain, John Darrell, John Eliot, Benjamin Gerrish, James Gooch, Benjamin Hiller, John Holyoke, Samuel Holyoke, Edward Pell, Gillam Phillips, John Wheelwright.

**John Alford** (1714), merchant, of Charlestown, son of Benjamin (1671) and brother of James Alford (1713), was born in Boston, July 5, 1685. Nov. 12, 1713, he married Margaret, daughter of Col. Thomas Savage (1693).

Oct. 22, 1708, the selectmen "Ordered that Samuel Thorn be employed to take down the fence two rod in length between Capt. Alford's [1714] & Mad<sup>m</sup> Shrimpton's Land, for ye Laying open of Centry Street." The same year the selectmen named "the way leading from Beacon Street, between Capt Alford's land and Madam Shrimpton's pasture," Centry Street.

He was elected constable of Boston in 1717, but refused to serve, and his case being taken to the quarter-sessions by the selectmen, he was excused by the justices. He was an overseer of the poor in 1720 and 1721, and May 6, 1729, he was appointed, with Henry Deering (1682) and Nathaniel Cunningham (1720), to prepare a letter of instructions for the representatives of Boston.

Jan. 16, 1753, in reply to the desire of Thomas Hancock, the selectmen reported the extent of Centry Hill, and the highway leading up to it from the Common. They said that "the hill on which the beacon stands, and which is the property of the town, is six rods square, and the highway (Centry Street) leading up to the hill from the Common, between the land of John Alford [1714] and the land now of Thomas Hancock, Esq., late Col. Samuel Shrimpton's [1670], is thirty foot in width throughout the whole length."

He was one of his Majesty's councillors from 1730 to 1733, and was appointed a justice of the peace March 4, 1723-4; reappointed Dec. 29, 1731, for Suffolk County, and was appointed to the office for Middlesex County, Sept. 2, 1725.

**John Alford** (1714). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1852; Shurtleff's Topog. Des. of Boston; Quincy's Hist. of Harv. Coll.

He sold to William Molineaux, in 1760 (see Gleaner article XLII.<sup>1</sup>), one hundred feet on Beacon Street, being the lot on which Mr. Molineaux built his mansion-house.

"The worshipful John Richards [1644]" gave by will "to Mr. John Alford [1714]," his nephew, "son of Benjamin Alford [1671], all that piece or parcel of land lying near Beacon Hill." According to Gleaner article LIIL,<sup>1</sup> Mr. Alford (1714) sold, in 1732, a small lot thereof to Ebenezer Messenger, and in 1735 conveyed to Thomas Hancock a lot on which the stone mansion of the Hancock family was erected.

Col. Alford (1714) was especially distinguished as the founder of the Alford Professorship of Natural Religion, Moral Philosophy, and Civil Polity, at Harvard College, and for the giving of a large sum to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel among the Indians of North America. He was a gentleman of great wealth, "and highly respected in his public and private character." He died Sept. 30, 1761, leaving no issue.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1714.

**Nathaniel Balston** (1714), of Boston, son of Jonathan and Susanna Balston, of Boston, was born July 27, 1687. Nathaniel Balston (1714) married (perhaps second marriage), June 22, 1727, Hannah Hurst. He was a tithing-man and member of a militia company in Boston in 1708 and 1709, clerk of the market in 1711, and was elected constable in 1724, but refused to serve and paid the fine. In 1735, he was on a committee to petition the Legislature for an abatement of the town taxes; in 1741 was an auditor of the accounts of the overseer of the workhouse, and in 1740 and 1744, he was auditor of the town treasurer's accounts. June 30, 1712, Nathaniel Balston was approved and recommended by the selectmen as a "retaylor," in Milk Street. From 1743 to 1753 inclusive, he made the "General walk or visitation of the town" with the prominent men of the place. He was appointed a justice of the peace June 28, 1740.

He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1715, second sergeant in 1716, ensign in 1726, and lieutenant in 1728.

**Jonathan Barnard** (1714), of Boston, son of John (1677), and grandson of Lieut. Matthew Barnard (1660), was born Jan. 14, 1692. He was elected constable in 1725, but declined and paid the fine. April 18, 1733, Jonathan Barnard (1714) was assessed ten shillings for repairs on the pump "standing in the towns ground in Corn Hill" (corner Washington and Court streets).

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1716.

**Thomas Chamberlain** (1714) was a carpenter, of Boston. He married, Aug. 18, 1715, Hannah Welch. He was a constable of Boston in 1718, and a viewer of shingles and measurer of boards, etc., in 1720 and 1721.

In the fall of 1708, Thomas Chamberlain (1714) built himself a house on Orange, now Washington, Street, and April 29, 1714, was permitted to lay a sewer from it, "down as farr as the Sea." Feb. 4, 1717, his petition for a license as an innholder "at ye

**Nathaniel Balston** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Jonathan Barnard** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Thomas Chamberlain** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records; Drake's Landmarks of Boston.

<sup>1</sup> Fifth Report of Boston Record Commissioners.



House known by ye Name of the White Horse" was allowed by the selectmen; but to sell beer and cider in 1718 was disallowed. The White Horse Tavern was "at the South End," nearly opposite where Hayward Place now is.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1721.

**John Darrell** (1714), of Boston, son of John, was born Aug. 28, 1685. He married, Nov. 7, 1706, Rachel Thwing, an aunt of Col. Nathaniel Thwing (1736). He was on several important committees of the town: to provide a more effectual watch, 1736; to prevent frauds in wood measurement, 1739 and 1743, and to regulate the firing of chimneys. May 22, 1741, he made a motion in town meeting, that "a committee be appointed to wait on his Excellency, to advise some measure to protect such coasters as may be bringing wood, provisions, etc., from being impressed on board his Majesty's ships of war, lying in the harbor."

John Darrell (1714) lived on King, now State, Street. He was appointed a coroner, Dec. 23, 1731. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1723, its ensign in 1737, and was lieutenant in the militia. He was a member of the West Church, and a deacon for some years. His will was proved Dec. 3, 1746.

**John Eliot** (1714), of Boston, son of Joseph, was born in Boston, March 17, 1692. Benjamin (1707) was an uncle of John (1714). The latter was a great-grandson of Jacob, who was a brother of Rev. John, the apostle to the Indians, and of Philip Eliot (1638). John Eliot (1714) married, June 4, 1719, Sarah Downes. He was clerk of the market in 1720; was again elected in 1722, but declined. In 1734, he was one of four citizens who agreed, at their own expense, to put the land of Jonathan Willis "into a proper posture to erect buildings for a market thereon, and keep the same in good repair for ten years." The town thanked the gentlemen for their offer, but the project of the market was defeated.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1721.

**Benjamin Gerrish** (1714), merchant, of Boston and Charlestown, son of John and Elizabeth (Waldron) Gerrish, of Dover in 1669, brother of Capt. John (1700), and uncle of John, Jr. (1718), was born in Dover in 1686. Benjamin (1714) was a cousin of Samuel Gerrish (1709), the bookseller, son of Joseph Gerrish, of Wenham. Benjamin (1714) married, (1) June 28, 1716, Martha Foxcroft, daughter of Francis Foxcroft (1679), of Cambridge. She died April 14, 1736, and he married, (2) June 22, 1738, Abigail Bunker, who died March 10, 1749. He died June 23, 1750, in the sixty-fourth year of his age, and was buried in Charlestown.

In 1719, he served as clerk of the market, which was the only town office he held. He probably removed to Charlestown about 1740. He was taxed there from 1741 to 1748. In the latter year he sold "ship tavern" to Ebenezer Breed. His house in Charlestown had the river on the southeast and the lane to Barber's Wharf on the northwest. Major Moses Deshon (1737) was one of his heirs.

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1715, and was captain in the militia.

**John Darrell** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Eliot** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Benjamin Gerrish** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



**James Gooch, Jr.** (1714), distiller, of Boston, son of James and Hannah Gooch, was born in Boston, Oct. 12, 1693. He married, Sept. 30, 1715, Elizabeth Hobbie.

March 5, 1722, the selectmen granted permission to James Gooch, Jr. (1714), to erect a "distill house" on his land in the westerly part of Boston "near the Mill pond"; and July 30, next following, he erected a dwelling-house "on his land in the westerly part of Boston." Probably these buildings were erected on Salem Street (once called Green Lane); for Mr. Gooch, Jr. (1714), in 1736 petitioned for the paving of that lane, and agreed to pay for the whole work, if the town would repay him within three years. His will is dated 1732, and was proved June 5, 1738.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1717, and ensign in 1733.

**Benjamin Hiller** (1714), of Boston, son of Joseph and Susanna Hiller, was born in Boston, Jan. 19, 1687. He was a brother of Joseph, Jr. (1709), and married, Feb. 10, 1714, Elizabeth Russell. He does not appear to have held town office.

He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1716 and 1717, and fourth sergeant in 1717.

**John Holyoke** (1714), of Boston, son of Elizur and Mary (Elliot) Holyoke, was born Feb. 10, 1683. He married a Mrs. Green, of Cambridge, and died without issue. He was a brother of Samuel (1714).

John Holyoke (1714) was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1718. He was elected constable in 1728, but was excused. In 1730, he served as clerk of the market, and the next year paid the fine rather than serve as constable. He held the office of scavenger in 1735, 1739, and 1743.

**Samuel Holyoke** (1714), school-master, of Boston, son of Elizur and Mary (Elliot) Holyoke, was born in Boston, March 21, 1694. He married, Jan. 4, 1724, Elizabeth Bridgham, daughter of Joseph (1674). He was a brother of John (1714), and of Edward, president of Harvard College, 1737-69.

He was elected clerk of the market in 1718, and, in 1726, instead of serving as a constable, paid the fine. March 12, 1732, Samuel Holyoke (1714) was elected "master of the school lately kept by Mr. Edward Mills, deceased," at a salary of one hundred and twenty pounds per annum, and have "the use of the house Mr. Mills lived in." March 10, 1734, his salary was increased thirty pounds, and May 17, 1738, fifty pounds more were added to it, per annum. This school — called the Writing School, in Queen, now Court, Street — was held in a house erected in 1698. Jan. 30, 1698-9, the selectmen "Ordered that the school-house lately built in the Prison Lane [Court Street] on the side of the Hill, over against the land of Capt. Samuel Sewall [1679] remain fenced in and no more of said Hill be improved by building," etc. Samuel Holyoke (1714) taught this school from 1732 until his decease, in 1768.

Oct. 10, 1739, "Mr Samuel Holyoke [1714] informs [the selectmen] that the Town's House, wherein he dwells, wants repairs." Oct. 24, Capt. Armitage and Mr. Colson being desired, upon the motion of Mr. Holyoke (1714), entered the 10th instant, to view the school-house in Queen Street, report, "they find repairs necessary." This

**James Gooch** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Holyoke** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Samuel Holyoke** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

language seems to imply that the school-master lived in a part of the school-house. In 1740, Mr. Holyoke (1714) informed the selectmen that "the Town House wherein he lives and keeps his school is leaky and wants repairs." The number of scholars in this school in 1741 was fifty-three; in 1751, ninety, and in 1761, two hundred and forty-nine. During a few of the last years of his teaching, his salary was eighty pounds per annum.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1719, clerk in 1727 and 1731, and its ensign in 1729. He died March 16, 1768, and was buried in the Granary Burial-Ground.

**Edward Pell** (1714), painter, - or "paper stainer," according to the ancient roll, - of Boston, son of Edward and Elizabeth Pell, was born in Boston, Oct. 19, 1687. He was a brother of William Pell (1716). He drew the plan of the New Brick Church which was erected at the North End in 1720-1, on Middle Street. It was said at the time "to be the handsomest meeting-house in the Province." He was one of the founders of that church. He had formerly been a member of the New North Church, but was one of the members aggrieved on account of the installation of Rev. Peter Thacher, Jan. 27, 1720. He became a captain in the militia; was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1716, ensign in 1722, and lieutenant in 1726.

His will, dated 1735, was proved March 22, 1736. Inventory, four thousand seven hundred pounds.

**Gillam Phillips** (1714), merchant, of Boston, son of Samuel (1693) and Hannah (Gillam) Phillips, was born in Boston, Oct. 4, 1695. He married, Aug. 6, 1725, Mary Faneuil, daughter of Benjamin and sister of Peter Faneuil, of Boston. He was not prominent in the affairs of the town, though belonging to that class, wealthy and cultured, who were first in all the benevolent and progressive matters of the town.

April 18, 1733, Mr. Benjamin Walker brought in his bill for repairing the pump standing in the town's ground in Cornhill, or near the corner of Court and Washington streets. The expense was assessed upon the store-keepers and dwellers who frequented the pump, among whom were Dudson Kilcup (1727), Jonathan Barnard (1714), Gillam Phillips (1714), Capt. Daniel Henchman (1714), and Capt. Samuel Rand (1720).

Gillam Phillips (1714) was a member of Christ Church, senior warden in 1729, and Dr. Snow gives his name in a list of the pew owners. It was at Mr. Phillips's (1714) request that Pudding Lane, Devonshire Street, between State and Water streets, was made "more strait," by the taking of some of his land, which he gave to the town in 1746.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1716, and he died Oct. 17, 1770, aged seventy-five years.

**John Wheelwright** (1714) was a merchant in Boston. He married Mary Allen, Oct. 20, 1715. He was chosen a scavenger of Boston in 1734; naval officer at Boston in 1737; examiner of the accounts of the overseer of the workhouse, March 30, 1741; was one of the auditors of the town treasurer's accounts from 1740 to 1755. He gave, May 25, 1735, the sum of fifty pounds, to be paid "in timber, at the market price," toward the

**Edward Pell** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Gillam Phillips** (1714). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Wheelwright** (1714). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

erection of the new workhouse. The auditing committee, in 1750, state in their report that "Hon. John Wheelwright, Esq., has settled and transferred the several balances from the late treasurer Wadsworth's books into a set of new books for Mr. Jeffries," the new treasurer.

In 1728, he resided in Cold Lane, now Portland Street. His place of business was near Oliver's Dock. He often attended the selectmen and others in visiting the public schools. The last service he rendered the town, according to the records, is visiting the schools, June 27, 1759. He was appointed justice of the peace, Dec. 19, 1728; was a representative to the General Court from Boston, and one of his Majesty's council.

"A List of Soldiers under the fine of 6/ per diem for delinquency.

"Richard Bill [1707], Benjamin Pemberton [1707], John Ellis [1709], Samuel Gerrish [1709], Brattle Oliver [1709], James Smith Junr [1709], John Hunt [1709], Abiel Walley [1710], William Tidcomb [1710], Robert Calfe Jun [1710], George Robinson [1710], Estes Hatch [1711], Daniel Goffe [1712], Joseph Essex [1712], Daniel Henchman [1712], James Alford [1713], Francis Parnell [1713], John Wheelwright [1714], Nathaniel Balston [1714], John Alford [1714], Gillam Phillips [1714], Benjamin Gerrish [1714], Samuel Holyoke [1714], Jonathan Barnard [1714]."

The records of the Artillery Company for 1714 are as follows:—

"April 5, 1714. Then the Rev. Mr. Joseph Sewall, of Boston, was chosen to preach the Election Sermon, and the present Commission officers are desired to manifest the same to him."

**Rev. Joseph Sewall**, who preached the Artillery election sermon in 1714, son of Samuel (1679) and Hannah (Hull) Sewall, of Boston, was born Aug. 15, 1688. His mother was a daughter of Capt. John Hull (1660), the mint-master. He graduated at Harvard College in 1707, and was ordained to the Christian ministry, as colleague with Rev. Ebenezer Pemberton, at the Old South Church, Sept. 16, 1713. He married, Oct. 29, 1713, Elizabeth, daughter of Hon. John Walley (1671). They had two sons, Samuel and Joseph. Samuel was the father of Samuel, born 1757 (Harv. Coll., 1776), who was the third chief-justice given by this family to our Supreme Court. Rev. Joseph Sewall was pastor of the Old South Church upwards of fifty years. He was assisted by Rev. Thomas Prince for forty years, and by Rev. Alexander Cumings for two years. He was chosen president of Harvard College in 1724, but declined the honor. He was a good scholar, faithful teacher, and painstaking pastor. He laid very great stress on the creed of his church, and Christianity consisted in its acceptance. He died June 27, 1769, in the eighty-first year of his age. His funeral sermon was delivered by Dr. Chauncy, and was printed.

1715-6. The officers elected were: Edward Martyn (1702), captain; Thomas Smith (1702), lieutenant; Adino Bulfinch (1702), ensign. Benjamin Bridge (1711) was first sergeant; Benjamin Gerrish (1714), second sergeant; Daniel Henchman (1712), third sergeant; James Alford (1713), fourth sergeant, and Nathaniel Balston (1714), clerk.

**Rev. Joseph Sewall.** AUTHORITIES: Eliot's Biog. Dict.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Chauncy's Funeral Sermon.



March 2, 1712-3, the selectmen agreed to propose to the town their being concerned in the charge of a lighthouse. The proposal was made in town meeting, March 9, 1712-3, and Addington Davenport (1692), Isaiah Tay, Daniel Oliver, Thomas Cushing (1691), Oliver Noyes (1699), Joseph Wadsworth, and Edward Hutchinson (1702), with the selectmen, were appointed to consider what was proper to be done by the town. Aug. 4 following, William Paine (1691) and John Colman, son of William (1676), were desired by the selectmen to procure a draft of an act to lay before the General Court in regard to the erection and maintenance of a lighthouse by the town. An act was passed by the Legislature in May, 1715, locating a lighthouse upon the Great Brewster, and it was built at the expense of the province. March 14, 1714-5, the town voted that Addington Davenport, Esq. (1692), Major Thomas Fitch (1700), Mr. Elisha Cooke, Jr. (1699), Capt. Oliver Noyes (1699), and Capt. Samuel Keeling (1699), be a committee to consider the suppression of abuses to the inhabitants of this town by hucksters.

The only member of the Artillery Company recruited in 1715 was James Wright.

**James Wright** (1715) married Elizabeth —. They had James Wright (1736), born Oct. 23, 1703. Also, a James Wright married Susanna Nichols, Aug. 27, 1719. His name does not appear elsewhere in Boston Records.

The records of the Artillery Company for 1715 are as follows:—

"April 6, 1715. The Rev. Mr. Joseph Stevens of Charlestown was chosen to preach the Election Sermon and the present Commission officers were desired to request it of him. Accepted by him."

**Rev. Joseph Stevens**, the preacher of the Artillery sermon in 1715, was a son of Joseph and Mary (Ingalls) Stevens, of Andover. Joseph, Jr., was born June 20, 1682, and graduated at Harvard College in 1703. He was ordained pastor of the First Church in Charlestown, Oct. 13, 1713, and died of small-pox, Nov. 26, 1721.

The officers elected were: Samuel Keeling (1699), captain;  
**1716-7.** Jonathan Pollard (1700), lieutenant; Richard Bill (1707), ensign.  
 Edward Pell (1714) was first sergeant; Nathaniel Balston (1714), second sergeant; Jonathan Barnard (1714), third sergeant; Gillam Phillips (1714), fourth sergeant, and Benjamin Hiller (1714), clerk.

**Rev. Joseph Stevens.** AUTHORITIES: Budington's Hist. of First Church; Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates.

"[1715] June 6. Mr. Stephens preaches the Artillery Sermon. Made a very good Discourse, from Isa II. 4. Gov. dines not publickly at the Dragon."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 47.

"[1721] Nov. 18. Went to the Funeral of the Rev. Mr. Joseph Stephens. The Sight was awful to see the Father, and then the daughter underhand by four; and then his Sister caried to the Grave together. See the *News-Letter*."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 295.

"Charlestown, Nov 18. On Thursday the 16th in the Evening, Died here of the Small-Pox, after 8 Days Eruption, and in the 39th Year of his Age, the Rev'd and Excellent Mr. Joseph Stevens, M. A., a Pastor of this Church, a Fellow of the Corporation

and sometimes a Tutor of Harvard College in Cambridge; and was buried here this Evening, together with his only Daughter and Mrs Eliza. Foye, his wife's Sister, Deceased of the same Distemper and laid in the same Tomb. It is a most Deplorable and Publick Loss; and especially to this Town, and at such a sorrowful and awful conjunction. He was a Gentleman of very bright Abilities; acute and ready apprehension; easy Expression, Ingenious and Learned, Modest and Cheerful, Sincere and Free; of an excellent good Temper. He was Ordained here October 13, 1713. In the Pulpit he was to us as a very lovely Song; and in his Life an amiable Example of the Doctrines he sweetly Recommended. He was universally and greatly Belov'd; and now he is Dearly miss'd and lamented among us."—*News-Letter*, Nov. 20, 1721.



The committee appointed in 1715 in relation to "hucksters," reported in 1716 that the best way to prevent the abuses complained of was for the town to set up a public market. Whereupon the same committee—five members of the Artillery Company, with Thomas Hutchinson, Esq. (1694), Adam Winthrop, Esq. (1692), and Mr. John White added—were appointed to make report in relation to the town setting up a public market, which report, after much consideration, was in 1718 disallowed.

The Artillery farm of one thousand acres, as laid out in 1673, is described on pages 221 and 222. It remained unoccupied by the Company for forty years. In 1702, the Company decided to lease it. That determination was confirmed by vote of the Company in 1703 and 1713.

"March 8 anno 1715/16" the following memorandum was inserted in the records:—

"The farm of 1000 acres described as on the other side<sup>1</sup> is this day let out by lease to Leonard Whiting of Dunstable housewright for 11 years, and he is to build thereon, vizt, an house forty feet long, twenty feet wide, fifteen feet studd, chimnies etc.: a barn forty-five feet long, thirty wide, eleven stud, board and shingle it: To fence in fifty acres, break up thirty acres, plant an orchard with one hundred and twenty apple trees of one acre and pay one barrel [of] cyder annually to the Company in the month of October and at the end of the term to leave all in tenantable repair.—

"By the committee Coll<sup>o</sup> Checkley [1678] Coll<sup>o</sup> Savage [1699] Major Fitch [1700] Messers Thomas [1694] and Edward [1702] Hutchinson, Edward Martyn [1702] Thomas Smith [1702] and Adino Bulfinch [1702]

"The Articles of Agreement are Lodged with E. Martyn [1702]."

The mansion of Peter Sergeant, erected in 1679,<sup>2</sup> was occupied by his widow until she married Simeon Stoddard (1675). Therefore, in 1716 the Provincial Legislature voted to purchase the mansion, and the heirs of Mr. Sergeant passed the deeds, on the 11th and 12th of April, 1716, to Jeremiah Allen (1694), the treasurer of the province; to Jeremiah Dummer (1671), the treasurer of the county of Suffolk, and to Joseph Prout (1674), the treasurer of the town of Boston.

When the mansion-house became public property, it was a magnificent building. No pains had been spared to make it not only elegant, but also spacious and convenient. It stood somewhat back in its ample lot, and had the most pleasant and agreeable surroundings of any mansion in the town. It was of brick, three stories in height, with a high roof and lofty cupola, the whole being surmounted by an Indian chief, with a drawn bow and arrow, the handiwork of Deacon Shem Drowne, who made the grasshopper on Faneuil Hall. The house was approached over a stone pavement and a high flight of massive stone steps, and through a magnificent door-way, which would compare well with those of the palaces of Europe. Trees of very large size and grand proportions shaded this princely home, and added much to its imposing appearance.

During the time of the provincial government, it seems to have been used by the Governors; but after the expulsion of Gen. Gage, in 1776, it was converted into accommodations for officers in the transaction of public business. In 1796, after the building of the State House on Beacon Street, the Province House was sold to John Peck; but the bargain fell through, on account of inability of the purchaser to make payments; and, in 1799, the whole estate was reconveyed to the State, and subsequently was granted by the State to the Massachusetts General Hospital, whose trustees, in 1817, leased it to David Greenough, Esq., for the term of ninety-nine years.

<sup>1</sup> See page 222.

<sup>2</sup> See page 251.

Subsequent to the last-mentioned date, this aristocratic mansion was put to nearly all sorts of purposes. The stately trees were, soon after the property was leased to Mr. Greenough, cut down, and a row of brick houses and stores built upon the line of the street, excluding the house from view, until approached through a narrow archway, leading to its front door and to the houses which had been erected in the rear of the estate.

In 1851, the whole building was changed in appearance, its interior having been remodelled for the purpose of accommodating a company of vocalists; and it was at this time that the outside was covered with a coat of yellowish mastic.

At half past five o'clock, on the 25th of October, 1864, the Province House was destroyed by fire, leaving only the walls standing. The fire originated in the upper story, and was supposed to be the work of an incendiary. For some years prior to its destruction, it was used as a place of entertainment. Extensive and complete repairs were made, and the restored building is now occupied as a hotel, and is called the Boston Tavern.

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1716 were: William Downe, James Halsey, Thomas Jackson, William Pell, Ebenezer Thornton, Samuel Townsend.

**William Downe** (1716), shopkeeper, of Boston, son of William and Hannah (Appleton) Downe, was born in Boston, Feb. 2, 1676.<sup>1</sup> A William Downe married, May 14, 1713, Rebecca Pierson. William Downe (1716) married (1) or (2), July 4, 1717, Sarah Danforth. William and Sarah Downe had seven children born in Boston.

He was a tithing-man in 1724; scavenger in 1726; elected assessor in 1728, but was excused; auditor in 1730 and 1738; overseer of the poor from 1738 to 1751, when he declined to serve longer; fireward in 1732 and 1746, and selectman from 1732 to 1735 inclusive. He also served on important committees,—as, examining the fortifications and batteries in 1746; considering the better security of the town; getting the twelve gun-carriages, ordered by the town, made and finished, and providing hulks and fire-ships for the better protection of the town. In 1736, Capt. William Downe was one of the subscribers to Prince's Chronological History of New England. He was appointed a justice of the peace March 1, 1743-4.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1719, ensign in 1725, lieutenant in 1727, and its captain in 1732 and 1744. His son, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1758. He was captain in the militia from 1733 to 1741-2, at least such is his title in the Boston Records. He was lieutenant-colonel of the Suffolk Regiment in 1742, and served eight years. He was also treasurer of the Artillery Company from May 1, 1738, probably until his decease. Capt. John Ballentine, Jr. (1694), and Joseph Hiller (1709), were his bondsmen as treasurer.

His integrity and ability are shown from the fact that, in the files of the probate office, he is mentioned many times as guardian, executor, etc. He is called, in the Boston Records, "shopkeeper" and "upholsterer." There was a William Downes, born Feb. 23, 1666, in Boston, called "pinmaker." He lived a few years earlier than Col. William (1716). The residence of the latter was at the North End, and partition of his estate

**William Downe** (1716). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842; Savage's Gen. Dict.

<sup>1</sup> The Boston Records give the birth date of William Downe (1716), son of William and Hannah

Downe, as Feb. 2, 1676. His gravestone indicates that he was born in 1686. Records, as yet undiscovered, can alone give the explanation of these apparent inconsistencies.

there was made between two of his grandchildren, Abigail and Rebecca Cheever, in 1766.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says Col. William Downe (1716) "died June 3, 1753, aged sixty-seven years."<sup>1</sup> His widow, Sarah, administered on his estate. His son, William Downe, Esq., died in January, 1747-8.

In several town offices, "he was a faithful public servant, but he never had any office in the provincial government. Probably he was not ambitious, except to be useful, and it is but a just tribute to his memory to say he was a distinguished and good man in his sphere. A few years since, his gravestone, with those of his wife and children, side by side, in good order, struck the visitor with pleasant yet solemn veneration." They were situated, in 1870, in the rear part of the Granary Burial-Ground, but the ruthless hand of improvement has demolished them.

His first inventory amounted to £1,717 15s. ½d., including his mansion at the North End, and his warehouse, £733; silver, etc., £62; horse, chaise, saddle, and bridle, £17, and a negro boy, £40.

His second inventory amounted to £389 14s. 8d., in which was included his farm at Lunenburg, where his oldest son lived, valued at £233 6s. 8d.; eighty acres of land at Lunenburg, £56, and forty-eight acres of woodland, £53 6s. 8d.; gold rings, gold buttons, etc., £9 14s. 8d.

He died worth about ten thousand dollars, — a good fortune in those days.

**James Halsey** (1716), mathematical instrument maker, of Boston, son of Nathaniel and Hannah (Gross) Halsey, was born in Boston, April 10, 1695. He married, May 30, 1717, Anna Gurtridge, daughter of Walter Gurtridge. He was a founder of the New Brick Church in 1719, deacon of that church in 1735, and was the last ruling elder chosen by it. Possibly Mr. Halsey (1716) was not anxious to exercise the authority of the office, and seated himself with his family, for, Aug. 22, 1739, the church unanimously voted to "desire Mr. James Halsey [1716] to take his proper place in the elder's seat."

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1720. He was one of the bondsmen for Capt. Daniel Pecker (1718), town collector, to the amount of £11,626. Mr. Halsey (1716) was quite an owner of real estate, and experienced trouble by admitting tenants who had not been admitted as inhabitants of the town. In 1718 and 1725, he was elected to town office.

His will was proved Jan. 2, 1767.

**Thomas Jackson** (1716), of Boston, son of Thomas (1692) and Priscilla (Grafton) Jackson, was born in Boston, July 18, 1691. A Thomas Jackson married, Oct. 18, 1733, Ann Davis.

He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1718.

**James Halsey** (1716). AUTHORITIES: Town Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

<sup>1</sup> "Last Lords day died and yesterday was decently interred the remains of William Downe Esq. of this town in the 67 year of his age. He was a gentleman that for many years had served the town in various betrustments was one of his Majestys Justice of the Peace for the County of Suffolk and was honored with a Lieut Col commission in the

Regiment in this Town which he lately resigned In every betrustment and all the Offices he sustained he behaved to universal satisfaction In his commercial dealings he was strictly just and Equitable a Lover of piety and good men a strict observer of the Sabbath a friend of the poor always ready to distribute willing to Communicate His death is lamented as by his bereaved family so by all who knew him and were acquainted with him" — *Boston News-Letter*, June 7, 1753.



**William Pell** (1716), peruke-maker, of Boston, son of Edward and Elizabeth Pell, and brother of Capt. Edward (1714), was born in Boston, May 11, 1694. He married, May 3, 1726, Susanna Mountford, daughter of John (1697). He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1719, and its third sergeant in 1720. In 1720, he was one of the remonstrants against the installation of Rev. Peter Thacher as pastor of the New North Church.

He was chosen a constable in March, 1725, but declined to serve, and paid the fine.

**Ebenezer Thornton** (1716), of Boston, son of Ensign Timothy (1691), was born in Boston. He was baptized at the First Church, Jan. 12, 1690-1. He married, May 15, 1721, Elizabeth, daughter of Capt. Thomas Gilbert. He was at first a trader in Boston, in company with his father. He removed to Watertown as early as 1738, where his wife died June 10, 1740, and he married Mary, widow of Matthias Coussens. He died June 20, 1750. He was constable of the town of Boston in 1719.

Mr. Thornton (1716) was not active in town matters, but March 29, 1734, he was elected one of a committee to consider the "fortifications," and report concerning their improvement, and the expense thereof, which the committee did, April 3 following. These fortifications were known as North Battery Wharf and Fort Hill.

**Samuel Townsend** (1716), of Boston, son of James and Rebecca (Moseley) Townsend, and grandson of James Townsend (1679), was born in Boston, Aug. 30, 1695. He died Aug. 20, 1720.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1716 is as follows: —

"April 2<sup>d</sup> 1716. The Rev'd Mr. Joseph Baxter of Medfield was chosen to preach the Election Sermon, and the Commission officers were desired to request it of him. Accepted."

**Rev. Joseph Baxter**, who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1716, was a son of John and Hannah (White) Baxter, of Braintree. He was born June 4, 1676; graduated at Harvard College in 1693, and was ordained minister of Medfield, April 21, 1697. He continued in that relation until his decease, May 2, 1745.

1717-8. The officers elected were: Edward Hutchinson (1702), captain; Nathaniel Oliver (1701), lieutenant; John Greenough (1712), ensign. William Parkman (1711) was first sergeant; Wigglesworth Sweetser (1700), second sergeant; James Gooch, Jr. (1714), third sergeant; Benjamin Hiller (1714), fourth sergeant, and Benjamin Hiller (1714), clerk.

March 10, 1717-8, Timothy Clarke, Esq. (1702), Thomas Hutchinson, Esq. (1694), and Elisha Cooke, Esq. (1699), were chosen a committee "to Consider & make Enquiry abt Encourageing the bringing of Sea Coal into this Town."

**William Pell** (1716). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Ebenezer Thornton** (1716). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Bond's Watertown, p. 602; Hurd's Hist. of Middlesex Co., Vol. III., p. 373.



The new members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1717 were: Samuel Barrat, Ebenezer Bridge, Grafton Feveryear, John Gibbons, Benjamin Gray, James Hill, Joseph Hubbard, Ephraim Hunt.

**Samuel Barrat** (1717), son of William, of Boston, was born Feb. 8, 1670. He married, March 12, 1694, Sarah Manning. He was a tithing-man and a member of the militia of Boston in 1715, 1717, and 1718. In 1720, the town owned a small piece of ground "abutting on said Barretts house and land at the end of the highway there, abutting on the Mill Creek nigh the Water Mill." In 1728, the town voted that the committee for purchasing grain manage the building of the granary, "with Mr. David Farnum and Mr. Samuel Barrat [1717] being joined with them."

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1718, and lieutenant in 1722. He died July 22, 1733. The tomb of Samuel Barrat (1717), in the South burying-place, which he had permission to build in 1722, was No. 21.

**Ebenezer Bridge** (1717), blacksmith, of Boston, son of Samuel (1679), and brother of Ensign Benjamin (1711), was born in Boston, Aug. 2, 1687, and married, May 11, 1710, Mary Roberts, of Boston. He was clerk of the market in 1718, and in 1725 was elected constable, but paid the fine rather than serve. The selectmen, March 31, 1718, allowed Mr. Ebenezer Bridge (1717) to dig up the highway "in Beer Lane & a Cross Back Street," to James Howard's cellar. Beer Lane was "Bridge's Lane," and afterward Richmond Street. Back Street is now Salem Street. In 1729, Ebenezer Bridge (1717) erected a house near "Beerlane" (Bur-lane). He is repeatedly called a blacksmith; was active in the militia, and became captain.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1724, ensign in 1731, and lieutenant in 1738. Inventory of his estate was filed in 1747.

**Grafton Feveryear** (1717), barber and peruke-maker, of Boston, was a son of Edward and Mary (Hardy) Feveryear, of Salem. Grafton (1717), their first son, was born March 31, 1689, and married, March 14, 1711-2, Joanna Langdon. He served the town as clerk of the market in 1716, and as constable in 1722. The first and last recorded acts of Mr. Feveryear (1717) are his being a bondsman. In 1725, he was a bondsman in one hundred pounds for John Swinerton, a new inhabitant; and Dec. 7, 1737, Rev. Joshua Gee and Grafton Feveryear (1717) gave bond (to warrant the town from any charge on his account) in behalf of James, a negro man, "lately manumitted by the order of the Great and General Court." Aug. 25, 1731, he was one of a committee which petitioned the selectmen "in behalf of the North Church in Boston, for liberty to erect a small building fronting on Ship Street." He probably lived on Snow Hill, or Snow Hill Street, which ran "from Frary's corner in Prince Street to the old Ferry way near Hudson's Point."

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1721. His will, dated in 1751, was proved April 11, 1755.

**Samuel Barrat** (1717). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1883, p. 263.

**Ebenezer Bridge** (1717). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Grafton Feveryear** (1717). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1861, 1894.

**John Gibbons** (1717) was a merchant of Boston. He married Elizabeth Swan, Aug. 23, 1725.

When the Episcopalians resolved upon organizing a second church in Boston, a meeting was held Sept. 2, 1722, and a Mr. John Gibbons was chosen one of a committee to receive subscriptions for a building. This may have been Dr. John Gibbins (1711).

John Gibbons [1717] was second sergeant of the Company in 1720. Administration was granted on his estate in October, 1725.

**Benjamin Gray** (1717) was a bookseller in Boston. He married Lydia, daughter of Rev. Thomas Bridge, who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1705. Mr. Gray (1717) does not appear to have held any office in the town. At a meeting of the selectmen, Sept. 25, 1728, they "Executed a Leace to Mr Jacob Wendall [1733] of Boston, merchant, of The Brick Shop or Tenement at the Head of the Dock in Boston now in possession of Benja Gray [1717] Bookseller for the term of Seven years from October 1, next coming," at a rental of forty pounds per annum.

**James Hill** (1717) was a peruke-maker in Boston. He married Mary Hunt, Jan. 19, 1713. He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1721, and second sergeant in 1722. His will, dated April 11, was proved May 29, 1746.

**Joseph Hubbard** (1717), blacksmith, of Boston, was probably the Joseph Hubbard who joined the Company in 1707. See page 361.

**Ephraim Hunt** (1717), blacksmith, of Boston, son of Capt. Thomas (1685) and Judith (Torrey) Hunt, was born Feb. 17, 1681. He married Joanna — about 1701, by whom he had seven children. The mother died Aug. 20, 1731, and he married, (2) June 8, 1732, Sarah (Austin) Butler.

He was a tithing-man in Boston, and identified with the militia in 1707. In 1722, he was elected constable, but declined to serve and paid the fine. He became a member of the New North Church, and, having been elected March 8, 1726, he was ordained a deacon of that church on the 18th of August following. He held the office of councillor from 1703 to 1713 inclusive; was elected councillor June 6, 1706, by writ of mandamus, the Governor having negatived Mr. Joseph Hammond, and was appointed special justice of the Court of Common Pleas, Oct. 24, 1712. He was appointed justice of the peace June 30, 1702.

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1719, and in the militia rose to the rank of colonel. The family burial-place was on Copp's Hill.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1717 is as follows: —

"April 1, 1717. The Rev'd Mr. Thomas Blowers of Beverly was chosen to preach the Artillery Election Sermon and the Commission officers, with Colo. Samuel Checkley [1678] and Lt Colo. Savage [1699] were desired to request it of him. Accepted by him.

"October 7<sup>th</sup> 1717. Then voted that Col. Thomas Fitch [1700], Lt Colo. Edward Hutchinson [1702], Maj. Habijah Savage [1699], Capt. Jonathan Pollard [1700], Capt Nathaniel Oliver [1701], Capt John Greenough [1712] and Mr. Richard Bill [1707] be

**Ephraim Hunt** (1717). AUTHORITIES: Hunt Genealogy; Boston Records.

a committee to inspect Mr. Leonard Whiting's lease of the Artillery Company's farm at Dunstable, whether he has complied with the terms thereof, and upon any failure on his part, they are Impowered to act further what they shall think for the interest of the Company; and if they shall think proper that three or more of the committee go upon the spot, and enquire into the premises, that the Company will bear the charge thereof. And, further, the said committee are Impowered to act what they shall think needful with relation to the five hundred acres confirmed to the Company by the General Assembly in May last, the charge to be borne by the Company as before."

The General Court, at its May session in 1717, made good the additional grant of five hundred acres by granting one half of a reservation of one thousand acres belonging to the government, in the township of Rutland, Worcester County. The Indians continued to infest those parts, and in 1724 committed depredations in that township. The grant is as follows:—

"The following order passed the House of Representatives,—read—concurred, viz: Upon the petition of Edward Hutchinson [1702], Habijah Savage [1699], John Ballentine, Jr [1694], Edward Winslow [1700], and Jonathan Pollard [1700], in behalf of the Artillery Company in Boston, praying that five hundred acres of land which are reserved to the Province in the township of Rutland, may be granted to said Company, to satisfy a grant made to them by the General Court, Oct. 15<sup>th</sup> 1673—Ordered, that five hundred acres of the one thousand reserved to the Province in the township of Rutland, be granted in answer to this petition; but so, that John Burrill, Esq, to whom the other 500 acres is granted, have the choice at which end to lay out his grant.

"Consented to.

SAMUEL SHUTE, *Governor*."

This grant made the Artillery Company owners of one moiety of said one thousand acres, in common with the heirs of Hon. John Burrill, deceased; and the Artillery Company, April 7, 1729, appointed Capt. William Ward (1724), Thomas Smith (1702), and Col. Benjamin Pollard (1726), to make partition, which was mutually agreed upon, May 1, 1729.

**Rev. Thomas Blowers**, of Beverly, delivered the anniversary sermon before the Artillery Company in 1717.<sup>1</sup> He was the fourth son of Pyam and Elizabeth (Belcher) Blowers, of Cambridge. His mother, Elizabeth Belcher, was the eldest child of Andrew Belcher (1642), and sister of Andrew, the father of Gov. Jonathan Belcher. Rev. Thomas Blowers was born in Cambridge, Aug. 1, 1677. He graduated at Harvard College in 1695, and was ordained as pastor of the church in Beverly, Oct. 29, 1701. He married Emma Woodbury, who, with their six children, survived him.

The salary of Rev. Thomas Blowers, at Beverly, was eighty pounds per annum, with "an allowance of one hundred pounds for a settlement." His residence was near Charnock Street, which takes its name from that of his married daughter, Emma Charnock. He continued in the pastoral office in Beverly until his decease, June 17, 1729.

<sup>1</sup> "[1717, June] 3. Mr Blowers preaches from 1 Sam. 16. 18. Mr. Edward Hutchinson is chosen Captain; Capt N. Oliver Lt; Greenough Ensign.

Governor gave the Staves on the Change by reason of the wet weather."—*Sewall Papers, Vol. III., p. 131.*



**1718-9.** The officers elected were: Thomas Hutchinson (1694), captain; John Greenough (1712), lieutenant; Joseph Hiller (1709), ensign. Nathaniel Goodwin (1711) was first sergeant; Samuel Barrat (1717), second sergeant; Francis Parnell (1713), third sergeant; John Holyoke (1714), fourth sergeant, and Thomas Jackson (1716), clerk.

In 1718, Thomas (1694) and Edward (1702) Hutchinson, executors of John Foster, Esq. (1679), proposed to be at the charge of erecting a house convenient for a free writing-school at the northerly part of Boston, for the benefit of said town. It was accepted, and the building was erected on land purchased by the town of Mrs. Susanna Love, corner of Bennet and Love (now Tileston) streets, where the Eliot School-House now stands.

At the town meeting, May 14, 1718, the fortifications of the town were again considered, and Capt. Timothy Clarke (1702), Col. Edward Hutchinson (1702), with three other persons, were appointed a committee to consider the state of the fortifications, advise in regard to placing a battery at the end of Long Wharf, and repair the North Battery.

Sept. 29, 1718, the selectmen having been informed "that ye Sconce or South Battrey is become defective and unfit to keep ye Townes powder there Ordered that Capt Timo Clarke [1702] be desired to send said powder to the Powder House, takeing Mr Powning [1691] rec't for the Same. . . .

"Ordered that Capt Timo Clarke [1702] be desired to move to his Exel'cy the Gov'r & Council for a Supply of So much of ye Townes powder as hath been Expended in the Service of the Province."

The new members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1718 were: Sampson Dewer, John Eyre, John Gerrish, Jr., and Jonathan Sewall.

**Sampson Dewer** (1718), of Boston, son of Sampson and Sarah Dewer, was born in Boston, Jan. 28, 1690. This name is spelled in the Boston Records, Dewer, Dure, and Duer. He was a brother of David Dewer (on city records; Dure, on Company record), who joined the Artillery Company in 1695. He was a tithing-man, and a member of the militia of Boston in 1713, and clerk of the market in 1721.

The family burial-place was in King's Chapel Burial-Ground.

**John Eyre** (1718), often Eire or Eyers, merchant, of Boston, son of Hon. John Eyre (1682), was born Aug. 7, 1700, and he graduated at Harvard College in 1718. His mother was Catherine, daughter of Capt. Thomas Brattle (1675), who after the death of John Eyre (1682), in June, 1700, married Wait Winthrop (1692). He settled in Boston as a merchant. John Eyre (1718) was elected constable for 1723, but was excused, and the following year was elected to the same office and excused again. He lived on Queen Street, adjacent to the prison, as his mother conveyed to him, Oct. 21, 1724, land adjoining his own residence there. Feb. 1, 1725-6, he, with his wife, Anne, and others, sold to Jacob Wendell (1733), for seven hundred pounds, warehouses and wharf privileges at the foot of King (State) Street, lately the property of their mother, Catherine Winthrop. March 7 of the same year, the General Court granted him a strip of land off of the prison estate, for a passage way. Dec. 23, 1728, he mortgaged his

**Sampson Dewer** (1718). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Eyre** (1718). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Descendants of Thomas Brattle, p. 70.







*Wm Dummer.*

estate on Queen Street to Jacob Wendell (1733), and Feb. 20, 1732-3, gave a second mortgage for the same. He probably soon after removed to Portsmouth, N. H., where he was living in August, 1741. He died, according to the Triennial Catalogue of Harvard College, in 1753.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1722.

**John Gerrish, Jr.** (1718), merchant, son of Capt. John (1700) and Lydia (Watts) Gerrish, was born in Boston, Jan. 22, 1695. He does not appear to have held town office. He joined the Old South Church, March 7, 1735-6, and administration was granted on his estate in 1737.

**Jonathan Sewall** (1718), of Boston, son of Stephen and Margaret (Mitchell) Sewall, of Salem, was born in Salem, Feb. 7, 1693. Jonathan (1718) was a brother of Major Samuel Sewall (1720).<sup>1</sup> They were nephews of Major Samuel (1679). Jonathan (1718) married Mary Payne, of Boston.

He was clerk of the Artillery Company in 1720, and first sergeant in 1726.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1718 is as follows:—

"April 7. 1718. The Rev. Mr. John Barnard was chosen to preach the Artillery Election Sermon, and the commission officers were appointed to request it of him. Accepted by him."

**Rev. John Barnard**, who preached the Artillery election sermon of 1718, was a son of John Barnard (1677), of Boston. He was born Nov. 6, 1681, and graduated at Harvard College in 1700. He became a minister of much distinction, being first settled in Marblehead. The town proposed to select a colleague for Rev. Mr. Cheever, the aged and infirm pastor of the church. There were two candidates, Rev. John Barnard and Rev. Edward Holyoke. The town selected the former, and, as a result, a second church was formed with the latter as pastor. On the 9th of November, 1715, Mr. Barnard entered upon his duties as colleague.

He died Jan. 24, 1770. His interesting autobiography is printed in 3 Massachusetts Historical Collections, V., 178.

The officers elected were: William Dummer<sup>2</sup> (1702), captain;  
**1719-20.** Joseph Hiller (1709), lieutenant; John Sale (1704), ensign. Joseph Hubbard (1717) was first sergeant; Ephraim Hunt (1717), second sergeant; William Downe (1716), third sergeant; Samuel Holyoke (1714), fourth sergeant, and William Pell (1716), clerk.

On the twenty-ninth day of April, 1719, the town voted, "The Thanks of this Town unto the doners of the Two North School Houses, vizt: The Hon'ble Thomas

"[1718] May 2 [should be June 2]. Mr Barnard preaches the Artillery [sermon]."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 186.

<sup>1</sup> Henry Sewall came to New England in 1634. He returned to England prior to 1649, and had (1) Samuel (1679), born March 28, 1652, who came to

New England in 1661; (2) Stephen, born Aug. 19, 1657. Stephen had Major Samuel (1720), born Nov. 24, 1689, and Jonathan (1718), born Feb. 7, 1693.

<sup>2</sup> "[1719] June 1, 2d day. Lt. Gov. chosen Captain."—*Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 221.

Hutchinson Esq [1694] for the Gramer School-house. And ye S'd mr Thomas Hutchinson [1694] and also Edward Hutchinson [1702] Esqrs for ye Writing Sch. House."

During 1719, the people of Boston were distressed, so much so that a committee was chosen by the town to consider what could be done for the "relief of this town under their present distresses," and that they make report to the town. John Clark, Thomas Fitch (1700), Oliver Noyes (1699), Elisha Cooke (1699), John Marion (1691), William Clarke (1703), and Edmund Knight (1700) were chosen said committee. At the next town meeting, the above-named committee made a report in writing, which received the approbation of the town, but its contents are not now known.

The only new member recruited in 1719 was Solomon Blake.

**Solomon Blake** (1719), cooper, was a son of Edward Blake, cooper, who resided in Dorchester, but subsequently removed to Milton, where he died in 1692. A deed in the Suffolk Files reads, "Jonathan Blake, cordwainer and Solomon Blake [1719] cooper of Boston, with their wives Elizabeth and Abigail convey lands inherited from their grandfather William of Dorchester, deceased." William was the father of Edward Blake.

Solomon Blake (1719) was constable of Boston in 1714. The warrant for a town meeting, to be held May 28, 1714, was issued in usual form, and given to the constable. June 1, complaint was made against Solomon Blake (1719), because he did not make return of the warrant, and "the said meeting was wholly disappointed and defeated."

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1720. His uncle, William Blake, joined the Artillery Company in 1646.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1719 is as follows:—

"April 6, 1719. The Rev. John Webb was chosen to preach the Election Sermon and the Commission officers were appointed to request it of him. Accepted by him.

"Sept. 7<sup>th</sup> 1719. Then voted that the above committee, only putting in Lt. Col. John Ballentine [1682] in the room of Capt. Nathaniel Oliver [1701] be a committee."

The committee referred to is doubtless the one selected in 1717, of which Capt. Oliver (1701) was a member, to see if the terms of the lease had been complied with.

**Rev. John Webb**, of Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1719. He graduated at Harvard College in 1708. In 1714, the New North Church was organized, and a meeting-house built. There were two candidates for the pastorate,—Rev. John Barnard, who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1718, and Rev. John Webb, who was then chaplain at Castle William. Mr. Webb was elected at the second trial, and was ordained the first minister of the New North Church, Oct. 20, 1714. After surviving the labors of one colleague, Rev. Peter Thacher, who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1712, and enjoying the assistance of another for eight years, Mr. Webb died peacefully, April 16, 1750, aged sixty-two years. His colleague pronounced him "one of the best of Christians and one of the best of ministers."

**Rev. John Webb.** AUTHORITIES: Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Allen's Biog. Dict.



The officers elected were : Thomas Fitch (1700), captain ; Richard  
**1720-1.** Bill (1707), lieutenant ; Francis Parnell (1713), ensign. Solomon  
 Blake (1719) was first sergeant ; John Gibbins (1717), second sergeant ;  
 William Pell (1716), third sergeant ; James Halsey (1716), fourth sergeant, and Jonathan  
 Sewall (1718), clerk.

Sept. 28, 1720, the town chose a committee to consider about promoting a spinning-school or schools, for the instruction of the children of the town in spinning. Habijah Savage (1699), Daniel Oliver, William Paine (1691), and four other persons, were appointed said committee.

The recruits who united with the Artillery Company in 1720 were : Samuel Bass, John Buttolph, Andrew Cunningham, Nathaniel Cunningham, John Goldthwait, William Lee, Daniel Pecker, James Pecker, Samuel Rand, Samuel Sewall, and Erasmus Stevens.

**Samuel Bass** (1720), tanner, of Boston, probably came from Braintree. He married Christian Turell, April 9, 1717. He was constable in 1719 and 1751, and scavenger in 1754.

In 1738, he petitioned the town to sell him a certain parcel of its land, and in 1742 the same petition was again presented. The parcel was bounded northerly on Water Street one hundred feet, and easterly on said Bass's land twenty-nine feet, and southerly on said Bass's land, in part, and westerly on Joyliffe's Lane. The lot he desired was therefore twenty-nine by one hundred feet, on the southeast corner of Water and Devonshire streets, for which he and Kezia Harvey offered the town five hundred pounds. There were then a "stable shop and shed" on the lot. The offer was not accepted, but the selectmen were authorized to sell it by giving public notice.

In 1744, Samuel Bass (1720) was chosen one of a committee to collect the sum of ten thousand pounds from the inhabitants of Boston, for the purpose of building batteries and fortifications for the defence of the town, said amount having been levied by the assessors.

In February, 1756, a committee prepared a petition to be sent to the General Court, setting forth "their difficulties and repeating their grievances," showing "the decayed and diminished circumstances" of the town. At the meeting, when the petition was presented to the town, Feb. 11, 1756, Mr. Samuel Bass (1720), tanner, was chosen to report upon the decline of the tanning business from 1746 to 1756, "and reduce the same to writing." On this committee, besides others, to make a report on their several trades, were Benjamin Hallowell (1733), shipwright, Nathaniel Thwing (1736), baker, and Joseph Belknap (1742), leather-dresser.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1724, and a member of the Old South Church. His will was proved in 1766.

**John Buttolph** (1720), wine cooper, of Boston, was a son of Nicholas (1694) and Mary (Guttridge) Buttolph, of Boston. He married, June 19, 1710, Mehitable Lord. Capt. John (1720) was a scavenger in 1720, 1730, and 1731, and was elected constable in 1722, but declined and paid the fine. His petition, June 30, 1713, "to sell strong drink," was "distinctly voted — disallowed" by the selectmen. March 29, 1717, the selectmen let to Mr. John Buttolph (1720), cooper, the middle cellar under the town-

**Samuel Bass** (1720). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Buttolph** (1720). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

house for one year from April 7, at fourteen pounds per annum. In 1729, he resided in Leverett's Lane, now called Congress Street.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1723, and its ensign in 1732. Administration was granted on his estate in 1739; inventory filed in 1746, and a will was found in 1750.

**Andrew Cunningham** (1720), merchant, of Boston, son of Andrew and Sarah Cunningham, and brother of Capt. Nathaniel Cunningham (1720), was born in Boston, Aug. 17, 1692. He married, May 5, 1722, Mary Hirst. Capt. Andrew (1720) was elected constable in 1722, and collector of taxes in 1745, 1746, and 1747. He made the visitation to the families of the town, Feb. 14, 1723-4, also in 1745 and 1746, in company with the justices and others. When collector of taxes he had as his bondsmen Jacob Wendell, Esq. (1733), and John Hunt, Esq. (1709). He discharged his duty with acknowledged satisfaction, and was a man of great activity and public spirit. He died April 27, 1752, in the sixtieth year of his age, and was buried in the Granary Burial-Ground.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1724.

**Nathaniel Cunningham** (1720), merchant, of Boston, son of Andrew and Sarah Cunningham, and brother of Capt. Andrew Cunningham (1720), was born in Boston. Capt. Nathaniel (1720) lived on Cross Street, owned land there, and had a large real estate in Boston, among which was a pasture at Barton's Point.<sup>1</sup> His house and land at the bottom of the Common were the subject of the Otis lawsuit. He left the Old South Church a legacy for its poor.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1722, ensign in 1727, lieutenant in 1730, and its captain in 1731.

Capt. Nathaniel Cunningham (1720) was one of the most influential men of his time in Boston, and the reports, in the records of Boston, from those committees of which he was chairman, are alike creditable to his judgment and intelligence. Both he and his brother, Andrew (1720), were captains in the militia. He was constable of Boston in 1719. Among the important committees of the town upon which he was chosen to serve, often as chairman, were: on instructing the representatives, in 1731, 1736, 1738, and 1739; on the scheme for regulating the markets, 1732; computing the cost of erecting them, 1733; assigning places for their location, 1733, and erecting the market houses in 1734. He was on the committee for purchasing grain in 1733, 1734, 1735, and 1736; moderator of town meeting in 1732 and 1734; on committee on dividing the county in 1735, right of the town in Windmill Point in 1733, and in the town dock in 1735; petitioned the General Court, by order of the town, representing its defenceless condition in 1739, and its distressed condition in 1735; and for the

**Andrew Cunningham** (1720). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Pilgrims of Boston, by Bridgman.

**Nathaniel Cunningham** (1720). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Drake's Hist. of Boston.

"October 11, 1750. After Breakfast, went with Mr Nat Cunningham to the Commons to See the Training, which Consisted of Twelve Compys Foot and three Compys Horse from thence they march'd into Kings Street, Exercis'd their Horse and Foot. Firing Several Vollies, we went in the Towne House Facing the Street . . . from thence to Capt

Wendells [1733] Intertainment, where Dynd &c." — *Journal of Capt. Francis Goelet, in New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, January, 1870.

<sup>1</sup> "His estate was valued at £50,000. He gave to Dr. Sewall's church sixty ounces of silver; to the poor of the church, £500; to each daughter, £10,000; and the rest of his estate to his son, Nathaniel. He gave the town, now Spencer, land for a meeting-house and training field." — *See Hist. of Spencer and Suffolk Probate Records.*

relief of Boston from the province tax in 1742. He opposed the setting off of Rumney Marsh (Chelsea) in 1738, and favored the new bridge from the western part of Boston to Col. Phips's farm in 1739; and in 1742 he was one of the committee chosen to express to Peter Faneuil, Esq., the thanks of the town for his generous gift. In 1727-8, he resided on Marlborough, now Washington, Street. He served as representative to the General Court in 1739.

He died in London, Sept. 7, 1748. His tomb in the South burial-place was No. 40.

**John Goldthwait** (1720), of Boston, was the same as John Goldthwait (1711). See page 375.

**William Lee** (1720) was a shipwright, of Boston. He was a "noted ship-builder, and lived at the North End." He held town office in 1728 and 1729 only. May 22, 1722, he signed the covenant, and became a member of the New Brick Church, in which he was a deacon for many years. Jan. 23, 1733, the town treasurer complained "that Mr. William Lee [1720] is six years behind in his rent of five pounds p. year for the town's slip at the bottom of Coney's Lane." Mr. Lee (1720) replied that he had suffered by its lack of repair, and that he had paid out thirteen pounds on it. This was allowed, settlement made, and he rehired the slip at nine pounds per year. Jan. 19, 1736, he agreed with the selectmen for the town slip, at the lower end of Cross Street. Cross Street is probably another name for Coney's Lane. In 1708, Cross Street ran "from the Mill Pond, southeasterly, by the late Deacon Phillip's stone house, to the sea." The slip was not far from the corner of Cross and North streets.

"Dea. William Lee [1720], cooper and shipwright, died March 15, 1769, aged 90."

**Daniel Pecker** (1720), a tallow-chandler in Boston, was born in 1690. He married, (1) Oct. 29, 1713, Sarah Cheever; and, (2) Sept. 23, 1743, at Boston, Mrs. Elizabeth Wellard. He had a son, Daniel, also a tallow-chandler. The latter, of whom Mr. Whitman (1810) speaks, died, according to his gravestone in the Granary Burial-Ground, March 4, 1777, aged sixty years. As he was born in 1717, he could not have been the Daniel Pecker of the Artillery Company in 1720, nor could the son have been a founder of the New Brick Church.

Capt. Daniel Pecker (1720) was a scavenger of the town of Boston in 1727, constable in 1728, and hog-reeve in 1730. He was elected to the responsible office of collector of taxes, Nov. 1, 1733, which he held until Dec. 10, 1739, when he declined to continue in it on account of the small pay. In March following, he was elected assessor, and continued in that office until 1749.

His residence was on Middle Street in 1719, and also in 1724; for, Feb. 11, 1723-4, the selectmen "granted to Capt. Daniel Pecker [1720] liberty to try tallow and make candles in a shed behind his house in Middle Street, according to his petition."

He gave five pounds, March 25, 1735, towards the erection of the new workhouse. April 16, 1744, he was chosen one of a committee to raise, by a tax on the inhabitants of Boston, the sum of ten thousand pounds, Old Tenor, the same to be applied in erecting batteries and fortifications in said town.

**William Lee** (1720). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Daniel Pecker** (1720). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Pilgrims of Boston.



May 22, 1722, he signed the covenant of the New Brick Church. He was active in the militia, serving as captain for several years. In 1729, he was lieutenant of the Artillery Company.

He died Oct. 2, 1750, aged sixty years, and was buried in the Granary Burial-Ground. His will, dated June 7, was proved Oct. 16, 1750.

**James Pecker** (1720), of Boston, "in his will," says Mr. Whitman (1810), "is styled wharfinger." He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1727. He was active in the formation of the New Brick Church in 1711, but had previously been a member of the Old South Church. He served the town as hog-reeve in 1719, constable in 1721, and clerk of the market in 1725 and 1731.

Nov. 19, 1711, he, with Nathaniel Goodwin (1711) and Benjamin Goodwin, was appointed to survey a chimney, said to be defective and dangerous. Jan. 24, 1715-6, he laid a sewer, ninety-five feet in length, from the common sewer in Prince Street to his cellar drain in Salem Street. June 27, 1717, the selectmen granted permission to "Mr James Pecker and his Bro. Mr. Benj. Edwards, to build a tomb on the Southerly side of the North burying ground." In 1717-8, he is mentioned as one of the trustees for the proprietors of the common sewer, which ran through Prince Street as far as the lower end of Snow Hill Street, and thence into the Mill Pond. The distance was seven hundred and ninety feet. Among those who made use of this sewer were, James Pecker (1720), James Tileston (1711), Robert Gutteridge (1694), Capt. John Pecker (1733), and John (1691) and William Clough (1695).

He died at Boston, April 30, 1734, after a lingering sickness. He was highly respected, and "very much lamented."

Inventory, two thousand eight hundred and seventy-three pounds.

**Samuel Rand** (1720), tailor, of Boston, son of "Sergeant" Thomas and Sarah (Edenden) Rand, was born May 3, 1679. He married Sarah Paine, Jan. 20, 1703, at Boston. They had eleven children, of whom the seventh, William, an apothecary and army surgeon at Louisburg in 1745, joined the Artillery Company in 1732. Capt. Samuel (1720) died in 1748, his will of Jan. 9 being proved Feb. 21. "His gravestone," says Mr. Whitman (1810), "was recently standing in the Granary ground."

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1723, lieutenant in 1731, and active in the militia of Boston, in which he attained the rank of captain. He became a member of the Old South Church, Feb. 26, 1720-1.

Capt. Samuel Rand (1720) was a constable in 1713 and 1718; tithing-man in 1728, and scavenger in 1729. His location is approximately determined by the records. In 1714, the selectmen appointed a committee—William Paine (1691), Nathaniel Goodwin (1711), and William Dawes—to estimate a brick partition wall between George Cabot's and Samuel Rand's (1720) property, "on the northerly side of King [State] Street in Boston"; and March 8, 1714-5, Samuel Rand (1720) was assessed for repairs on the pump, corner of the present Court and Washington streets, and was again assessed for the purpose, April 18, 1733.

Liberty was granted him, March 30, 1724, to build a tomb on the south line in the South burial-place. It was numbered "25."

**James Pecker** (1720). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Samuel Rand** (1720). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



**Samuel Sewall** (1720), of Boston, son of Stephen and Margaret (Mitchell) Sewall, of Salem, was born in Salem, Nov. 24, 1689. Jonathan (1718) was a brother of Major Samuel Sewall (1720). They were nephews of Judge Sewall (1679).

He was active in town affairs, and though not an officer of the town, he served on the most important committees: regulation of porters, 1734; better supply of wood, 1737; building the workhouse, 1737; relief in paying representatives, 1737; on retrenchment in town expenses, 1739; building bridge over Charles River, 1739, and against firing guns on house-tops, 1740-1, etc. He was an officer in the militia, major of the Boston regiment in 1733, and captain of the Artillery Company in 1734. He was appointed justice of the peace, Dec. 9, 1731, and was reappointed Jan. 9, 1735-6.

**Erasmus Stevens** (1720) was a carpenter, of Boston. He was a viewer of shingles and measurer of boards and lumber from 1716 to 1720 inclusive, and constable of Boston in 1722. July 15, 1725, Erasmus Stevens (1720) and Grafton Feveryear (1717) gave bond in the sum of one hundred pounds on account of John Swinerton, admitted an inhabitant. Mr. Swinerton was from Salem, and July 26 was allowed "to keep a school to instruct reading and writing within this town." June 7, 1738, Mr. Stevens (1720) appeared before the selectmen and said that Mr. Charnock, sealer of cord-wood, "is often out of town and does not attend to that employment." He asked for another person to be appointed.

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1724, its lieutenant in 1739, and was one of the "substantial mechanics" who founded the New North Church in 1714.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1720 is as follows: —

"April 5, 1720. The Rev. Mr. Edward Holyoke was chosen to preach the Election Sermon and he desired to be excused.

"May 20, 1720. The Rev Mr. Thomas Symmes of Bradford was chosen to preach the Election Sermon. Accepted by him."

Rev. Edward Holyoke, who was invited to deliver the anniversary sermon before the Company in 1720, but declined to do so, was a son of Elizur and Mary (Eliot) Holyoke. He was born June 26, 1689, and graduated at Harvard College in 1705. On the 25th of April, 1716, the new meeting-house in Marblehead having been built, the Second Congregational Church in that town was organized, and Mr. Holyoke was ordained as its minister.

May 30, 1737, he was chosen to fill the office of president of Harvard College, made vacant by the death of President Wadsworth. At first his church strenuously objected to letting their pastor go, but, "after several meetings for prayer and conference," consent was granted, and he removed to Cambridge. When some of the people were asked how they could give their consent to part with the services of so amiable, distinguished, and exemplary a man and minister, they replied, "Old Barnard prayed him away." Rev. Mr. Barnard preached the Artillery sermon in 1718. Rev. Mr. Holyoke continued in the office of president of Harvard College nearly thirty-two years.

**Samuel Sewall** (1720). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

"[1691] April 13 To Salem, visit little Sam Sewall [1720], my name Sake." — *Sewall's Diary*.

**Erasmus Stevens** (1720). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Rev. Thomas Symmes**, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1720,<sup>1</sup> was a son of Rev. Zachariah Symmes, pastor at Rehoboth and afterward at Bradford. He was born Feb. 1, 1677-8, and graduated at Harvard College in 1698. He married Elizabeth Blowers, daughter of Pyam Blowers, of Cambridge, and sister of Rev. Thomas Blowers, of Beverly, Mass. She died April 6, 1714, and March 28, 1715, he married Hannah Pike, who died Feb. 1, 1718-9, and for his third wife he married, Jan. 19, 1720-1, Eleanor Moody, who died Oct. 6, 1725.

Rev. Zachariah Symmes, pastor of the church at Bradford, having become aged and infirm, the church voted, about 1705, to engage an assistant for their pastor. While invitations to candidates were being extended and declined, Rev. Mr. Symmes died upon the twenty-second day of March, 1707. The son, Rev. Thomas Symmes, who had been preaching in the neighboring town of Boxford, was about leaving that parish. He was born in Bradford, studied five years at Cambridge after graduation, and had preached near Bradford for several years. He was therefore familiar with the parish his father so faithfully served. June 14, 1708, he preached there by invitation, and Nov. 24, 1708, it was voted by the town that Rev. Thomas Symmes be ordained and settled over the Bradford parish. He retained that relation until his decease, Oct. 6, 1725, when he was buried by his father's side.

Rev. Mr. Symmes's character and gifts are vividly described by the late Hon. John B. D. Cogswell, in the *History of Essex County*. He says, "Increase Mather praised him. He was attractive personally, from good looks, high spirit, accomplishments, varied learning, impetuosity. He had a fine voice, and was a good singer." When the Artillery election sermon, which he preached in 1720, was printed, Rev. Mr. Colman, of Boston, wrote a preface to it, wherein he said, "May it prove as profitable in the reading as it was in the hearing; the preacher was unto us a very lovely song of one that has a pleasant voice and can play well on an instrument."

---

The officers elected were: Habijah Savage (1699), captain; Francis 1721-2. Parnell (1713), lieutenant; Benjamin Emmons, Jr. (1698), ensign. Thomas Chamberlain (1714) was first sergeant; John Goldthwait (1720), second sergeant; Grafton Feveryear (1717), third sergeant; John Eliot (1714), fourth sergeant, and James Hill (1717), clerk.

No recruits joined the Artillery Company in 1721.

May 12, 1721, a committee was appointed by the town to draw up instructions for the representatives of the town of Boston. On May 22 the committee reported, presenting ten instructions, which were approved by the town. The committee appointed May 12 was as follows: Ezekiel Lewis (1707), William Paine (1691), John Marion (1691), Thomas Cushing (1691), Ebenezer Clough, Nathaniel Green (1722), and Edward Hutchinson (1702). The report is given in full in the Report of the Record Commissioners of Boston, City Document No. 137, pp. 154 and 155. The first instruction is, that the representatives "Indeavor to maintain all our Civel Rights and Properties

<sup>1</sup> "[1720] June 6. Monday . . . Mr Symes Preaches an Excellent Sermon, which was a great Refreshment and Comfort to me as to the afflicted estate of that church of God. I went not to Dinner,

because a feast is made for Laughter. Excused it to the Lt. Gov. afterwards, who invited me as Captain."  
— *Sewall Papers*, Vol. III., p. 257.

against any Incroachments upon them." They advise, subsequently, that acts be passed encouraging trade, husbandry, and manufactures; the raising of good winter wheat, and of flax, granting a premium for each; the manufacturing of flax, offering a reward for the best linen in each county. They advise the assertion of the colony to their right in and to Piscataqua River, and against the payment of Mr. Belcher the thousand pounds sterling which he claimed.

The seventh instruction declares, "That whereas in the late printed remarks on the Bills against Riots &c, the Town of Boston Seems to be asperced as if they were inclined to Riots & Tumults, where as we presume, that the people of this Town & Province may Justly Claim the title of being as Loyal, Peacable and Desirous of good order as any of his Majesties Subjects whatsoever, &c."

Eighth, that they choose in all elections, those that have shown "a tender regard for our Charter Privileges & Prefer the publick before their Privat Intrest."

Ninth instruction is for some effectual law to prevent the spread of infectious disease, and the last opposes the granting of any more public lands, either to any particular persons for their use, or to a number of persons for a township, till Boston and other towns have had their proportion allowed. The report is signed by five of the committee, all of whom were members of the Artillery Company in 1722.

The instructions show a just appreciation of the condition and needs of the youthful colony, and give wise and pertinent counsel to the representatives in the General Court. At the town meeting, held Aug. 2, 1721, the same committee was elected to instruct the newly-chosen representatives, three of whom, out of four, were members of the Artillery Company: John Clark, Elisha Cooke (1699), William Clarke (1703), and William Hutchinson (1703). The instructions given a second time by this committee are also given in the same City Document, pp. 156 and 157. The preamble is noteworthy as showing the public esteem of the four representatives:—

"To John Clark, Elisha Cook Esq [1699] Mr William Clarke [1703] and William Hutchinson Esq [1703]

"Your known Loyalty to King George & Sincere attachment to the Succession in the Illustrious House of Hannover your Hearty Loue to your native country, Your Singuler value for the Liberties & Properties of this People, your Chearfull and unanimous Concurrence to promote our best Intrest, and your approved Integrity in those Publick Stations wherein you haue bin Employed having fixed the Eyes of this Town on & Determined their choice off you as proper persons to Represent them in the next General Assembly, &c."

The principal instruction offered is, "That you be not deterred by any frowns or threats from maintaining, what in you lies, our Charter privileges as well as the honour, dignity & privileges of the Honourable House of Representatives and preserving the just & laudable usages & customs, &c."

The lamp of loyalty to the colony and charter rights was kept burning by the town meeting until the flame burst into the fire of the Revolution. No citizens were so prominent, as representatives and advisers, in the first century of the colony, as members of the Artillery Company were. They lighted the lamp, refurnished its supply, enlarged its flame, and were girded for the various conflicts between royalty and the colony.



The record of the Artillery Company for 1721 is as follows:—

"June<sup>1</sup> 5 1721. The Rev'd Mr. Thomas Prince was chosen to preach the Artillery Election sermon and the commissioned officers were desired to request it of him. Accepted by him."

"October 2<sup>d</sup> [1721]. The General Assembly at their last Session did forbid all Training and Trooping in this Town for this year, by reason of the vast numbers of People exercised with the small pox: Therefore the Artillery Company did not appear in Arms this day."

**Rev. Thomas Prince** delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1721. He was a son of Samuel and Mary Prince, of Hull and Middleboro. His mother was a daughter of Gov. Hinckley. Rev. Thomas Prince was born in May, 1687, and graduated at Harvard College in 1707. "He was," says Mr. Savage, "the assiduous annalist, whose service in perpetuating evidence relative to our early history exceeds that of any other man since the first generation."

Soon after his return from a protracted sojourn in England, he became pastor of the Old South Church, and colleague with Rev. Joseph Sewall, who preached the Artillery election sermon in 1714. Mr. Prince was ordained Oct. 1, 1718, and preached his own ordination sermon, "which," says Dr. Chauncy, "no ordinary man could write." "No name," says the Old South Memorial, "on the list of Old South pastors remains in greater honor and brightness to-day than that of Thomas Prince." He died Oct. 22, 1758, aged seventy-two years.

The officers elected were: Thomas Smith (1702), captain; Samuel 1722-3. Barrat (1717), lieutenant; Edward Pell (1714), ensign. Nathaniel Cunningham (1720) was first sergeant; James Hill (1717), second sergeant; Nathaniel Green (1722), third sergeant; John Eyre (1718), fourth sergeant, and John Cookson (1701), clerk.

The Indians were instigated by the Jesuit Rallé to begin the fourth Indian war. He resided at Norridgewock, on the Kennebec, and was slain Aug. 12, 1724. The French in Canada favored the Indians, but did not openly engage in the war. The principal attacks of the Indians were directed against the towns in Maine and New Hampshire. The towns in Massachusetts suffered less. The war commenced in 1722, and continued about four years. The expenses of Massachusetts from May, 1722, to May, 1726, were about two hundred and fifteen thousand pounds, in province bills, of which amount three fourths was on account of the war. The larger portion of this war expenditure was for Maine. A treaty of peace with the eastern Indians was signed at Boston, Dec. 15, 1725, and was ratified at Falmouth, Me., Aug. 5, 1726. A present of three hundred pounds was made to the Indians, not long after.

"Last week [June 19]," says the *New England Courant*, Oct. 22, 1722, "one of the chiefs of the Mohawks lately come to town, died at the Royal Exchange Tavern in King street and was magnificently interred on Friday night last. A drawn sword lay on the coffin, and the pall was supported by six captains of the militia. The gentlemen of the Council followed next the corpse and then the Justices of the town and the commis-

<sup>1</sup> Probably an error for April.



sion officers of the militia. At last followed four Indians, the two hindermost (whom the government had appointed to attend him in his sickness) with each a pappoose at her back."

The new members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1722 were: Richard Bulkley, James Fosdick, Thomas Foster, Nathaniel Green, Samuel Greenwood, Joshua Loring, Obadiah Procter, Robert Procter, Simeon Rogers, Joseph Russell, Zechariah Thayer, Benjamin White, and Joseph White.

**Richard Bulkley** (1722), mariner, son of Capt. Joseph and Joanna (Nichols) Bulkley, was born in Charlestown, Oct. 9, 1695. He married, Sept. 20, 1728, Mary Noyes. He was elected constable of Boston in 1726, but declined to serve and paid the fine, and served as an assessor from 1730 to 1748 inclusive. In 1719, he lived in Henchman's Lane, now Henchman Street. He was bondsman for Capt. Daniel Pecker (1720), collector in the sum of eight thousand one hundred pounds in 1734, and again in 1736. By virtue of his office, he made the general walk or visitation of the town, with the justices and others, for several years.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1725, and captain in the militia. He died May 21, 1767, aged seventy-two years, and was buried in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

**James Fosdick** (1722), of Boston, son of John and Sarah (Bligh) Fosdick, of Boston, was born July 28, 1687. His sister, Sarah, married Jeremiah Belknap (1711). Lieut. James (1722) married (1) Phebe Manley, April 27, 1710, who, dying Sept. 12, 1713, was buried in the Granary Burial-Ground; (2) April 7, 1715, Sarah Lewist, of Boston. She died Nov. 12, 1721, in Charlestown. Lieut. James Fosdick (1722) served as constable of Boston in 1719.

The estate of Lieut. Reynolds (1658) on Milk Street (a part of which Josiah Franklin had liberty to use in 1692) came into the possession of Lieut. Nathaniel Reynolds, Jr. (1681). His widow sold it to John Fosdick, father of James (1722). Mr. Shurtleff says the property was divided in February, 1745-6, "between his two children, James Fosdick<sup>1</sup> [1722], gentleman, and Sarah, the wife of Jeremy Belknap [1711]." The former received the Milk Street estate, from whom it came into the possession of the Foster heirs.

He was first sergeant of the Company in 1725, and its lieutenant in 1740. The will of James Fosdick (1722), made in 1773, speaks of his advanced age. It was proved in 1776.

**Thomas Foster** (1722), of Boston, was a son of Thomas (1701). Sept. 19, 1738, Thomas Foster (1722) became a member of the engine company on Summer Street, near the Trinity Church. He was also a member in April, 1741. He was assay-master for ten years, from 1748 to 1757 inclusive. May 15, 1759, he was one of a committee

**Richard Bulkley** (1722). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**James Fosdick** (1722). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Shurtleff's Topog. Des. of Boston, p. 624.

**Thomas Foster** (1722). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Whitman (1810), in his history of the

Artillery Company, calls Mr. Fosdick (1722) a paver. James Fosdick, the paver, is first mentioned in the Records of Boston, April 7, 1742, when he and Mr. Thornton proposed to the selectmen in regard to paving Orange Street. The paver was James Fosdick, Jr., son of Lieut. James (1722), of the Artillery Company. The latter seems to have been a gentleman of means and leisure.

chosen by the town "to consider in what manner it will be best to repair, or to raise, the brick wall in the South Burial place, on the back of the Workhouse, & the expence of doing the same and report at next town meeting." When he made the visitations of the town in February, 1747-8, in February, 1748-9 and 1750-1, also in 1751-2, his name has the prefix "Mr.," but the last time he is named in the Boston Records, in 1763, he is called "Deacon Thomas Foster [1722]."

He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1725.

**Nathaniel Green** (1722), of Boston, son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth Green, was born in Boston, Nov. 27, 1698. He married Elizabeth Taylor, June 27, 1729. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1722. His will, made in July, 1736, was proved Nov. 5, 1737.

**Samuel Greenwood** (1722), merchant, of Boston, son of Samuel and Elizabeth Greenwood, was born in Boston, Aug. 15, 1696, and graduated at Harvard College in 1709. He was a captain in the militia. Aug. 8, 1717, he married Mary, daughter of Benjamin Fitch. Samuel, Sr., died in 1721. He was prominent in town office, and Samuel (1722) seems to have taken up his father's town duties, offices, and honors. Capt. Samuel Greenwood (1722) served as tithing-man in 1720, and was annually elected an overseer of the poor from 1725 until 1740. Upon the death of his father, Mr. Samuel Greenwood (1722) — he is called "Captain" after 1727 — received permission, July 30, 1722, to build a tomb on the southeast side of the North burial-place.

In 1735-6, Capt. Samuel (1722) was chairman of a committee which reported to the town a more effectual method of watching the town. He visited the public schools with the clergy and others, and also made, from 1734 to 1739, the annual visitation of the town, with the justices and others. On the day of his death, Feb. 22, 1741-2, the selectmen granted permission to Samuel Greenwood, Esq. (1722), Capt. John Goldthwait (1720), and others, "to erect a Meeting-house at the head of Bennett Street at the Northerly part of Boston."

The meeting-house above mentioned stood on the south corner of North Bennet and Hanover streets, and was erected by friends of Rev. Samuel Mather, when he received his dismissal as pastor from the "Old North," where he had preached for nine years. Mr. Mather preached in this house until his decease, in 1785, when it was sold to the Universalists, and was occupied by the First Universalist Church of Boston, Rev. Mr. Murray, pastor. The meeting-house was therefore called the Mather-Murray Meeting-House.

He died Feb. 22, 1741-2, and his will, in which he is called a "shipwright," was proved March 23 following.

He was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1724.

**Joshua Loring** (1722), son of Joseph and Hannah (Leavitt) Loring, was born in Hingham, Sept. 21, 1688. He resided in Boston, and married Elizabeth Dawes.

**Obadiah Procter** (1722). He married Margaret Gardner, Aug. 24, 1699. Obadiah Procter (1722) served as a tithing-man in 1706, and was that year a member of a military company in Boston; was clerk of the market in 1716, and constable in 1718. On the 18th of July, 1706, he was notified that he must forbear keeping any

fire in any of the chimneys of the house in which he dwells, until they have been rebuilt or repaired. He contributed, Jan. 9, 1713, five pounds towards the enlargement of King's Chapel. He resided near the corner of Court and Washington streets, in 1718.

**Robert Procter (1722).**

**Simeon Rogers (1722)**, son of Joseph and Elizabeth Rogers, was born in Boston, Feb. 18, 1698-9. He is also called Simon on the Company records. Simeon Rogers does not appear on the town records, but a Simon Rogers was clerk of the market in 1720, and constable of Boston in 1725. He was, from 1730 to 1734, — probably longer, — the landlord of the celebrated George Tavern.

**Joseph Russell (1722)**, printer, of Boston, son of Joseph (1699) and Mary Russell, was born in Boston, Dec. 12, 1687, and married, July 12, 1716, Elizabeth Walley. She was born May 4, 1693. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1725, and was a captain in the militia.

**Zechariah Thayer (1722)**, leather-dresser, of Boston, was a son of Nathaniel and Deborah Thayer. He married Mary —. Nathaniel (1734) was a son of Zechariah's brother, Cornelius Thayer.

June 30, 1712, Zechariah Thayer (1722) was granted by the selectmen a license as a retailer in Newbury, now Washington, Street. His place of business in 1733 was near the town-house, as he was taxed that year for repairs on the town pump, standing in Cornhill. He served as hog-reeve in 1710; tithing-man in 1714 and 1720; constable in 1715; and as scavenger in 1721 and 1722. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1723.

The tomb of Zechariah (1722) and Cornelius Thayer was No. 65 on the south line in the South burial-place.

**Benjamin White (1722).** He was elected constable of Boston in 1719, but refused to serve, and paid the fine. He united with the New South Church, Boston, at its organization in 1715.

**Joseph White (1722)** was a carpenter in Boston. He was viewer of shingles and measurer of boards and timber in 1723, from 1726 to 1730, and from 1737 to 1748; constable in 1724, and fence-viewer in 1735 and 1736. He was also a collector of taxes in 1745 and 1746. In the former year, he is called "Esqr." June 27, 1749, he was chosen one of a committee to bring forward suits-at-law against persons who had made encroachments on the town's lands.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1727, and captain in the militia. In May, 1750, he, as ex-collector, petitioned the town to abate certain taxes he had paid for Harvard College and the Artillery Company, as the same had been remitted by the General Court.

"A List of Soldiers under the fine of 12<sup>d</sup> per diem for delinquency.

"James Varney [1711], Solomon Blake [1719], Jeremiah Belknap [1711], Samuel Oakes [1712], Samuel Durham [1712], John Greenough [1712], John Darrell [1714],

**Zechariah Thayer (1722).** AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Thayer Genealogy.

**Joseph White (1722).** AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



Edward Pell [1714], Ephraim Hunt [1717], Joseph Hubbard [1717], John Gibbon [1717], Samuel Barratt [1717], Ebenezer Bridge [1717], John Eyre [1718], Daniel Pecker [1720], Samuel Rand [1720], William Lee [1720], Erasmus Stevens [1720], Samuel Bass [1720], Andrew Cunningham [1720], John Goldthwait [1720], James Pecker [1720], James Fosdick [1722], Zechariah Thayer [1722], Benjamin White [1722], Thomas Foster [1722], Joshua Loring [1722]."

"A List of Soldiers under the fine of 6/ per diem.

"John Holyoke [1714], Benjamin Hiller [1714], Thomas Chamberlin [1714], John Eliot [1714], James Gooch, Junr. [1714], James Wright [1715], Ebenezer Thornton [1716], Samuel Townsend [1716], Thomas Jackson [1716], William Downe [1716], William Pell [1716], James Halsey [1716], Benjamin Gray [1717], Grafton Feveryear [1717], James Hill [1717], Jonathan Sewall [1718], John Gerrish, Junr. [1718], Barratt Dyer [1711], Nathaniel Green [1722], Samuel Sewall [1720], Nathaniel Cunningham [1720], Richard Buckley [1722], Robert Proctor [1722]."

The record of the Artillery Company for 1722 is as follows:—

"April 2. 1722. The Rev'd Mr. William Cooper was chosen to preach the Artillery Election sermon, and the commission officers were desired to request it of him. Accepted by him."

**Rev. William Cooper**,<sup>1</sup> of Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1722. He was a son of Thomas and Mehitable (Minot) Cooper, of Boston. His mother, Mr. Savage informs us, was a niece of Lieut.-Gov. Stoughton, and, after her husband's decease, she married Peter Sergeant, Esq., and next, May 12, 1715, married Hon. Simeon Stoddard (1675). Rev. William Cooper was born in Boston, March 20, 1694, and graduated at Harvard College in 1712. He settled as colleague of Rev. Benjamin Colman, D. D., at the Brattle Street Church, May 23, 1716, and held his relation with that church until his decease.

He married (1) Judith Sewall and (2) Mary Foye. He was the father of Rev. Samuel Cooper (Harv. Coll., 1743), a distinguished politician, called "silver-tongued," who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1751, and of William, who for forty years was town clerk of Boston. Rev. Samuel succeeded his father as pastor of the Brattle Street Church. In 1737, Rev. William Cooper was chosen successor of Mr. Leverett (1704) as president of Harvard College, but declined this honor and trust. Mr. Cooper's labors were continued as pastor, without interruption, till near the close of his life. He died Dec. 13, 1743, aged forty-nine years. His funeral sermon was preached by Rev. Dr. Colman, and was printed.

The officers elected were: Penn Townsend (1674), captain; William  
**1723-4.** Lowder (1708), lieutenant; James Tileston (1711), ensign. Samuel  
 Rand (1720) was first sergeant; Zechariah Thayer (1722), second  
 sergeant; John Buttolph (1720), third sergeant; John Darrell (1714), fourth sergeant,  
 and John Cookson (1701), clerk.

The new recruit of the Artillery Company in 1723 was James Carey.

**Rev. William Cooper.** AUTHORITIES: Dr. Colman's Funeral Sermon; Panoplist, II.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit, Vol. I.; Allen's Biog. Dict.

<sup>1</sup> "[1722] June 4. On ye 4. Mr. Cooper preached ye Artillery Sermon, from Psalm 45.—3. 4. 5."—*Jeremiah Bumstead's Diary*.



**James Carey** (1723), cooper, of Boston, son of Jonathan and Hannah (Windsor) Carey, "of Noddle's Island," was born April 2, 1686. He married, Jan. 15, 1707-8, Sarah Tomline. Their daughter, Hannah, born April 25, 1713, married Daniel Tucker (1733). Their son, "Capt. Jonathan," joined the Artillery Company in 1740. Capt. James (1723) was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1727, and was elected clerk of the market in 1720, constable in 1723, and scavenger of Boston in 1730, 1731, 1732, and 1741.

He died Nov. 21, 1745, "in 60th yr," says his gravestone in the Granary Burial-Ground.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1723 is as follows:—

"April 2<sup>d</sup> 1723. The Rev'd Mr. Thomas Foxcroft was chosen to preach the Artillery Election Sermon, and the present commission officers were desired to request it of him. Accepted by him."

**Rev. Thomas Foxcroft**, son of Francis Foxcroft (1679), delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1723. His mother was Elizabeth, daughter of Gov. Danforth. He was born Feb. 26, 1697, and graduated at Harvard College in 1714. His father was a prominent Episcopalian, and designed this son for the service of the English Church. But after his graduation at Cambridge he was engaged in teaching school at Roxbury, where, becoming intimate with the Rev. Nehemiah Walter, he was convinced by that minister of the truth and excellence of the Puritan faith, which he finally accepted, and became an eminent advocate of that doctrine to the close of his life. Though born in Boston, he was from early childhood brought up in Cambridge. He settled over the First Church as colleague with Rev. Mr. Wadsworth in 1717, and the following year he married Anna Coney, of Boston, by whom he had one son and five daughters. He died June 16, 1769, in the fifty-second year of his ministry.

The officers elected were: Edward Hutchinson (1702), captain;  
**1724-5.** Samuel Greenwood (1722), lieutenant; Nathaniel Goodwin (1711),  
 ensign. Ebenezer Bridge (1717) was first sergeant; Erasmus Stevens  
 (1720), second sergeant; Samuel Bass (1720), third sergeant; Andrew Cunningham  
 (1720), fourth sergeant, and John Cookson (1701), clerk.

It was a custom in Boston for the justices and selectmen, accompanied by a constable in each ward, to visit annually "the familys in the Several parts of the Town to Prevent and Suppress Disorders, to Inspect Disorderly Persons new Comers, the Circumstances of the Poor and Education of their Children, &c." On Friday, Feb. 14, 1724, this annual visitation was made by thirty-eight visitors, consisting of twenty-one justices, four overseers of the poor, five selectmen, and eight constables. They were divided, by agreement, into eight parties, being one for each ward. Of these thirty-eight persons, twenty-two were members of the Artillery Company.

**James Carey** (1723). **AUTHORITIES:** Boston Records; Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates.

**Rev. Thomas Foxcroft.** **AUTHORITIES:** Drake's Hist. of Boston; Eighty-fifth Annual Record of A. and H. A. Company, 1723; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.

June 3, 1724, Mr. William Clarke (1703) was chosen representative, in place of John Clark, Esq., chosen councillor.

March 9, 1724-5, the town selected a committee to draw up some suitable method for choosing jurymen. Nathaniel Byfield (1679), Thomas Fitch (1700), Adam Winthrop (1694), Addington Davenport (1692), and Edward Hutchinson (1702), were chosen for that purpose.

In 1724, according to Drake's History of Boston, Mr. Joseph Marion, son of Deacon John Marion (1691), "established an insurance office in Boston, which appears to have been the first in the town, and probably the first in New England." In 1728, his office was where the Globe Bank now is, on State Street.

The members recruited by the Artillery Company in 1724 were: Jeremiah Belknap, Thomas Edwards, Christopher Marshall, Stephen Paine, Samuel Swift, Thomas Tileston, William Ward, Thomas Wiswall.

**Jeremiah Belknap** (1724), leather-dresser, of Boston, was a son of Joseph Belknap (1692). Jeremiah (1724) first joined the Artillery Company in 1711, but, from some cause having ceased to be a member of the Company, he rejoined it in 1724. See page 373.

**Thomas Edwards** (1724), goldsmith, of Boston, was a son of John<sup>1</sup> (1699), a goldsmith, of Boston. He was born Jan. 14, 1701-2, and married, Nov. 20, 1723, Sarah Burr. His brother, Capt. Joseph, joined the Artillery Company in 1738. His nephew, John, Jr., joined the Artillery Company in 1747. Capt. Thomas (1724) was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1729, ensign in 1747, lieutenant in 1750, and its captain in 1753. "He did not command until the thirtieth year of his membership. Up to this time, that honor was sparingly conferred upon young members." He was clerk of the market in 1729 and 1747.

Being of the same trade as his father, it is probable they occupied the same shop. The father's place of business was on "Dock Square, No. 6, between Mr. Dyer's and Mr. Casno's." Capt. Thomas Edwards (1724) lived, in 1727-8, on Union Street, near the Green Dragon Tavern.

"He died at his house in old Cornhill, now Washington Street." In his will, 1755, he mentions wife, Eleanor; daughters, Sarah Edwards and Elizabeth Cheever; John (1747), son of brother John; Joseph and John, sons of brother Joseph (1738), and his brother Samuel.

**Christopher Marshall** (1724), of Boston, son of Thomas Marshall, of Boston, was born May 22, 1697. He married, Nov. 29, 1716, Elizabeth Wheeler. He was a constable of Boston in 1734, and the fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1727, and was captain in the militia. Capt. Marshall (1724) was a captain in the expedition to Cape Breton.

Letters of administration on his estate were granted in 1745.

**Thomas Edwards** (1724). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Christopher Marshall** (1724). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1824.

<sup>1</sup> John Edwards (1699) was not born in 1687, as stated on page 318, but he came to Boston, a lad of ten or twelve years, with his father, in 1687-8.

**Stephen Paine** (1724) was a carpenter. March 25, 1727, the contest for the possession of certain lands and tenements near the dock, between Edward Bromfield (1679) and others and the town, ended, when the said property was delivered to the town. One of the tenements was occupied by Stephen Paine (1724), at a rental of sixteen pounds per annum. Jan 23, 1728, "the selectmen went upon the spot," and notified Stephen Paine (1724) that he must quit the town's tenement, on the south side of the dock in Boston, by April 23, 1729. He held a minor town office in 1728.

**Samuel Swift** (1724), lawyer, of Milton, son of Deacon Thomas and Elizabeth (Vose) Swift, of Milton, was born in Milton, Dec. 10, 1683. His father, and his grandfather, also, had been quartermasters of a troop of horse, with the rank of lieutenant. Deacon Thomas Swift "was appointed by the General Court to have charge of the Neponset Indians, and was constantly active in the Indian wars."

Col. Samuel Swift (1724) married Ann, daughter of Thomas Holman, of Milton. He was a man of wealth and influence, filling many offices of trust and importance in the town. He was judge of the Court of Common Pleas, colonel of the militia, representative to the General Court, moderator of town meetings eleven years, — between 1734 and 1747, — and selectman for fifteen years, — between 1735 and his death in 1747.

His second son, Samuel, joined the Artillery Company in 1746.

**Thomas Tileston** (1724), of Dorchester, son of Timothy and Sarah (Bridgman) Tileston, of Dorchester, and brother of Ensign James Tileston (1711), of Boston, was born in Dorchester, Oct. 19, 1675. He was a very prominent and useful man in his native town. For about ten years he was representative; for twenty-four years, selectman; also held other important offices in the town, and from the position of a private soldier was promoted in regular order until he became lieutenant-colonel.

On the 29th of October, 1716, Capt. Thomas Tileston (1724), with two other citizens, was appointed "to look for the thousand acres of land granted to Dorchester school, to see where they could find the same." Sixty years after the original grant, the school land was found "beyond Lancaster," in what became Lunenburg, Worcester County.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "Col. Thomas (1724) was colonel of the first regiment in Norfolk, then part of Suffolk County." He was lieutenant in the Artillery Company in 1725, and was appointed a justice of the peace for Suffolk County, July 3, 1734. He died Oct. 21, 1745, aged seventy years and two days.

**William Ward** (1724), son of William and Hannah (Johnson) (Eames) Ward, was born March 27, 1680. He married Jane —, probably Jane Cleveland, of Boston, and resided in Southboro. He was for many years a member of the militia, and rose through the several grades to the rank of colonel. He was a noted surveyor, and was often employed by the proprietors of new townships to survey their house-lots and subsequent divisions of the common lands. He thereby became a proprietor of many of the new towns, and an extensive landholder. He was a magistrate in early life, and was

**Stephen Paine** (1724). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Samuel Swift** (1724). AUTHORITY: Teele's Hist. of Milford.

**Thomas Tileston** (1724). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1859, p. 122; Hist. of Dorchester, by Antiq. and Hist. Soc.

**William Ward** (1724). AUTHORITY: Ward Genealogy.

much employed in public business. He petitioned the General Court for a grant of land for losses in the Narraganset war, sustained by the father of his wife (Solomon Johnson, of Sudbury), and eventually became possessed of one thousand acres of land in Charlemont, originally granted to the town of Boston. His children inherited it, and in that town and vicinity his descendants remain, and are numerous. His wife, Jane, died at Southboro, April 12, 1745. He married, second, Sarah Smith, at Westboro, in 1758, and he died at Southboro, Jan. 8, 1767, in the eighty-seventh year of his age.

**Thomas Wiswall** (1724) resided in Dorchester. He was one of the committee authorized to erect the new meeting-house in 1743.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1724 is as follows : —

"April 6<sup>th</sup> 1724. The Rev'd Mr. Ebenezer Thayer was chosen to preach the Artillery Election Sermon, and the present commission officers were desired to request it of him.

"Accepted by him."

**Rev. Ebenezer Thayer**, who delivered the anniversary sermon before the Company in 1724,<sup>1</sup> was a son of Rev. Nathaniel and Deborah Thayer; was born in Boston, Feb. 1, 1689-90; graduated at Harvard College in 1708, and was settled the first minister of the Second Church in Roxbury, Nov. 26, 1712.

In 1706, a considerable number of families "at the west end of Roxbury, towards Dedham," on account of their great distance from the meeting-house, desired to be set off as a separate precinct, and so petitioned the General Court. This petition failed, but later, in 1712, the project succeeded, and a separate precinct was formed. The meeting-house had already been built, and a congregation gathered. Nov. 2, 1712, the Second Church was organized; on the 26th of the same month their pastor was settled over the new parish. These relations were continued until the decease of Rev. Mr. Thayer. He married, June 4, 1719, Lydia Copeland, who died Feb. 8, 1730. He died March 6, 1733, at the age of forty-four years.

---

The officers elected were: Thomas Fitch (1700), captain; Thomas  
**1725-6.** Tileston (1724), lieutenant; William Downe (1716), ensign. James  
 Fosdick (1722) was first sergeant; Thomas Foster (1722), second  
 sergeant; Richard Bulkley (1722), third sergeant; Joseph Russell (1722), fourth ser-  
 geant, and John Cookson (1701), clerk.

May 5, 1725, four representatives to the General Court were elected, the whole number of votes cast being three hundred and thirty-two. Three of the four persons elected were members of the Artillery Company, viz.: William Clarke (1703), Thomas Cushing (1691), and Ezekiel Lewis (1707).

Deacon John Marion (1691) for many years had charge of the Common and collected the pasturage money. May 3, 1725, the selectmen again empowered him to

**Rev. Ebenezer Thayer.** AUTHORITIES: Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Thayer's Family Memorial.

<sup>1</sup> "[1724] On ye 1. Mr Thear preacht ye artillery election Sermon, from Timothy, 'fight ye good fight of faith.' — *Jeremiah Bumstead's Diary*."



"Receive the 5/ & Six pence of the ownerer of Each Cow that goes on the Comon and give forth Tickets accordingly for this year."

The new members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1725 were: John Ashley, Nicholas Belknap, John Chandler, Edward Durant, Samuel Jones, John Phillips, Ralph Smith, Thomas Wells.

**John Ashley** (1725) was a shopkeeper in Boston. He married, June 13, 1734, Mary Causland. His petition to the selectmen for license to sell "Beer, Ale, Cider &c" was approved by them July 24, 1734, and March 3, 1735, he was licensed and approved as an innholder on Dock Square. Aug. 24, 1737, his innholder's license on Dock Square was disallowed; Aug. 17, 1738, his application for a retailer's license on Newbury Street was rejected. The Sun Tavern had Samuel Mears as its proprietor in 1724. He died in 1727. No license was granted to any innkeeper on Dock Square until John Ashley (1725) was licensed, in 1735. This tavern was kept by Capt. James Day (1733) in 1755. Its proprietor in 1735-8 was probably John Ashley (1725).

Administration was granted on his estate in 1739.

**Nicholas Belknap** (1725), leather-dresser, of Boston, son of Joseph (1692), grandson of Joseph (1658), half-brother of Jeremiah (1711), and a brother of Abraham (1735), was born in Boston, Oct. 15, 1695. He married, May 25, 1727, Huldah Booket. He was elected clerk of the market in 1724, and constable in 1729, but he was excused from service in the latter office. At a meeting of the selectmen, held July 13, 1724, it was granted unto Nicholas Belknap (1725) to improve part of his land in Harris's pasture near Cambridge Street, for curing leather, according to his petition.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1728.

**John Chandler** (1725), husbandman, of Woodstock, Conn., son of Deacon John Chandler, was born April 16, 1665, in Roxbury. Deacon John, with other citizens of Roxbury, moved in 1686 to New Roxbury, afterward called Woodstock, Conn., and there settled. John Chandler (1725) married, Nov. 10, 1692, Mary Raymond, of New London, Conn. Their eldest child was John, who joined the Artillery Company in 1734. Mary (Raymond) Chandler died April 8, 1711, and Col. John (1725) married, Nov. 14, 1711, Esther (Britman) Alcock, of Charlestown.

In 1688, a lot of land in New Roxbury was assigned to him, and Feb. 24, 1690-1, he was chosen clerk of the writs. The town of Woodstock was organized Nov. 27, 1690, when John Chandler (1725) was chosen town clerk, and was also selected to instruct the children to read, write, and cipher. March 8, 1692-3, he was re-elected town clerk, and allowed twelpence for every town meeting, for writing the votes, and sixpence for every record of all grants of land. In 1693-4, he was one of the town committee, and in 1694 selectman, at which time he was given thirty acres of land for his work as town clerk and recording "Earmarks." He resided several years in New London, and in 1698 he was licensed to keep a house of entertainment in that town. He returned to (South) Woodstock, and was appointed town surveyor, April 3, 1703. He was representative to the General Court at Boston as early as 1711, and for several years after.

**John Ashley** (1725). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Nicholas Belknap** (1725).- AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Chandler** (1725). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1876; Boston *News-Letter*, Aug. 18, 1743; Genealogy of Chandler Family, by Dr. George Chandler, Worcester, 1883.

Worcester in 1722 furnished five men for the country's service, in the company of scouts under Major John Chandler (1725). In July, 1724, orders were issued to Col. Chandler (1725) to impress twenty men for the frontier service. The presence of these soldiers may have saved Worcester from desolation.

He moved to Worcester about 1731, when Worcester County was organized. The first Probate Court in Worcester County was held by Col. Chandler (1725), as judge, on the 13th of July, 1731, and the first Court of Common Pleas was held on the 13th of August following, by Hon. John Chandler (1725), who was commissioned as judge June 30, 1731. His son, John, Jr. (1734), was clerk of both courts, and one of the justices of the General Sessions. Col. John (1725) resigned as judge of the Common Pleas Court, Oct. 5, 1739. He also became colonel of an infantry regiment. He was appointed a justice of the peace June 5, 1707; was reappointed Dec. 19, 1728.

"To which stations of civil, judicial, and military honors," says Mr. Lincoln, in his History of Worcester, "he rose by force of his strong mental powers with but slight advantages of education. While in Woodstock, he represented the town in the General Court of Massachusetts Bay, and was a member of his Majesty's council from 1727 to 1733. He was the father not only of Judge Thomas Chandler, of Chester, Vt., but also of Judge John Chandler [1734], who resided in Worcester and who was the progenitor of that most respectable and influential family of Chandlers, that flourished there prior and up to the Revolution."

He died in Woodstock, Conn., Aug. 10, 1743, in his seventy-ninth year, and was buried, as desired in his will, "in Woodstock, with a flat stone, without any inscription, covering his remains."

"The death of Judge Chandler [1733]," says the historian of Windham County, Conn., "severed the strongest tie that bound Woodstock to Massachusetts."

**Edward Durant** (1725), blacksmith, of Boston, son of Edward Durant, was born in Boston, March 2, 1694-5, and married, March 31, 1715, Judith Waldo. He was clerk of the market in 1719, constable in 1723, and scavenger in 1729. July 3, 1728, the selectmen granted the petition of Edward Durant (1725), asking liberty to build a dwelling-house in Winter Street. He was one of a committee, appointed May 17, 1732, and reappointed July 28 following, to receive proposals concerning the demolishing or repairing the old buildings belonging to the town on Dock Square. The committee met at Mr. William Coffin's, Bunch of Grapes Tavern, every Thursday, from 6 to 8 P. M., to receive proposals. In 1732, he removed to Newton, having purchased there a farm of ninety-one acres.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1726.

The town book of Newton contains the following: "1734. Captain Edward Durant [1725] asked leave to build a pew in the meeting house, and was refused. He was a very wealthy man from Boston and owned three slaves, — paid eighteen hundred pounds for his farm."

The *Massachusetts Centinel* records: "Judith Durant, wife of Capt Edward [1725], late of Newton, died October 27, 1785." He died in 1740.

**Samuel Jones** (1725), blacksmith, of Boston, son of Samuel Jones, was born Feb. 5, 1688. He married, Nov. 28, 1710, Katherine Barnard.

**Edward Durant** (1725). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Smith's Hist. of Newton.

**Samuel Jones** (1725). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

The record of the town of Boston under date of April 27, 1720, is as follows: "Mr Samuel Jones [1725], Blacksmith, is chosen to Serve as one of ye clerks of the market for ye year ensuing," etc. He also served as constable in 1724, and scavenger in 1730. He lived in 1721 on Salem Street, and was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1728.

He died Aug. 26, 1731, aged forty-two years, and was buried in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

**John Phillips** (1725), merchant, of Boston, son of Samuel and Sarah Phillips, of Salem, was born at Salem, June 22, 1701. He became an apprentice to Col. Henchman (1712), stationer and bookseller, and having married, Nov. 21, 1723, Mary, the eldest daughter of Nicholas Buttolph (1694), bookbinder and bookseller, he settled in Boston. Their son was Lieut. William Phillips (1762), who married Margaret, daughter of Col. Jacob Wendell (1733). Their child, John, grandson of Col. John (1725), became the first mayor of the city of Boston. Mary (Buttolph) Phillips died Aug. 15, 1742, and Col. Phillips (1725) married Abigail, daughter of Rev. Mr. Webb, of Fairfield, Conn.

Col. John Phillips (1725), called "stationer" in the town records, was elected clerk of the market, March 11, 1727, and constable, March 8, 1735, but in both cases, declining to serve, paid the usual fine. May 25, 1735, he gave twenty-five pounds, "to be paid in goods," towards the erection of the new workhouse. In the town records, he is called "Capt." in 1734, "Dea." in 1742, and "Esq." in 1747. He was elected an overseer of the poor, March 9, 1741-2, and served until March 14, 1763, when he was excused at his own request. He served as a fireward from 1747 to 1761 inclusive, and, declining to serve longer, received the thanks of the town, March 8, 1762, for his past services. He visited the public schools, with the clergy and others, in 1747, 1752, and 1759. He was moderator of seventeen town meetings, between Dec. 7, 1749, and Aug. 25, 1761. In addition, he served on several town committees to whom important matters were intrusted. His record clearly indicates that he was a useful citizen, and was highly respected by his townsmen. He was representative to the General Court for three years, from 1760 to 1762. Col. Phillips (1725) was a member of Brattle Street Church, and served some years as deacon.

Feb. 26, 1736, the selectmen voted that "Mr. John Phillips have liberty to set up a post before his house in Cornhill [now Washington Street], in order to hang a sign thereupon." He had a book-store, etc., prior to this. His sign, a picture of which is given in Mr. Drake's History of Boston, p. 566, bore the date, "1727," at which time, having completed his apprenticeship, he opened a bookstore on the south side of the town-house, next to the corner of State and Washington streets, where resided, a century previous, Capt. Robert Keayne (1637). Mr. Phillips (1725) kept books, writing-paper, ink, quills, sealing-wax, inkhorns, spectacles, and all sorts of cutlery ware, etc., wholesale and retail. In 1734, Nathaniel Belknap and John Phillips (1725), "stationers in Cornhill," were executors to the will of Mrs. Abigail Belknap, the mother of Nathaniel, and widow of Joseph Belknap, Jr. (1692). Nicholas Buttolph (1694), father-in-law of Col. Phillips (1725), was a brother of Abigail Belknap, deceased in 1734.

Col. Phillips (1725) was identified with the military for many years. Enlisting and

**John Phillips** (1725). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.



serving as a private, he passed through the various grades, becoming captain as early as 1734. June 15, 1762, at a meeting of the selectmen of Boston, "Coll Phillips [1725] and Coll Jackson [1738] of the Regiment of this Town, attended, and desired of the Selectmen the loan of a set of Carriage Wheels for Four Field Peices belonging to said Regiment, as also that they may be permitted the use of the Gun House at the Battery for the Storing the same." Col. Phillips (1725) held the position of colonel of the regiment from April 4, 1758, to the time of his decease, March 30, 1763. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1729, ensign in 1740, lieutenant in 1744, and its captain in 1747 and 1759. He succeeded Col. William Downe (1716) as treasurer of the Artillery Company, Oct. 2, 1749, and held that office several years.

The crowded condition of the burial-ground belonging to King's Chapel, and of the Granary Burial-Ground, had been the occasion of complaint, and efforts were made in 1740 to remedy the difficulty, but they failed. May 15, 1754, a more determined effort was made in town meeting for a burial-place at the South End, and a committee, of which Col. Phillips (1725) was one, was appointed to consider the matter and report. After the usual debate and delay, the report of the committee was adopted, and, Oct. 11 of that year, the town voted "to purchase Col. Thomas Fitch's [1700] pasture at the bottom of the Common," then belonging to Andrew Oliver, Jr. It is the same — about two acres — as now fenced in, including the Boylston Street mall.

The following is copied from a letter written by Col Thomas Dawes (1754) to Hon. John Phillips, as given by Mr. Whitman (1810) in his history of the Artillery Company, second edition, p. 271 : —

"April 19, 1763. Exchanged this life for a better, our dear and well beloved John Phillips, Esq, Colonel of the Boston regiment. His commission was from Gov. Pownal, April 4<sup>th</sup> 1758.

"The following character of him was abridged from the public paper : —

"Departed this life, aged 62, John Phillips, Esq, who for many years was Deacon of the Church in Brattle Street, Overseer of the Poor, &c. A gentleman, who, from principles of virtue and true humanity, employed all his time in doing good ; who, with uncommon pleasure and indefatigable diligence, devoted himself to the service of the community. His inflexible integrity gained and secured him the confidence of all. He was never so happy as in promoting some benevolent purpose for the happiness of others, or in relieving distress. He sustained the important trusts with which he was invested, with becoming dignity, and discharged the duties resulting from each to universal acceptance. His charity and domestic virtues rendered him amiable, and all around him happy. In the hour of his departure he was truly happy in the reflection, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not by carnal wisdom, but by the grace of God, he had his conversation in the world.

"The funeral was attended by a great number of the relatives — by the Governor, His Majesty's Council, the clergy, the magistrates and the principal merchants, and others of the town, followed by a number of ladies in chariots : and the commissioned officers of the regiment, whereof the deceased was Colonel, walked in procession before the corpse, with a number of non-commissioned officers of the several companies, who appeared under arms ; and also the new Artillery Company, with a piece of cannon, all of them marching in funeral order, with the proper appendages of military mourning. During the procession, minute guns to the number of sixty-two, (the age of the



deceased) were fired. The corpse being deposited in the family vault, three volleys were fired by the companies under arms; and the whole ceremony was performed with the greatest decency and good order, amidst a large concourse of spectators.'"

**Ralph Smith** (1725). He was clerk of the market in 1726, a constable in 1729, and fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1728.

**Thomas Wells** (1725), of Boston, son of Thomas and Rebecca Wells, was born in Boston, Jan. 3, 1701.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1725 is as follows: —

"May 3<sup>d</sup> 1725. The Rev'd Mr. Samuel Checkley was chosen to preach the Artillery Election Sermon, the present Commission officers being desired to request it of him.

"Accepted by him."

**Rev. Samuel Checkley**, of Boston, delivered the anniversary sermon before the Artillery Company in 1725.<sup>1</sup> He was the youngest son of Samuel (1678) and Mary (Scottow) Checkley, and was born in Boston, Feb. 11, 1696. He graduated at Harvard College in 1715. He was ordained as the first minister of the New South Church, April 15, 1719, and Jan. 5, 1721, he married Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. Benjamin Rolfe.

Rev. Samuel Checkley died on the first day of December, 1769, aged seventy-four years, after a pastorate of over fifty years.

He delivered a sermon on the death of Rev. William Waldron, who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1727, which was printed.

The officers elected were: John Greenough (1712), captain; **1726-7.** Edward Pell (1714), lieutenant; Nathaniel Balston (1714), ensign. Jonathan Sewall (1718) was first sergeant; Jeremiah Belknap (1724), second sergeant; Edward Durant (1725), third sergeant; Benjamin Pollard (1726), fourth sergeant, and John Cookson (1701), clerk.

Aug. 4, 1726, there was a meeting of members of the council, justices, and selectmen at the town-house in Boston. There were present six councillors, eight justices, and five selectmen. All the councillors but one, all the justices but one, and all the selectmen but one, were members of the Artillery Company.

The new members of the Company recruited in 1726 were: Bartholomew Gedney, Henry Gibbs, Benjamin Pollard.

**Bartholomew Gedney** (1726), wharfinger, of Boston, son of William Gedney, was born in Salem, March 22, 1698. He married, Sept. 15, 1720, Abigail Mason; and, by Boston Records, Bartholomew Gedney married, July 25, 1723, Mary Webber. Major

**Bartholomew Gedney** (1726). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> "[1725] June 7. Mr. Checkly preach't to ye artillery from 2 Samuel 22. 35. 'he teacheth my hands to war.' Not an hour in sermon & last singing." — *Jeremiah Bumstead's Diary*.

"[1725] June 7. I dine with Col. Hutchinson, Capt. Mr. Greenwood, Lieut. Capt. Greenough, Ens.

was Treated with a great deal of respect. Mr Checkley who preach'd, craved a Blessing, Dr Mather Return'd Thanks." — *Sewall Papers, Vol. III, p. 360.*

The officers named above were the officers elected in 1724, except that Capt. Greenough was not the ensign. That office was held in 1724-5 by Ensign Nathaniel Goodwin.

Bartholomew Gedney, prominent in the witch trials in 1692, was an uncle of Col. Bartholomew (1726). The latter was elected constable of Boston, March 11, 1727, but was excused, and at the same meeting was elected clerk of the market, but declined. He was constable in 1737, and held other town offices in 1740 and 1753.

In 1731, he was second sergeant of the Artillery Company, clerk's assistant in 1739 and 1740, and clerk of the Company from 1734 to 1737 inclusive.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says, "Administration on his estate was granted in 1754." He died previous to July 19, 1762, when his estate was advertised in the *Boston Gazette*.

**Henry Gibbs** (1726), merchant, of Boston, son of Robert Gibbs (1692), was born in Boston, Nov. 7, 1694. His sister, Mary, married Rev. John Cotton, who declined to preach the Artillery election sermon in 1738. Henry Gibbs (1726) married, June 8, 1721, Hannah, daughter of Joseph Wadsworth, for many years treasurer of the town of Boston. Mr. Gibbs (1726) was clerk of the market in 1724; elected constable in 1725, but paid the fine; served as hog-reeve in 1728, and scavenger from 1730 to 1734, and in 1736. In 1732, Mr. Gibbs having encroached upon the town's land on Dock Square, his new frames were demolished, and a lawsuit resulted. Feb. 25, 1735, the selectmen ordered the frames sold, "for the most they can get, for the use of the town." Not long after his trouble with the authorities of the town he moved to Providence, R. I.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1730. He died at Boston, Feb. 17, 1759.

**Benjamin Pollard** (1726), sheriff, of Boston, son of Jonathan (1700) and Mary (Winslow) Pollard, of Boston, was born Jan. 6, 1696. His mother was a daughter of Col. Edward Winslow (1700). His grandfather, William Pollard, joined the Artillery Company in 1679. He succeeded his uncle, Edward Winslow (1700), as sheriff of Suffolk County, on the 20th of October, 1743, and held that office until his decease, or for thirteen years. He died in Boston, Dec. 24, 1756.

Mr. Pollard (1726) was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1726, rose to the rank of colonel in the local militia, and was the first commander of the Corps of Cadets.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1726 is as follows:—

"April 4. 1726. The Rev. Mr. John Swift was chosen to preach the Artillery Election Sermon; the present Commission officers & Mr. Samuel Swift [1724] being desired to request it of him. Accepted by him."

**Rev. John Swift**, who delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1726,<sup>1</sup> son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Vose) Swift, of Milton, and brother of Col. Samuel Swift (1724), was born in Milton, March 14, 1679. He graduated at Harvard College in 1697, and was the first settled minister in the town of Framingham, being ordained over the Framingham church Oct. 8, 1701. He married Sarah, daughter of Timothy Tileston, of Dorchester. His ministry was conducted with faithfulness and prudence, and not a notice occurs qualifying the respect and estimation in which he was held.

**Henry Gibbs** (1726). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Benjamin Pollard** (1726). AUTHORITY: Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.

**Rev. John Swift.** AUTHORITY: Barry's Hist. of Framingham.

<sup>1</sup> "[1726] June 6, Mr. Swift, of Framingham, preached to ye Artillery, from Acts 10 & 7, 'a Devout Soldier.'"—*Jeremiah Bumstead's Diary*.

The Boston *Post* of May 13, 1745, thus notices his decease: "Framingham, May 8. On the 24<sup>th</sup> of last month, died here after a long and tedious illness the Rev. Mr. John Swift, the first pastor of the church in this place, in the 67<sup>th</sup> year of his age and the 45<sup>th</sup> of his ministry. . . . His piety was sincere and eminent. His preaching sound and evangelical. As a pastor diligent, faithful and prudent, and in his conversation, he was sober, grave and profitable yet affable, courteous and pleasant. . . . He was held in high esteem by the Association to which he belonged and respected by all who had any acquaintance with his real character and merits."

---

The officers elected were: Habijah Savage (1699), captain; William  
 1727-8. Downe (1716), lieutenant; Nathaniel Cunningham (1720), ensign.  
 James Pecker (1720) was first sergeant; James Carey (1723), second  
 sergeant; Joseph White (1722), third sergeant; Christopher Marshall (1724), fourth  
 sergeant, and Samuel Holyoke (1714), clerk.

On the 13th of March, 1726, on the petition of John Yeamans, Esq., etc., "about a bridge to Nodles Island," the town chose Elisha Cooke, Esq. (1699), Mr. John Colman, Edward Hutchinson, Esq. (1702), Mr. Thomas Cushing (1691), and Mr. Ezekiel Lewis (1707), a committee to consider the subject and report. May 8, 1727, the committee reported favorably, recommending the erecting of a substantial bridge "from the main at Winnisemet side to Nodles Island." John Yeamans married a granddaughter of Col. Shrimpton (1670). To her the estate of the latter was devised. The Yeamans family lived on the island, but owned a large farm in Rumney Marsh, now Chelsea. Mr. Yeamans was to build the bridge at his own cost and keep it in repair. His removal shortly after to Antigua was the probable cause of the failure of the project.<sup>1</sup>

Committees selected this year to report to the town concerning important matters, viz.: concerning Capt. Ballentine (1682) and the drawbridge; the town's interest in the wharves and lands near the South Battery, and a petition in regard to the New South meeting-house, were largely composed of members of the Artillery Company.<sup>2</sup>

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1727 were: Job Coit, James Davenport, Joseph Dowding, Thomas Fleet, Increase Gatchell, John Greenleaf, John Helyer, John Hobby, Nathaniel Hodgdon, Jabez Hunt, Dudson Kilcup, Bennet Love, Edward Marion, David Mason, Richard Mortimer, William Nichols, John Salter, Thomas Simpkins, John Smith, Henry Wheeler.

**Job Coit** (1727), cabinet-maker, of Boston, was born in 1692. He married, July 30, 1713, Lydia Amie. He was probably a son of Nathaniel Coit, of Gloucester. He was clerk of the market in 1721 and 1722, and constable of Boston in 1726 and 1727. June 5, 1721, the selectmen granted liberty to Job Coit (1727) to remove a small wooden building adjoining the back part of his house in Ann Street. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1731. He died Jan. 12, 1741, aged forty-nine years, and his wife, Lydia, died July 9, 1751.

**Job Coit** (1727). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> See Sumner's Hist. of East Boston, 240, 489.

<sup>2</sup> See Town Records, 1727.



**James Davenport** (1727), baker and innholder, of Boston, son of Ebenezer Davenport, was born in Dorchester, March 1, 1693. He married, (1) Sept. 30, 1715, Grace Tileston, of Dorchester. She died Oct. 24, 1721, aged twenty-seven years, and he married, (2) May 3, 1722, Sarah, born July 9, 1699, daughter of Josiah and sister of Benjamin Franklin. She died May 23, 1731, aged thirty-two years. He married; (3) Nov. 12, 1731, Mary Walker, of Portsmouth.

James Davenport (1727) was a constable of Boston in 1725, and May 25, 1735, gave ten pounds toward the erection of the new workhouse. In 1722, Dec. 31, he and his father-in-law, Josiah Franklin, became sureties in the sum of one hundred pounds for Elic Blare, tailor, from Martha's Vineyard, who desired to settle in Boston. In 1748, Michael Lowell advertised that his place of business was "at the corner-shop leading to Mr. James Davenports [1727] bake-house, near the sign of the Cornfields." Not long after this, Mr. Davenport (1727) changed or enlarged his business, for he appears as an innholder.

On the corner of Fleet and Ship, now North, streets, Major Savage (1637) had a house and garden. He wharfed out in front in 1643. This house, or another house on the same spot, became King's Head Tavern. It was burned down in 1691, but rebuilt. The Memorial History of Boston, Vol. II, p. ix, says, "In 1754 Davenport [1727], who had kept the Globe Tavern, petitioned to keep the Bunch of Grapes, formerly known as Castle Tavern, near Scarlets Wharf." Mr. Drake says that James Davenport (1727) kept the King's Head Tavern in 1755, and his widow in 1758. He certainly kept a public-house in 1757, for we learn from the selectmen's minutes, under date of Dec. 5, 1757, that Robert Stone, innholder, upon whom five British soldiers had been "quartered and billeted," complained to the selectmen that he had more than his share; whereupon the selectmen "removed, from his house to James Davenports [1727] at North End," three men.

The King's Head continued a large and flourishing hostelry until the beginning of the Revolution, when it was converted into barracks for the marines, and then taken down for fuel. Joseph Austin bought the site, and established there his large bakery.

James Davenport (1727) was appointed coroner for Suffolk County, Jan. 7, 1740-1, and was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1732.

Administration on his estate was granted June 13, 1759.

**Joseph Dowding** (1727), of Boston, son of Joseph Dowding, was born Nov. 30, 1700. His grandmother, Mercy, wife of Leonard Dowding, of Boston, was a daughter of William Paddy (1652). His name does not again appear on the Records of the Town of Boston.

**Thomas Fleet** (1727), printer, of Boston, was "born in England, and was there bred to the printing business. When young he took an active part in opposition to the High-church party. On some public procession, probably that of Dr. Sacheverel, when many of the zealous members of the High-church decorated their doors and windows with garlands as the heads of the party passed the streets, Mr. Fleet [1727] is said to have hung out of his window an ensign of contempt, which inflamed the resent-

**James Davenport** (1727). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Davenport Genealogy; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1879, pp. 25-34; Drake's Old Landmarks, p. 168; Porter's Rambles in Old Boston, p. 286.

**Thomas Fleet** (1727). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1873, p. 311; Boston Records.



ment of his opponents to that degree that he was obliged to secrete himself from their rage, and to embrace the first opportunity to quit his country."<sup>1</sup>

Thomas Fleet (1727), son of Thomas Fleet, of Tillstock, county of Shropshire, England, was born in that place, Sept. 8, 1685. He served an apprenticeship at printing in Bristol, and then worked at his trade as a journeyman in that place. It was while thus working that the incident related above occurred. His personal safety required that he should emigrate, and accordingly he went on board a vessel bound for America, and arrived in Boston in 1712. In the town books there seems to be no record of his admission as an inhabitant of the town. Soon after his arrival, he opened a printing-house in Pudding Lane, now Devonshire Street. He was industrious and frugal, and acquired considerable property. His publications, prior to his newspaper enterprise, consisted of pamphlets, small books, and ballads for children. He owned several negroes, one of whom set type and worked the press. He was an ingenious man, and cut on wood-blocks the pictures which decorated the ballads and small books printed by his master.<sup>2</sup> Mr. Fleet (1727) continued printing in Pudding Lane till 1731, when he hired a handsome (brick) building in Cornhill, now Washington Street, north corner of Water Street, which he afterward purchased for two thousand two hundred dollars, and occupied it. He erected a sign of the "Heart and Crown," which he never altered; but after his death, when crowns became unpopular, his sons changed the crown for a Bible, and let the heart remain. Mr. Fleet's (1727) new house was spacious, and contained sufficient room for the accommodation of his family and the prosecution of his printing business, besides a convenient shop, and a good chamber for an auction-room.<sup>3</sup> In those times, the printers were the principle auctioneers. March 7, 1731, he advertised in the *Boston Weekly News-Letter* as follows:—

"This is to give notice to all gentlemen, merchants, shopkeepers and others, that Thomas Fleet of Boston, printer, (who formerly kept his printing house in Pudding Lane, but is now removed into Cornhill, at the sign of the Heart and Crown, near the lower end of School Street) is willing to undertake the sale of books, household goods, wearing apparel or any other merchandise, by vendue or auction. The said Fleet having a large and commodious front chamber fit for this business and a talent well known and approved, doubts not of giving entire satisfaction to such as may employ him in it," etc. As appears by his advertisements, he held these auction sales in the evening.

Thomas Fleet (1727) married Elizabeth Goose, June 8, 1715. Her family name is also given as Vergoose and Vertigoose. She was born May 27, 1694, in Boston.

"The Weekly Rehearsal," a new periodical, was started in Boston in September, 1731. Its founder was Jeremy Gridley, Esq., afterward celebrated as a lawyer. About April, 1733, it came into the possession of Thomas Fleet (1727), and was published at the "Heart and Crown," in Cornhill. In August, 1735, the proprietor discontinued it, and issued in its stead the *Boston Evening Post*, which was published every Monday evening. This paper was continued by him until his decease in 1758, after which his sons published it until 1775, when it was discontinued.

Thomas Fleet (1727) was printer to the House of Representatives in 1729, 1730, and 1731. He died July —, 1758, aged seventy-three years, possessed of a handsome property, and leaving a widow, three sons, and two daughters.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1731, and a member of the Masonic Fraternity.

<sup>1</sup> Thomas's Hist. of Printing, Vol. I., p. 294.

<sup>2</sup> Buckminster.

<sup>3</sup> See Thomas's Hist. of Printing.

**Increase Gatchell** (1727) was a school-master in Boston. He married Elizabeth Calfe, Oct. 19, 1722. She was a daughter of Robert Calfe, Jr. (1710), and was born May 7, 1704. His name does not appear upon the records of the town of Boston. He was, however, a member of Christ Church, and Dr. Snow names him as the owner of a pew in that meeting-house. On a copy of the original plan of Christ Church, given in *Rambles in Old Boston*, Mr. "Katchell's" pew is recorded.

**John Greenleaf** (1727) was clerk of the market in 1726, and, March 11, 1727, was elected constable, but was excused.

**John Helyer** (1727), shopkeeper, of Boston, was born Sept. 9, 1685, and married, June 10, 1712, Elizabeth Wardwell. This name is variously spelled on the books of the town, and confusion of persons, as well as names, is not impossible.

John Helyer (1727) was elected to various minor offices of the town between 1724 and 1731. July 15, 1730, he was licensed "to sell Strong Drink," as a retailer, "near Leveretts Lane"; Aug. 18, 1736, he was licensed on Marlborough, now Washington, Street, between School and Summer streets, and Aug. 17, 1738, on "Allen Street." He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1731. He died in Boston in 1739, aged fifty-four years, and was buried in the Granary Burial-Ground.

**John Hobby** (1727), merchant, of Boston, son of Capt. John and Ann (Wensley) Hobby, was born in Boston, July 2, 1693, and was baptized at the Second Church, July 9 next following. He held the office of fence-viewer in 1722. No record of his marriage has been found.

He was a descendant of William Paddy (1652), and a nephew of Sir Charles Hobby (1702). He died May 14, 1741, aged forty-nine years, and was buried in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

**Nathaniel Hodgdon** (1727) was a leather-dresser in Boston. He married, Nov. 26, 1730, Ann Atwood. He served as clerk of the market in 1720, and sealer of leather in 1725; also from 1731 to 1754 inclusive, except in 1733-4 and 1738; and was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1728.

**Jabez Hunt** (1727), of Boston, son of Thomas Hunt, was born in Boston, April 5, 1698. He married, June 3, 1745, Hannah Brown, who died Sept. 21, 1748, aged thirty-six years. Their only child was baptized at the First Church, Boston, July 3, 1746.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1729; clerk's assistant in 1729 and 1731; clerk in 1732 and 1733, and lieutenant in 1743; also adjutant of the Boston regiment. Though so active in the militia, he does not appear prominent in town affairs. He was hog-reeve in 1724, constable in 1730, clerk of the market in 1738, and scavenger in 1739.

The *Evening Post*, of Boston, contained the following obituary:—

"Capt. Jabez Hunt [died] Wednesday, Dec. 22, 1762, in his sixty-fifth year. He was a gentleman noted for his strict virtues and military accomplishments, whereby he

**John Helyer** (1727). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Hobby** (1727). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Nathaniel Hodgdon** (1727). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Jabez Hunt** (1727). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Hunt Genealogy, p. 343.

was very serviceable to the regiment of militia in which he was an officer upwards of twenty years. His life was much desired, and his death is much lamented."

His will (*n. p.*) was made Aug. 6, 1762, and proved the 27th of December following.

**Dudson Kilcup** (1727), of Boston, son of Roger Kilcup (1684), was born Dec. 28, 1702. Roger (1684) died Oct. 1, 1702, and Oct. 11, 1704, his widow married Ezekiel Lewis (1707). Dudson (1727) married, Nov. 10, 1726, Lois Britton. He was elected hog-reeve in March, 1730, and again in May, 1738, but was "excused" the latter year. He paid the usual fine rather than serve as constable in 1732. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1730. He died March 2, 1779, aged seventy-six years.

**Bennet Love** (1727), of Boston, son of John and Susanna Love, was born in Boston, June 2, 1703, and married, Dec. 2, 1725, Deborah Lee. His name does not again appear on the Records of the Town of Boston.

**Edward Marion** (1727), blacksmith, of Boston, son of Samuel Marion (1691), was born in Boston, Dec. 2, 1692. He married Mary Renall, Nov. 17, 1715. He was a constable of Boston in 1727, scavenger in 1731, and March 25, 1735, he subscribed ten pounds towards the erection of the new workhouse, "to be paid in smiths work." He never held any office in the Artillery Company. He died March 20, 1771, and was buried in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground.

**David Mason** (1727), upholsterer, of Boston, son of Arthur and Mary Mason, was born July 2, 1703, and married, March 24, 1725, Susanna Stevens. He was elected clerk of the market in 1728, and constable in 1732, both times refusing to serve and therefore fined. He served as hog-reeve in 1731, but declined the office in 1739, and was scavenger in 1734. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1732, and was a captain in the militia. He died July 19, 1746, aged forty-three years. His gravestone is in the Granary Burial-Ground.

**Richard Mortimer** (1727), of Boston, son of Richard and Mary Mortimer, was born in Boston, March 18, 1702. He married Lydia Wharton, Oct. 22, 1723.

**William Nichols** (1727), joiner, of Boston, son of John Nichols, was born in Boston, May 9, 1692, and married, Nov. 11, 1714, Berthia Webb. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1729, and ensign in 1739; also a lieutenant in the militia. William Nichols (1727) held town office but two years, when his name disappears from the records, his last service being in 1727.

**John Salter** (1727), brazier in Boston, probably a son of Joseph, was born in Boston, April 6, 1696. The office of constable he declined in 1728. He held minor offices in the town of Boston in 1740, 1741, and 1742. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1730, ensign in 1743, and lieutenant in 1751; and also was a lieutenant in the militia.

**Dudson Kilcup** (1727). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; *Continental Journal*, March, 1779.

**Edward Marion** (1727). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**David Mason** (1727). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**William Nichols** (1727). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Salter** (1727). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



**Thomas Simpkins** (1727), brazier, of Boston, a great-grandson of Capt. Nicholas Simpkins (1650), "the first captain at the Castle," from 1634 to 1638, and son of Thomas Simpkins, was born in Boston, Jan. 27, 1702. He was clerk of the market in 1729, constable in 1735, and scavenger in 1743; also third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1730, and clerk in 1738.

**John Smith** (1727), brewer, of Boston, son of Thomas (1702), was born in Boston, Feb. 2, 1703. John Smith (1727) held various offices in the town between 1731 and 1746. May 15, 1750, he was chosen one of a committee to draft a memorial to the General Court, praying for the repeal of the law taxing tea, coffee, coaches, chaises, etc., and report to the town. The memorial is given in full in the town records. He was also appointed one of a committee to prevent said law being confirmed "at home," and also on another committee to draw up instructions for the government of Mr. Christopher Kilby, who was elected agent of the colony in London.

**Henry Wheeler** (1727), of Boston, was a founder of the New Brick Church of Boston in 1722. He was chosen clerk of the market in 1727.

"A List of soldiers under the fine of 12<sup>d</sup> per day for non-appearance.

"Joseph Russell [1722], Simon Rogers [1722], Joseph White [1722], Stephen Paine [1724], James Carey [1723], William Ward [1724], Thomas Tileston [1724], Thomas Wiswall [1724], Samuel Swift [1724], Christopher Marshall [1724], John Chandler [1725], John Ashley [1725], Thomas Wells [1725], Nicholas Belknap [1725], Nathaniel Hodgdon [1727], Job Coit [1727], William Nichols [1727], John Smith [1727], John Hobby [1727], Henry Wheeler [1727]."

The record of the Artillery Company for 1727 is as follows : —

"April 3. 1727. The Rev'd Mr. William Waldron was chosen to preach the Artillery Election Sermon. The Field officers of the regiment and the present commission officers of this Company were desired to request it of him. Accepted by him.

"Voted that the training in May next be half a day beginning at two of the clock afternoon.

"Boston, June 5, 1727. Voted, that the training in September next be half a day beginning at two of the clock, p : m.

"Boston, September 4. 1727. At an Artillery Training, being under arms at the place of parade, were detained by his Honour, the Lieut. Governour and Commander-in-chief in Council, while the Proclamation, declaring His Majesty's pleasure for continuing the officers in the Plantations, till His Majesty's pleasure shall be further signified, was read; which affair was concluded with three huzzas and three volleys; after which His Honour sent down five pounds to drink the King's health. The Company agreed before they were dismissed to adjourn themselves to Wednesday evening next, the sixth current, and then met, to the number of fifty members, and entered on the consideration of affairs relating to the Company; and then Voted, that there be a committee chosen of seven members of said Company, three at least of which to go to

**Thomas Simpkins** (1727). AUTHORITY :  
Boston Records.

**John Smith** (1727). AUTHORITY : Boston  
Records.



Dunstable and inspect the Company's farm and make report on the training in October next, what they shall think proper to be done thereon The charge of the Committee to be borne by the Company. The gentlemen chosen were, viz: Col. Thomas Fitch [1700], Lt. Col. Edward Hutchinson [1702], Maj. Habijah Savage [1699], Capt Edward Winslow [1700], Mr. William Downe [1716], Mr. Edward Pell [1714] and Mr. Nathaniel Cunningham [1720].

"Pursuant to the above vote, three of said committee, accompanied (at their desire) with the Clerk, did, on the twentieth of September, 1727, go up to Dunstable, to inspect and consider of the state of the Company's said farm, lying within that township, and made the following report to the said Company on their Training the first Monday in October instant: To which they severally subscribe their names.

"REPORT. We, the Subscribers, Journeying to the Town of Dunstable, on Wednesday the 20<sup>th</sup> inst. To inspect and consider the state of the farm in said Town belonging to the Honorable Artillery Company of the Province of the Massachusetts, Did on the 21<sup>st</sup> take with us, Messrs Jonathan Danforth of Billerica, Capt Henry Farwell and Mr. William Lund, both of Dunstable, to assist in Surveying the farm, and gaining a true knowledge of the waste made thereon. We forded Nashaway river and landed on the farm about half a mile from the mouth of said river, and spreading ourselves, we found forty-eight pine logs lying on the banks of Nashaway river, which by computation would make ten thousand feet of boards; we proceeded by Grassy pond to Spectacle meadow, and on the spot, described on the platt, we found a pine tree marked B. — dead. The surveyor marked a young tree with the same letter; from thence toward round the first patch of meadow and came to a neck, which makes the Spectacle, and found a dead tree with an antiquated mark, but concluded it to be our Station at G; from thence went Round the second patch and came to a neck and passed over and found a tree marked on the side next to the meadow with the letter D. and the opposite side with H, which the Surveyor advised us was Col. Hutchinson's bounds, and shew a platt of the same; from thence we returned to our first station at B. and directed our course E. B. N. [east by north] and passing by marked trees on the bounds of Col. Tyngs land, we came to a large pine tree marked B on the East and West sides, within about one hundred and fifty rods of the river Merrimack; from thence we continued our course down to the river, on the bounds of Brenton's farm, but found no red oak tree standing, with a mark, but a large tree fallen and decayed, which suppose was our bounds at A, but directly opposite on the East side of Merrimack there is a railed fence, which continues the same course, E. B. N. and is the bounds of Brenton's which is continued on both sides of the river; from thence we travelled on the banks of Merrimack until we came to a point where Merrimack and Nashaway rivers meet about one mile and a half; from thence we travelled on the side of Nashaway river until we came to our first pass.

"We find the land generally pretty level, few intervals, — abounding with pine trees, the chief whereof are killed with bleeding; a considerable number of which have been bled within two or three years. The land esteemed good of the sort; about one hundred and fifty acres allowed to be as good as most land in Dunstable. We found on the two patches of meadow about ten load of hay in stack, mowed by one Mr. Lovewell, who has mowed it for several years past. We found a patch of meadows, not described in our platt, with about two load of hay thereon in cock. On our return we fixed adver-

tisements, inviting any persons, who are minded to lease said farm, to apply to the Company on their training the first Monday in October next, in Dunstable, Chelmsford and Woburn.

"SAMUEL HOLYOKE, *Clerk*.

"WILLIAM DOWNE,

"NATHANIEL CUNNINGHAM,

"EDWARD PELL,

"*Committee*.

"Upon receiving the above report, Voted, that the said Messrs William Downe [1716], Nathaniel Cunningham [1720], Edward Pell [1714] and Samuel Holyoke [1714], have the thanks of the Company for their Service in this affair.

"Voted, that the aforesaid Gentlemen's accompt of charge in going to Dunstable to inspect the Company's farm, &c, amounting to eight pounds, sixteen shillings and ten pence be allowed; and ordered that the Clerk discharge the said amount accordingly.

"Voted, that the aforesaid Committee, viz: — Col. Thomas Fitch [1700], Lt Col. Edward Hutchinson [1702], Maj. Habijah Savage [1699], Capt Edward Winslow [1700], Mr. William Downe [1716], Mr. Nathaniel Cunningham [1720], and Mr. Edward Pell [1714], be continued and Impowered to lease out the said farm, or reduce it to such an Improvement as they shall think most advantageous for the interest of the Company; and if the said Committee thinks that the Company's money that lyes in Col. Fitch's hands may be advantageously improved on said farm, then they shall have liberty to draw it out of his hands for that end."

**Rev. William Waldron**, of Boston, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1727. He was a son of Col. Richard Waldron, of Portsmouth, N. H., and grandson of Major Richard Waldron, of Dover, N. H. He was born Aug. 4, 1697, and graduated at Harvard College in 1717. The New Brick, so called, was formed in 1719 by persons who left the New North Church on account of the installation of Rev. Peter Thacher. In November of that year, a movement was made to build a meeting-house. Edward Pell (1714), who was one of the committee that visited Dunstable in 1727, drew the plan of the new meeting-house, and it was finished for dedication in May, 1721. The year following, the church was regularly organized, and on the same day (May 23, 1722) Rev. Mr. Waldron was ordained as pastor. He continued in this relation until his decease, which occurred Sept. 20, 1727.

He was related to the Gerrishes, who were prominent in the Artillery Company about this time. Capt. John Gerrish (1700) married Col. Richard Waldron's sister, Elizabeth. His sons, Benjamin Gerrish (1714) and John (1718), were cousins of Rev. William Waldron, as was also Samuel Gerrish (1709), whose mother was Ann Waldron, wife of Rev. Joseph Gerrish, of Wenham.

Mr. Waldron died Sept. 11, 1727, in the thirty-first year of his age and the sixth of his ministry. "He died," says Rev. Cotton Mather, "nobly. So to die is indeed no dying. 'Tis but flying away with the wings of the morning into the paradise of God."

Mr. Waldron married Elizabeth Allen, of Martha's Vineyard, and had two daughters, one of whom became the wife of Col. Josiah Quincy, of Braintree.

**Rev. William Waldron.** AUTHORITIES: Robbins's Hist. of New North Church; Sprague's An- nals of American Pulpit; Ware's and Robbins's Hist. Discourses.





*Sam<sup>th</sup> Theodor*



**1728-9.** The officers elected were: Samuel Thaxter (1728), captain; Nathaniel Balston (1714), lieutenant; Benjamin Bridge (1711), ensign. Nathaniel Hodgdon (1727) was first sergeant; Samuel Jones (1725), second sergeant; Nicholas Belknap (1725), third sergeant; Ralph Smith (1725), fourth sergeant, and Samuel Holyoke (1714), clerk.

April 1, 1728, the town voted "That a Grainery be Built in the Comon near the Alms House, And That the Sum of not Exceeding Eleven Hundred Pounds" be appropriated for that purpose. Jonathan Williams (1711) was then chosen chairman of the committee "to manage the Building the Grainery." This building was erected near where the Park Street Church now stands, and its name has been perpetuated by the adjoining burial-ground. The granary building was erected of wood, and was "calculated to contain 12,000 bushels of grain." It was removed in 1809 to Commercial Point.

At the same town meeting, Edward Hutchinson, Esq. (1702), and Samuel White were elected "to take care of the Great Artillery and all the stores at the South Battery."

On the tenth day of March, 1728-9, a letter was read to the town assembled, from Hon. Thomas Fitch (1700), signifying "That He did Present to the Town Two Hundred and fifteen Firelocks with Bayonets fitted to them, to be for the use of the town of Boston forever."<sup>1</sup>

The town with great unanimity expressed its thanks for "So Valuable and Generous a Present," and Elisha Cooke (1699), Adam Winthrop (1692), and John Baker (1703) were chosen to "Waite upon the Honourable Col. Thomas Fitch [1700] with their Thanks and a Copy of the vote."

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1728 were: Samuel Miller and Samuel Thaxter.

**Samuel Miller** (1728), of Boston, son of Alexander Miller, was born in Boston, Nov. 25, 1696, and married, Oct. 8, 1723, Rebecca Minot. His name appears but once on the town records. Feb. 2, 1729, he was elected constable, but was afterward excused from serving. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1732.

**Samuel Thaxter** (1728), of Hingham, yeoman, son of John, was born Aug. 6, 1665. He was admitted a freeman in 1688, and Dec. 29, 1691, married Hannah Gridley, granddaughter of Richard (1658). Mr. Thaxter (1728) was a selectman of Hingham four years; colonel in the militia service; representative to the General Court eleven years; councillor from 1719 to 1737 inclusive; was appointed, Oct. 24, 1712, a special justice of the Court of Common Pleas for Nantucket; Dec. 12, 1729, the same for Plymouth County; and, June 27, 1735, a special justice of the Superior Court, "to try causes in which the inhabitants of Boston are concerned." He commanded the Artillery

**Samuel Thaxter** (1728). AUTHORITY: Lincoln's Hist. of Hingham.

<sup>1</sup> This seems to modify a statement made by Mr. Whitman (1810), in his History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, pp 272, 273, viz.: Col. Benjamin Pollard (1726) "introduced the use of the bayonet (derived from Bayonne, in France, where they were first manufactured or invented). The Cadets, under him as commander, were the first corps in America which appeared in public with a bayonet."

The earliest notice of the bayonet in France is

in 1646-7. It was introduced generally into the French army in 1671. As early as James I. (1600), the swan's feather—a long, thin, rapier blade, which the musketeer, after discharging his piece, fixed into the muzzle—was in use in England. The plug-bayonet, so called, was used in England until 1690, when the socket-bayonet was introduced.

It is to be presumed that the "firelocks with bayonets fitted to them," which Col. Fitch (1700) gave to the town of Boston, were publicly used by some military bodies.

Company in 1728, the year he joined the Company, and was a prominent and serviceable man, filling every position and discharging every duty with fidelity and energy. He distinguished himself in every trust. He died Nov. 13, 1740.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1728 is as follows:—

"1728. April 1. The Artillery Company being under arms, the Rev'd Ebenezer Gay of Hingham was chosen to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon, and the present commission officers of said Company, with the field officers of the Regiment, were appointed a Committee to request it of him. Accepted by him.

"Mr. Edward Marion, at his request, was dismissed.

"May 6. Trained but half a day, beginning at two p. m.

"June 3. Being under arms, Voted, that the present Commission officers of this Company, with those to be now elected, be a Committee to give the thanks of the Company to the Rev'd Mr. Ebenezer Gay for the Sermon preached to them this day, and to desire a copy thereof for the press.

"Voted, that the Training in September next be half a day, beginning at 2 o'clock, p. m.

"September 2. Being under arms, Voted, that the Company be Supplied with a new flight of Colours, and that Samuel Holyoke [1714], the present Clerk, provide them accordingly, and at the charge of the Company."

**Rev. Ebenezer Gay**, who delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1728, the youngest son of Nathaniel and Lydia (Lusher) Gay, of Dedham, was born in that town, Aug. 26, 1696, and graduated at Harvard College in 1714. He was ordained to the Christian ministry June 11 1718, and died March 18, 1787, "the honored patriarch of our New England pulpit n that age." He lived in the Christian ministry sixty-eight years, nine months, and few days, and died in his ninety-first year. The degree of doctor of divinity was conferred upon him by Harvard College, in 1785.

"To give a good man his deserved character is not only justice to the living but charity to the dead; for while they mark the perfect man, and behold the upright, impressed with the amiableness of his virtues they may be induced to imitate them and their end be peace."<sup>1</sup>

"For learning, liberality, candour and strength of mind, he was distinguished and celebrated by the judicious and candid."

---

The officers elected were: Edward Winslow (1700), captain; **1729-30.** Daniel Pecker (1720), lieutenant; Samuel Holyoke (1714), ensign. William Nichols (1727) was first sergeant; John Phillips (1725), second sergeant; Thomas Edwards (1724), third sergeant; Jabez Hunt (1727), fourth sergeant; Samuel Holyoke (1714), clerk, and Jabez Hunt (1727), clerk's assistant.

Sept. 19, 1726, the principal owners of the mills near Mill Bridge were Nathaniel Byfield (1679), Simeon Stoddard (1675), Elisha Cooke (1699), and Edward Hutchinson (1702), who appeared before the selectmen in regard to repairing Mill Bridge.<sup>2</sup> It was

**Rev. Ebenezer Gay.** AUTHORITIES: Hists. of Hingham; Obituary in *Massachusetts Gazette*.

<sup>1</sup> Newspaper of March, 1787.

<sup>2</sup> Not entered on town books until March 26, 1729.

agreed that repairs should be made, and that Elisha Cooke (1699) and Edward Hutchinson (1702), of the mill owners, and Thomas Cushing (1691) and Capt. Nathaniel Green (1722), of the selectmen, should have the care of the repairs.

In the Records of Boston Selectmen, 1716-1736, and on page 184, as printed by the record commissioners, there is given a list of the tombs in the South burying-place, on the south line, with their numbers. Of the sixty-seven tombs, twenty-four bear the names of members of the Artillery Company, and several others bear their family names.

No.

2. Oliver Noyes (1699).
3. Capt. James Gooch (1714).
4. Mr. Thomas Cushing (1691).
9. Mr. Ezekiel Lewis (1707).
10. Mr. Robert Gutteridge (1694).
12. Jeremiah Allen, Esq. (1694).
14. Capt. Adino Bulfinch (1702).
20. Mr. John Coney (1662).
21. Mr. Samuel Barrat (1717).
25. Mr. Samuel Rand (1720).
28. Mr. Silence Allen (1700).
33. Mr. Jeremiah Belknap (1711).

No.

36. Penn Townsend, Esq. (1674).
37. Mr. John Borland (1692).
39. Mr. Barrat Dyer (1711).
40. Mr. Nathaniel Cunningham (1720).
44. Mr. Thomas Downe (1733).
49. Mr. John Hunt (1709).
50. Nathaniel Byfield, Esq. (1679).
55. Mr. John Wendell (1733).
57. Mr. Thomas Jackson (1692).
60. Mr. Nicholas Buttolph (1694).
65. Zechariah Thayer (1722).
69. Jonathan Williams, Jr. (1729).

March 11, 1729, the town voted, "That the Selectmen be desired to wait upon the Honourable Thomas Fitch Esq [1700], with the Thanks of the town for his So free Lone of So much Money to the Town for the Purchasing of wheat for the Towns Use."

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1729 were: Samuel Adams, William Brattle, Edward Emerson, Knight Leverett, Hugh McDaniel, Sampson Salter, Jonathan Williams, Jr.

**Samuel Adams** (1729), a brewer, of Boston, son of Capt. John (1691), was baptized May 12, 1689. He married, April 21, 1713, Mary, only daughter of Richard Fifield, of Boston, and he died March 8, 1748.<sup>1</sup> They were the parents of Samuel Adams, signer of the Declaration of Independence and Governor of Massachusetts. The latter married, in 1749, Elizabeth Checkley, daughter of Rev. Samuel and Elizabeth (Rolfe) Checkley.

Samuel Adams (1729) was clerk of the market in 1727, and subsequently held various town offices, and was active in public matters. He was for many years a justice of the peace, selectman, and representative. Gov. Shirley negatived him as a member of the council in 1747, because "he had been too outspoken in his opposition to the encroachments of the Crown upon the rights of the people." His son said of him, "He was a wise man and a good man."

**Samuel Adams** (1729). AUTHORITIES: Hist. of Adams Family; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1848.

<sup>1</sup> "Last week died and was decently interred the remains of Samuel Adams Esq: a gentleman who sustained many public offices among us and for some time past represented this town in the General

Assembly. He was one who well understood and rightly pursued the civil and religious interests of this people; a true New England Man; an honest Patriot. Help, Lord, for such wise and godly men cease, and such faithful members fail from among the sons of New England." — *Independent Advertiser*.



Mr. Adams (1729) joined the Old South Church in 1706, and united in the formation, in 1715, of what became known as the New South Church, in Summer Street.

He was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1737.

**William Brattle** (1729), of Cambridge, son of William and Elizabeth (Hayman) Brattle, and grandson of Capt. Thomas (1675) and Elizabeth (Tyng) Brattle, of Boston, and nephew of Edward (1694), was born April 18, 1706. He married, Nov. 23, 1727, Katherine, daughter of Gov. Gurdon Saltonstall, and had nine children, of whom only two survived to maturity. His grandmother was a daughter of Capt. William Tyng (1638). His wife, Katherine, died April 28, 1752, aged forty-seven years, and he married, Nov. 2, 1755, Martha Allen, a widow, daughter of Col. Thomas Fitch (1700).

Rev. Lucius R. Paige, in his *History of Cambridge*, gives the following sketch of him:—

“Gen. William Brattle [1729] graduated at Harvard College in 1722, resided in the house which still bears his name on Brattle Street, and was successively physician, preacher, and lawyer, and was attorney-general, 1736 and 1747. An inordinate love of popularity seems to have been one of his most striking characteristics; and his taste was abundantly gratified. He was appointed justice of the peace in 1729, at the early age of twenty-three years; was selectman twenty-one years, between 1729 and 1772; representative ten years, first elected in 1729; member of the council from 1755 to 1773, except the single year 1769, when he was negatived by the Governor. As early as 1729, he was major; captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery in 1733; adjutant-general as early as 1758, and brigadier-general in 1762. Up to 1769, Gen. Brattle [1729] seems to have advocated the popular rights, and was probably negatived by the royal Governor as a punishment. But soon afterwards he received new light concerning the matter in dispute between the provinces and Great Britain, and was allowed to resume his seat in the council. As a further reward for his political conversion, he was appointed, in 1771, major-general of the militia throughout the province; and from this time the Government had not a more devoted servant. On the other hand, his subserviency to British power did not secure all that he desired. He was doubtless gratified with the commission of major-general; but, after nearly twenty years' service, as a member of the council, he must have been mortified and chagrined, when he learned that he was not named as a mandamus councillor, but was superseded by Judge Lee, and still worse, by Col. Oliver, his subordinate officer, both as councillor and lieutenant-governor. His fate furnishes a sad example of the folly of attempting to serve two masters. He took shelter in Boston when the people became roused to action; he had gone too far ever to reinstate himself in their good opinion, and his only alternative was to put his trust under the shadow of British power. In December, 1774, ostensibly for the consideration of fifteen hundred pounds sterling, he conveyed to his son, Thomas Brattle, all his real estate in Cambridge. When the British troops evacuated Boston, he went to Halifax, N. S., and there died Oct. 25, 1776.”

In June, 1774, when major-general of the province, he presided on the Common at the election held by the Artillery Company. He received the resignations of the old and commissioned the new officers, notwithstanding the presence of the lieutenant-governor, the Governor being absent at Salem; it having been decided that the

**William Brattle** (1729). AUTHORITIES: Descendants of Capt. Thomas Brattle; Paige's Hist. of

Cambridge; Whitman's Hist. A. and H. A. Company, Ed. 1842.



lieutenant-governor held no authority over the militia while the Governor was alive and in the province.

He was captain of the Artillery Company in 1733.

**Edward Emerson** (1729), of Boston. Mr. Whitman (1810) says Mr. Emerson (1729) was "born May 8, 1702." He held minor offices in the town of Boston in 1729, 1732, and 1738, and was elected constable in 1737 but did not serve.

**Knight Leverett** (1729), of Boston, goldsmith, son of Thomas (1708) and Rebecca (Winsor) Leverett, grandson of Hudson (1658) and Sarah (Payton) Leverett, and great-grandson of Gov. John Leverett (1639), was born Jan. 1, 1702, and married, Feb. 1, 1725-6, Abigail Buttolph. He died July 11, 1753, and his widow died Jan. 26, 1774.

In July, 1725, the grandchildren of Hudson Leverett (1658) divided amongst themselves a part of the Gov. Leverett (1639) estate, near Barton's Point. Through this estate a thoroughfare forty feet wide was laid out, which was given to the town, and in remembrance of the Governor was named Leverett Street.

Knight Leverett (1729) was elected constable in 1728, and, declining to serve, paid the fine. He served as scavenger in 1742, 1745, and 1748, and was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1736.

**Hugh McDaniel** (1729), rope-maker, of Boston, married, April 11, 1728, Sarah ——. He was elected a constable of Boston in 1731 and in 1752. In subsequent years he visited the public schools with the clergy, justices, and others. He was identified with the militia, and became captain of a company. In 1758, he resided in a house situated on the Neck, which he leased of the town, March 25, 1752. Dec. 8, 1769, about three months before his death, he petitioned the town, "setting forth that he is now a prisoner in his Majestys goal for non-payment of his taxes for 1766 and 1767, amounting in the whole to £22. 12. 3, as well as other suits, and prayed for relief. . . . Considerable debate was had," and the petitioner had leave to withdraw.

He was highly respected, being an active, benevolent, and intelligent man. His hands were ever open to the needy. He was deeply concerned in the affairs of the town, and was among the foremost in advancing its interests. His dwelling and contents were unfortunately consumed by fire; he trusted considerable amounts in his business, which were never paid, and thereby his final years were burdened.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1732, ensign in 1741, lieutenant in 1747, and captain in 1750. For many years he was an influential and active member of Christ Church, and served as one of its wardens in the years 1739 and 1740. He died on Thursday, March 29, 1770, aged sixty-four years, and was buried on the evening of April 2, 1770, in King's Chapel Burial-Ground. His widow died Jan. 27, 1795, aged eighty-nine years.

He was a member of the Masonic Fraternity.

**Sampson Salter** (1729), brewer, of Boston, son of Jabez (1674) and Elizabeth Salter, was born in Boston, March 21, 1692. He married, June 23, 1715, Mary Robinson, of Boston. He was a constable in Boston in 1732, and collector of taxes

**Knight Leverett** (1729). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Leverett Genealogy; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1850, p. 136.

**Sampson Salter** (1729). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

from December, 1764, to June 24, 1771, when he declined to serve longer. In the list of persons burnt out by the great fire of 1760 in Boston, the *News-Letter* gives, "In Quaker Lane [Congress Street], Sampson Salter [1729], brewer." He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1736.

Deacon Sampson Salter (1729) died in April, 1778, aged eighty-six years.<sup>1</sup>

**Jonathan Williams, Jr.** (1729), of Boston, merchant, son of Jonathan (1711) and Mary (Hunlock) Williams, and brother of Sendall (1738), was born in Boston, Jan. 8, 1699, and was baptized at the First Church, Jan. 14 of the same year. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1736, ensign in 1742, lieutenant in 1748, and captain in 1751.

For forty years Jonathan Williams, Jr. (1729), was prominently identified with the public affairs of the town. July 5, 1728, he petitioned the selectmen for a retailer's license, which was approved by them, and he kept a wine store on Cornhill, now Washington Street. The license was again issued in 1739. On the 3d of March, 1735, a tomb was granted him in the South burying-place, which was subsequently numbered "69."

His father, Jonathan (1711), for several years had charge of the purchasing and sale of grain, etc., at the granary. He was so engaged at his decease, and Jonathan, Jr. (1729), continued in charge until the selectmen had examined his father's accounts, and determined the balance due the town. His father died in March, 1737, but Jonathan, Jr. (1729), managed the granary until July 22 following, when the amount due the town was £1,207 6s. 2d., which Jonathan, Jr. (1729), paid.

March 11, 1739, a motion was made in town meeting that a committee be appointed to consider and report what rights the town had in Fort Hill and the adjacent shore. Jonathan Williams (1729) was one of this committee, which was continued by reappointment until 1757. The town's land had been trespassed upon by the Province, and by sundry persons, notably by Col. Jacob Wendell (1733). The committee reported several times, and they were authorized to prosecute the trespassers in the courts.

This matter, which caused at times such prolonged town meetings and heated discussion, seems to have worn out all the disputants.

June 6, 1739, Mr. Williams (1729) resided in Cold Lane, now Portland Street. He was clerk of the market in 1729; constable in 1731; fireward in 1764-8; visitor of the schools in 1766; overseer of the poor in 1767. March 14, 1768, the town voted its thanks to him for his good services as overseer of the poor, and also by another motion thanked him for his "services as fireward for some years past." He was repeatedly on the committees to consider the fortifications and batteries.

In 1767, the town was distressed, being drained of its money, and threatened by poverty and ruin. These conditions were supposed to result from the "excessive use of Foreign Superfluities." Mr. Williams (1729) was one of a committee to lessen the use of "Loaf Sugar, Men & Women Hats, Gloves, Snuff, Mustard, Clocks and Watches, Muffs, Furs & Tippets, Fire Engines, China ware," and many other articles, and encourage their manufacture in this province. It stimulated manufactures in Boston, for, at the next afternoon meeting, Mr. Williams (1729), with six others, was appointed to consider some measures "for employing the poor of the town of Boston, by reviving the linen

manufacture," etc. The town voted, Oct. 28, 1767, not to purchase any of the articles enumerated, imported from abroad, after the 31st of December next ensuing.

Mr. Williams (1729) was evidently prepared for events which were soon to follow. The newspapers in Boston, of Monday, Nov. 29, 1773, announced that the "Dartmouth" had anchored off Long Wharf, with one hundred and fourteen chests of tea. The hand-bill, "Friends! Brethren! Countrymen!" had been freely distributed throughout the town, and the papers also announced that a public meeting would be held "at Faneuil Hall at nine o'clock this day . . . to make a united and successful resistance to this last, worst and most destructive measure of administration." At nine o'clock the bells were rung, and thousands rallied at Faneuil Hall. This was the commencement of organized resistance. Jonathan Williams (1729), whose name was on the roll of the Artillery Company for half a century, was elected moderator of the meeting, in which the principal debaters were Samuel Adams, Dr. Warren, Hancock, Young, and Molineaux. Mr. Williams (1729) was one of the Committee of Correspondence elected in 1775.

Distinguished as a merchant and patriot, he died March 27, 1788, aged eighty-eight years, and was buried in the tomb in the Granary Burial-Ground which later was the property of Col. Bradford's heirs.

"A List of Soldiers under a fine of 6/ per diem.

"Jeremiah Belknap [1724], Ralph Smith [1725], Thomas Edwards [1724], Samuel Jones [1725], Benjamin Pollard [1726], John Phillips [1725], Henry Gibbs [1726], Bartholomew Gedney [1726], Increase Gatchell [1727], John Salter [1727], Jabez Hunt [1727], Thomas Simpkins [1727], Joseph Dowding [1727], John Greenleaf [1727], John Helyer [1727], Edward Marion [1727], Bennet Love [1727], James Davenport [1727], Dudson Kilcup [1727], David Mason [1727], Thomas Fleet [1727], Richard Mortimer [1727], Samuel Miller [1728], Hugh McDaniel [1729], Edward Emerson Jr. [1729], Knight Leverett [1729], Jonathan Williams Jr. [1729]."

The record of the Artillery Company for 1729 is as follows:—

"1729. April 7. Being under arms; whereas the Commission officers of this Company were absent by illness and other avocations, the Company, by handy vote, made choice of Lieut Col. Habijah Savage [1699] to lead and exercise the Company for this day, which choice he accordingly accepted. The Company proceeded to vote for a minister to preach the next Artillery Sermon, and the Rev'd Mr. Joshua Gee of this town was chosen. Voted, that the present Commission officers of this Company, with the Field officers of the Regiment of this town, viz: Colo. Edward Hutchinson [1702], Lt Colo. Habijah Savage [1699] and Maj. Edward Winslow [1700] be a committee to request it of him.

"Mr. John Cookson [1701], and Mr. Richard Bulkley [1722], at their request, were dismissed. Voted, that the Training in May next be half a day, beginning at two of the clock p. m.

"Whereas the members of this Company are frequently chosen to the office of Constable, Therefore voted; that so often as any of the members of this Company under fine of six shillings p diem, for delinquency, are chosen and serve as Constables, that then they shall be liable to the fine of twelve pence per diem only during their Service in said office, and no longer; and if any of the members of this Company, under fine of twelve pence per diem, for delinquency, are chosen Constables, and serve in said office, they shall be liable to the fine aforesaid notwithstanding.



"Voted, that there be a committee chosen, consisting of three members of this Company, to joyn with the heirs or assigns of the Hon. John Burrill, Esqr. in the dividing of the thousand acres of land lying in the Township of Rutland, which was granted by the General Assembly of this Province, in their May Sessions, 1717, five hundred acres of said land to said Burrill, and he to have his choice at which end to lay out his grant, and the other five hundred acres to this Company to satisfy a grant made to them the 15<sup>th</sup> of October 1673, and to make report of their doings to this Company as soon as may be. The charges of the Committee to be borne by the Company. Accordingly the gentlemen chosen to be of this Committee were, viz Captain William Ward [1724], Capt. Thomas Smith [1702] and Mr. Benjamin Pollard [1726].

"Voted, that the General Courts grant to this Company of five hundred acres of land, lying in the Township of Rutland be recorded in this Company's Book; which is as follows:—At a Great and General Court, or Assembly for His Majestys Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, begun and held at Boston, upon Wednesday the 29<sup>th</sup> of May 1717, being convened by His Majesty's writs, the following Order passed in the House of Representatives, read and concurred, viz<sup>t</sup>:

"Upon reading the petition of Edward Hutchinson [1702], Habijah Savage [1699], John Ballentine, Junr [1694], Edward Winslow [1700] and Jonathan Pollard [1700] in behalf of the Artillery Company in Boston, praying that five hundred acres of land which are reserved to the province in the Township of Rutland may be granted to the said Company to satisfy a grant made to them by the General Court, October 15<sup>th</sup> 1673,

"Ordered, that five hundred acres of the thousand acres reserved to the Province in the Township of Rutland be granted in answer to this petition; but so that John Burrill, Esq., to whom the other five hundred acres is granted, have the choice at which end to lay out his grant.

"Consented to

"SAMUEL SHUTE.

"A true copy. Examined p T. WILLARD, *Secretary*.

"May 5<sup>th</sup> 1729. Being under arms, The committee appointed to acquaint the Rev'd Mr. Joshua Gee of the choice of the Company made of him to preach the next Artillery election Sermon, returned answer that he desired to be excused for this time on the account of many necessary avocations. Upon which the Company made choice of the Rev'd Mr. William Welstead of this Town for that service; and voted that the Commission Officers of the Company and the field Officers of this Regiment (being members of this Company) together with the Hon. Thomas Hutchinson, Esqr [1694] be a committee to request it of him.

"Whereas the committee appointed the 7<sup>th</sup> of April last to joyn with the heirs or assigns of the Hon. John Burrill, Esqr, in dividing the 1000 acres of land in Rutland; granted, &c, were ordered to make their report of what they had done in that affair—They have accordingly made the following report of their doings, viz:—

"Rutland, May 1<sup>st</sup> 1729. We the subscribers agreeable to the intent of the within vote have been upon the land within mentioned, with the heirs and assigns of the Hon. John Burrill Esq., and have mutually agreed together in running the line of partition as is described in the platts taken and signed by both Parties and interchangeably delivered; one of which is hereunto annexed.

"THOMAS SMITH.

"BENJAMIN POLLARD.

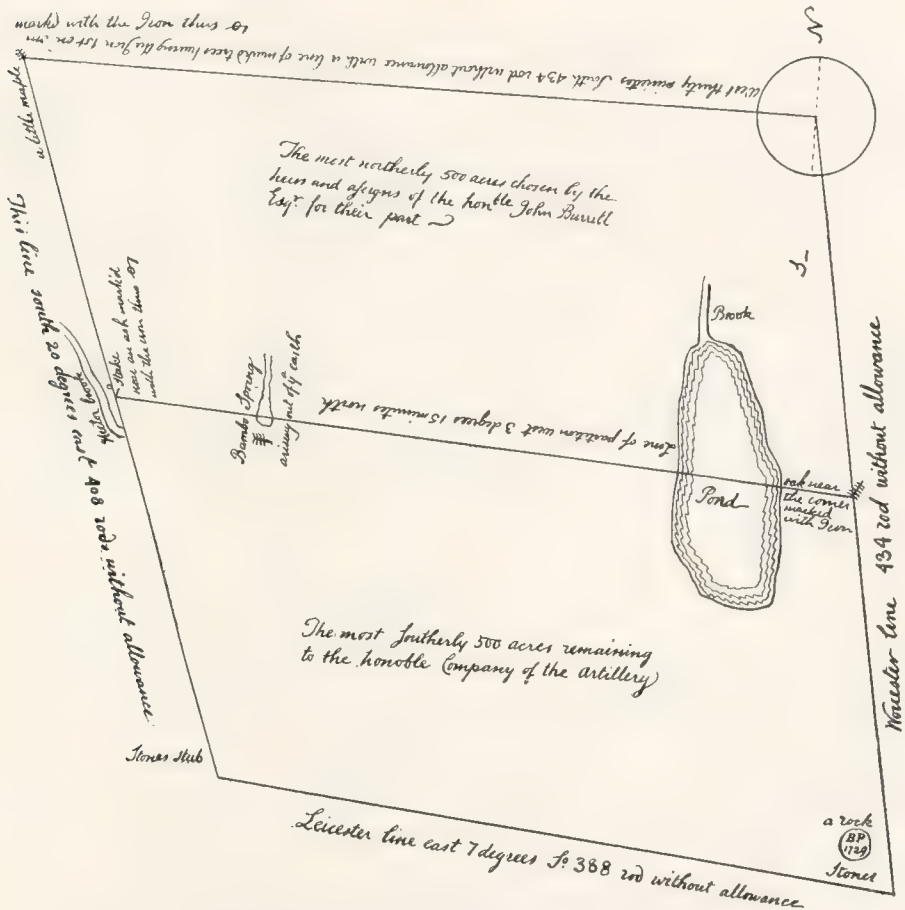
"WILLIAM WARD.



"Voted, that the above report of the said committee be accepted; and that they have the thanks of the Company for their good service in this affair.

"Voted, that the above committee's account of charge in going to Rutland, in Surveying, platting & dividing the land &c, amounting to nine pounds nineteen shillings be allowed; and ordered that the Clerk discharge said account accordingly.

"Voted, that an attested copy of the plan of the one thousand acres of land in Rutland &c, five hundred of which to this Company, be inserted in the Company's book, and accordingly here followeth:—



"A plan setting forth the bounds of the farm, called the Province farm, lying in the town of Rutland and the line of partition as it was agreed upon and stated between the heirs and assigns of the Hon. John Burrill Esqr., and the Committee chosen by the Honorable Company of the Artillery. Measured by Moses How and Samuel Davis, chairman, chosen by both parties and under oath, May 1, 1729. Protractor and laid down by a scale of 40 perch to an inch by

"WILLIAM WARD

"SAMUEL WRIGHT

"*Surveyors.*

"N. B. The original plan was 40 perch to an inch; the following [see page 441] is reduced to a smaller size.

"Rutland, May 1<sup>st</sup> 1729. Whereas the Great and General Assembly of the Province of the Massachusetts Bay, at their Session in June 1715 reserved to themselves 1000 acres of land in the township of Rutland: 500 acres of which being by said Court at their May Session 1717 granted to the Hon. John Burrill, Esqr., deceased, and the other 500 acres granted to the Honorable Artillery Company of said Province, but the choice to be at the option of said Burrill, we the subscribers, Samuel Sweetsir, Michael Sweetsir, Jacob Moor, Peter Moor and Nathan Goodenough, heirs or assigns of said Burrill, have, agreeable to the intent of said Court, made choice of the most Northerly part of said 1000 acres of land, and have mutually agreed with Messrs Thomas Smith, William Ward and Benjamin Pollard, being a committee chosen by and for the Artillery aforesaid to join with us in dividing said land, have run the line as it is delineated and described in the above Platt. We therefore do establish the same forever. In testimony whereof we have severally set our hands to these presents.

"THOMAS SMITH  
"WILLIAM WARD,  
"BENJAMIN POLLARD

} *Committee.*

"SAMUEL SWEETSIR  
"MICHAEL SWEETSIR  
"JACOB MOOR,  
"PETER MOOR  
"NATHAN GOODENOUGH,

} *Heirs to  
J. Burrill, Esq.*

"A true copy — examined by SAMUEL HOLYOKE,  
*Clerk.*"

"June 2d 1729. Voted, that the thanks of the Company be given to the Rev'd Mr. William Welstead for the sermon preached to them this day, and that the present Commission officers of the Company, with them to be new elected & the field officers of this regiment, with the Hon'ble Thomas Hutchinson Esqr. [1694] be a committee for that end.

"Voted, that the Training days in September and May next be half days, beginning at two of the clock in the afternoon.

"October 6<sup>th</sup> 1729. Being under arms; Whereas there is not money sufficient in the Clerk's hands to pay the Committee their amount of charge in going to Rutland and Transacting an affair in behalf of this Company in April last, —

"Wherefore, Voted, that the Clerk of this Company receive of Colo. Thomas Fitch [1700] out of the Company's money in his hands so much as he has occasion for to ratify the said Rutland committee's account of charge.

"Voted, that the Clerk pay to Mr. William Moorcock and Mr. Daniel Henshaw fifteen shillings each in full for whatever damage their horses and saddles sustained in the Company's service in April last."

Mr. Whitman (1810), in his history of the Company, edition of 1842, says: "No sooner had the Company become possessed of their lands in Rutland than they were taxed. Deriving little benefit therefrom, April, 1731, they appointed a committee, who reported 'that it was expedient to sell and dispose of the 1000 and 500 acre grants.'"

A petition was accordingly presented to the General Court, and at the June session, 1731, the following was passed, viz.:—

"In the House of Representatives, June 14<sup>th</sup> 1731. Read and ordered, that the prayer of the petition be granted; and that the Artillery Company within mentioned be, and hereby are fully authorized and empowered in due form of law, to make and execute a good deed or deeds of conveyance of the two tracts of land within mentioned; the produce thereof to be vested in such other real estate as may be most for their advantage, the income thereof to be applied to and for providing necessities for their military exercises, and defraying the other charges that may arise by occasion thereof.

"June 16<sup>th</sup> 1731. Consented to.

"J. BELCHER, *Governor*."

The Artillery Company in 1737 sold their lands in Rutland, but to whom, and for how much, the records do not show. The Dunstable lands were, however, sold to Col. Blanchard (1737), and a mortgage was taken as security, and after the mortgagor's death long continued in dispute, until a suit thereon was commenced in the United States Court for the District of New Hampshire, and judgment rendered in the Company's favor. Finally, Col. Blanchard's (1737) heirs, in 1789, paid off the encumbrance.

Rev. Joshua Gee, of Boston, who was invited to deliver the Artillery election sermon in 1729, declined on account of "many necessary avocations."

He was a son of Joshua and Elizabeth (Thornton) Gee, and was born June 29, 1698, being baptized on the 3d of the next July in Mr. Mather's church, of which his parents were members, and which he joined in 1716. He graduated at Harvard College in 1717. He was installed as colleague of Rev. Cotton Mather, Dec. 18, 1723. In this relation he continued until his death. Mr. Gee died May 22, 1748, in the fifty-first year of his age and twenty-fifth of his ministry. He married a daughter of Rev. Mr. Rogers, of Portsmouth. She died in 1730, aged twenty-nine years.

**Rev. William Welstead**, of Boston, son of William, was baptized in the First Church, June 28, 1696. He married a sister of Gov. Hutchinson, and, being ordained in 1728, became the second settled pastor of the New Brick Church in Boston. Mr. Welstead continued in this relation until his decease, which occurred April 29, 1753.

**Rev. Joshua Gee.** AUTHORITIES: Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Prince's Church Hist., I.; Allen's Biog. Dict.

The officers elected were: Edward Hutchinson (1702), captain; **1730-1.** Nathaniel Cunningham (1720), lieutenant; John Goldthwait (1711), ensign. Henry Gibbs (1726) was first sergeant; John Salter (1727), second sergeant; Thomas Simpkins (1727), third sergeant; Dudson Kilcup (1727), fourth sergeant, and Samuel Holyoke (1714), clerk.

No new members were received into the Artillery Company in 1730.

The year is memorable, however, for the decease of Hon. Samuel Sewall (1679), chief-justice of the province, who was identified with Boston for seventy years, and a member of the Artillery Company for fifty-one years, from 1679 to 1730.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1730 is as follows:—

"April 6, 1730. Being under arms, the Company proceeded to vote for a minister to preach the next Artillery Election sermon and the Rev'd Mr. John Hancock of Lexington was chosen. Voted, that the Commission officers of the Company, with Colo. Edward Hutchinson [1702] and Lt. Col. Habijah Savage [1699] be a committee to request it of him.

"June 1<sup>st</sup> 1730, Voted, that the present Commission officers of the Company, with those new elected, with Lt. Col. Habijah Savage [1699] be a committee to give the thanks of the Company to the Rev'd Mr. John Hancock for the sermon preached to them this day.

"June 1<sup>st</sup> 1730. Whereas the land belonging to the inhabitants and proprietors of the township of Rutland was taxed towards the support of the Gospel ministry in the said town at one penny per acre for five years from the 18<sup>th</sup> December 1727, and that James Browning, Constable of said town demands forty-one shillings and eight pence, it being what the Company's land in said town was taxed this present year to the Gospel ministry aforesaid; Wherefore, Voted, that the Clerk of this Company pay to James Browning, Constable of the town of Rutland, forty-one shillings and eight pence in full for what the Company's land in said town was taxed to the Gospel ministry there this present year."

**Rev. John Hancock**, of Lexington, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1730, son of Nathaniel and Mary (Prentice) Hancock, of Cambridge, was born March 1, 1671, and graduated at Harvard College in 1689. He taught school in Cambridge in 1691, but Nov. 2, 1698, he was ordained to the gospel ministry at Lexington, then called "Cambridge Farms," settled over the church there and continued as its pastor until his decease, which occurred Dec. 6, 1752. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. Thomas Clark, of Chelmsford. Their eldest son was John, born June 1, 1702, and died May 7, 1744, who was the father of John Hancock, Governor of Massachusetts, president of the Continental Congress, and the first signer of the Declaration of Independence. Thomas Hancock, another son of Rev. John, became one of the wealthiest merchants in the province. He was a bookseller in Boston, and, dying Aug. 1, 1763, bequeathed to his nephew, John, more than fifty thousand pounds sterling, besides the reversion of twenty thousand pounds at the decease of his widow, a daughter of Daniel Henchman (1712), in whose book-store Thomas had been a clerk.

Rev. John Hancock, who was pastor of the Lexington church for fifty-four years, was eminent in his profession, a man of great influence and worth, and was generally styled "Bishop Hancock."

**Rev. John Hancock.** AUTHORITIES: Allen's and Appleton; Sprague's Annals of American Biog. Dict.; Funeral Sermons, by Rev. Messrs. Gay Pulpit.







*Nath Cunningham*

The officers elected were: Nathaniel Cunningham (1720), captain; Samuel Rand (1720), lieutenant; Ebenezer Bridge (1717), ensign. John Helyer (1727) was first sergeant; Bartholomew Gedney (1726), second sergeant; Job Coit (1727), third sergeant; Thomas Fleet (1727), fourth sergeant; Samuel Holyoke (1714), clerk, and Jabez Hunt (1727), clerk's assistant.

No members were recruited by the Artillery Company in 1731.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1731 is as follows:—

"April 5<sup>th</sup> 1731. The Company made choice of the Rev'd Mr. James Allen of Brooklyn to preach the next Artillery Election sermon, and voted, that the commission officers of the Company with Lt Colo. Habijah Savage [1699] and Maj. Edward Winslow [1700] be a committee to request it of him.

"Whereas Samuel Davis, Constable of the town of Rutland for the year 1729, demands forty-one shillings and eight pence, it being what the Company's land in said town was taxed towards the support of the Gospel ministry there for the year aforesaid; wherefore, voted: that the Clerk of this Company pay to Samuel Davis, Constable of the town of Rutland forty-one shillings and eight pence, it being what the Company's land in said town was taxed towards the support of the Gospel ministry there in the year 1729.

"N<sup>o</sup> 1. Voted, there be a committee chosen to consider what improvement may be made of the land granted to this Company by the General Court for providing of necessities for their military exercises and defraying of other charges that may arise by occasion thereof, and make report at the training in May next. The gentlemen chosen were, viz: Colo. Edward Hutchinson [1702], Lt Col. Habijah Savage [1699], Maj. Edward Winslow [1700], Capt John Greenough [1712], Mr Nathaniel Cunningham [1720], Mr Edward Pell [1714] and Samuel Holyoke [1714].

"N<sup>o</sup> 2. May 3<sup>d</sup>, 1731. Agreeable to the above vote, the Committee made the following report to the Company this day, which the Company accordingly accepted; which is as follows, viz:—

"We, the subscribers, are of opinion that there be a petition preferred to the General Court, praying that the Company may have liberty to make sale of one of their tracts of land, and the produce thereof to be let out at interest upon land security for the use of the Company; and if that may not be granted, that then we may have liberty to sell the whole of the Company's land, and lay out the produce thereof in some landed estate in or near the town of Boston, in such place, where it may yield most income for the benefit of said Company.

"NATHL CUNNINGHAM,  
 "EDWARD PELL,  
 "SAMUEL HOLYOKE,  
 "EDWARD HUTCHINSON,  
 "HABIJAH SAVAGE,  
 "EDWARD WINSLOW,  
 "JOHN GREENOUGH.

"N<sup>o</sup> 3. Voted, that the aforesaid Col Edward Hutchinson [1702], Lt. Col. Habijah Savage [1699], Maj. Edward Winslow [1700], Capt John Greenough [1712], Mr. Nathaniel Cunningham [1720], Mr. Edward Pell [1714] and Samuel Holyoke [1714], be a

a committee to prefer a petition to the Great and General Court at their next May Sessions, agreeable to the above report.

"The Sixth Article of the Rules and Orders made by the Governor and Council, April 1638, by which this Company were to regulate themselves, accompanied this petition, for the sale of the Company's lands, to the General Assembly with the foregoing votes, N<sup>o</sup> 1 — 2 — & 3.

"Here follows the petition preferred to the General Assembly at their present session by the committee aforesaid, viz : —

"To His Excellency JONATHAN BELCHER, Esqr, Captain General and Governor-in-Chief in and over His Majesties Province of Massachusetts Bay, and to the Honorable Council and House of Representatives in General Court assembled at Boston, May 26<sup>th</sup> 1731 : —

"The petition of Edward Hutchinson [1702], Habijah Savage [1699], Edward Winslow [1700], Esquires; John Greenough [1712], Nathaniel Cunningham [1720], Edward Pell [1714], and Samuel Holyoke [1714], a committee chosen and appointed by the Artillery Company of the Massachusetts Bay, so called, for the purposes hereafter mentioned, Humbly sheweth :

"That whereas on the 24<sup>th</sup> Day of April A. D. 1638, the then Governor and Council, by order of the General Court did incorporate the Military or Artillery Company of the Massachusetts, and did grant unto the said Company certain privileges and immunities, among which there was more particularly, in the Sixth Article of the Rules and Orders made by the Governor and Council, by which the said Company were to regulate themselves in their military exercises, granted to the said Company one thousand acres of land for the use of the said Company, and such as should join in the same, to be improved by them for providing of necessaries for their Military exercise and defraying of other charges which may arise by occasion thereof; and that on the 15<sup>th</sup> day of October 1673, the General Court did confirm to the said Company one thousand acres of upland and meadow bordering on Merrimack and Nashaway rivers in the township of Dunstable, with an additional grant of five hundred acres more, which was confirmed to said Company by the General Court, at their session in May, 1717, in the township of Rutland, as by the said grants and confirmations here produced may fully appear; and forasmuch as the said lands have never yet been under any improvement, but lay remote and are only a burthen and charge to the Company, by reason of the taxes and other charges to which they are subject, and the intention and design of the Donors being for providing necessaries and defraying the charges of the said Company, which have hitherto proved ineffectual, the said Company think it will be much for their advantage, and the true end and design of the said grants being answered, if they might have liberty to make sale of one, or both, of the said tracts, and to convert the produce thereof for the purchasing of other lands in, or near, the town of Boston, which may be a present, as well as a future, benefit to the said Company; or to let out the said produce at interest upon land security for their use; and therefore the said Company, by their vote of the fifth of April last, chose your petitioners a committee to consider what improvement might be made of the land granted as aforesaid, for the benefit of the said Company, who, on the third of May last, made their report touching the premises, and thereupon the said Company voted, that the petitioners should be a committee to prefer a petition to your Excellency and Honors, the copies of which votes



are here also produced. Wherefore your petitioners, in behalf of the said Artillery Company humbly pray your Excellency and this Hon'ble Court, that they may have liberty to make sale of one, or both, of the said tracts of land granted to them as aforesaid, for the ends and uses aforesaid, the produce whereof to be appropriated as to your Excellency and Honors, in your consummate wisdom, shall seem most meet. That so, the true intent and design of the said grants may be the better answered. And your petitioners as in duty bound shall ever pray,

"NATHANIEL CUNNINGHAM,  
 "EDWARD PELL,  
 "SAMUEL HOLYOKE,  
 "EDWARD HUTCHINSON,  
 "HABIJAH SAVAGE,  
 "EDWARD WINSLOW,  
 "JOHN GREENOUGH.

"In the House of Representatives, June 14<sup>th</sup> 1731. Read and Ordered, that the prayer of this petition be granted; and that the Artillery Company within mentioned be and are fully authorized and impowered, in due form of law to make and execute a good deed or deeds of conveyance of the two tracts of land within mentioned; the produce thereof to be vested in such other real estate as may be most for their advantage; the income thereof to be applied to and for providing necessities for their military exercises, and defraying the other charges that may arise by occasion thereof.

"Sent up for concurrence,

J. QUINCY, *Speaker*.

"In Council, June 16<sup>th</sup> 1731. Read and concurred,

"J. WILLARD, *Secretary*.

"June 16<sup>th</sup> 1731.

Consented to.

J. BELCHER.

"Copy examined by J. WILLARD *Sec'y*.

"September 6<sup>th</sup> 1731. The above Order of the General Court being read; voted, That there be a committee chosen, consisting of five members of this Company, who are hereby fully impowered, or a majority of them, to dispose of said lands agreeable to the order aforesaid; and voted, that Colo Edward Hutchinson [1702], Lt. Colo. Habijah Savage [1699], Maj. Edward Winslow [1700], Capt Nathaniel Cunningham [1720] and Mr. William Downe [1716], be a committee for the ends and purposes abovesaid.

"Voted, that the present commission officers of this Company, viz Capt. Nathaniel Cunningham [1720], Lt Samuel Rand [1720] and Ensign Ebenezer Bridge [1717] be a committee to wait on Colo Thomas Fitch [1700], and receive of him what money he has of this Company in his hands, and give a discharge for the same; and likewise to give him the thanks of the Company for his good service in said affair."

**Rev. James Allen**, of Brookline, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1731. He was a native of Roxbury, and graduated at Harvard College in 1710. He was ordained as first minister of the church in Brookline, Nov. 5, 1718, and preached in that parish for twenty-eight years. He died Feb. 18, 1747, aged fifty-five years.

**Rev. James Allen.** AUTHORITIES: Pierce's Cent. Discourse; Allen's Biog. Dict.

The officers elected were: William Downe (1716), captain; John Goldthwait (1711), lieutenant; John Buttolph (1720), ensign. James Davenport (1727) was first sergeant; David Mason (1727), second sergeant; Hugh McDaniel (1729), third sergeant; Samuel Miller (1728), fourth sergeant, and Jabez Hunt (1727), clerk.

May 10, 1732, Mr. Nathaniel Cunningham (1720), Mr. Samuel Waldo, Henry Deering, Esq., son of Mr. Henry Deering (1682), Mr. Edward Bromfield (1732), and Mr. Thomas Brooks were selected to prepare instructions for the representatives. The representatives, two excepted, were members of the Artillery Company, viz.: Elisha Cooke, Esq. (1699), Samuel Welles, Esq., Habijah Savage, Esq. (1699), and Mr. Thomas Cushing, Jr., son of Mr. Thomas Cushing (1691). The instructions are given in full in the printed Records of the Town of Boston, 1729-1742, pp. 32-34.

At the meeting, March 12, 1732-3, a committee, consisting of Col. Thomas Fitch (1700), Thomas Hutchinson, Esq. (1694), Jacob Wendell, Esq. (1733), Mr. Nathaniel Cunningham (1720), John Colman, George Cradock, and Thomas Palmer (1702), was chosen to project a scheme for regulating a market and to lay it before the town. The committee reported May 9, 1733, recommending that there be three market-places; one at or near the town dock, a second near the Old North meeting-house, and a third at or near the Great Tree at the South End, near Mr. Eliot's house. Mr. John Colman, Jacob Wendell, Esq. (1733), Nathaniel Cunningham, Esq. (1720), Mr. Daniel Goffe (1712), with the three clerks of the market elected, were chosen to compute the cost of erecting the several markets. March 26, 1734, the town placed seven hundred pounds in the hands of Thomas Fitch (1700), Edward Hutchinson (1702), Thomas Palmer (1702), Jacob Wendell (1733), Esqs., Messrs. Nathaniel Cunningham (1720), James Watson, Francis Willoughby, and John Steel, to enable them to erect the buildings at the places assigned. This was finally accomplished after persistent opposition; but, so strong was the general prejudice against regular markets "that, in less than four years from their establishment, the houses were abandoned by the market-men and they fell quite into disuse." The house at the North End was taken down and its timber utilized in erecting a workhouse; that at the South End was converted into stores, and that at Dock Square was torn down by the people.

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1732 were: Thomas Baker, Edward Bromfield, Jr., Josiah Carter, Joshua Cheever, Joseph Goldthwait, Thomas Hubbard, Caleb Lyman, William Rand, Ebenezer Storer.

**Thomas Baker** (1732), of Boston, son of Thomas (1703) and Thankful Baker, was born Feb. 17, 1708.

**Edward Bromfield, Jr.** (1732), merchant, of Boston, son of Edward (1679) and Mary (Danforth) Bromfield, of Boston, was born Nov. 5, 1695. He married, Feb. 21, 1722, Abigail Coney. Rev. John Wilson, who delivered the first sermon before the Artillery Company (1638), was Edward, Jr.'s (1732), great-grandfather.

In 1723, he was elected constable of Boston, but was excused; and when again elected, in 1726, he paid a fine for not serving. He was one of a committee to draw up instructions for the representatives in 1731, 1732, and 1738, and was himself a represent-

**Edward Bromfield, Jr.** (1732.) **AUTHORITIES:** Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1859, 1871, 1872.

ative for Boston in the General Court from 1739 to 1742 inclusive. May 25, 1735, he gave fifty pounds towards the erection of the new workhouse. Nov. 21, 1738, he was on a committee chosen to consider the setting off of Rumney Marsh, now Chelsea, into a separate township. He visited the schools, with the clergy and others, in 1739, 1740, 1746, and 1751. The petition of the members of King's Chapel, April 11, 1748, for additional land to enlarge their church, was referred to a committee of which Edward Bromfield, Jr. (1732), was a member. He was a selectman of Boston from 1732 to 1735 inclusive, and an overseer of the poor from 1736 to 1756, when he declined to serve longer. He was an active citizen, liberal and industrious in public as in private affairs. He became a member of the Old South Church, April 13, 1729. His residence was on Beacon Street, opposite the present Athenæum building.

June 12, 1747, David Brainerd, the famous missionary to the Indians, visited Boston for the last time. While in Boston, he was entertained at the house of Edward Bromfield, Jr. (1732). On Sunday, July 19, he attended services at the Old South Church, and sat in Mr. Bromfield's pew, which was the second wall pew on the left from the Milk Street entrance.<sup>1</sup>

The *Boston Gazette* of April 19 said, concerning him: "His ancestors were among the distinguished worthies of New England, whose names will appear in characters of honor in the annals of our church and state. The town of Boston, his native place, observed his accomplishments and called him to fill some of their most important places of trust; all which he discharged with great honor to himself and advantage to the public. In the House of Representatives he appeared the firm, uncorrupted patriot; careful to assert the just prerogatives of the Crown and defend the undeniable liberties of the people."

He died April 10, 1756. Rev. Thomas Paine delivered the funeral sermon, which was printed.

**Josiah Carter** (1732), currier, of Boston, son of John and Ruth (Burnham) Carter, of Woburn, was born in that town, Aug. 3, 1698. He was clerk of the market in 1727; scavenger in 1737; constable in 1742, and sealer of leather in 1732, 1733, 1734, 1739, and from 1744 to 1753.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1740.

**Joshua Cheever** (1732), merchant, of Boston, a son of Rev. Thomas Cheever, grandson of Ezekiel Cheever, whom Cotton Mather called "the civilizer of his country," and a brother of Capt. Ezekiel Cheever (1733), was born Jan. 6, 1687. He married Sarah Warren, Nov. 2, 1708. Capt. Joshua Cheever (1732) served the town as a scavenger in 1724, constable in 1720, sealer of leather in 1717, 1718, and 1723; assessor from 1725 to 1729 inclusive; fireward in 1732; overseer of the poor in 1736, when he is first called "Captain" in the town records, and was annually re-elected until 1743, and was selectman from 1730 to 1732. He also served on several important committees, notably the one on fortifying the town in 1746; and May 25, 1735, he gave fifty pounds towards the erection of the new workhouse. He was appointed a justice of the peace Jan. 25, 1738-9. During the last years of his active public service, from 1740 to 1747, he made the annual visitation of the town, with the justices and others. He was one of

**Joshua Cheever** (1732). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Drake's Hist. of Boston.

<sup>1</sup> Edwards's Life of Brainerd, pp. 225, etc., quoted in Drake's Hist. of Boston, p. 624.



the original members of the New North Church in Boston; was chosen a deacon, Nov. 1, 1720; ruling elder, July 11, 1736, and was ordained to that office, Aug. 7, 1737.

He was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1736, and captain in 1741.

Inventory of his estate was filed in June, 1753.

**Joseph Goldthwait** (1732), of Boston, son of John (1711), was born in Boston, Nov. 11, 1706. He married, Feb. 8, 1727, Martha Lewis. He was elected constable of Boston in 1734, and scavenger in 1743. A retailer's license was granted him, Aug. 24, 1737. His shop was on Marlborough, now Washington, Street. His license was renewed, Sept. 10, 1742.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1738.

Mr. Whitman (1810) says Mr. Goldthwait was "alive in 1784."

**Thomas Hubbard** (1732), merchant, of Boston, son of Joseph and Thankful Hubbard, was born in Boston, Aug. 4, 1702. For a half century Mr. Hubbard (1732) was one of the most prominent men in the town. He held various town offices; was a member of many important committees, and active in all that concerned the public welfare. He graduated at Harvard College in 1721. He was elected a representative from Boston in 1746, and for fourteen years afterward, occupying the speaker's chair for ten years, and finally was raised to a seat in the council of the province, which he resigned a short time before his death. For twenty-one years—from 1752 to his death—he was treasurer of Harvard College, succeeding Mr. Edward Hutchinson (1702). "He increased the funds of the college by his judicious and assiduous management, and to the office of treasurer united the character of benefactor." Mr. Hubbard (1732) gave four hundred pounds, besides various donations, to the college. He became a member of the Old South Church Nov. 22, 1730; was a deacon for many years, resigning in 1764, but in 1768 accepted the office of treasurer.

He resided on Summer Street. He died at Waltham, July 14, 1773. He left two hundred pounds to the poor of Boston, and fifty pounds to the charitable fund of the Old South Church.

**Caleb Lyman** (1732), shopkeeper, of Boston, son of John and Elizabeth Lyman, was born in Northampton, Sept. 17, 1678.

Capt. Lyman (1732) removed to Boston about 1710, and became thoroughly identified with the town. He was a constable in 1712; clerk of the market in 1714; tithing-man, and a private in the militia, from 1723 to 1727 inclusive; assessor from 1727 to 1731 inclusive, and a selectman from 1736 to 1742 inclusive. April 21, 1736, a tomb was granted him in the North burial-place. May 25, 1735, he gave thirty pounds towards the erection of the new workhouse. Mr. Savage says that Capt. Lyman (1732) died without issue. He was a deacon in the New North Church, of which he was one of the founders in 1712, and gave to that church, in his will, five hundred pounds. He was appointed justice of the peace Jan. 25, 1738-9. He made a very bold excursion into the northern part of New Hampshire in 1704, an account of which, written by himself,

**Joseph Goldthwait** (1732). AUTHORITY: South Church; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., Boston Records. 1871, p. 45; Boston Records.

**Thomas Hubbard** (1732). AUTHORITIES: **Caleb Lyman** (1732). AUTHORITY: Boston Quincy's Hist. of Harv. College; Hill's Hist. of Old Records.



is given in the History of the Wars of New England with the Eastern Indians, 1703-1725, by Samuel Penhallow.

Capt. Lyman's (1732) story, in substance, is as follows: In the month of May, 1704, there came intelligence from Albany concerning a number of unfriendly Indians up Connecticut River, who had built a fort and planted corn at a place called Cowassuck. On the 5th of June following, he set out, by order of authority, with five friendly Indians, from Northampton, and travelled into the wilderness for nine days, through much difficulty. They saw tracks and heard the firing of guns, and soon came upon fresh tracks, which they followed until they came in sight of the men. When they arrived in the vicinity of the fort they made a halt, and after consultation determined to send out a spy. Before the spy had gone out of sight they saw Indians in a canoe, and soon after a gun was fired. The attacking party kept quiet till sunset, intending to attack the enemy in the night. Capt. Lyman (1732) and his men advanced a half mile, and at two o'clock A. M. were within twelve rods of the fort. The sticks and underbrush crackled, but fortunately there appeared a cloud; it soon thundered and rained. They came to the wigwam undiscovered; fired into it; then they surrounded it, and with hatchets and clubs knocked down several of its inmates. Only two of the enemy escaped, and one of those was mortally wounded. Seven were killed on the spot, six of whom were scalped, one for each of the attacking party. They descended the river for twelve miles in canoes, then broke them up and walked the remainder of the distance, arriving safely at Northampton, June 19 or 20. The General Court rewarded Capt. Lyman (1732) and his party by a gift of thirty-one pounds.

He was lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1735, and its captain in 1739. He died at Weston, Mass., Nov. 19, 1742, aged sixty-five years, and "his funeral sermon was preached by Rev. William Williams," who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1737. His remains were entombed in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

**William Rand** (1732), physician, of Boston, son of Thomas and Sarah (Longley) Rand, of Charlestown, was born May 4, 1689. He married (1) Sarah Cotta, daughter of John Cotta (1679); (2) Isabella Armitage, daughter of William Tilley (1706), and (3) Elizabeth Leeds. When the son was six years old his father, Thomas, was drowned in Mystic River by the sinking of his canoe. William (1732) became a member of the Old South Church, Feb. 24, 1722, and in 1733 was an apothecary, at the sign of the Unicorn, near the town dock. In 1714, he sold land on Bunker Hill to Jonathan Dowse. He was a collector of taxes in Boston from 1734 to 1737 inclusive, and was scavenger in 1736. He contributed ten pounds towards the erection of the workhouse in 1735. May 15, 1750, he petitioned the town for an abatement of taxes committed to him from 1734 to 1737, which the town refused to do. A year later a similar petition was dismissed by the town. He appears to have been a physician employed in part by the town, and from 1737 to 1740 had charge of the small-pox patients and others at the Province Hospital, on Rainsford Island.

**Ebenezer Storer** (1732), merchant, of Boston, son of Col. Joseph and Hannah (Hill) Storer, of Wells, Me., was born in Saco Fort, June 4, 1699. Col. Joseph was a

**William Rand** (1732). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates.

**Ebenezer Storer** (1732). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Boston *Gazette*, June 1, 1761.

man of distinction and energy, much engaged in Indian wars. Several of the children of Col. Joseph were born in Charlestown, whither probably the family, the father excepted, went during the Indian troubles of 1690 to 1696; but they returned to Maine when hostilities ceased. Capt. John Storer (1739) was a brother of Capt. Ebenezer (1732).

Capt. Ebenezer Storer (1732) was chosen a constable in 1732, but, declining to serve, paid a fine; was scavenger in 1738; served as an overseer of the poor from 1744 to 1760, and May 10, 1760, declining to serve longer in that office, was given the thanks of the town. He is called "Capt," in the records, first, in 1750. With the justices, clergy, selectmen, and other gentlemen, he visited the public schools, June 19, 1747, June 29, 1753, and July 4, 1759. He gave, May 25, 1735, thirty pounds towards the erection of the workhouse.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1739, ensign in 1744, lieutenant in 1746, and captain in 1749. He died May 22, 1761, aged sixty-three years, possessed of considerable property, — one thousand nine hundred pounds, "lawful money." He resided on Union Street, and his dwelling was valued at eight hundred pounds. In the inventory, post-chariot and horses, with two negro boys, are mentioned. His tomb, in King's Chapel Burial-Ground, was erected in 1752.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1732 is as follows: —

"April 3, 1732. The Company made choice of the Rev'd Oliver Peabody of Natick to preach their next Artillery Election Sermon; and that the present commission officers, with Maj. Edward Winslow [1700] be a committee to request it of him. —

"The Committees advertisement for Sale of the Company's land, viz: 'Advertisement. To be sold two Tracts of land belonging to the Artillery Company of the Massachusetts, viz: one Tract of a thousand acres at Dunstable, and the other Tract of five hundred acres at Rutland. Any person minded to buy either of said Tracts may apply themselves to Edward Hutchinson [1702], Habijah Savage [1699], Edward Winslow [1700], Esqrs, Capt Nathaniel Cunningham [1720], & Mr William Downe [1716], — a committee impowered to make sale of said Land, Boston, April 7, 1732.'

"June 5, 1732. Being under arms, voted, that the present commission officers, with those to be now elected, be a committee to give the thanks of the Company to the Rev'd Mr. Oliver Peabody for the Sermon preached to them this day, and to desire a copy for the Press.

"Memo. The following vote was passed the sixth September, 1732, but omitted, viz: Voted, that Samuel Holyoke, the present Clerk of this Company have a third part of the Fines that he shall collect for the year current.

"October 2, 1732. Being under arms, voted, that the Clerk pay out of the Company's Stock the charges of Mr. Baxter's journey to Natick for the Rev'd Mr. Oliver Peabody."

**Rev. Oliver Peabody**, of Natick, delivered the Artillery election sermon of 1732. He was the youngest son of William and Hannah (Hale) Peabody, and was born May 7, 1698. He graduated at Harvard College in 1721. After his graduation, by the influence of the board of commissioners, he was prevailed upon to act as a missionary among the

**Rev. Oliver Peabody.** AUTHORITIES: Allen's Biog. Dict.; Panoplist, VII.; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit.





Wm Brattle



Indians living in Natick. He preached there, for the first time, Aug. 1, 1721. At that time there were but two families of white people in the town. He continued preaching at Natick until the close of the year 1729, when the board of commissioners, with a committee from the corporation of Harvard College, visited Natick, and advised the forming of a church. This was done, the church being composed of five whites and three Indians, and Mr. Peabody was requested to be pastor. On the 17th of December, 1729, Mr. Peabody was ordained at Cambridge, as a missionary, to take charge of the church and society at Natick. Here he resided and spent his whole life, excepting one season, when he was employed as a missionary to the Mohegan tribe of Indians in Connecticut. He married Hannah, daughter of Rev. Joseph Baxter, by whom he had twelve children.

During the period between 1729 and his death,—a little more than twenty-two years,—there were baptized within the limits of the parish one hundred and sixty Indians and four hundred white persons. He received into his church, after his ordination, thirty-five Indians and one hundred and thirty whites. During his mission to the Mohegans, his naturally delicate constitution received an injury from which it never recovered. He continued to fail in health and strength for several years, and died Sunday, Feb. 2, 1752, at the age of fifty-four years. His last words were, "I have fought a good fight." During his last illness, the Indians testified their love for him in every possible way. One of these, in particular, during the five days the body of the preacher lay unburied, could not be prevailed upon to leave it long enough to take refreshment, unless absolutely forced to do so.

"He was a friend and father to his people, and by wise, prudent, and manly deportment, he conciliated the esteem and affection of all."

---

The officers elected were: William Brattle (1729), captain; Daniel 1733-4. Henchman (1712), lieutenant; James Gooch (1714), ensign. Thomas Downe (1733) was first sergeant; John Carnes (1733), second sergeant; Isaac White (1733), third sergeant; John Codman (1733), fourth sergeant, and Jabez Hunt (1727), clerk.

May 30, 1733, the following-named gentlemen were appointed to the command of the regiment of militia in Boston, viz.: Edward Winslow, Esq. (1700), colonel; Jacob Wendell, Esq. (1733), lieutenant-colonel, and Samuel Sewall, Esq. (1720), major.

A movement was made in 1733 to erect a new county out of the counties of Suffolk and Middlesex. The citizens of Boston were opposed to it, and selected as a committee to lay their objections before the General Court, Edward Hutchinson (1702), Anthony Stoddard, Thomas Fitch (1700), Samuel Sewall (1720), and Jacob Wendell (1733). Their objections in the form of a report are given in full in the Boston town records as printed by the commissioners, 1729-42, pp. 50, 51. The decayed condition of the fortifications again received the attention of the town, and Hon. Thomas Fitch (1700), with the selectmen, was authorized to act.

Henry Gibbs (1726) wrote from Boston, under date of March 21, 1733-4: "We have had town meetings for above a week, about fortifications; and we have voted to have one built upon the flats between the South Battery and the Castle, three hundred feet long and thirty-five feet wide, to mount twenty pieces of cannon; the end of the

Long Wharf fortified with a breastwork and mount seven guns; the end of Clark's Wharf also to mount six guns; and an addition to the South Battery, and well fortified. For which the town have voted ten thousand pounds at present; and to complete the work, I suppose, will take as much more, and to provide stores of war."

The above agrees with the town records. The committee who viewed the fortifications, considered the needs of the town, and reported as above, were James Bowdoin, Thomas Fitch (1700), Thomas Lee, Joseph Wadsworth, Jacob Wendell (1733), John Henderson, and Edward Hutchinson (1702); and subsequently, March 13, 1733-4, eight persons were added to the above-named committee, among whom were Col. Estes Hatch (1711) and Capt. Edward Pell (1714). A minute account of the expense involved in erecting the new fortifications, and also a plan of them, are given in the Boston town records, 1729-42, pp. 63-65.

The following members of the Artillery Company were recruited in 1733: Ephraim Baker, Daniel Bell, Henry Berry, John Carnes, Ezekiel Cheever, Nathan Cheever, Benjamin Clark, Thomas Clark, William Cock, John Codman, Ephraim Copeland, James Day, Thomas Downe, Joseph Dyar, John Endicott, Joseph Fitch, Zechariah Fitch, Thomas Gooding, John Grant, Benjamin Hallowell, Samuel Jackson, John Pecker, Joseph Pomeroy, Thomas Pratt, William Salter, Richard Saltonstall, Habijah Savage, Ebenezer Swan, John Symmes, Daniel Tucker, Edward Vail, William Warner, Samuel Watts, Jacob Wendell, John Wendell, Isaac White, William Williams.

**Ephraim Baker** (1733), of Boston, son of John (1703) and Mary Baker, was born Dec. 19, 1708. He was captain of the second company of the First Massachusetts Regiment, under Sir William Pepperell, in the Louisburg expedition of 1745.

**Daniel Bell** (1733), mason, of Boston, son of Daniel and Abigail Bell, was born in Boston, May 4, 1711. He was elected constable of Boston in 1746 and 1751. In 1762, he was authorized by the selectmen to survey with Thomas Dawes (1754) the chimneys in the house of Widow Norton, near the almshouse. He was a captain in the militia.

**Henry Berry** (1733), of Boston, son of Daniel and Sarah Berry, was born in Boston, Jan. 19, 1699. He married, Oct. 11, 1722, Elizabeth Webber. In 1741, Henry Berry (1733) was a fireward; but from 1746 to 1752 inclusive, during which time he served as fireward, his name has the prefix "Capt." He was a tithing-man in 1747. He was connected with the militia in Boston; was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1735, and its lieutenant in 1742. He united with the West Church during the pastorate of Rev. Mr. Hooper, — from 1737 to 1746, — and was elected a deacon.

Administration on his estate was granted in 1760.

**John Carnes** (1733), pewterer, of Boston, son of John and Eliza (Mortimer) Carnes (married June 24, 1697, by Mr. Miles), was born in Boston, April 3, 1698. He was probably a great-grandson of Capt. John Carnes, who joined the Artillery Company in 1649 and was elected captain the same year. His father was a captain in the British navy. He married, July 22, 1722, Sarah Baker. He was second sergeant of the Artillery

**Daniel Bell** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Henry Berry** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Carnes** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

Company in 1733, lieutenant in 1745, and its captain in 1748. Major Edward Carnes (1755) and Capt. Thomas Carnes (1754) were his sons. He was active in the local militia, passing through the various grades to that of lieutenant-colonel of the Boston regiment, in which office he died, March 10, 1760, after a few days' confinement on account of a fever. "The officers walked at the funeral before the corpse."

He was clerk of the market in 1724, scavenger in 1733, fireward in 1741, and from 1746 to 1753 inclusive. In the Boston town records he is called "Capt." first in 1747. March 26, 1740, William Salter (1733) informed the selectmen that the firewards seized three half-barrels of powder in the house of Mr. John Carnes (1733).

He was buried in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground, tomb No. 8. The inventory of his estate was £1,852 16s. 10d., in which were included his mansion-house and land in Ann Street, one thousand pounds. Mr. Whitman (1810), in his history of the Artillery Company, p. 280, says there is in the possession of the Carnes family, in Boston, a picture representing Capt. Carnes (1733) commanding a company on Boston Common.

**Ezekiel Cheever** (1733), of Charlestown, was a son of Rev. Thomas Cheever, of Malden, and a grandson of Ezekiel Cheever, the venerable school-master. Ezekiel (1733) was born March 7, 1692-3, and married, (1) Sept. 29, 1715, Elizabeth Jenness, who died May 5, 1728; (2) Elizabeth Gill, Sept. 25, 1729, and (3) Sarah Mousell, widow, Feb. 10, 1735-6. He died prior to March 15, 1770. He was taxed in Charlestown in 1721, 1727-60. Mr. Wyman, in his *Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown*, gives in detail a list of his real estate transactions. When administration was granted, in 1770, the inventory mentioned a "Mansion and lot, opposite front of mansion, bought of B. Hurd; sugarhouse and barn; pew, right hand going to pulpit;  $\frac{1}{2}$  wall pew N. E part of house, adjacent to P. Edes."

Hon. and Capt. Ezekiel Cheever (1733) was selectman of Charlestown in 1732 and in subsequent years; was a representative in 1736 and for several years thereafter, and in 1743 was chosen one of his Majesty's council. Aug. 2, 1736, he was granted permission to build "a tomb on the Burial Hill, near Charles Chambers, Esqr."

He graduated at Harvard College in 1733, the same year he joined the Artillery Company, and was ensign of the Company in 1736. Capt. Joshua Cheever (1732) and Nathan (1733) were brothers of Capt. Ezekiel (1733).

The latter, with others of the council, was added to the committee of the General Court in 1744, to provide transports for the expedition to Louisburg; and, as a member of the council in 1757, his signature appears affixed to the commission of Sir William Pepperell as lieutenant-general.

The Boston *Chronicle* of March 15, 1770, notices his decease as follows: "Last week died in Charlestown, the Hon Ezekiel Cheever Esq [1733], in the 78th year of his age; formerly a representative in the General Court for that town, and many years a member of his Majesty's Council for this Province."

Administration on his estate, which was appraised at £1,003 18s. 7½d., was granted to his son, David, who gave bond May 15, 1770.

**Nathan Cheever** (1733), of Boston, son of Rev. Thomas and Sarah Cheever, and grandson of Ezekiel Cheever, the venerable school-master, was born in Boston, March

**Ezekiel Cheever** (1733). AUTHORITIES: Charlestown Records; Wyman's *Charlestown Genealogies and Estates*.



16, 1694. He was a brother of Capt. Ezekiel (1733) and of Joshua (1732). He married — published Nov. 8, 1721 — (1) Hannah Brooks, who died July 1, 1724; and, (2) in Boston, Feb. 15, 1738, Anna Fuller, widow, daughter of Samuel Burrill, of Lynn. She died Nov. 10, 1740. March 15, 1725, he was chosen a constable for Rumney Marsh. After the incorporation of Chelsea, he was one of its selectmen. He was first lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1733. He died Sept. 30, 1774. "Buried October 2, 1774, Lieut. Nathan Cheever, 81 years." His will, dated Oct. 2, 1769, was probated Oct. 21, 1774, and his estate was appraised at £840 4s. 6d. He had one child by each of his wives.

**Benjamin Clark** (1733), of Boston, son of William (1699) and Sarah (Brondson) Clark, was born May 17, 1709. He was elected constable in 1731, but declined to serve and paid the fine. May 25, 1735, he gave five pounds toward the erection of the new workhouse.

**Thomas Clark** (1733), tailor, of Boston. He was clerk of the market in 1735, and constable in 1736.

**William Cock** (1733), master-mariner, of Boston, son of James and Mary Cock, was born in Boston, Oct. 29, 1707.

**John Codman** (1733), a saddler by trade, but also a sea-captain, son of Stephen and Elizabeth (Randall) Codman, was born in Charlestown, Sept. 29, 1696. He married, in 1718, Parnel Foster. She was admitted to the church at Charlestown, Dec. 20, 1719, and died Sept. 15, 1752, aged fifty-six years. It is said that he "was poisoned by slaves in his household, in the year 1755." Administration was granted to his son, John, Aug. 18, 1755. The inventory of his estate mentions, "Mansion &c. £2.500, shop-goods, forge and 30 acres at Bridgewater, 50 acres at Harvard; total £8.800. O. T."

"In September, 1755," we learn from the Boston *Evening Post* of Sept. 22, 1755, "two negroes — Mark and Phillis — slaves of Capt. John Codman [1733] were executed for poisoning their master with arsenic. A third culprit — Phœbe — became evidence against the other two and was transported to the West Indies. Mark was hanged in chains on the northerly side of the Cambridge road about a quarter of a mile beyond the Neck; and Phillis was burned at the stake, about ten yards distant from the gallows. Both confessed their guilt."

Capt. John Codman (1733) was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1733, and its ensign in 1745.

Capt. Codman (1733) was a prominent citizen, and was highly respected. He was also active in military affairs. He was an ancestor of the Rev. Dr. John Codman (Harv. Coll., 1802), of Dorchester, and of the family of this name now prominent in Boston.<sup>1</sup>

**Ephraim Copeland** (1733), tailor, of Boston, son of Thomas and Mary (Arnold) Copeland, was born about 1702. He served as hog-reeve in 1732; elected constable,

**Benjamin Clark** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Codman** (1733). AUTHORITY: Wyman's Charlestown Genealogies and Estates.

<sup>1</sup> Memorial Hist. of Boston, Vol. II., p. 327.



but declined, in 1733; was clerk of the market in 1746; tithing-man in 1752, and scavenger in 1753.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1745, and became a member of the Old South Church in 1759. Administration was granted on his estate in 1766.

**James Day** (1733), store and tavern keeper, of Boston, was a constable in 1731; clerk of the market in 1746; fireward from 1747 to 1752 inclusive, and collector of taxes in 1750 and 1751. He was licensed to keep a retail store on Orange Street, where he lived, in 1732 and 1742.

Nov. 29, 1742, Mr. Andrew Hallyburton, keeper of the Sun Tavern, informed the selectmen that "he was obliged to move," probably because the property had changed hands. Joseph Jackson (1738) bought it, in 1741, for two thousand four hundred and seventy-five pounds. How soon thereafter Capt. James Day (1733) took possession of it is not known; but the Memorial History of Boston, Vol. II., p. 466, says; "Day kept the Sun Tavern in 1753"; and the selectmen recorded in their books, under date of Dec. 21, 1757, "On the 20<sup>th</sup> Inst<sup>t</sup> Sent to Capt Day [1733] at the Sun Tavern one private of the 40<sup>th</sup> Regim<sup>t</sup> to Quarter & Billet." A picture, plan, and description of the Sun Tavern are given in Rambles in Old Boston, by E. G. Porter.

The first meeting for the organization of Hollis Street Church was held Jan. 31, 1731, at which James Day (1733) was present.

Capt. James Day (1733) died June 29, 1673.

**Thomas Downe** (1733), distiller, of Boston, son of Thomas and Mary Downe, was born in Boston, Aug. 28, 1693. He married, Oct. 14, 1714, Anna Hill.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1733.

**Joseph Dyar** (1733), cooper, of Boston, son of Benjamin (1691) and Hannah Dyar, was born in Boston, Sept. 25, 1702. He married, Dec. 19, 1717, Lydia Haugh. He was a scavenger of the town in 1733, a constable in 1746, and a culler of staves from 1746 to 1758, and from 1762 to 1774 inclusive.

He died prior to June 14, 1781, when his estate was advertised.<sup>1</sup>

**John Endicott** (1733), carpenter, of Boston, son of John and Mary Endicott, was born June 27, 1691. His father, a cooper, was warden of King's Chapel in 1698-9. He married Rebecca Smith, of Boston, June 13, 1711. Capt. John (1733) was elected constable of Boston in 1726, but, declining, paid the fine. He was fence-viewer from 1718 to 1720, 1724-5, and 1728; also from 1738 to May 14, 1742, when he was excused, but was elected again in 1749. He served as measurer of boards and timber in 1717, 1720, 1726, and 1731. He was one of a committee chosen in 1741 to purchase wood for the use of the town, and their report is given in the town records.

March 16, 1747, a committee, consisting of Col. John Hill, John Endicott (1733), and Joshua Blanchard, was chosen to inquire after some suitable piece of ground at the South End for a burial-place. The committee reported May 10, 1748; but its plan was rejected by the town.

**James Day** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Joseph Dyar** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Endicott** (1733). AUTHORITIES: New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1879, p. 245; Boston Records.

<sup>1</sup> *Continental Journal*.

In the Annals of King's Chapel, by the late Rev. H. W. Foote, p. 521, are extracts from the church ledger, by which it appears that the church paid John Endicott (1733), carpenter, one hundred and twenty pounds for repairing the church in 1740, and five pounds additional for sundry jobs in 1740-1.

He died Sept. 6, 1772.

**Joseph Fitch** (1733), of Boston, son of Benjamin and Mary Fitch, was born July 30, 1700. He married Margaret Clark, Jan. 15, 1718, and probably, second, March 30, 1732, Jerusha Boylston, daughter of Zabdiel Boylston. He was measurer of boards and timber in 1723 and 1724, clerk of the market in 1744, and assessor from 1745 to 1750. He was a member of a Boston military company, and became captain. He served as fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1734, and was its lieutenant in 1741.

**Zechariah Fitch** (1733). He was chosen constable of the town of Boston in 1725, but declined to serve and paid the usual fine. He held the office of clerk of the market in 1724 and 1736.

**Thomas Gooding** (1733), of Boston, son of Nathaniel (1711) and Elizabeth Goodwin, was born in Boston, July 2, 1705. Thomas Goodwin (1733) married (1) Abigail Gale, Oct. 9, 1729, and (2) Rebecca Chamberlin, Dec. 14, 1732. Ensign Thomas Goodwin (1733) was elected clerk of the market, but declined. It was the only town office to which he was elected. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1734. He was a member of the company attached to the "Copper Engine" under the town-house, in 1733.

**John Grant** (1733), carpenter, of Boston, son of John and Dorothy Grant, was born in Boston, Dec. 4, 1710. He married, Sept. 26, 1734, Elizabeth Curtis. Their son, John, joined the Artillery Company in 1769. John Grant (1733) was elected viewer of shingles, boards, etc., in 1747, and served until 1759, and also was collector of taxes from 1747 to March, 1765, when he declined to serve longer. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1735.

**Benjamin Hallowell** (1733), shipwright, of Boston, son of Benjamin and Mary. (Stocker) Hallowell, was born in Boston, Jan. 20, 1699. He married, May 20, 1722, Rebecca Briggs, by whom, says Mr. Savage, he "had Benjamin, born Feb. 2, 1725, who was his Majesty's collector of customs in Boston, and who, by Mary Boylston (married June 13, 1746), was father of Ward Nicholas Boylston, the liberal benefactor of Harvard College, and of Sir Benjamin Hallowell, the admiral, distinguished for his services and friendship with Lord Nelson."

Lieut. Benjamin Hallowell (1733) was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1734, and gained his title of lieutenant by service in the Boston militia. He gave thirty pounds toward the erection of the new workhouse in 1735. He resided on Battery-march Street, near his ship-yard. The latter was at the east corner of Milk Street and

**Joseph Fitch** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Thomas Gooding** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Grant** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Benjamin Hallowell** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

Liberty Square, on the site of which stood, during the first half of this century, the Commercial Coffee-House. That was superseded by Thorndike's building. He died Jan. 30, 1773.<sup>1</sup>

**Samuel Jackson** (1733), son of Jeremiah and Hannah Jackson, of Boston, was born in Boston, March 10, 1707. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1737.

Estate of a Samuel Jackson was advertised in Boston paper, March 5, 1778.

**John Pecker** (1733).

**Joseph Pomeroy** (1733). He was constable of Boston in 1731.

**Thomas Pratt** (1733), of Boston, son of Thomas and Mary Pratt, was born in Boston, May 6, 1698, and married, April 27, 1721, Mary Floyd. He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1737. He was probably a brother of Samuel (1734), as both belonged to Rumney Marsh. Thomas (1733) was fence-viewer in 1732, and surveyor of highways in 1735. He was frequently appointed to aid in examining the town lines.

**William Salter** (1733) was a store-keeper in Boston. He was active in the affairs of the town. He held the office of constable in 1728; scavenger in 1729; was chosen assessor in 1734, but declined, and held that office from 1738 to 1743; fireward in 1746; selectman from 1744 to 1750, and, March 11 of the latter year, the town voted him thanks for past services. For many years he had charge of the powder and powder-house on the Common. He held this place from 1736 to his decease; for Mr. Drake says, in his *History of Boston*, p. 749: "In 1754, the Governor appointed Mr. Michael Lowell 'to be a keeper of the powder-house in this town,' in place of Capt. William Salter [1733], deceased." He visited the public schools, with the clergy and selectmen, while an assessor. March 25, 1735, he subscribed toward the erection of the new work-house the sum of ten pounds, "to be paid in goods."

May 2, 1739, he made a written proposal to the town, viz.: For the sum of twenty pounds he would plough the ground, and raise the Common, turning the water down the Common toward the powder-house, and prevent it from running down Winter Street. He also proposed, for the above sum, to keep the gutter in repair for seven years from date. The subject was referred to a committee, whose report is not given. He was active in the militia of Boston, became captain of a Boston company in 1745, and was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1735.

The Boston *Post-Boy* notices his decease, thus: "Capt. William Salter [1733], kept the powder-house, died Dec. 7, 1753."

Administration was granted on his estate in 1754.

**Richard Saltonstall** (1733), lawyer, of Haverhill, son of Richard and Mehitable (Wainwright) Saltonstall, was born in Haverhill, June 24, 1703, and graduated at Harvard College in 1722. Though a lawyer by profession, he was a "scientific and practical farmer." He was early interested in the military, and when twenty-six years old was commissioned as colonel. At the age of thirty-three years he was appointed judge of

**William Salter** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Richard Saltonstall** (1733). AUTHORITIES: Haverhill Records; Bond's Hist. of Watertown.

<sup>1</sup> *Massachusetts Gazette*.



the Superior Court. He held that office from Dec. 29, 1736, to Sept. 14, 1756, when he resigned. He was one of his Majesty's councillors in 1743, 1744, and 1745. He was chosen commander of the Artillery Company in 1737, and presided at the first centennial celebration.

"Judge Saltonstall [1733] was chairman of the committee for settling the boundary line between Massachusetts and New Hampshire, which had always been in contention, in 1737." One hundred and fifty years later (1887), it was still unsettled. "He was a man of talents and learning; was distinguished for generous and elegant hospitality, and for his bounteous liberality to the poor. His address was polished, affable, and winning; his temper was gentle and benevolent, and he enjoyed the love and esteem of all."

He married, (1) Jan. 6, 1726, Abigail, daughter of Richard Waldron, of Dover; (2) March 4, 1740, Mary, daughter of John Jekyll, of Boston; (3) Mary, daughter of Hon. Elisha Cooke (1699).

Col. Saltonstall (1733) died Oct. 20, 1756, after a long illness, and in the fifty-fourth year of his age.

**Habijah Savage** (1733), of Boston, son of Lieut.-Col. Habijah (1699) and Hannah (Phillips) (Anderson) Savage, was born Feb. 17, 1704. Thomas (1749) and Arthur (1738) were brothers of Capt. Habijah (1733). The latter graduated at Harvard College in 1723. Habijah Savage (1733) was elected constable in 1733, but was excused. It seems to be the only town office to which he was elected.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1738.

**Ebenezer Swan** (1733), school-master, of Boston, son of Ebenezer and Elizabeth Swan, of Cambridge, was born in Cambridge, March 23, 1704. This family resided at Menotomy. Mr. Paige, in the History of Cambridge, gives the family of Ebenezer (1733). By wife, Bathsheba, he had eight children. He died April 23, 1752, and his wife died Aug. 31, 1793, aged eighty-four years.

Ebenezer Swan (1733) removed to Boston, and Aug. 16, 1738, appearing before the selectmen, he petitioned "that Liberty may be Granted him to Open a School in this Town, for Teaching Writing, Arithmetick and Merchants Accounts," which being considered by them, "Voted That Liberty be Granted Accordingly."

**John Symmes** (1733), tailor, of Boston, son of Rev. Thomas and Elizabeth (Blowers) Symmes, of Bradford, was born in Bradford, Feb. 4, 1705-6. Andrew, brother of Lieut.-Col. John Symmes (1733), joined the Artillery Company in 1734. His father, Rev. Thomas Symmes, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1720, and his uncle, Rev. Thomas Blowers, in 1717. Col. John (1733) became a member of the Old South Church, Nov. 3, 1723.

He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1739, ensign in 1749, lieutenant in 1752, and captain in 1755 and 1761. March 16, 1747, he was elected constable but was excused. Lieut.-Col. Symmes (1733) was prominent in military matters in Boston, passing through the various grades to that of major; and, on the decease of Lieut.-Col. Carnes (1733) of the Boston regiment, he was promoted to the vacancy, holding that office until his decease, Feb. 23, 1764. He was buried with military honors, one company and the officers of the regiment preceding the corpse.

**Habijah Savage** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.



**Daniel Tucker** (1733), of Boston, son of Richard and Bethiah Tucker, was born Oct. 10, 1707, and married, March 5, 1729, Hannah Carey, daughter of James (1723), and sister of Capt. Jonathan Carey (1740). He does not appear to have ever held any office in the town nor in the Artillery Company. He died July 17, 1739, aged thirty-two years, and was buried in Copp's Hill Burial-Ground.

**Edward Vail** (1733), baker, of Boston, son of Christopher, was born April 7, 1695. He married Lydia Woods, March 3, 1714-5. Edward Vail (1733) was elected "hogge-reeve" of Boston in 1725 and constable for 1731. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1739. He died in July, 1749.

**William Warner** (1733) was a distiller in Boston. He married, May 16, 1723, Mary Mountfort, daughter of John (1697), and granddaughter of Benjamin Mountfort (1679). He was a constable of Boston in 1728, and May 25, 1735, gave ten pounds towards the erection of the new workhouse. The only reference to him on the town books is under date of Sept. 24, 1740, when "Mr. Sutton Byles informs that Mr. Warner [1733], the distiller, by building a house at the South End, has obstructed a water-course." He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1738. A William Warner was captain of the ninth company in the First Massachusetts Regiment, at Louisburg, in 1745.

**Samuel Watts** (1733), yeoman, of Chelsea, married (1) Elizabeth —, who died March 16, 1730, aged thirty-two years (gravestone at North Chelsea); and (2) Hannah Hough, published Oct. 19, 1731. He was elected a fence-viewer for that part of Boston called Rumney Marsh, now Chelsea, in 1718 and 1721, and was a surveyor of highways in 1722. From 1719 to 1740, he was selected about once in two years to run the lines between Boston and Lynn, or Malden, to see, probably, if the bounds had been disturbed.

July 3, 1728, he petitioned the selectmen for a "Tavernars or Innholders" license at Winnisimmet, which petition was approved and the license was granted. He kept the Winnisimmet Tavern for a year and a half, when, Feb. 18, 1729, he added to his duties that of ferryman, by leasing for seven years the Winnisimmet Ferry, at a rent of twenty pounds per annum. It is to be hoped that he made shorter voyages than his fellow-ferryman of fifty years afterward, who was one hour ferrying Marquis Chastellux from Winnisimmet to Mylne Point, making seven tacks from shore to shore. In 1737, Sept. 7, the ferry lease was exchanged with the selectmen "for its counterpart." The charges were so small that no one seemed desirous of leasing the ferry, and Aug. 26, 1741, the ferry being still in Mr. Watts's (1733) care, the selectmen called him before them, and he said "he did not expect to pay any rent to the town for the ferry, since his lease expired." The ferry does not seem to have been re-leased, and Mr. Watts (1733) paid no rent. Jan. 31, 1757, the selectmen made a "Memo." in their minutes, viz.: to determine whether Capt. Watts (1733) shall be prosecuted for the rent of Winnisimmet Ferry. It does not seem to have been determined.

He prospered abundantly. In 1736 and later, he was surety in the sum of five

**Daniel Tucker** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Edward Vail** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**William Warner** (1733). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Samuel Watts** (1733). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Mem. Hist. of Boston.

hundred pounds for the collector of taxes at Rumney Marsh. Sept. 21, 1737, he was one of a committee to address "the Great and General Court for relief in the pay of members of the Honorable House of Representatives."<sup>1</sup>

The French, to the number of about one thousand persons, were forced from their homes in Nova Scotia and assigned to settle in Massachusetts. The General Court appointed a committee to superintend their dispersion among the people of the colony. Samuel Watts (1733) was chairman of this committee.

The inhabitants of Rumney Marsh (Chelsea) assembled, by virtue of an act passed Jan. 8, 1739, to organize a new town on the first Monday of March, 1739. Samuel Watts (1733) was chosen moderator, and for thirty years was the most prominent man of the town. He was elected to the Legislature several terms, and in 1741 was elected speaker of the House of Representatives, but he was negatived by the Governor. He was elected a member of the council for twenty-two successive years, from 1742 to 1763. April 6, 1748, he was appointed justice of the inferior Court of Common Pleas, in place of Anthony Stoddard, deceased, and held that position until his death. He was appointed justice of the peace June 28, 1734. He was identified with the military, and became an officer in the Suffolk Regiment. The Artillery Company, not unmindful of that ability, judgment, and energy by which he passed from the scow ferry-boat to the council chamber, honored him and itself by electing Capt. Samuel Watts (1733) ensign in 1735 and captain in 1742.

Hon. Samuel Watts (1733) died March 5, 1770, and was buried from the house of Hon. Benjamin Kent, in Boston.

**Jacob Wendell** (1733), merchant, of Boston, the ninth child of John and Elizabeth Wendell, was born in Albany, N. Y., Aug. 5, 1691. Jacob Wendell (1733) was placed, while in his minority, under the care of Mr. John Mico (1702), an eminent merchant in Boston, and was trained up to mercantile business. He afterwards became settled in Boston as a merchant, and was very prosperous. He was highly respected in the town and province, and, in addition to many other offices, he was repeatedly employed by the government in the negotiating of treaties and in exchange of prisoners with the Indians. He married, Aug. 12, 1714, Sarah Oliver, a daughter of Dr. James Oliver, of Cambridge. The sons of Col. Jacob (1733) and Sarah (Oliver) Wendell were Jacob, John Mico, and Oliver.

Judge Oliver Wendell, the youngest son, married Mary Jackson, and had Sarah, who married Rev. Abiel Holmes, and they were the parents of Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes. Margaret, the twelfth child, married William Phillips (1762), whose son, Hon. John Phillips, was the first mayor of the city of Boston.

**Jacob Wendell** (1733). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; MS. of Judge Charles Levi Woodbury; *Boston Gazette*, Sept. 14, 1761; *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 1854.

"[Oct. 1, 1750.] Having an Invitation from the Gentlemen to Dine at Mr Sheppard's, went Accordingly, where was a company of abt 40 gentlemen, after having Dined in a very Elegant manner upon Turtle, &c. Drank about the Toasts, and Sang a Number of Songs, and where Exceeding Merry untill 3 a clock in the Morning, from whence Went upon the Rake, Going Past the Commons in Our way Home, Surprised a Compy Country Young Men

and Women with a Violin at A Tavern Dancing and makeing Merry. upon Our Entg the house the Young Women Fled, we took Possession of the Room, have the Fidler and the Young Men with us with the Keg of Sugard Dram, we where very Merry, from thence went to Mr Jacob Wendells [1733] where we where Obligated to Drink Punch and Wine, and abt 5 in the mornng made our Excit and to Bed."—*Journal of Capt. Francis Goclet*, 1746-50, in *New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, January, 1870.

<sup>1</sup> Report of Boston Rec. Com., Vol. XII., pp. 177, 178.

Col. Wendell (1733) possessed a handsome estate in Oliver Street, where, after the destructive fire of 1760, he built a brick house. Since the incorporation of the city, a street leading from Oliver Street, and passing by his place, was named Wendell Street. His residence, however, was on School Street, opposite King's Chapel, where he died Sept. 7, 1761, aged seventy years.

The capability of Col. Wendell (1733), and the respect in which he was held by his townsmen, appear from the various duties with which he was intrusted. He was elected one of the following committees, viz.: to project a scheme for regulating a market, 1732; to compute the cost of the proposed market, 1733; to oppose the erection of a new county, out of Suffolk and Middlesex counties, before the General Court, 1733; to assign places in the town for building markets, 1733; to select the best places for fortifications, 1733; to prepare gun-carriages and necessary utensils, 1733; to erect market houses, 1734; to prepare laws for the regulation of porters on the town docks, 1734; to erect a workhouse, 1737; to visit public schools, 1738, 1741, 1745, 1747, 1749, 1750, 1751, 1753, 1757, 1758; to prevent shooting of pigeons from the tops of houses, and soldiers from firing guns in the streets, 1740; to consider what repairs on the almshouse are necessary, 1741; to wait on his Excellency and urge necessary measures to protect coasting seamen, bringing wood to Boston, from impressment by his Majesty's ships-of-war in the harbor, 1741; to return thanks to Peter Faneuil, Esq., for his gift to the town; to consider necessary fortifications, purchase of timber, and the sinking of vessels in the channel, 1745 and 1746; to wait on the captain-general in regard to better defences, 1745 and 1746; to obtain twelve gun-carriages, 1746; to regulate Faneuil Hall Market, 1747; to consider the petition of King's Chapel for additional ground eastward, 1747; to consider the petition of Middlecott Cooke, 1749; to consider and report on additional assistance in the South Writing-School, and on an allowance for supplying the scholars with ink, 1753.

He was elected a constable of Boston in 1717, and auditor of the treasurer's accounts in 1728 and 1732. He served as an overseer of the poor in 1729-30, and from 1733 to 1756 inclusive, making a service of twenty-six years. March 10, 1757, the town voted that "the thanks of the town be and hereby is given to the Hon. Jacob Wendell Esq, for" his faithful service as overseer of the poor. March 20, 1734, the town voted him thanks for his donation of fifty pounds towards erecting markets, and in 1735 he gave the town one hundred pounds toward the erection of a workhouse. It was on his proposition, in 1735, that the town of Boston was first divided into twelve wards, the boundaries of which are given, as reported by him, in the Boston town records as printed by the record commissioners, 1729-42.

May 7, 1733, Col. Wendell (1733) made a motion in town meeting concerning the waste lands in the province. A petition was prepared, signed by the selectmen, and presented to the General Court, whereupon the latter granted to the town of Boston three tracts of land, each six miles square, of the unappropriated land of the province, for townships. Sept. 21, 1737, these townships were sold by the selectmen at public auction, one of which was bought by Col. Wendell (1733) for thirteen hundred and twenty pounds.

He was one of the council from 1734 to 1760 inclusive; was appointed special justice of the Court of Common Pleas, Dec. 29, 1736, and a justice of the peace, Aug. 28, 1729, and Dec. 29, 1731.

"At the great fire in Boston," in 1760, says Mr. Whitman (1810), "he was a great



sufferer. Large collections were made in other provinces to aid the sufferers. He refused any part of the contributions. Upon a final dividend among the sufferers, it was found that there was about sixty pounds left, which could not easily be divided. It was appropriated to purchase for his daughter, Margaret, an eight-day clock, etc."

Col. Wendell (1733) was lieutenant-colonel of the Boston regiment in 1733-5, colonel in 1736, and was continued in the latter office until 1743. He was captain of the Artillery Company in 1735 and 1745, and remained a prominent member until his decease. He died Sept. 7, 1761, and was buried in his family tomb in the King's Chapel ground. The officers of the regiment walked in procession before the corpse, though he was not in commission when he died. The inventory of his real estate amounted to nearly twelve thousand pounds.

The following obituary appeared in the *Boston Gazette* of Sept. 14, 1761:—

"Died here, the Hon. Jacob Wendell, Esq. [1733], who for many years was Overseer of the Poor, Colonel of the Regiment, one of his Majesty's Justices of the Peace, and Council. As a merchant he was early distinguished, not only by the largeness of his dealings, but also by his probity and honor, which soon created him an extensive reputation in the commercial world; and, as he had many opportunities of employing the poor, encouraging the industrious tradesman, and advancing those who were entering upon the world, so no man could improve such opportunities with greater pleasure. The indigent and distressed were often and largely relieved by his alms. With great cheerfulness he aided every project for the common good.

"His family remember, with the tenderest feelings, how much he endeared himself in every domestic relation. His friends cannot forget his openness of heart, his readiness to oblige, the freedom and cheerfulness which appeared at his hospitable board. Through a long course of years, he gave a constant and exemplary attendance upon all the offices of Christian piety, expressing upon all occasions a regard for everything relating to it."

**John Wendell** (1733), merchant, of Boston, son of Abraham and Katrina (DeKey) Wendell, and nephew of Col. Jacob Wendell (1733), was born in Albany, N. Y., in 1703, and was baptized in the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church, May 2 of that year. He was educated in Albany, but when young removed with his parents to Boston, where his father died in 1734. He soon engaged in mercantile affairs, and in due time formed a partnership with his uncle, Jacob (1733), under the title, Jacob Wendell & Co., and did an extensive business with foreign ports. The large wholesale warehouse of the firm was located on Merchants Row, which at that time was the commercial centre of the East India trade. The firm suffered greatly by the fire, March 20, 1760, which was so destructive to Boston, sustaining losses from which it was difficult to recover.

Col. Wendell (1733) held few public positions. When elected constable in Boston, in 1729, he paid the usual fine rather than accept the office. In 1746, he was one of the committee selected to visit the public schools, and was appointed a justice of the peace Feb. 7, 1752. He donated, May 25, 1735, thirty pounds towards the erection of a workhouse, "wherein to employ the idle and indigent belonging to the town." He was colonel of the Boston regiment, ensign of the Artillery Company in 1734, and its captain in 1740.

**John Wendell** (1733). *AUTHORITIES*: Boston Records; MS. of Judge Charles Levi Woodbury; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1858.



Col. Wendell (1733) "was a citizen of high standing and respectability, and was much interested in the advancement of colonial affairs. He was repeatedly commissioned in the military, and was a field-officer at the time of his decease." His mansion stood, in 1760, upon the corner of Queen, now Court, and Tremont — Tremont — streets, facing upon the latter.

He married, Nov. 10, 1724, Elizabeth Quincy, second daughter of Hon. Edmund Quincy, of Braintree. Edmund Quincy, Jr., married, in 1725, Eliza Wendell, sister of Col. John (1733). Upon the death of his first wife, Col. Wendell (1733) married, in 1751, Mercy Skinner, of Marblehead. He died Dec. 15, 1762.

The late Jacob Wendell, of Portsmouth, wrote in regard to Col. John Wendell's (1733) residence: "My grandfather's house in Boston was at the head of Prison Lane, next to old Deacon Henchman's, at the corner, going to the Common, by Capt. Emery's estate on Tremont Street. Deacon Henchman's house was later occupied by Rev. S. K. Lathrop. The prison, as is well remembered by many of the present generation, stood upon the present site of the Court House, and the part of Court Street extending by the front of the prison, from Washington Street to Tremont, was called Prison Lane."

**Isaac White** (1733) was a distiller in Boston. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1733. Capt. Isaac White (1733) for over thirty years was very prominent in the town of Boston. In 1728, he was elected a constable, but paid the usual fine, declining to serve. He was a measurer of lumber in 1732; overseer of the poor from 1740 to 1742 inclusive; fireward in 1732, and 1746-50; tithing-man in 1747; viewer of lumber from 1753 to 1759 inclusive, and assessor from 1755 to 1759 inclusive. He lived on Charter Street, where he had a licensed retail shop in 1738 and in 1749. Selectmen's records, Nov. 15, 1749: "Capt Steel informs the persons who have lately purchased Mr. Isaac Whites [1733] distill house at the North End, they have made an encroachment on the town's land there." In 1738, he is called "Mr."; in 1740, "Lieut."; but afterward, for nearly twenty years, "Capt." April 18, 1740, the selectmen ordered Capt. William Salter (1733), keeper of the powder-house, to deliver one barrel of gunpowder to Capt. Edward Tyng, and another to Lieut. Isaac White (1733), "to scale the guns," etc.

March 15, 1733, when the committee on fortifications, of which Col. Thomas Fitch (1700) was chairman, was requested to draw and present a plan of the proposed fortifications (plan given in Boston town records, City Document No. 66, pp. 64, 65), a committee, consisting of Jacob Wendell (1733), James Bowdoin, Col. Estes Hatch (1711), Isaac White (1733), and John Checkley, was chosen to prepare gun-carriages and everything necessary for mounting the cannon belonging to the town.

In March, 1734-5, as it was desired to plant guns on the end of Long Wharf, a committee, of which Isaac White (1733) was one, reported that the wharf was much decayed, worm-eaten, etc., and "the end of the wharf was encumbered by a Crane house thereon," etc.; whereupon Thomas Fitch (1700), on account of himself and associates, proprietors of Long Wharf, promised that the end of Long Wharf should be speedily put in proper condition to plant guns there.

Mr. White (1733) was a member of the committee which erected the fortifications of the town as proposed. Five of the seven members of that committee were members of the Artillery Company. In March, 1734, he was one of a committee — Capt. Timothy

Clarke (1702), chairman—to view, consider, and report what streets stand most in need of paving. In 1741, Capt. White (1733) was chairman of a committee for supplying the town with wood, and of another to view the almshouse and report on the repairs necessary. His reports, involving large expenditures by the town, were adopted.

The fall of Louisburg in 1745—a cause of great rejoicing in Boston—was a serious blow to France. The town of Boston was in constant alarm, fearing an attack by way of retaliation, and the French men-of-war were a constant menace along the coast. March 10, 1745-6, Mr. Isaac White (1733) moved in town meeting that “the selectmen be desired to wait on his Excellency the captain-general, desiring of him that three vessels may be purchased, in order to be sunk in such places in the channel as shall be thought best in case the town should be attacked by an enemy.” The various projects for the town’s additional defences, viz., repairing South Battery, erection of another powder-house, purchase of timber, and sinking of three or more vessels, were referred to John Fayerweather, Isaac White (1733), Col. John Hill, Col. Wendell (1733), and Samuel Welles. The above, with Col. William Downe (1716), were appointed “to wait upon his Excellency the captain-general, to ask his liberty to view the batteries, and see what stores and repairs are needed, etc.” The committee was authorized to get twelve additional gun-carriages, to obtain the consent of the captain-general “to do the several things mentioned,” and the sum of six thousand pounds was voted to defray the expenses. During these months of alarm and of extraordinary expense, Capt. Isaac White (1733) stands a prominent figure.

**William Williams** (1733) married Miriam Tyler, Sept. 27, 1733. He was chosen constable of Boston in 1733, but paid the fine rather than serve, and was scavenger in 1735. William Williams (1733) was one of the original members of the West Church, organized Jan. 3, 1736-7, “coming from the First Church in Cambridge.”

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1736.

His name does not occur afterwards in Boston Records, and probably he is the William Williams who appears a citizen of Pittsfield, Mass., in 1745. He raised a company of men among the Berkshire Hills, for Louisburg, but was not permitted to command them. In June following, more troops were wanted, and Capt. Williams was called for. In six days he reported to the Governor in Boston, with seventy-four men, and was commissioned lieutenant-colonel of the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment, in the expedition to Louisburg.

Mr. Williams (1733) graduated at Harvard College in 1729; was judge of probate and of the Common Pleas Court. In 1747, he was appointed subcommissary. He is called elsewhere in the records of the Company, “William, Jr. [1733].”

He died in 1784.

“A List of Soldiers under the fine of 1/ per diem.

“William Brattle [1729], Sampson Salter [1729], Samuel Adams [1729], Joshua Cheever [1732], Edward Bromfield Jun. [1732], Thomas Hubbard [1732], William Rand [1732], Josiah Carter [1732], Thomas Baker [1732], Caleb Lyman [1732], John Wendell [1733], Ezekiel Cheever [1733], John Endicott [1733], John Carnes [1733], Henry

**William Williams** (1733). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1871, p. 261.

Berry [1733], Thomas Gooding [1733], William Salter [1733], John Grant [1733], William Williams [1733], Benjamin Clark [1733], John Symmes [1733], James Day [1733], Edward Vail [1733], Ephraim Copeland [1733], Samuel Jackson [1733], Richard Saltonstall [1733], Ebenezer Swan [1733], John Codman [1733], Benjamin Hallowell [1733], Isaac White [1733], Habijah Savage [1733]."

The record of the Artillery Company for 1733 is as follows:—

"1733. Memo. April 2. This day being the day appointed by Charter for the Exercise of the honorable Artillery Company, it proving unseasonable weather, was put by, according to said Charter, to the friday following and being under arms, the Company proceeded to vote for a minister to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon, and the Rev'd Mr. Nathaniel Appleton of Cambridge was chosen. Voted, that the present commission officers of this Company, with the field officers & Maj. William Brattle [1729] be a committee to request it of him.

"June 4, 1733. Whereas there is not money sufficient in the Clerk's hands to defray the necessary charges of the Company; Voted, that the Clerk of this Company receive of Col. Thomas Fitch [1700], out of the Company's money in his hands, the sum of Fifteen pounds. Voted, that the present Commission officers, with those to be now elected, and the field officers of the Regiment, be a Committee to give the thanks of the Company to the Rev'd Mr. Nathaniel Appleton for the Sermon preached to them this day.

"October 1. Voted, there be a Committee Chosen to wait on the hon'ble Col. Thomas Fitch [1700] to receive of him what money he has of this Company's in his hands, and to give him a discharge for the same. The gentlemen chosen were Capt. William Downe [1716], Capt. Daniel Henchman [1712], and Capt. Daniel Goffe [1712]; and they give to him the thanks of the Company for his good services in said affair; and that the said Committee pay the charges of the Company, and make report of their doings at the training in May next.

"October 1, 1733. Voted, that the Commission officers of this Company for the time being, with the Clerk, shall have full power to excuse any Person that has any reasonable excuse to make for their non-appearance."

**Rev. Nathaniel Appleton**,<sup>1</sup> son of Hon. John Appleton, and grandson of President Rogers, of Harvard College, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1733. He was born at Ipswich, Dec. 9, 1693. He graduated at Harvard College in 1712, and married, in 1719-20, Margaret, daughter of Rev. Henry Gibbs, of Watertown. Rev. Mr. Appleton was ordained pastor of the church in Cambridge, Oct. 9, 1717, and continued in that office more than sixty-six years. He was a fellow of the Corporation of Harvard College from 1717 to 1779. In 1771, his alma mater conferred on him the degree of doctor of divinity, an honor never before bestowed by that college, except on President Mather, about eighty years previously. Dr. Appleton died Feb. 9, 1784, aged ninety years and two months.

<sup>1</sup> Paige's Hist. of Cambridge, p. 482.



The officers elected were: Samuel Sewall (1720), captain; Daniel Goffe (1712), lieutenant; John Wendell (1733), ensign. Nathan Cheever (1733) was first sergeant; Benjamin Hallowell (1733), second sergeant; Thomas Gooding (1733), third sergeant; Joseph Fitch (1733), fourth sergeant, and Bartholomew Gedney (1726), clerk.

In 1734, the following committee was chosen to have full charge of the erection of the proposed fortifications, viz.: "Hon. Elisha Cooke Esq. [1699], Edward Hutchinson Esq. [1702], Edward Winslow Esq. [1700], Capt. Jeffery Bedgood, Messrs. John Checkley, Isaac White [1733] and Ebenezer Thornton [1716]."

June 25, 1734, the petition of William Parkman (1711) and others, for liberty to lay down ways at the lower end of North Street, for the landing of passengers from Winnisimmet, and to maintain the same for thirty years, was granted.

The selectmen arranged for a visitation to the schools, June 18, 1734. They invited five ministers and the following persons: Hop. Adam Winthrop (1692), Edward Hutchinson (1702), Joseph Wadsworth, Ezekiel Lewis (1707), Esqs., and Capt. Nathaniel Cunningham (1720).

Two of the three collectors of taxes chosen Oct. 31, 1734, were members of the Artillery Company, viz.: William Rand (1732), who gave a bond for nine thousand seven hundred and ten pounds, and Daniel Pecker (1720), who gave a bond for eight thousand one hundred pounds.

The erection of markets in the north, middle, and south sections of the town, which had been successfully opposed for several years, was finally settled in 1734. It was decided, by a vote of five hundred and seventeen for and three hundred and ninety-nine against the project, to build them, and the town appropriated seven hundred pounds for that purpose. This sum was intrusted to a committee chosen March 12, 1733-4, to "think of, and assign, Three suitable Places for Erecting Markets, the Cost and Charge thereof, and how to be defrayed; and make Report." The committee consisted of Thomas Fitch (1700), Edward Hutchinson (1702), Thomas Palmer (1702), Jacob Wendell (1733), and Nathaniel Cunningham (1720). The committee was subsequently enlarged by the addition of James Watson, Francis Willoughby, and John Steel, clerks of the markets. The three places designated for the markets were, at the North End, "upon the open space before and about the Old North Meeting-house"; in the middle of the town, "on the Town's ground, or open space on the Town dock or wharf, commonly called Dock Square," and at the South End, "in Orange Street, over against the house and land of Mr. Thomas Downe [1733]."

In 1740, the middle market building having "been Demolished and pulled down," the selectmen received a petition from Thomas Palmer (1702), Edward Hutchinson (1702), and three hundred and forty-one others, to warn a town meeting to see if the people would accept Mr. Peter Faneuil's offer to "Erect and Build a noble and compleat Structure" for a market.

The members who joined the Artillery Company in 1734 were: Matthew Barnard, John Bennett, John Chandler, Jr., Gear Coffin, Joseph Dwight, Daniel Epes, Jr., Elnathan Jones, Samuel Pratt, Andrew Symmes, Nathaniel Thayer.

**Matthew Barnard** (1734), carpenter, of Boston, son of John (1677), and grandson of Matthew (1660), was born June 17, 1694. He was a constable of Boston in 1733, a

**Matthew Barnard** (1734). AUTHORITY: Boston Records,



fence-viewer in 1735, and from 1736 to 1744 inclusive was a viewer of shingles and a measurer of boards and timber. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1740.

**John Bennett** (1734), hatter, of Boston, son of Capt. John Bennett, was born in Boston, March 31, 1704. He married Mary Young, April 7, 1725. He was elected scavenger in Boston in 1731, and from 1736 to 1741 inclusive, except 1739, and was constable in 1743. His father, Capt. John, resided on Orange Street. Ensign John (1734) was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1740, and its ensign in 1750.

**John Chandler, Jr.** (1734), lawyer, of Worcester, son of Hon. John Chandler (1725), was born in New London, Conn., Oct. 18, 1693. He married, (1) Oct. 23, 1716, Hannah Gardiner, of the Isle of Wight. She died Jan. 5, 1738-9, in Worcester, Mass. He married, (2) Jan. 28, 1739-40, Sarah Clarke, daughter of Timothy Clarke (1702). John Chandler (1734) was early employed as a surveyor of land. He surveyed the town of Pomfret, Conn., and made a plat thereof which is yet preserved in the office of the town clerk. At a meeting of the proprietors, April 10, 1718, it was "voted that John Chandler Jun. [1734] lay out Maj. Fitch's [1700] 1080 [acres]." In 1714, the commissioners employed two surveyors, one of whom was John Chandler (1734), to run the line between Massachusetts and Connecticut. In 1728, he surveyed "the land-hill at Tautousq,"—four miles square,—granted to John Winthrop, Jr., in 1644—now Sturbridge, Mass. In 1728, he was appointed and confirmed a coroner for Suffolk County. When Worcester County was formed he moved to Worcester; was moderator of the town meeting there in 1733, and frequently afterwards.

He represented the town of Woodstock in the Legislature of Massachusetts Bay, and afterward was representative for the town of Worcester from 1732 to 1735, from 1737 to 1740, and from 1742 to 1753, and was town treasurer from 1741 to 1752. When the courts were established in Worcester County, in 1731, he was appointed clerk of all the courts there, and held that office until 1754. He was registrar of probate until 1754; registrar of deeds until 1762. On the 19th of April, 1754, John Chandler, Esq. (1734), was appointed judge of the court, and in May, 1757, became chief-justice. He was one of the delegates commissioned by Gov. Shirley, in June, 1754, to meet in Albany, for the purpose of holding an interview with the Indians of the Five Nations and making them presents, and of concerting measures for a union of all the British-American colonies. "This was the germ of that congress of the colonies that resulted in the union of the States, twenty-two years afterwards."

Mr. Lincoln, in his History of Worcester, says of him: "On the decease of his father he succeeded to the higher offices of judge, colonel, and councillor. His talents were rather brilliant and showy than solid and profound. With manners highly popular, he possessed a cheerful and joyous disposition, indulging in jest and hilarity, and exercised liberal hospitality. While judge of probate he kept open table, court days, for the widows and orphans who were brought to his tribunal by concerns of business."

The Old South Church of Worcester, Mass., owns a communion service, a portion of which has been in continuous service nearly a hundred and fifty years. It bears the inscription, "Ye gift of Colonel John Chandler [1734] of ye Church of Christ in Worcester, 1737."

The *Boston News-Letter* of Aug. 12, 1762, says:—

"Worcester, Aug. 10, 1762. Saturday the 7<sup>th</sup> inst departed this life, the Hon. John Chandler, Esq. [1734], of Worcester, in the 69<sup>th</sup> year of his age, eldest son of Hon. John Chandler [1725], late of Woodstock, deceased. He left a sorrowful widow, two sons, five daughters and forty-two grandchildren. . . .

"In his youthful days he was employed in Treasury's office in this Province and in the Secretary's office in Connecticut; and, being blessed with a sprightly genius, soon was introduced into public life; and a great number of years represented the town of Woodstock at the General Court of the Province. Upon the County of Worcester being erected, he, at the request and demand of the people of said County, removed from Woodstock to Worcester, where he was immediately chosen representative of said town and for a number of years continued such, until he was chosen one of His Majesty's Council, of which he was one until his death, notwithstanding his repeated desire to resign. He was the oldest member of the General Court and was always held in high esteem by both Houses for his capacity, aptness, dispatch and faithfulness for his assistance in public affairs. He was Clerk of the Superior Court and Court of Sessions in said County until he was appointed one of the Pleas, and was Registrar of Probate until he was appointed Judge, all of which offices he executed with general approbation."

He resided in Worcester, near the spot where Hon. Edward Earle resided in 1877, on the east side of Summer Street. His remains were entombed on the Common in Worcester, where the mortal remains of many of his name and kindred have been gathered in the same tomb. This cemetery has been abandoned as a place of burial, and the monuments covered up over each grave, and there remains no sign of it ever having been a resting-place of the dead, but the handsome monument to Col. Timothy Bigelow. The tomb of the Chandlers is among the trees, about six rods east-northeast of the Bigelow monument.

A portrait of Mr. Chandler, by Smibert, in the possession of Mrs. Franklin Dexter, of Beverly, Mass., represents him "dressed in single-breasted gray coat, black cuffs and buttons, powdered wig, white muslin neck-cloth, holding in his left hand a book." Mrs. Dexter has also a portrait of Mrs. Chandler, by the same artist.<sup>1</sup>

He was captain of the Artillery Company in 1736.

**Gear Coffin** (1734), mariner, of Boston, son of Nathaniel and Damaris (Gayer) Coffin, of Nantucket, was born in Boston, May 24, 1709. His given name, Gear, is probably a corruption of Gayer, his mother's name. His name, as recorded at Charlestown, is "Gayer." He married, May 10, 1733, Rebecca Parker.

"Gayer" Coffin (1734) was sworn as a hog-reeve of Boston in 1734, and was clerk's assistant of the Artillery Company in 1735. He succeeded his brother, William, as "tavernkeeper" of the "Bunch of Grapes."

**Joseph Dwight** (1734), lawyer, of Hatfield, son of Henry Dwight, and nephew of Seth Dwight (1702), of Boston, was born Oct. 16, 1703, and graduated at Harvard College in 1722. He married, Aug. 11, 1726, Mary Pynchon, daughter of Col. John Pynchon, of Springfield. Col. Dwight (1734) resided at Cambridge for some years,—from 1723 to 1731,—where he was engaged in trade; but afterwards he moved to Brookfield, Mass., where he practised law for twenty-two years,—from 1731 to 1753,—and

<sup>1</sup> The foregoing sketch of Col. Chandler (1734) is taken from the admirable work concerning the Chandler family, by George Chandler, of Worcester (printed for the family). Worcester, 1883.

was elected eleven times as a representative of the town in the General Court, or to the council of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay. He was councillor from 1742 to 1746, and was elected speaker of the House of Representatives, May 31, 1749. In 1752, he removed to Stockbridge to act as a trustee of "the Indian schools," and remained there all the time that Rev. Jonathan Edwards was there as a missionary. In 1758, he resided at Upper Sheffield (Great Barrington), and March 14 of that year was elected a selectman of the town. Nov. 7, 1759, he was moderator of the parish meeting, and issued the call to the citizens which resulted in the formation of Great Barrington. Jan. 4, 1753, he was appointed a justice of the Court of Common Pleas for Hampshire County, and held that office until June 24, 1761, when, on the formation of Berkshire County, he was transferred to the court of the new county. He held the latter office from 1761 to 1765, or until his decease. He had previously been a judge of the Court of Common Pleas for Worcester County, having been appointed to that position Oct. 5, 1739, on the resignation of Hon. John Chandler (1725). He was appointed justice of the peace for Worcester County, June 30, 1731, and March 1, 1743-4; for Hampshire County, Jan. 4, 1753, and for Berkshire County, June 24, 1761.

He was identified with the military, filling the various positions from private to colonel. Feb. 28, 1744, he was commissioned colonel of the train of artillery in the Louisburg expedition. Feb. 20, 1745,<sup>1</sup> he was promoted to be brigadier-general by Gov. Shirley, when on the expedition against Cape Breton. In 1756, he led a brigade of Massachusetts militia to Lake Champlain, to reduce Ticonderoga, at which time he built Fort Massachusetts.

"His personal appearance was very fine. He was dignified in his gait and bearing and had great urbanity in his manners. He was an upright judge and an exemplary professor of the religion of his fathers. . . . No man in civil life was more esteemed in the county. . . . He was a man of singular veracity; and all who knew him spoke of his virtues with enthusiasm."

Mrs. Mary (Pyncheon) Dwight died March 29, 1751, and Gen. Joseph Dwight (1734) married, in August, 1752, Mrs. Abigail Sergeant, widow of Rev. John Sergeant, who had been a devout and successful missionary among the Stockbridge Indians.

Gen. Dwight (1734) died June 19, 1765, aged sixty-two years, having been, at the age of forty years, in 1743, commander of the Military Company of the Massachusetts Bay.

**Daniel Epes, Jr.** (1734), son of Daniel and Hannah Epes, was born in Boston, Nov. 8, 1710. He does not appear to be again mentioned in the records of Boston. Mr. Whitman (1810) says Daniel Epes, Jr. (1734), was a son of Capt. Daniel (1706). If so, he was born in Salem, Oct. 28, 1679; married, in May, 1704, Hannah Higginson, and was fifty-five years of age when he joined the Artillery Company. Daniel Epes, Jr. (1734), was probably a grandson of Hon. Daniel Epes (1706). There were four persons in Salem and Boston by the name of Daniel Epes, between 1675 and 1711.

Daniel Epes, Jr. (1734), was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1735.

**Elnathan Jones** (1734). He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1737.

<sup>1</sup> The Dwight Genealogy, Vol. II., p. 626, contains this erroneous statement: "In the attack upon Louisburgh, in 1745, he was second in general command, leading in person the Massachusetts Artillery,

called then as now, 'The Ancient and Honorable Company of Artillery of Boston.'" From that excellent work the above sketch has been derived.



**Samuel Pratt** (1734), tanner, son of Thomas and Mary Pratt, was born in Boston, Jan. 27, 1703. He was hog-reeve at Rumney Marsh (Boston) in 1729, constable in 1731, and fence-viewer in 1736. He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1739, ensign in 1748, and lieutenant in 1753, "during which year," says Mr. Whitman (1810), "he probably died."

**Andrew Symmes** (1734), joiner, of Boston, son of Rev. Thomas and Elizabeth (Blowers) Symmes, was born May 20, 1704. His brother, Lieut.-Col. John Symmes, joined the Artillery Company in 1733. Andrew (1734) was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1741. The only town office he ever held was that of viewer of lumber, to which he was elected from 1745 to 1769 inclusive, except he was elected constable in 1740. His father, Rev. Thomas, delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1720, and his uncle, Rev. Thomas Blowers, of Beverly, in 1717.

**Nathaniel Thayer** (1734), leather-dresser, of Boston, son of Cornelius and Lydia Thayer, of Boston, was born July 17, 1710, and married, May 8, 1733, Ruth Eliot. Nathaniel (1734) was a nephew of Zechariah Thayer (1722). He was an officer of the town in 1737 and 1744, clerk of the market in 1740 and 1747, and constable for eight years, between 1743 and 1765; also, clerk of the Artillery Company in 1739 and 1740, and first sergeant in 1742. He died Dec. 28, 1768, aged fifty-nine years.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1734 is as follows:—

"1734, April 1. Being under arms, the Company made choice of the Rev'd Mr. Joshua Gee of Boston to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon, and that the present commission officers, with the field officers of the regiment and Colo. Edward Hutchinson [1702], be a Committee to request it of him.

"May 6. Being under arms, The Committee appointed to acquaint the Rev'd Mr. Joshua Gee of the choice the Company made of him to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon, returned answer, that he desired to be excused for the disadvantages he then lay under. Upon which the Company made choice of the Rev. Mr. Charles Chauncy of this Town for that Service, and Voted that the Commission officers of the Company, with the field officers of this Regiment and Colo. Edward Hutchinson [1702] be a committee to request it of him.

"That whereas the committee that was chosen in October 1, 1733, to receive the money that was in the hands of the Hon. Colo. Thomas Fitch [1700], being the sum of £29. and since paid sundry charges that have arisen in the Company; and now the balance being £18. 5/. Voted, that there be a pair of Drums bought for the Company and that the old charter arms of the Province be portrayed upon em.

"Whereas, Mr. Jeremiah Belknap [1724], one of the Members of this Company, has given the Company two wolfe-skins for Drum heads, The Company voted him thanks for the same.

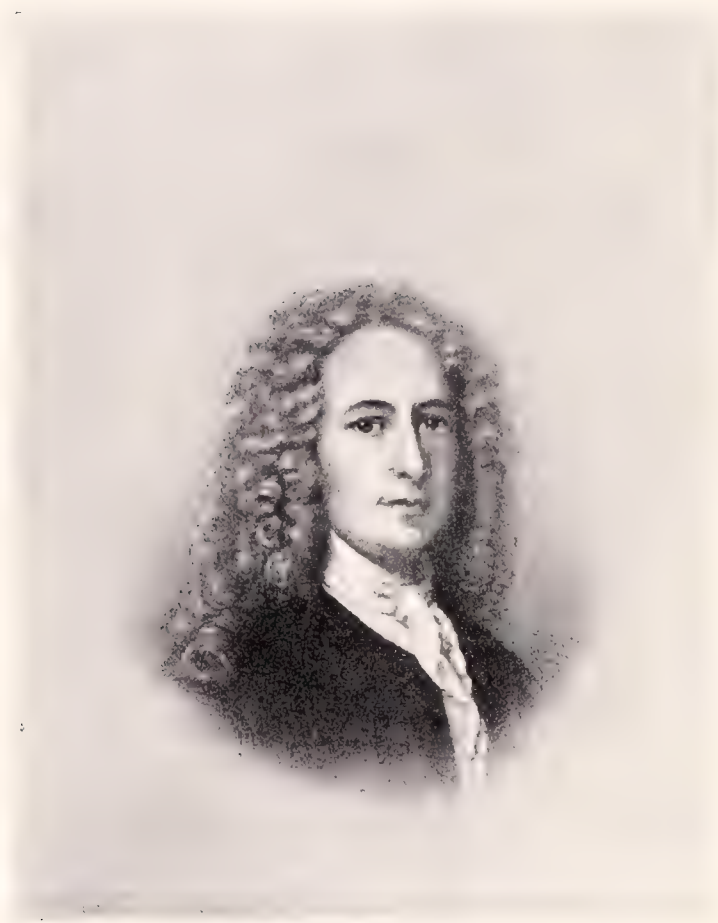
"June 3, 1734. Voted that the present Commission officers, with those now elected, and the field officers of the Regiment be a Committee to give the thanks of the Company to the Rev. Mr. Charles Chauncy of this Town for the Sermon preached to them this day and to desire a copy thereof for the press."

**Samuel Pratt** (1734). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**Nathaniel Thayer** (1734). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.







Jacob Wendell  
Wendell

Rev. Joshua Gee, who declined to deliver the Artillery election sermon in 1734, declined the same invitation in 1729. See page 443.

**Rev. Charles Chauncy**, who delivered the Artillery sermon in 1734, was born Jan. 1, 1705, being a son of Charles Chauncy (1699). His mother was a daughter of Hon. John Walley (1671). Charles Chauncy entered Harvard College at the age of twelve years, and graduated in 1721. In 1727, he became colleague with Mr. Foxcroft, pastor of the First Church, and he lived to see the independence of the United States declared. Mr. Chauncy rendered his chief service in the cause of independence in the learned and able attacks which he made upon episcopacy as it was at that time practised.<sup>1</sup> He married, May 9, 1728, Elizabeth Hirst, by whom he had three children, and died in 1787.

The officers elected were: Jacob Wendell (1733), captain; Caleb 1735-6. Lyman (1732), lieutenant; Samuel Watts (1733), ensign. Daniel Epes, Jr. (1734), was first sergeant; John Grant (1733), second sergeant; Henry Berry (1733), third sergeant; William Salter (1733), fourth sergeant; Bartholomew Gedney (1726), clerk, and Gear Coffin (1734), clerk's assistant.

March 8, 1735-6, Jacob Wendell, Esq. (1733), reported, in behalf of the overseers of the poor, that it would be a public benefit to divide the town into twelve wards. At an adjourned meeting the same gentleman reported in detail, giving the proposed boundaries of each ward. The names heretofore given to the various divisions were disused, and the wards were designated by numbers only. There were also twelve overseers of the poor, one for each ward. In the assignment of the overseers, Wards 2, 3, 5, 6, 8, 9, 10, and 11 were assigned to overseers who were members of the Artillery Company.

In 1735, the town voted to erect a workhouse. Its total estimated cost was three thousand five hundred pounds. The building erected was one hundred and forty-five feet long, twenty feet wide, and sixteen feet high. It was completed in 1738, and stood on Park Street, "contiguous to the Bridewell."

May 25, 1735, a subscription was made by citizens who were interested in the workhouse project. One hundred and twenty-three persons subscribed three thousand five hundred and sixty-eight pounds ten shillings. Of these, thirty-six persons, who subscribed one thousand and fifty-two pounds, were members of the Artillery Company, viz.:

Jacob Wendell . . . . .	(1733),	£100	Benjamin Clarke . . . . .	(1733),	£5
John Hunt . . . . .	(1709),	100	Joshua Cheever . . . . .	(1732),	50
Thomas Hubbard . . . . .	(1732),	100	John Phillips . . . . .	(1725),	25
Benjamin Hallowell . . . . .	(1733),	30	Joseph Sherburne . . . . .	(1745),	15
Thomas Cushing . . . . .	(1691),	50	John Gerrish . . . . .	(1718),	30
William Downe . . . . .	(1716),	50	John Wheelwright . . . . .	(1714),	50
Caleb Lyman . . . . .	(1732),	30	Samuel Sewall . . . . .	(1720),	30
Daniel Henchman . . . . .	(1712),	25	Edward Marion . . . . .	(1727),	10
Ebenezer Storer . . . . .	(1732),	30	William Warner . . . . .	(1733),	10
William Salter . . . . .	(1733),	10	Edward Proctor . . . . .	(1699),	5

<sup>1</sup> Drake's Hist. of Boston, p. 670.

Hopstill Foster . . . . .	(1694),	£6	Abiel Walley . . . . .	(1710),	£30
Thomas Hutchinson . . . . .	(1694),	30	Jonathan Williams . . . . .	(1711),	15
Jonathan Williams, Jr. . . . .	(1729),	15	Daniel Pecker . . . . .	(1720),	5
Joseph Hubbard . . . . .	(1717),	20	William Rand . . . . .	(1732),	10
Edward Hutchinson . . . . .	(1702),	30	James Davenport . . . . .	(1727),	10
John Welch . . . . .	(1736),	15	Thomas Foster . . . . .	(1722),	6
Jeremiah Belknap . . . . .	(1724),	10	Richard Bill . . . . .	(1707),	50
John Wendell . . . . .	(1733),	30	John Goldthwait . . . . .	(1711),	15

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1735 were: Abraham Belknap and John Wendell, Jr.

**Abraham Belknap** (1735), of Boston, son of Joseph (1692) and Abigail (Buttolph) Belknap, and brother of Jeremiah (1724) and of Nicholas (1725), was born in Boston, March 2, 1705. Abraham Belknap (1735) and Magdalen Feurt were married Oct. 21, 1734, by Andrew Le Mercier. He was admitted to be a member of the engine company in the westerly part of the town, Feb. 16, 1742, and continued his membership until April 3, 1745. He did not hold any office in the town, nor does he appear identified with any public matters.

**John Wendell, Jr.** (1735), of Boston, son of John Wendell, of Albany, N. Y., was born in Albany, Feb. 8, 1708. He removed to Boston, and was probably engaged with his uncle, Jacob (1733), and cousin, John (1733). He married, Nov. 11, 1731, Mary Oliver. He was elected a clerk of the market in 1741, and was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1738. He was not active in town affairs, but continued in the business of his uncle, amassing considerable property. He was interested in the military, and became major of the Boston regiment. He died in Boston in February, 1772, leaving a will of which his wife was sole executrix. He was buried in the Granary Burial-Ground, tomb No. 55.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1735 is as follows:—

"1735, April 4. Being under arms, the Company made choice of the Rev'd Mr. Hull Abbot of Charlestown to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon; and that the present Commission officers, with the field officers of the Regiment and Capt Cheever [1733] of Charlestown, be a committee to request it of him.

"May 5. The Committee appointed to acquaint the Rev. Mr. Hull Abbot the choice of the Company made of him to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon, returned answer, that it was accepted by him.

"June 2. Voted that the present Commission officers, with the field officers, be a Committee to give the thanks of the Company to the Rev. Mr. Hull Abbot, for the Sermon preached to them this day and desire a copy thereof for the press.

"Voted that the musicianers of the Company shall be paid out of the publick Stock for their Services the year past."

**Rev. Hull Abbot**, who delivered the Artillery election sermon in 1735, was the eldest son of Moses Abbot, of Boston, where he was born June 15, 1702. He graduated at Harvard College in 1720, and July 27, 1731, he married Mary Bradstreet, daughter



of Rev. Simon Bradstreet, of Charlestown. Feb. 5, 1723-4, Mr. Abbot was ordained as a colleague of Mr. Bradstreet, and the pastorate of the former extended until his decease, April 19, 1774 — a half century's service.

Col. John Alford (1714) was one of his parishioners.

The officers elected were: John Chandler (1734), captain; Joshua Cheever (1732), lieutenant; Ezekiel Cheever (1733), ensign. Sampson Salter (1729) was first sergeant; Jonathan Williams, Jr. (1729), second sergeant; Knight Leverett (1729), third sergeant; William Williams (1733), fourth sergeant, and Bartholomew Gedney (1726), clerk.

A committee was chosen April 28, 1736, to prepare instructions for the representatives. Capt. Nathaniel Cunningham (1720) was chairman.

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1736 were: Aaron Bordman, Nathaniel Thwing, Daniel Watts, Capt. John Welch, James Wright.

**Aaron Bordman** (1736), tinman, of Boston, son of Aaron and Elizabeth (Parker) Bordman, of Cambridge, was born in Cambridge, at the homestead on Harvard Square, May 6, 1711. In 1737, Aaron (1736) was a tin-plate worker in Boston. He was second sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1741; ensign in the militia; constable of Boston in 1738, and clerk of the market in 1747 and 1750. June 15, 1743, Mr. Aaron Bordman (1736) was fined forty shillings "on account of his taking an Indian woman into his house," and in 1745 Mr. Aaron Bordman (1736), "tin plate-worker," was one of the sureties for the collector of taxes. He possessed considerable estate in Cambridge. He died June 9, 1754, aged forty-three years, and his gravestone is on Copp's Hill.

**Nathaniel Thwing** (1736), baker, of Boston, son of John and Martha (Drew) Thwing, was born Aug. 17, 1703. He married, (1) in 1727, Joanna Davis, of Boston, who died Sept. 6, 1749; and, (2) in January, 1750, Martha Clap, of Woburn. Benjamin (1678) was a brother of Major Nathaniel's (1736) grandfather, John Thwing.

Major Nathaniel (1736) was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1737. He was elected constable in 1731 and 1733, but was excused the former year; was a tithing-man in 1746; scavenger in 1750; fireward in 1751, and from 1753 to 1755, and select-man three years, from 1763 to 1765 (but resigned May 15, 1765); also surveyor of wheat in 1763 and 1764. He was connected with the militia for several years, being a lieutenant in 1743, major of the Boston regiment from 1746 to 1751, and lieutenant-colonel in 1756. His bakeshop was on Water Street, and was consumed in the fire of 1760. He served as captain of the third company of the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment, — Col. John Choate, — against Louisburg, also major in the same, and was afterwards promoted by Gov. Shirley to be lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of which Richard Gridley had been colonel, for protection against the French at Crown Point and upon Lake Champlain.

"April 17, 1768, Col. Thwing, of this town, was seized with an apoplectic fit, in the street, as he was returning home from public worship, and now lies at the point of death."

**Aaron Bordman** (1736). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Paige's Hist. of Cambridge.

**Nathaniel Thwing** (1736). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Thwing Family.

"He died Monday, the 18<sup>th</sup>. He was a gentleman well respected; formerly one of the selectmen; in the late war (old French War) colonel of a provincial regiment, and in every action conducted with approbation."<sup>1</sup>

**Daniel Watts** (1736). He was probably a farmer, and lived in what is now Chelsea. March 27, 1732, when the lines were to be run and bounds examined between Malden and Boston, Daniel Watts (1736) was one of the persons selected by the selectmen of Boston, and the entire committee of thirteen persons were notified, for the performing said work, "to meet at the house of Mr. Daniel Watts [1736], at 8 oclck A. M. of April 18, 1732." He never held any other town officè, except that of hog-reeve at Rumney Marsh in 1729.

He was first sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1743.

**John Welch** (1736), carver, of Boston, son of John and Hannah Welch, was born in Boston, Aug. 19, 1711. He married (1) Sarah Barrington about 1734. She died in 1736, aged nineteen years, and he married, (2) Oct. 29, 1741, Dorcas Gatcomb. Sarah Barrington was a granddaughter of George Robinson (1710). Mr. Welch (1736) died Feb. 9, 1789, aged seventy-eight years, and was buried in the King's Chapel Burial-Ground, where, in the front range of tombs, is "John Welch, Tomb."

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1740, ensign in 1751, lieutenant in 1754, and its captain in 1756. He was also a captain in the militia.

Capt. Welch (1736) was chosen a constable in 1743, but was excused; a tithing-man in 1746; collector of taxes in 1747; assessor in 1750,—excused; clerk of the market in 1736 and 1752, and scavenger in 1737 and 1754.

May 2, 1733, "the Selectmen executed a lease to John Welch [1736], of Boston, carver, of a wooden shop or building now in his possession, called number nine, situate and being in Boston fronting on Dock Square." The shop was on the north side of the square, with Mr. Bunker's shop on the west, and Mr. Billings's on the east. The rental was twenty pounds per annum. His residence was on Green Lane, now Salem Street. Oct. 10, 1739, he re-leased No. 9, and likewise leased No. 8, for five years, at a rental of sixty pounds per annum. No. 9 was again leased by him in 1744.

Sept. 1, 1756, "Mr Putnam, master of the Dock Engine applied to the Selectmen for the premium, he being first with his engine at a fire at Mr John Welches [1736] house in June last," which he received. John Welch (1736) gave up his shop in 1758, and his name disappears from the records, except, July 12, 1758, fifteen beds were carried to his house, by order of the selectmen, "for the use of the King's troops now in Boston."

It was John Welch (1736) who carved the codfish which with public honors was lately transferred from the old to the new hall of the Representatives in the State House.

**James Wright** (1736), of Boston, son of James Wright (1715), of Woburn and Boston, was born Oct. 23, 1703.

**Daniel Watts** (1736). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

**John Welch** (1736). AUTHORITIES: Boston

Records; MS. of Charles A. Welch, Esq., of Boston, a great-grandson of John Welch (1736).

<sup>1</sup> Extracts from Boston newspapers.





*Richard Saltonstall*



The record of the Artillery Company for 1736 is as follows:—

"1736, April 5. Being under arms, The Company made choice of the Rev. Mr. Peter Clarke of Salem Village to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon; and that the present Commission officers, with Mr. Daniel Epes, Jr [1734], be a committee to request it of him.

"May 3. The Committee appointed to acquaint the Rev'd Mr. Peter Clarke of the choice the Company made of him to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon, returned answer that it was accepted by him.

"June 7. Voted, that the present Commission officers, with the field officers, be a committee to give the thanks of the Company to the Rev. Mr. Peter Clarke for the Sermon preached to them this day and desire a copy thereof for the press."

**Rev. Peter Clarke**, who delivered the anniversary sermon before the Company in 1736, son of Uriah and Mary Clarke, of Roxbury and Watertown, was born in the latter place, March 12, 1694, and graduated at Harvard College in 1712. On the seventh day of August, 1716, he was invited to become the minister of Salem Village, now Danvers, and on the 5th of June, 1717, he was settled as pastor, at a salary of ninety pounds per annum. His principal distinction arose from a celebrated controversy with Rev. Samuel Webster, of Salisbury, on the doctrine of original sin. It took a wide range, and sooner or later involved most of the prominent clergymen of the time.

Mr. Clarke married, Nov. 6, 1719, Deborah Hobart, of Braintree. She died Feb. 28, 1765. Mr. Clarke died in June, 1768, and his funeral sermon was preached by Rev. Thomas Barnard, of Salem. He was a faithful and popular preacher, and was eminent among his brethren for forty years.

---

**1737-8.** The officers elected were: Richard Saltonstall (1733), captain; Samuel Adams (1729), lieutenant; John Darrell (1714), ensign. Thomas Pratt (1733) was first sergeant; Elnathan Jones (1734), second sergeant; Samuel Jackson (1733), third sergeant; Nathaniel Thwing (1736), fourth sergeant, and Bartholomew Gedney (1726), clerk.

The inhabitants of Boston seem to have had much trouble at different times in procuring wood of proper quality and quantity. March 15, 1737, Hon. Elisha Cooke (1699), Hon. Edward Hutchinson (1702), Thomas Hubbard (1732), Major Samuel Sewall (1720), and Capt. Daniel Henchman (1712), were appointed to consider and report some means whereby the inhabitants might be better and more effectually provided with wood.

April 5, 1737, the town again voted to erect a workhouse, and a committee was chosen to have charge of the work, viz.: Hon. Elisha Cooke (1699), Hon. Jacob Wendell (1733), Capt. Daniel Henchman (1712), Major Samuel Sewall (1720), Hon. Edward Hutchinson (1702), Mr. Andrew Oliver, and James Bowdoin, Esq. This workhouse was on Common Street, near where the granary building stood prior to its removal to the corner of Tremont and Common streets. "The wall of the work

**Rev. Peter Clarke.** AUTHORITIES: Felt's Annals of Salem; Sprague's Annals of American Pulpit; Barnard's Funeral Sermon.

house," the town voted, "be accordingly set at the distance of two feet, at least, from the wall of the Burying-place."

The expense of the dinner at the installation of President Holyoke, at Cambridge, on the 28th of September, 1737, will give a good idea of a dinner of the Artillery Company at that time.

	£	s.	d.
24 loaves bread, 10s.; eggs, 13s. . . . .	1	3	0
10 quarts milk, 4s. 2d.; 7 pounds sugar, 10s. 6d. . . . .	0	14	8
2½ ounces spice, 10s.; 7 pounds flour, 4s. 1d. . . . .	0	14	1
7 pounds raisins, 9s. 4d.; 6 pounds currants, 9s. . . . .	0	18	4
15 pounds suet, 15s. . . . .	0	15	0
Butter for the pans . . . . .	0	1	0
23 pounds pork, 34s. 6d.; neats' tongues, 30s. . . . .	3	4	6
28 fowls, boiled and roast . . . . .	3	10	0
200 pounds boiled and roast beef, at 8d. . . . .	6	13	4
7½ pounds roast pork . . . . .	0	7	6
22 pounds butter, 55s.; cabbages, carrots, and turnips, 12s. . . . .	3	7	0
Pepper, vinegar, and loaf-sugar, 4s. . . . .	0	4	0
3 turkeys, 18s.; onions and cranberry sauce, 5s. . . . .	1	3	0
Dressing . . . . .	7	11	9
8½ pounds cheese, 12s. 9d.; bread, 25s. 6d. . . . .	1	18	3
5 dozen plates of apple pie, and spice . . . . .	3	0	0
10 gallons wine . . . . .	6	0	0
Wood . . . . .	0	2	6
	41	7	11

The members of the Artillery Company recruited in 1737 were : Joseph Blanchard, Moses Deshon, and Thomas Drowne.

**Joseph Blanchard** (1737), of Dunstable, now Nashua, N. H., son of Capt. Joseph and Abigail (Hassell) Blanchard, was born Feb. 11, 1704. He married Rebecca Hubbard. Col. Blanchard (1737) became identified with the Artillery Company, probably, through the purchase of the Company's land in Dunstable, which he bought about 1737. He was a speculator in New Hampshire lands. In 1740, he was appointed a mandamus councillor, and held that office until his decease. He was prominently connected with matters, both civil and military, in New Hampshire. He was appointed a judge of the Superior Court of New Hampshire in 1749, which office he held until his death. He commanded a regiment of five hundred men, ten companies raised in New Hampshire in 1755, and saw active service in the French war at Crown Point. Mr. Bancroft says, "A regiment of five hundred foresters of New Hampshire were raising a fort at Coos, on the Connecticut; but, under a new summons, they made the long march through the pathless region to Albany. Among them was John Stark, then a lieutenant of a rugged nature, but of the coolest judgment."

Mr. Blanchard (1737) died April 7, 1758, aged fifty-four years.

**Joseph Blanchard** (1737). AUTHORITIES: Fox's Hist. of Nashua; Whitman's Hist. A, and H. A. Company," Ed. 1842.

**Moses Deshon** (1737), a carver by trade, but also an auctioneer, of Boston, was born in 1709. His wife's name was Persis —. She died July 21, 1738, aged twenty-six years. He was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1741, and first sergeant in 1755. He served the town of Boston as constable in 1745; scavenger in 1752 and 1753, and was elected clerk of Faneuil Hall Market the latter year, but was excused, and assessor in 1769 and 1770.

March 14, 1743-4, he presented a memorial to the town, saying, "That he by the Encouragement of Several Gentleman about Fourteen Months since began to Cut the Arms of their Late Generous Benefactor, Peter Faneuil Esq, and soon after his Death the same was Compleatly Finished & Gilt, and that he was at a Considerable Expence of Time and Money to Cut & Gild the said Arms, and as the Fixing of it in Faneuil Hall will not only be a great Ornament to the Room but a means of Perpetuating the Memory of the Worthy & Generous Donor," desired the town to purchase it at a reasonable compensation. The town then instructed the selectmen to purchase the said arms at the expense of the town, which they did for the sum of forty pounds.

Major Deshon (1737) was a member of the Masonic Fraternity. He died Sept. 29, 1779, aged seventy years.

**Thomas Drowne** (1737), tradesman, of Boston, son of Shem and Katherine Drowne, was born in Boston, Dec. 14, 1715. Sept. 18, 1765, a committee was appointed by the town "to liquidate the several accounts of the tradesmen concerned in the repairs of Faneuil Hall." March 10, 1766, the committee reported that Thomas Drowne (1737) was entitled to £12 18s. 5½d.

He was fourth sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1741, ensign in 1753, lieutenant in 1756, and was also a lieutenant in the militia.

The record of the Artillery Company for 1737 is as follows:—

"1737, April 4<sup>th</sup>. Being under arms, the Company made choice of the Rev'd Mr. William Williams of Westown, to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon, and that the present commission officers, with Mr. William Williams, Junior [1733], be a committee to request it of him.

"May 2<sup>d</sup>. The committee appointed to wait on the Rev'd Mr. William Williams, to acquaint him of the choice the Company had made of him, to preach the next Artillery Election Sermon, returned answer, that it was accepted by him.

"June 6<sup>th</sup>. Voted, that the present Commission officers, with the field officers, be a Committee to give the thanks of the Company to the Rev'd Mr. William Williams for the Sermon preached to them this day, and desire a copy thereof for the press.

"1737, June 6<sup>th</sup>. Voted, that the Clerk shall wait on the committee of the Company for the selling of lands and desire them to lay before the Company at their next meeting, their account of the lands lately sold at Rutland, for the Company's Consideration. Also, voted, at the same time, that the Sermon preached to them this day, by the Rev'd Mr. William Williams shall be printed, the charge thereof to be paid out of the income of the lands sold at Rutland, but in case that should not be sufficient, then

**Moses Deshon** (1737). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; *Continental Journal*.

**Thomas Drowne** (1737). AUTHORITY: Boston Records.

It was Deacon Shem Drowne, and not Lieut.

Thomas (1737), as Mr. Whitman (1810) supposes, who made the gilt-bronzed figure of an Indian which surmounted the Province House. Deacon Shem Drowne also made the grasshopper on Faneuil Hall.



to be paid by the Society; and that Capt Daniel Henchman [1712] forthwith print 350.—50 whereof a present to the Rev'd Mr. Williams.

"September 5<sup>th</sup>. The Company being under arms, The Committee appointed by them to sell the lands at Rutland, according to their desire, rendered their account thereof; which was accepted by the said Company, and the balance of £40. 2. 6. due to sd Company (as by their account on file), and now remaining in their hands, they are still to be accountable for. Voted, also, that Capt. Downe [1716], Capt Adams [1729] and Capt. Lyman [1732] be a Committee to examine the outstanding accounts of the Clerks of said Company, viz The Clerk for the time past, and also the present Clerk and make report thereof in October next; also voted, that said Committee settle Mr. Thomas Johnson's account for painting the Drums, & make report in October next."

**Rev. William Williams**, of Weston, who delivered the anniversary sermon before the Company in 1737, was a son of Rev. William Williams, of Hatfield, and was born May 11, 1688. He graduated at Harvard College in 1705, and was ordained minister at Weston in 1709. He married a Miss Stoddard, sister of his father's second wife. Mr. Williams was esteemed a scholar and a good preacher. He delivered, besides the Artillery sermon in 1737, the election sermon in 1741, which, with several other of his discourses, was published. He died March 6, 1760, aged seventy-two years.

The foregoing pages indicate the activity and prominence of members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, now called the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, in the civil, military, and religious life of the first towns in the Colony of Massachusetts Bay. The following tables present the same or similar facts in a more concise form.

"The selectmen of the town, as the uniform custom of New England witnesseth, were chosen from the citizens of the highest repute. They exercised very considerable powers. They were chosen by the free vote of the governed, and it is evident from many sources that they were the recognized leaders of the community."<sup>1</sup>

From 1634 to 1646 inclusive, there were elected, for a term of six months, persons called "managers of the affairs of the town." Thirty different persons were elected to this office, of whom the following were members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts:—

Robert Keayne (1637), Edward Gibbons (1637), William Tyng (1638), Atherton Hough (1643), John Oliver (1637), Valentine Hill (1638), Edward Tyng (1642), Capt. John Underhill (1637), Robert Harding (1637), John Coggan (1638), William Aspinwall (1643), Thomas Fowle (1639).

Selectmen of Boston were first elected, to serve for one year, "18th of 1st mo. 1647." During the ninety years prior to 1738, the following persons, members of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, were elected to serve one year or more on the board of selectmen:—

Anthony Stoddard (1639), William Davis (1643), Edward Tyng (1642), Jeremiah Howchin (1641), Thomas Clarke (1638), Richard Parker (1638), John Leverett (1639), Adam Winthrop (1642), Thomas Savage (1637), Edward Hutchinson (1638), James Oliver (1640), Samuel Cole (1637), Peter Oliver (1643), William Paddy (1652), Joshua

<sup>1</sup> Mr. William H. Whitmore, in *Mem. Hist. of Boston*, Vol. I., p. 561.



Scottow (1645), John Hull (1660), Thomas Lake (1653), Jacob Sheafe (1648), Hezekiah Usher (1665), Nathaniel Williams (1644), John Richards (1644), Thomas Brattle (1675), Henry Allen (1658), Theophilus Frary (1666), Daniel Turell (1674), Elisha Hutchinson (1670), Penn Townsend (1674), James Hill (1677), Adam Winthrop (1692), John Foster (1679), Bozoun Allen (1676), Jeremiah Dummer (1671), Joseph Bridgham (1674), Samuel Checkley (1678), Timothy Thornton (1691), Ephraim Savage (1674), Nathaniel Williams (1667), John Eyre (1682), Edward Bromfield (1679), Thomas Hunt (1685), John Marion, Jr. (1691), Joseph Prout (1674), Simeon Stoddard (1675), Timothy Clarke (1702), Robert Gibbs (1692), John Barnard (1677), Giles Dyer (1680), Thomas Savage (1693), Thomas Fitch (1700), Thomas Jackson (1692), Daniel Powning (1691), Thomas Cushing (1691), Thomas Palmer (1702), John Borland (1692), Henry Deering (1682), Francis Clarke (1701), Thomas Hutchinson (1694), Oliver Noyes (1699), Samuel Marshall (1685), Addington Davenport (1692), Edward Hutchinson (1702), Edward Winslow (1700), Habijah Savage (1699), John Baker (1703), Elisha Cooke (1699), William Clark (1699), Ezekiel Lewis (1707), Jonathan Williams (1711), Jonathan Loring (1704), Samuel Adams (1729), Joshua Cheever (1732), Edward Bromfield (1732), William Downe (1716), Caleb Lyman (1732).

Other town offices, especially those of overseers of poor, constables, and tithing-men, were held by a greatly increased number of members of the Artillery Company.

Under the first charter, 1629-86, there were eight persons who held the office of Governor of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay.<sup>1</sup> Of these, John Haynes (1639) and John Leverett (1639) were members of the Artillery Company. There were ten persons who held the office of deputy-governor. Of these, John Humfrey (1640), Francis Willoughby (1639), and John Leverett (1639) were members of the Artillery Company.

During the same period sixty-two persons held the office of assistant. Of these the following-named were members of the Artillery Company:—

Isaac Addington (1652), Humfrey Atherton (1638), Robert Bridges (1641), Thomas Clarke (1644), Humphrey Davie (1665), Daniel Denison (1660), Joseph Dudley (1677), Daniel Fisher (1640), Edward Gibbons (1637), Daniel Gookin (1645), John Haynes (1639), Atherton Hough (1643), John Hull (1660), John Humfrey (1640), Elisha Hutchinson (1670), John Leverett (1639), Eleazer Lusher (1638), Herbert Pelham (1639), John Richards (1644), James Russell (1669), Richard Russell (1644), Thomas Savage (1637), Samuel Sewall (1679), Israel Stoughton (1637), Edward Tyng (1642), William Tyng (1638), and Francis Willoughby (1639).

Joseph Dudley (1677) was president of the colony from May 20, 1686, until Dec. 20, 1686, when Gov. Andros arrived.

Under the provincial period, from 1691 to the end of the first century of the Artillery Company, 1737, ten persons held the office of Governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay. Of these the following were members of the Artillery Company:—

Joseph Dudley (1677), William Tailer (1712), and William Dummer (1702).

In the charter of 1692, the following-named members of the Artillery Company were named of the council for that year:—

John Richards (1644), Wait Winthrop (1692), John Phillips (1680), James Russell (1669), Samuel Sewall (1679), Elisha Hutchinson (1670), Adam Winthrop (1692), and John Foster (1679).

<sup>1</sup> This and the following civil lists are prepared from the "Massachusetts Civil List for the Colonial and Provincial Periods," by Mr. William H. Whitmore.

The following-named members of the Artillery Company were elected councillors between 1692 and 1738:—

Wait Winthrop (1692), James Russell (1669), Elisha Hutchinson (1670), Samuel Sewall (1679), John Phillips (1680), John Foster (1679), John Walley (1671), John Richards (1644), Samuel Shrimpton (1670), Joseph Lynde (1681), Penn Townsend (1674), Nathaniel Byfield (1679), Edward Bromfield (1679), Ephraim Hunt (1717), Simeon Stoddard (1675), John Leverett (1704), Daniel Epes (1706), William Tailer (1712), Addington Davenport (1692), Thomas Hutchinson (1694), Elisha Cooke (1699), Thomas Fitch (1700), Adam Winthrop (1692), William Dummer (1702), Samuel Thaxter (1728), Paul Dudley (1677), Thomas Palmer (1702), Edward Hutchinson (1702), John Chandler (1725), William Clark (1699), John Alford (1714), Thomas Cushing (1691), Ezekiel Lewis (1707), Francis Foxcroft (1679), Jacob Wendell (1733).

The speakers of the House of Deputies from 1644 to 1738, who were members of the Artillery Company, were:—

Robert Keayne (1637), George Cooke (1638), Robert Bridges (1641), Richard Russell (1644), five terms; Daniel Denison (1660), three terms; Daniel Gookin (1645), Humfrey Atherton (1638), Edward Johnson (1637), Thomas Savage (1637), six terms; Thomas Clarke (1638), five terms; John Leverett (1639), two terms; Joshua Hobart (1641), Daniel Fisher (1640), John Richards (1644), John Waite (1673), Thomas Oakes (1684), three terms; John Bowles (1645), Penn Townsend (1674), four terms; Nathaniel Byfield (1679), two terms; John Leverett (1704) and Elisha Cooke (1699).

At the end of the first volume of the Records of the Town of Boston, the following (printed in the Second Report of the Record Commissioners, 1634-1660, p. 160) is written:—

“12th of the 6th August, 1636.

“At a general meeting of the richer inhabitants there was given towards the maintenance of a free school master for the youth with us, Mr. Daniel Maud being now also chosen thereunto.”

Then follow the names of forty-five citizens, with their subscriptions, of whom the following became members of the Artillery Company:—

“Robte. Keayne [1637] xxs.	John Audley [1638] iiis.
John Coggan [1638] xxs.	John Button [1643] vis.
Robte. Harding [1637] xiiis. iiis.	Edward Bendall [1638] vs.
W <sup>m</sup> Aspenall [1643] viiis.	John Biggs [1641] iiis.
Samuel Colę [1637] xs.	Thomas Marshall [1640] vis. 8d.
William Hudson [1640] —.	Edward Hutchinson [1638] iiis.”
Thomas Savage [1637] vs.	

The following-named graduates of Harvard College united with the Military Company of the Massachusetts. The date at the left indicates the year of graduation; that at the right, the year of joining the Company:—

1642 Henry Saltonstall (1639).	1662 Thomas Oakes (1684).
1645 John Oliver (1637).	1665 Joseph Dudley (1677).
1659 Habijah Savage (1665).	1668 Adam Winthrop (1692).
1662 Ephraim Savage (1674).	1669 Daniel Epes (1706).





*A Prospect of the Colleges in Cambridge in New England*  
VIEW OF COLLEGE IN 1736.



1671 Samuel Sewall (1679).	1701 Ames Angier (1708).
1680 John Leverett (1704).	1702 William Hutchinson (1703).
1686 Francis Wainwright (1709).	1706 John Gibbins (1711).
1689 William Paine (1691).	1709 Samuel Greenwood (1722).
1689 Addington Davenport (1692)	1718 John Eyre (1718).
1693 Penn Townsend (1700).	1721 William Rand (1732).
1694 Adam Winthrop (1694).	1722 William Brattle (1729).
1694 John Ballentine (1694).	1722 Joseph Dwight (1734).
1694 John Savage (1694).	1722 Richard Saltonstall (1733).
1695 Habijah Savage (1699).	1723 Habijah Savage (1733).
1695 Oliver Noyes (1699).	1727 Benjamin Church (1742).
1695 Ezekiel Lewis (1707).	1729 William Williams (1733).
1697 Elisha Cooke (1699).	1733 Jacob Wendell (1733).
1701 Nathaniel Oliver (1701).	

In the History of Harvard University, by Josiah Quincy, LL. D., president of the University, lists of the donors, and of their gifts to the institution, are given. From these lists the names of donors, with their donations, are taken, as follows:—

Robert Keayne (1637), £353, and one half a house in Boston, valued at £147 10s.; Israel Stoughton (1637), £21, and three hundred acres of land; John Hull (1660), £100; Samuel Sewall (1679) and wife, five hundred acres of land; Richard Sprague (1681), £400, and thirty ewe sheep; Thomas Brattle (1675), £200; John Walley (1671), £100; Francis Willoughby (1639), £31; John Friend (1640), £20 18s., in work; Richard Russell (1644), £45 13s. 4d.; Richard Parker (1638), £4; Nicholas Davison (1648), £1 10s.; Peter Oliver (1643), £5; Theodore Atkinson (1644), £5, and forty rods of land; Hezekiah Usher (1665), £8; Samuel Cole (1637), 16s.; James Oliver (1640), £10; Edward Tyng (1642), £9 10s.; Benjamin Gibbs (1666), £50; John Coggan (1638), seventy acres; Henry Dunster (1640), one hundred acres in Billerica; John Hayward (1673), twenty-four acres; Francis Wainwright (1709), one silver goblet; Edward Page (1661), one silver goblet; Thomas Fitch (1700), £300; Thomas Hutchinson (1694), £300; Daniel Henchman (1675), £316 13s. 4d., and one hundred ounces of silver; William Dummer (1702), £100; John Alford (1714), £1,300; Robert Sedgwick (1637), £40, and "a shop"; John Paine (1666), £10, which, with his father's gift of £20, was laid out in the purchase of the land "where Dane Hall is now built."

"Benefactors to the first font of letters for printing in Cambridge, their names collected by L. H. [Leonard Hoar] in 1674: Major Thomas Clarke [1638], Capt James Oliver [1640] Capt Allen [1639] Capt Lake [1653] Mr Stoddard [1639] Mr Freake and Mr. Hues [Hewes (1637)]."<sup>1</sup>

The following is a list of the major-generals, called "sergeant-major-generals," from the first appointment of such an officer to the arrival of Gov. Andros in 1686:—

John Humfrey (1640),	appointed 1641.	Edward Gibbons (1637),	elected 1649.
Thomas Dudley,	elected 1644.	Robert Sedgwick (1637),	" 1652.
John Endicott,	" 1645.	Daniel Denison (1660),	" 1653.

<sup>1</sup> College Book, No. 1, p. 32; quoted by President Quincy, in History of Harvard University, Vol. I., p. 459.

John Leverett (1639),	elected 1663.	John Leverett (1639),	elected 1671.
Richard Bellingham,	" 1664.	Edward Tyng (1642),	" 1671.
Humfrey Atherton (1638),	" 1665.	Daniel Gookin (1645),	" 1681.

The sergeant-majors, or commanders, of the Boston regiment, from the origin of the office in 1644 to its abolition in April, 1689, were, —

Edward Gibbons (1637),	elected 1644.	Thomas Clarke (1644),	elected 1673.
Humfrey Atherton (1638),	" 1649.	John Richards (1644),	" 1683.
Eleazer Lusher (1638),	" 1665.	Elisha Hutchinson (1670),	" 1689.

MEMBERS OF THE MILITARY COMPANY OF THE MASSACHUSETTS RECORDED AS MEMBERS OF  
THE FIRST CHURCH, CHARLESTOWN, 1632-1737.

*Founders of that Church, Nov. 2, 1632.*

Abraham Palmer (1638).	Robert Hale (1644).
Ralph Sprague (1638).	Richard Sprague (1638).

*Joined it Subsequently.*

1633 Joshua Hubbard (1641).	1642 Francis Norton (1643).
1634 James Brown (1638).	1650 Richard Stowers (1642).
1634 John Mousall (1641).	1662 Laurence Hammond (1666).
1636 Robert Long (1639).	1668 James Russell (1669).
1636 Robert Sedgwick (1637).	1670 Solomon Phips, Jr. (1681).
1639 Joshua Tedd (1644).	1670 Joseph Lynde (1681).
1639 William Phillips (1644).	1681 Thomas Jenner (1673).
1639 Francis Willoughby (1639).	1686 Richard Sprague (1681).
1639 Thomas Coitmore (1639).	1687 Jonathan Call (1682).
1640 John Baker (1644).	1720 Thomas Jackson (1716).
1641 Richard Russell (1644).	1730 John Codman (1733).
1641 Richard Cooke (1643).	

MEMBERS OF THE MILITARY COMPANY OF THE MASSACHUSETTS RECORDED AS MEMBERS OF  
THE FIRST CHURCH IN BOSTON.

1646 Alexander Adams (1652).	1668 Freegrace Bendall (1667).
1640 Isaac Addington (1652).	1630 John Biggs (1641).
1643 Herman Adwood (1644).	1642 Nehemiah Bourne (1638).
1647 Henry Allen (1658).	1666 Peter Brackett (1648).
1643 John Arnold (1644).	1630 Richard Brackett (1639).
1630 William Aspinwall (1643).	1665 Moses Bradford (1674).
1634 Theodore Atkinson (1644).	1658 Thomas Brattle (1675).
1630 John Audlin (1638).	1670 Samuel Bridge (1679).
1642 John Baker (1644).	1644 Henry Bridgham (1644).
1675 John Ballentine (1682).	1674 Jonathan Bridgham (1673).
1635 William Beamsley (1656).	1677 Joseph Bridgham (1674).
1665 Joseph Belknap (1658).	1630 James Browne (1638).
1630 Edward Bendall (1638).	1660 Thomas Bumstead (1647).

- |                                |                                  |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1633 John Button (1643).       | 1639 John Leverett (1639).       |
| 1636 Matthew Chaffey (1642).   | 1655 John Lowle (1671).          |
| 1640 Thomas Clarke (1644).     | 1639 Francis Lyall (1640).       |
| 1643 George Clifford (1644).   | 1643 Thomas Marshall (1640).     |
| 1630 Samuel Cole (1637).       | 1672 George May (1661).          |
| 1634 Richard Cooke (1643).     | 1635 John Milam (1641).          |
| 1671 John Cotta (1679).        | 1671 John Moore (1675).          |
| 1647 William Cotton (1650).    | 1630 Richard Morris (1637).      |
| 1634 James Davis (1651).       | 1640 James Oliver (1640).        |
| 1635 John Davis (1643).        | 1630 John Oliver (1637).         |
| 1665 Joseph Davis (1675).      | 1639 Peter Oliver (1643).        |
| 1644 William Davis (1643).     | 1643 Samuel Oliver (1648).       |
| Wentworth Day (1640).          | 1658 William Paddy (1652).       |
| 1657 William Dinsdale (1658).  | 1630 Abraham Palmer (1638).      |
| 1654 Hugh Drury (1659).        | 1640 Richard Parker (1638).      |
| 1679 Jeremiah Dummer (1671).   | 1644 William Parsons (1646).     |
| 1646 Nathaniel Duncan (1638).  | 1661 John Pease (1661).          |
| 1674 Joseph Farnam (1674).     | 1665 Seth Perry (1662).          |
| 1640 Edward Fletcher (1643).   | 1658 Henry Phillips (1640).      |
| 1642 Thomas Foster (1668).     | 1670 Abel Porter (1680).         |
| 1643 Thomas Fowle (1639).      | 1640 Thomas Rashley (1645).      |
| 1663 Theophilus Frary (1666).  | 1665 Nathaniel Reynolds (1658).  |
| 1642 Strong Furnel (1651).     | 1651 Joseph Rock (1658).         |
| 1630 Edward Gibbons (1637).    | 1630 John Ruggles (1646).        |
| 1662 Benjamin Gibbs (1666).    | 1680 Goodman Sale (1674).        |
| 1676 William Gibson (1675).    | 1651 Robert Sanford (1661).      |
| 1644 Daniel Gookin (1645).     | 1635 Thomas Savage (1637).       |
| Richard Gridley (1658).        | 1633 Robert Scott (1638).        |
| 1670 William Griggs (1675).    | 1639 Joshua Scottow (1645).      |
| 1635 Hugh Gunnison (1646).     | 1658 Jacob Sheafe (1648).        |
| 1641 John Gutteridge (1640).   | 1638 John Smith (1644).          |
| 1630 Robert Hale (1644).       | 1630 Ralph Sprague (1638).       |
| 1630 Robert Harding (1637).    | 1630 Richard Sprague (1638).     |
| 1643 John Harrison (1638).     | 1630 Thomas Squire (1648).       |
| 1641 John Hill (1643).         | 1641 Christopher Stanley (1640). |
| 1636 Valentine Hill (1638).    | 1639 Anthony Stoddard (1639).    |
| 1633 Atherton Hough (1643).    | 1643 John Sunderland (1658).     |
| 1668 [William] Howard (1661).  | 1670 John Temple (1675).         |
| 1644 Jeremiah Howchin (1641).  | 1667 Thomas Thacher (1671).      |
| 1640 William Hudson (1640).    | 1641 Evan Thomas (1653).         |
| 1648 John Hull (1660).         | 1664 Benjamin Thurston (1675).   |
| 1639 John Hurd (1640).         | 1671 James Townsend (1679).      |
| 1633 Edward Hutchinson (1638). | 1671 Penn Townsend (1674).       |
| 1635 Edmund Jackson (1646).    | 1643 Robert Turner (1640).       |
| 1636 James Johnson (1638).     | 1672 Edward Tyng (1668).         |
| 1639 Benjamin Keayne (1638).   | 1639 William Tyng (1638).        |
| 1636 Robert Keayne (1637).     | 1630 John Underhill (1637).      |

1644	Nicholas Upshall (1637).	1639	Nathaniel Williams (1644).
1634	Richard Waite (1638).	1642	Robert Williams (1644).
1646	Isaac Walker (1644).	1666	Experience Willis (1674).
1634	John Webb (1643).	1665	John Wing (1671).
1640	John Westgate (1641).	1640	Adam Winthrop (1642).
1641	Hugh Williams (1644).	1634	Stephen Winthrop (1641).

MEMBERS OF THE MILITARY COMPANY OF THE MASSACHUSETTS RECORDED AS MEMBERS OF  
THE SECOND CHURCH IN BOSTON.

1650	James Astwood (1638).	1728	Nathaniel Hodgdon (1727).
1700	John Baker (1703).	1680	Thomas Hunt (1685).
1678	Thomas Baker (1682).	1700	Edward Hutchinson (1702).
1667	Matthew Barnard (1660).	1706	Thomas Hutchinson (1694).
1727	Daniel Bell (1733).	1682	Richard Jencks (1666).
1670	Thomas Bill (1674).	1670	Thomas Lake (1653).
1706	Solomon Blake (1719).	1682	Samuel Lilley (1692).
1670	Samuel Checkley (1678).	1712	Caleb Lyman (1732).
1712	Joshua Cheever (1732).	1693	Edward Martyn (1702).
1689	William Clough (1695).	1676	Stephen Mason (1686).
1660	Richard Collicot (1637).	1717	Benjamin Mountfort (1679).
1672	John Coney (1662).	1685	David Norton (1692).
1727	John Cookson (1701).	1681	John Oliver (1680).
1681	Robert Cumby (1691).	1708	Stephen Paine (1724).
1700	Benjamin Cushing (1700).	1692	William Paine (1691).
1690	Thomas Cushing (1691).	1682	Timothy Pratt (1691).
1725	Joseph Dowding (1727).	1698	Edward Proctor (1699).
1693	Moses Draper (1693).	1663	John Richards (1644).
1693	Jonathan Farnham (1681).	1681	William Robie (1684).
1708	Grafton Feveryear (1717).	1680	George Robinson (1694).
1685	John Foster (1679).	1715	Sampson Salter (1729).
1691	James Fowle (1693).	1718	John Smith (1727).
1678	Obadiah Gill (1679).	1718	Ralph Smith (1725).
1705	John Goldthwait (1711).	1698	Timothy Thornton (1691).
1681	James Green (1674).	1672	Daniel Turell (1674).
1672	William Greenough (1675).	1685	Timothy Wadsworth (1691).
1710	Samuel Greenwood (1722).	1707	Nathaniel Wheeler (1711).
1691	Nathaniel Hall (1692).	1710	Benjamin White (1722).
1709	John Helyer (1727).	1716	Joseph White (1722).
1727	James Hill (1717).	1682	Adam Winthrop (1692).
1697	Joseph Hill (1691).	1705	Adam Winthrop (1694).



MEMBERS OF THE MILITARY COMPANY OF THE MASSACHUSETTS RECORDED AS MEMBERS OF  
THE THIRD, OR OLD SOUTH, CHURCH, 1669-1737.

The members of the Company recorded in the list of the twenty-nine "founders of the Old South," are as follows:—

1669	Capt. William Davis (1643).	1669	Theodore Atkinson (1644).
1669	Hezekiah Usher (1665).	1669	John Wing (1671).
1669	John Hull (1660).	1669	Theophilus Frary (1666).
1669	Peter Brackett (1648).	1669	Benjamin Thurston (1675).
1669	Peter Oliver (1643).	1669	John Morse (1671).
1669	Thomas Brattle (1675).	1669	Seth Perry (1662).
1669	Joshua Scottow (1645).	1669	Joseph Belknap (1658).
1669	Benjamin Gibbs (1666).	1669	Joseph Davis (1675).
1669	Thomas Savage (1637).	1669	Joseph Rock (1658).

The following-named members of the Company joined subsequently, 1669-1737, the date at the left indicating the year of uniting with that church:—

1700	John Adams (1691).	1692	Samuel Gaskell (1699).
1706	Samuel Adams (1729).	1697	John George (1702).
1704	Samuel Bass (1720).	1704	Benjamin Gerrish (1714).
1711	Jeremiah Belknap (1711).	1735	John Gerrish (1718).
1735	Joseph Belknap (1742).	1707	Samuel Gerrish (1709).
1688	Joseph Belknap, Jr. (1692).	1730	Henry Gibbs (1726).
1671	John Blake (1642).	1691	Robert Gibbs (1692).
1694	John Borland (1692).	1730	Nathaniel Goodwin (1711).
1703	Henry Bridgham (1699).	1727	Samuel Green (1711).
1682	Joseph Briscoe (1692).	1693	Richard Gridley (1695).
1698	Edward Bromfield (1707).	1670	Daniel Henchman (1675).
1729	Edward Bromfield (1732).	1715	Daniel Henchman (1712).
1675	Robert Butcher (1676).	1670	James Hill (1677).
1708	Charles Chauncy (1699).	1730	Thomas Hubbard (1732).
1685	Samuel Checkley (1678).	1692	Thomas Hunt (1685).
1724	Benjamin Clark (1733).	1691	John Kilby (1691).
1704	William Clark (1703).	1705	Ezekiel Lewis (1707).
1696	John Clough (1691).	1693	John Long (1681).
1685	Benjamin Davis (1673).	1685	John Nichols (1675).
1670	Ambrose Dawes (1674).	1675	John Noyes (1698).
1735	William Dawes (1760).	1693	Oliver Noyes (1699).
1672	John Drury (1674).	1728	Brattle Oliver (1709).
1679	Paul Dudley (1677).	1673	Moses Paine (1644).
1698	Benjamin Emmons (1698).	1693	Benjamin Pemberton (1707).
1683	John Eyre (1682).	1707	Samuel Phillips (1693).
1691	Thomas Fitch (1700).	1688	Daniel Quincy (1675).

1720 Samuel Rand (1720).	1723 John Symmes (1733).
1722 William Rand (1732).	1674 Benjamin Thwing (1678).
1697 Jabez Salter (1674).	1691 William Tilly (1706).
1707 Thomas Salter (1704).	1707 Ezekiel Walker (1711).
1672 Ephraim Savage (1674).	1674 Isaac Walker (1676).
1708 Habijah Savage (1699).	1716 Abiel Walley (1710).
1702 Thomas Savage (1693).	1679 John Walley (1671).
1677 Samuel Sewall (1679).	1707 Samuel Wentworth (1693).
1728 Samuel Sewall (1720).	1675 Nathaniel Williams (1667).
1719 Benjamin Simpson (1702).	1692 Edward Winslow (1700).
1717 Thomas Smith (1702).	1671 John Winslow (1692).
1691 Simeon Stoddard (1675).	1689 Wait Winthrop (1692).
1701 Simeon Stoddard (1702).	1674 Richard Woodde (1642).

---

The foregoing completes the history of the Military Company of the Massachusetts from 1637 to 1737. During that time nine hundred and fifty-two names—including those of the charter members—were borne upon the roll. The positions of those persons in the social, civil, and military life of the colony and province indicate the respect which the people entertained for the Company, as well as the ability, prominence, and influence of its members. They were among the first in organizing churches and supporting them; they were the constant friends of public schools; they were prominent in framing and also in administering the laws of the colony; they were foremost in the introduction of manufactures, and in the extension of the trade of Boston; they were, as a rule, the chief military men of the colony, and were among the first in its defence; many of them were public benefactors, devoting somewhat of their wealth to education, religion, and charity. They trod every battle-field of New England in the first century of the Company's existence; they fought for freedom on foreign soil; they judged in the courts; they pleaded at the bar; they instituted town government, and, levelling forests, were active in settling towns on the frontier.

Among the prominent traits of the members of the Artillery Company, their loyalty to the colony stands forth, fearless and prominent. In the records of the town meetings, in the public papers prepared by members of the Company, it seems they so planned, spoke, and acted as to hasten the time when Independence was born and the Republic of the United States of America was established.

# INDEX TO VOLUME I.

- ABBOT, Rev. Hull .....474, 475  
 ADAMS, Alexander (1652) ..172, 179, 186, 316, 484  
     Henry (1652) .....172, 142, 156, 173, 234, 282  
     John (1691) .....282, 283, 435, 487  
     John (1699) .....316, 315, 359  
     Samuel (1729), 435, 282, 436, 466, 477, 480, 481, 487  
     Thomas (1644) .....137, 8, 136, 173  
     Rev. William .....264  
 ADDINGTON, Isaac (1652), 173, 26, 78, 172, 218, 221, 231, 258, 279, 309, 481, 484  
 ADKINS, Abraham (1642) .....119  
 ADWOOD (Atwood), Herman (1644), 137, 136, 222, 484  
 ALFORD, Benjamin (1671), 217, 264, 274, 276, 385, 386, 387  
     James (1713) .....385, 217, 384, 386, 391  
     John (1714) ..386, 217, 385, 387, 391, 475, 482, 483  
 ALLEN, Benjamin (1677) .....244, 234  
     Bozoun (1650) .....168, 115, 169, 241  
     Bozwood (1676), 241, 169, 264, 281, 282, 285, 310, 379, 481  
     Henry (1658) .....184, 182, 190, 481, 484  
     Rev. James (Boston) ...201, 202, 302, 326, 366  
     Rev. James (Brookline) .....447, 445  
     Jeremiah (1694) .....302, 318, 365, 393, 435  
     John (1639) .....85, 483  
     Joseph (1694) .....302, 298, 311, 315, 332  
     Silence (1700) .....323, 324, 379, 435  
 ANCHOR TAVERN .....108, 113  
 ANDROS, Sir Edmund, 46, 101, 116, 118, 143, 204, 207, 212, 214, 215, 216, 218, 219, 223, 225, 231, 232, 241, 245, 246, 247, 249, 250, 255, 256, 259, 261, 262, 263, 265, 267, 270, 277, 278, 279, 280, 291, 295, 296, 481, 483  
 ANGIER, Ames (1708), 365, 302, 318, 364, 366, 379, 483  
 APPLETON, Rev. Nathaniel .....467  
 ARMSTRONG, Samuel T. (1807) .....163  
 ARNOLD, John (1644) .....137, 136, 484  
 ARTILLERY FARMS ..221, 222, 393, 399, 431, 432, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 452, 480  
 ASHLEY, John (1725) .....419, 430  
 ASPINWALL, William (1643), 126, 7, 64, 107, 125, 127, 480, 482, 484  
 ASTWOOD (Ashwood), James (1638), 51, 52, 59, 127, 168, 486  
 ATHERTON, Humfrey (1638), 52, 8, 43, 45, 51, 53, 57, 59, 70, 119, 121, 133, 148, 154, 155, 168, 184, 195, 481, 482, 484  
 ATKINSON, Theodore (1644), 137, 72, 136, 181, 211, 249, 253, 347, 483, 484, 487  
 ATWATER, Joshua (1677) .....244, 217  
 ATWOOD (Adwood), John (1673), 222, 137, 249, 308  
 AUBREY, William (1652) .....173, 172  
 AUDLIN (Odlin), John (1638), 53, 7, 51, 135, 148, 154, 161, 163, 168, 170, 178, 184, 189, 191, 195, 197, 199, 201, 205, 209, 211, 212, 214, 217, 220, 221, 482, 484  
 AVERY, William (1654) .....177, 267  
 BAILEY, Rev. John .....297  
 BAKER, Ephraim (1733) .....454  
     John (1644) .....137, 136, 194, 268, 484  
     John (1703) ...349, 350, 359, 433, 454, 481, 486  
     Richard (1658) .....185, 8, 137, 161, 184  
     Thomas (1682) .....268, 486  
     Thomas (1694) .....302, 310  
     Thomas (1703) .....350, 349, 379, 448  
     Thomas (1732) .....448, 466  
 BALLARD, William (1638) .....53, 51  
 BALLENTINE, John (1682), 268, 269, 281, 282, 301, 303, 311, 314, 349, 370, 379, 402, 425, 484  
     John, Jr. (1694) ...303, 269, 295, 302, 323, 357, 363, 364, 379, 394, 399, 440, 483  
 BALSTON, Nathaniel (1714), 387, 386, 391, 392, 423, 433  
 BARBER, George (1646) .....156, 173  
 BARKER, Thomas (1641) .....112  
 BARNARD, John (1643) .....127, 125  
     John (1677) ..245, 191, 244, 271, 310, 323, 379, 387, 401, 468, 481  
     Rev. John .....401, 245, 343, 402, 407  
     Jonathan (1714) .....387, 386, 390, 391, 392  
     Matthew (1660), 191, 197, 201, 245, 264, 387, 468, 486  
     Matthew (1734) .....468  
     Richard (1662) .....197, 191  
     Thomas (1681) .....264, 191, 245, 290, 379  
 BARNES, Nathaniel (1676), 242, 166, 196, 241, 260, 264, 268, 272  
 BARRAT, Samuel (1717) ...397, 400, 410, 414, 435  
 BARRELL, John (1643), 127, 81, 125, 170, 176, 179, 181, 194  
 BARSTOW, George (1644) .....137, 136, 138  
 BARTHELEMEY, Richard (1643) .....127, 125  
 BASS, Samuel (1720) .....403, 414, 415, 487  
 BAXTER, Rev. Joseph .....396  
 BEAMSLEY, William (1656) .....179, 196, 484  
 BEAVIS, Thomas (1681) .....265, 264  
 BELCHER, Andrew (1642) .....120, 119, 320, 399  
     Rev. Joseph .....314, 315  
 BELKNAP, Abraham (1735) .....474, 292, 373, 419  
     Jeremiah (1711) (1724), 373, 292, 411, 413, 416, 419, 423, 435, 439, 472, 474, 487  
     Jeremiah (1745) .....373  
     Joseph (1658), 185, 146, 184, 211, 251, 291, 373, 419, 484, 487  
     Joseph, Jr. (1692), 291, 185, 292, 315, 373, 379, 416, 419, 421, 474, 487  
     Joseph (1742) .....291, 373, 403, 487  
     Nicholas (1725) ...419, 292, 373, 430, 433, 474  
 BELL, Daniel (1733) .....454, 486  
     Thomas (1643) .....127, 125, 179  
     Thomas, Jr. (1655) .....179, 178  
 BELLINGHAM, Richard ...19, 56, 92, 158, 163, 484  
 BENDALL, Edward (1638), 53, 7, 51, 54, 62, 63, 111, 142, 209, 213, 482, 484  
     Freegrace (1667) ...209, 53, 108, 212, 214, 217, 220, 240, 307, 484  
 BENDISH, Thomas (1671) .....217  
 BENNETT, John (1734) .....469, 468

- BENNETT, Peter (1672).....220, 232, 233, 234  
     Samuel (1639).....85, 86, 88  
 BERRY, Henry (1733).....454, 467, 473  
 BIGGS, John (1641).....112, 7, 182, 189, 482, 484  
 BILL, Richard (1707), 360, 370, 391, 392, 398, 403, 474  
     Thomas (1674).....227, 228, 360, 486  
 BILLINGS, Joseph (1694).....303, 302  
 BLACKBORNE (Blackburne), Walter (1638), 54, 51, 107  
 BLAKE, John (1642).....120, 119, 487  
     Nathaniel (1673).....223, 222, 240  
     Solomon (1719).....402, 403, 413, 486  
     William (1646).....156, 120, 223, 402  
 BLANCHARD, Joseph (1737).....478, 443  
 BLOWERS, Rev. Thomas...399, 398, 408, 460, 472  
 BLUE ANCHOR TAVERN.....111, 120  
 BLUE BELL TAVERN.....190, 207  
 BORDMAN, Aaron (1736).....475  
 BORLAND, John (1692), 292, 291, 312, 435, 481, 487  
 BOSWORTH, Samuel (1667).....209  
     Zacheus (1650).....169, 7, 168, 209, 218  
 BOURNE, Nehemiah (1638), 54, 8, 51, 55, 95, 98, 136, 484  
 BOWKER, Edmund (1646).....156  
 BOWLES, John (1645).....149, 152, 482  
 BRACKETT, Peter (1648)....164, 86, 211, 484, 487  
     Richard (1639).....86, 85, 164, 484  
 BRADFORD, Moses (1674).....228, 227, 484  
 BRADSHAW, Humphrey (1642).....120, 119, 182  
 BRATTLE, Edward (1694).....303, 302, 436  
     Thomas (1675), 235, 80, 104, 132, 182, 211, 234, 236, 256, 269, 281, 285, 296, 303, 312, 315, 333, 344, 346, 354, 368, 400, 436, 481, 483, 484, 487  
     William (1729), 436, 236, 435, 453, 466, 467, 483  
 BRATTLE STREET CHURCH.....315  
 BRIGHTON, Samuel (1681).....265, 264  
 BREWER, Daniel (1666).....205  
 BRIDEMORE, — (1639).....86, 85  
 BRIDGE, Benjamin (1711), 374, 252, 373, 380, 391, 397, 433  
     Ebenezer (1717), 397, 252, 374, 414, 415, 445, 447  
     Matthew (1643).....127, 125, 128, 234  
     Samuel (1679).....252, 251, 374, 397, 484  
     Thomas (1643).....128, 125  
     Rev. Thomas.....357, 356, 398  
 BRIDGES, Robert (1641), 112, 113, 119, 135, 481, 482  
 BRIDGHAM, Benjamin (1674).....228, 223, 227  
     Henry (1644), 138, 136, 182, 223, 228, 316, 350, 484  
     Henry (1699), 316, 228, 315, 350, 353, 359, 363, 366, 379, 487  
     Henry (1703).....350, 349, 359  
     Jonathan (1673), 223, 222, 228, 264, 316, 350, 484  
     Joseph (1674), 228, 223, 227, 268, 282, 284, 316, 364, 481, 484  
 BRIGGS, William (—).....379  
 BRINLEY, Thomas (1681).....265, 264, 276, 351  
 BRISCOE, Joseph (1692), 292, 291, 293, 308, 350, 487  
     Joseph (1703).....350, 292, 349, 359  
 BROMFIELD, Edward (1679) (1707), 252, 251, 253, 260, 281, 293, 294, 354, 360, 366, 375, 417, 448, 481, 482, 487  
     Edward, Jr. (1732)....448, 252, 449, 466, 481, 487  
 BROOKHAVEN, John (1681).....265, 264  
 BROUGHTON, George (1667).....209, 234  
 BROWN, Edmund (1691).....283, 162, 223, 282  
     Rev. Edmund.....208, 283  
 BROWNE (Brown), James (1638), 55, 7, 51, 175, 484  
 BROWNE, James (1643).....128, 125  
 BUCANAN (Buchanan), John (1695)....308, 321, 351, 379  
 BUCKLEY, David (1698).....313  
 BULFINCH, Adino (1702)....335, 356, 379, 391, 393, 435  
 BULKLEY, Rev. Edward.....259  
     Richard (1722).....411, 414, 418, 439  
     (Buckley), Thomas (1685).....274, 8  
 BUMSTEAD, Thomas (1647), 161, 182, 209, 229, 484  
     Thomas (1764).....161  
 BURCHAM, William (1644).....138, 136  
 BURROUGHS, Francis (1686).....277, 276  
 BURTON, STEPHEN (1680).....260  
 BUSBY, Abraham (1647).....162, 161  
 BUTCHER, Robert (1676).....242, 241, 487  
 BUTLER, John (1644).....138, 136  
 BUTTOLPH, John (1720).....403, 414, 448  
     Nicholas (1694), 303, 302, 356, 379, 403, 421, 435  
 BUTTON, John (1643)....128, 7, 125, 182, 482, 485  
 BYFIELD, Nathaniel (1679), 253, 139, 251, 254, 260, 262, 263, 268, 315, 320, 329, 343, 379, 383, 416, 434, 435, 482  
 BY-LAWS OF THE COMPANY.....10, 11, 183, 327  
 CAKEBREAD, Thomas (1637).....41, 12, 162  
 CALFE, Robert, Jr. (1710)....370, 374, 380, 391, 428  
 CALL (Cawle), Jonathan (1682).....269, 268, 484  
 CALLENDER, Joseph (1703).....351, 349  
 CAMPBELL, Duncan (1686).....277, 276  
 CAPEN, John (1646).....157, 44, 120, 156, 168  
 CAREY, James (1723).....415, 414, 425, 430, 461  
     Jonathan (1740)....415, 461  
 CARNES, Edward (1755).....455  
     John (1649).....167, 166, 454  
     John (1733).....454, 167, 453, 455, 460, 466  
     Thomas (1754).....455  
 CARTER, Josiah (1732).....449, 448, 466  
     Samuel (1648).....164  
 CASTLE WILLIAM (Castle Island) (Fort Independence), 59, 88, 124, 157, 167, 172, 199, 222, 227, 290, 453  
 CHAFFY, Matthew (1642).....120, 119, 485  
 CHAMBERLIN, Thomas (1714)....387, 386, 408, 414  
 CHANDLER, John (1725), 419, 298, 420, 430, 469, 470, 471, 482  
     John, Jr. (1734)....469, 419, 420, 468, 470, 475  
 CHARTER OF THE COMPANY.....9, 10, 11  
 CHAUNCEY (Chauncey), Charles (1699), 316, 315, 319, 320, 330, 331, 359, 473, 487  
     Rev. Charles.....473, 472  
 CHECKLEY, Anthony (1662), 197, 153, 198, 207, 242, 244, 260, 271, 276, 282, 291, 308  
     Anthony, Jr. (1695).....308, 313  
     Samuel (1678), 249, 153, 198, 250, 274, 281, 282, 301, 323, 331, 356, 357, 364, 369, 372, 379, 384, 385, 393, 398, 423, 481, 486, 487  
     Rev. Samuel.....423, 249, 435  
     Rev. Samuel.....249  
 CHEESEHOLM (Chisholm), Thomas (1638)....55, 51  
 CHEEVER, Ezekiel (1733), 455, 449, 454, 456, 466, 474, 475  
     Joshua (1732), 449, 386, 448, 455, 456, 466, 473, 475, 481, 486  
     Nathan (1733).....455, 454, 456, 468  
     Rev. Samuel.....274  
 CHICKERING, Francis (1643).....128, 125, 149  
 CHILD, Robert (1639).....86, 85, 87, 89, 111, 155  
 CHURCH, Benjamin (1742).....483



- CLAP, Roger (1646), 157, 88, 156, 161, 172, 178, 222, 298  
 CLARK, Benjamin (1733) ..456, 316, 454, 467, 473, 487  
   Rev. Peter .....477  
   Thomas (1733) .....456, 326, 454  
   (Clarke), William (1646) .....158, 9, 156, 234  
   William (1699), 316, 315, 317, 349, 351, 359, 456, 481, 482, 487  
 CLARKE, Andrew (1675) .....236, 235  
   Francis (1701) .....332, 351, 353, 359, 364, 481  
   Hugh (1666) .....205, 206, 232  
   Nicholas (1656) .....180, 179  
   Thomas (1638), 56, 7, 8, 51, 64, 84, 92, 111, 138, 143, 144, 170, 175, 181, 189, 200, 201, 202, 253, 274, 480, 482, 483  
   Thomas (1644), 138, 9, 115, 135, 136, 139, 148, 168, 175, 176, 191, 195, 197, 214, 221, 238, 245, 259, 264, 274, 341, 481, 484, 485  
   Thomas (1685) .....274, 261, 276, 315  
   Timothy (1702), 335, 315, 320, 336, 342, 349, 353, 357, 358, 360, 364, 366, 373, 379, 396, 400, 466, 469, 481  
   William (1703), 351, 332, 349, 357, 359, 402, 409, 416, 418  
 CLEMENTS, William (1662) ...198, 9, 197, 199, 201  
 CLIFFORD, George (1644) .....139, 76, 136, 485  
 CLOUGH, John (1691), 283, 282, 284, 308, 406, 487  
   Samuel (1694) .....304, 302, 332  
   William (1695) .....308, 406, 486  
 COCK, William (1733) .....456, 454  
 CODMAN, John (1733) .....456, 453, 454, 467, 484  
 COFFIN, Gear (1734) .....470, 468, 473  
 COGGAN, John (1638), 57, 41, 51, 87, 96, 124, 161, 181, 188, 279, 480, 482, 483  
 COIT, Job (1727) .....425, 430, 445  
 COITMORE, Thomas (1639) .....87, 57, 85, 96, 484  
 COLE, Ann (Mansfield) (Keayne) ...20, 30, 68, 69  
   John (1642) .....120, 119  
   John (1648) .....165, 164  
   Samuel (1637), 30, 7, 12, 20, 50, 57, 120, 159, 170, 181, 182, 480, 482, 483, 485  
   Thomas (1682) .....269, 268  
 COLLICOTT, Richard (1637) .....42, 9, 12, 486  
 COLLINS, Edward (1641) .....114, 110, 112, 232  
 COLMAN, Rev. Benjamin ...348, 242, 315, 349, 355  
   (Coleman), William (1676), 242, 207, 241, 271, 290, 392  
 COMBS, John (1693) .....298  
 CONEY, John (1662), 198, 182, 197, 220, 276, 302, 367, 435, 486  
 COOKE, Elisha, Jr. (1699), 317, 129, 254, 287, 315, 318, 320, 331, 347, 348, 350, 364, 379, 383, 392, 396, 402, 409, 425, 433, 434, 435, 448, 460, 468, 477, 481, 482, 483  
   George (1638), 57, 8, 40, 45, 51, 52, 58, 60, 99, 110, 117, 124, 136, 150, 482  
   Joseph (1640) .....99, 57, 58, 60  
   Richard (1643) ..129, 7, 125, 181, 205, 211, 317, 484, 485  
 COOKSON, John (1701), 332, 321, 333, 359, 410, 414, 415, 418, 423, 439, 486  
 COOPER, Rev. Samuel .....414  
   Rev. William .....414, 357  
 COPELAND, Ephraim (1733) .....456, 454, 467  
 CORNISH, James (1691) .....283, 282  
 COSEN (Cozens), Francis (1640) .....98, 99  
 COTTA, John (1679), 254, 251, 290, 313, 379, 451, 485  
   John, Jr. (1698) .....313, 254, 314, 356, 359  
 COTTON, Rev. John, 171, 13, 14, 15, 19, 20, 37, 65, 68, 91, 118, 126, 131, 148, 155, 164, 176, 177, 190, 226, 359  
   Rev. Rowland .....359  
   Rev. Seaborn .....226  
   William (1650) .....169, 168, 180, 184, 189, 191, 195, 197, 485  
 COURTNEY, David (1640) .....99  
 CRAFTS, John (1668) .....211  
 CREEKE, Edward (1674) ...228, 227, 234, 274, 276  
 CROSMAN, Robert (1644) .....139, 136  
 CROW, William (1696) .....310  
 CRYNES, Nathaniel (1685) .....275, 274  
 CUMBY, Robert (1691) ....283, 282, 290, 298, 301, 308, 310, 311, 379, 386, 486  
 CUNNINGHAM, Andrew (1720) ..404, 403, 414, 415  
   Nathaniel (1720) ...404, 386, 403, 410, 414, 425, 431, 432, 435, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 452, 468, 475  
 CURTIS, Philip (1666) ....206, 205, 217, 234, 237  
 CUSHING, Benjamin (1700), 324, 323, 331, 359, 486  
   Thomas (1691), 284, 282, 311, 339, 360, 364, 366, 372, 379, 380, 392, 408, 418, 425, 435, 448, 473, 481, 482, 486  
 CUTLER, John (1681) .....265, 234, 264, 267, 272  
 CUTTER, Richard (1643) .....129, 58, 125  
   William (1638) .....58, 51, 129  
 DANFORTH, Rev. John .....301, 309, 366  
   Rev. Samuel (Roxbury) ..210, 135, 301, 324, 366  
   Rev. Samuel (Taunton) .....366, 365  
 DARRELL, John (1714) ....388, 386, 413, 414, 477  
 D'AULNAV, — .....63, 89, 113, 119, 192  
 DAVENPORT, Addington (1692), 293, 88, 291, 315, 364, 373, 380, 383, 392, 416, 481, 482, 483  
   James (1727) .....426, 425, 439, 448, 474  
   John (1694) .....304, 302  
   Richard (1639), 87, 8, 72, 85, 88, 137, 157, 167, 173, 199, 201, 212, 293, 304  
 DAVIE, Humphrey (1665), 202, 9, 203, 216, 365, 481  
   James (1708) .....365, 364  
 DAVIS, Benjamin (1673) ..223, 108, 130, 217, 222, 238, 245, 249, 251, 263, 264, 276, 315, 360, 487  
   James (1651) .....171, 182, 219, 485  
   John (1643) .....129, 9, 125, 269, 485  
   Joseph (1675) .....236, 211, 235, 260, 485, 487  
   Tobias (1666) .....206, 205, 211  
   William (1643) ...129, 9, 64, 104, 125, 130, 148, 154, 172, 179, 181, 189, 194, 199, 200, 201, 211, 220, 223, 234, 236, 245, 480, 485, 487  
   William (1677) .....245, 130, 244  
 DAVISON, Daniel (1672) .....220  
   Nicholas (1648) .....165, 164, 220, 266, 483  
 DAWES, Ambrose (1674) ...229, 227, 238, 261, 487  
   Thomas, Jr. (1754) .....229, 382, 422, 454  
   William, Sr. (1760) .....229, 487  
   William, Jr. (1768) .....229  
 DAY, James (1733) .....457, 377, 419, 454, 467  
   Wentworth (1640) .....99, 100, 485  
 DEERING, Henry (1682), 269, 72, 219, 268, 271, 272, 274, 282, 298, 310, 331, 373, 379, 386, 448, 481  
 DENISON, Daniel (1660), 191, 8, 25, 52, 82, 88, 180, 181, 192, 233, 234, 245, 355, 481, 482, 483  
 DESHON, Moses (1737) .....479, 388, 478  
 DEWER, Sampson (1718) .....400, 308  
 DINSDALE, William (1658) .....185, 184, 234, 485  
 DOWDING, Joseph (1727) ....426, 425, 439, 486  
 DOWNE, John (1758) .....394  
   Thomas (1733) .....457, 435, 453, 454, 468

- DOWNE, William (1716), 394, 208, 395, 401, 414, 418, 422, 425, 431, 432, 447, 448, 452, 466, 467, 473, 480, 481  
 DRAPER, Moses (1693).....298, 486  
 DRIVER, George (1701).....333, 332, 359  
 DROWNE, Thomas (1737).....479, 478  
 DRURY, Hugh (1659), 190, 130, 182, 189, 201, 207, 229, 485  
     John (1674).....229, 227, 233, 234, 487  
 DUDLEY, Joseph (1677).....245, 123, 143, 212, 215, 225, 233, 234, 244, 246, 247, 248, 250, 254, 260, 264, 273, 292, 296, 333, 334, 337-341, 349, 481, 482  
     Paul (1677).....248, 231, 244, 246, 482, 487  
     Sarah.....67  
     Thomas, 135, 11, 23, 37, 67, 68, 94, 104, 105, 106, 148, 191, 245, 246, 355, 483  
 DUMMER, Jeremiah (1671), 217, 93, 244, 251, 337, 354, 393, 481, 485  
     William (1702), 337, 217, 282, 290, 318, 331, 335, 338, 359, 383, 401, 481, 482, 483  
 DUNCAN, Nathaniel (1638), 58, 8, 10, 11, 12, 40, 42, 51, 59, 115, 121, 177, 182, 328, 485  
     Nathaniel, Jr. (1642).....121, 58, 119, 177  
     Peter (1654).....177, 58, 182  
 DUNSTABLE ARTILLERY FARM.....222, 393, 431, 432, 440, 445, 446, 452  
 DUNSTER, Henry (1640), 100, 58, 99, 124, 311, 316, 483  
 DURANT, Edward (1725).....420, 419, 423  
 DURE (Dewer), David (1695).....308, 400  
 DUREN, Andrew (1644).....140, 136  
 DURHAM, Samuel (1712).....380, 413  
 DWIGHT, Joseph (1734).....470, 339, 468, 471, 483  
     Seth (1702).....339, 335, 359, 363, 470  
 DYAR, Benjamin (1691), 284, 234, 282, 308, 359, 457  
     John (1691).....284, 282, 301  
     Joseph (1733).....457, 454  
 DYER, Barret (1711).....374, 343, 373, 380, 414, 435  
     Giles (1680).....260, 261, 276, 335, 373, 481  
  
 EDSALL, Thomas (1652).....173, 172, 182  
 EDWARDS, John (1699), 318, 302, 315, 319, 353, 359, 365, 416  
     John, Jr. (1747).....416  
     Joseph (1738).....318, 416  
     Thomas (1724).....416, 318, 434, 439  
 ELDRED, Samuel (1641).....114, 112  
 ELIOT, Benjamin (1707).....360, 359, 379, 388  
     John (1714).....388, 386, 408, 414  
     Philip (1638).....59, 51, 52, 160, 161, 360, 388  
 ELKIN, Nathaniel (1678).....249  
 ELLIS, John (1709).....367, 391  
 EMERSON, Edward (1729).....437, 435, 439  
 EMMONS, Benjamin, Jr. (1698), 314, 313, 363, 379, 408, 487  
 ENDICOTT, Governor John, 6, 39, 40, 44, 57, 68, 74, 78, 87, 88, 102, 104, 167, 175, 176, 195, 319  
     John (1733).....457, 454, 458, 466  
 EPES, Daniel (1706).....358, 359, 370, 471, 482  
     Daniel, Jr. (1734).....471, 468, 473, 477  
 ESSEX, Joseph (1712).....380, 391  
 EUSTACE (Eustis), John (1711).....374, 373, 380  
 EVANS, Henry (1652).....173, 172  
     Josias (1642).....121, 9, 119  
 EVERED, John, see *Webb, John* (1643).  
 EYRE, John (1682), 269, 268, 270, 296, 400, 481, 487  
     John (1718).....400, 410, 414, 483  
  
 FAIRBANKS, George (1644).....140, 136  
     Richard (1654).....177, 7, 111, 179  
 FARNAM (Farnham, Farnum), Jonathan (1681), 265, 264, 486  
 FARNHAM, Henry (1644).....140, 136, 229, 265  
 FARNUM (Farnam), Joseph (1674).....229, 227, 485  
 FAWER, Gibson (1692).....293, 291  
 FENNO, Ephraim (1711).....374, 373, 380  
 FEMYS (Fermace, Formais, Vermaes), — (1638), 59, 51, 60, 98  
 FERNLY, Waterhouse (1700).....324, 323, 359  
 FEVEYER, Grafton (1717), 397, 407, 408, 414, 486  
 FIRST CHURCH IN CHARLESTOWN.....484  
 FIRST CHURCH IN BOSTON, 49, 50, 168, 484, 485, 486  
 FISHER, Anthony (1644).....140, 100, 102, 136, 156  
     Daniel (1640).....100, 99, 101, 102, 134, 140, 178, 481, 482  
     Joshua (1640), 102, 99, 100, 110, 114, 140, 163, 165  
 FISKE, Rev. Moses.....307  
 FITCH, Joseph (1733).....458, 454, 468  
     Thomas (1700), 324, 269, 282, 323, 325, 330, 331, 342, 347, 349, 350, 356, 359, 360, 363, 364, 367, 384, 385, 392, 393, 398, 402, 403, 416, 418, 422, 431, 432, 433, 435, 436, 442, 447, 448, 453, 454, 465, 467, 468, 469, 472, 481, 482, 483, 487  
     Zachariah (1733).....458, 454  
 FLEET, Thomas (1727).....426, 425, 427, 439, 445  
 FLETCHER, Edward (1643).....130, 9, 125, 190, 485  
 FLINT, Rev. Henry.....184, 248  
     Rev. Josiah.....248  
 FOGG, Ralph (1644).....140, 9, 136, 141  
 FOOTE (Foot), Caleb (1648).....165, 164  
 FOSDICK, James (1722).....411, 373, 414, 418  
 FOSTER, Hopeskill (1642), 121, 119, 161, 211, 223, 304  
     Hopeskill (1673), 223, 121, 137, 162, 222, 230, 232, 283, 304  
     Hopeskill (1694), 304, 121, 223, 283, 302, 359, 474  
     John (1679), 254, 143, 251, 279, 280, 281, 305, 341, 340, 354, 364, 400, 481, 482, 486  
     Thomas (1668).....211, 485  
     Thomas (1701).....333, 332, 359, 411  
     Thomas (1722).....411, 333, 412, 414, 418, 474  
 FOWLE (Fowles), Thomas (1639), 88, 24, 85, 89, 111, 155, 156, 186, 298, 480, 485, 486  
 FOWLES, James (1693).....298  
 FOXCROFT, Francis (1679), 255, 234, 251, 271, 276, 279, 354, 388, 415, 482  
     Rev. Thomas.....415, 198  
 FRARY, THEOPHILUS (1666), 206, 145, 205, 207, 211, 226, 232, 234, 268, 294, 481, 485, 487  
     William (1703).....351, 349, 379  
 FRENCH, William (1638).....60, 51, 121, 122  
 FRIEND, John (1640).....103, 99, 483  
 FURNEL, Strong (1651).....171, 485  
  
 GALPINE, Calvin (1702).....339, 335, 340, 379  
 GASKELL, Samuel, Jr. (1699).....319, 315, 359, 487  
 GATCHELL, Increase (1727).....428, 425, 439  
 GAY, Rev. Ebenezer.....434  
 GEDNEY, Bartholomew (1726).....423, 424, 439, 445, 468, 473, 475, 477  
 GEE, Rev. Joshua.....443, 440, 442, 472, 473  
 GEORGE, John (1702), 340, 276, 290, 325, 335, 364, 366, 379, 487  
 GERRISH, Benjamin (1714).....388, 325, 369, 386, 391, 432, 487

- GERRISH, John (1700) .. 325, 323, 331, 334, 340, 359, 366, 369, 380, 385, 388, 401, 432  
 John, Jr. (1718), 401, 325, 388, 400, 414, 432, 473, 487  
 Rev. Joseph..... 369  
 Samuel (1709), 367, 368, 369, 380, 388, 391, 432, 487  
 GIBBINS, John (1711) .. 375, 40, 285, 373, 380, 398, 483  
 (Gibbons), William (1691) .... 285, 40, 282, 375  
 GIBBONS, Daniel L. (1810)..... 40  
 Edward (1637) .. 38, 1, 7, 12, 14, 19, 22, 39, 40, 41, 51, 52, 63, 66, 84, 88, 91, 112, 118, 119, 125, 154, 155, 167, 170, 176, 212, 285, 480, 481, 483, 484, 485  
 John (1717) ..... 398, 397, 403, 414  
 GIBBS, Benjamin (1666) .. 207, 153, 205, 234, 240, 242, 483, 485, 487  
 Henry (1726) .. 424, 293, 423, 439, 444, 453, 487  
 Rev. Henry..... 356  
 Robert (1692), 293, 182, 291, 298, 311, 313, 315, 323, 330, 331, 335, 424, 481, 487  
 GIBSON, William (1675)..... 236, 235, 272, 485  
 GIFTS TO HARVARD COLLEGE..... 483  
 GILBERT, Jonathan (1653) ..... 175  
 GILL, Obadiah (1679) ..... 255, 251, 282, 486  
 GLOVER, Thomas (1642) ..... 121, 9, 119  
 GODFREY, Thomas (1701)..... 333, 332, 359  
 GOFFE, Daniel (1712), 380, 381, 386, 391, 448, 467, 468  
 GOLDTHWAIT, Benjamin (1740)..... 375  
 John (1711) (1720), 375, 373, 386, 403, 405, 408, 412, 414, 444, 448, 450, 474, 486  
 Joseph (1732)..... 450, 375, 448  
 GOOCH, James (1714), 389, 386, 396, 414, 435, 453  
 GOODING (Goodwin), Thomas (1733) .. 458, 454, 467, 468  
 GOODWIN, Nathaniel (1711) .. 375, 373, 380, 400, 406, 415, 458, 487  
 GOOKIN, Daniel (1645) . . 149, 114, 123, 150, 176, 203, 233, 481, 482, 484, 485  
 GORE, Christopher (1814) ..... 61  
 John (1638) ..... 60, 51, 61, 178  
 John (1743) ..... 61  
 Samuel (1786) ..... 61  
 Stephen (1773) ..... 61  
 GORTON, Samuel..... 45, 52, 58, 61, 117  
 GRANT, John (1733) ..... 458, 454, 467, 473  
 John (1769) ..... 458  
 Ulysses S. .... 43  
 GRAY, Benjamin (1717) ..... 398, 397, 414  
 Samuel (1706) ..... 358  
 GREAT HOUSE (Three Cranes) ..... 93, 96  
 GREEN DRAGON TAVERN..... 65, 145, 168, 292  
 GREEN, James (1674) ..... 229, 227, 230, 304, 375, 486  
 Nathaniel (1722) .. 412, 408, 410, 411, 414, 435  
 Richard (1694)..... 304, 230, 302, 375  
 Samuel (1638)..... 61, 51, 81  
 Samuel (1711)..... 375, 304, 373, 380, 487  
 GREENE, Jacob (1650) ..... 169, 168  
 John (1639)..... 89, 85, 90, 169  
 GREENLEAF, Enoch (1680) .... 261, 260, 301, 373  
 John (1727)..... 428, 425, 439  
 Joseph (1680) ..... 261, 260  
 GREENOUGH, John (1712), 381, 236, 380, 396, 398, 400, 413, 423, 445, 446, 447  
 Newman (1740)..... 381  
 Samuel (1786)..... 381  
 GREENOUGH, Thomas (1744)..... 381  
 William (1675), 236, 235, 251, 274, 282, 356, 381, 486  
 GREENSMITH, Stephen (1638)..... 62, 51, 54  
 GREENWOOD, Samuel (1722), 412, 411, 415, 483, 486  
 GRIDLEY, Believe (1662)..... 198, 186, 197  
 Joseph (1662)..... 198, 186, 197, 308  
 Richard (1658) .. 185, 7, 63, 182, 184, 186, 198, 308, 433, 485  
 Richard (1695)..... 308, 198, 311, 487  
 GRIGGS, William (1675)..... 237, 235, 315, 485  
 GUNNISON, Hugh (1646) ..... 158, 7, 93, 156, 485  
 GURNELL, John (1643)..... 130, 125  
 GUTTERIDGE (Goodridge), John (1640) .. 103, 99, 304, 485  
 Robert (1694) ..... 304, 276, 302, 303, 406, 435  
 HALE, Rev. John ..... 272  
 Robert (1644)..... 141, 58, 136, 484, 485  
 HALL, Nathaniel (1692) ..... 293, 291, 486  
 Richard (1707) ..... 361, 360, 370  
 Samuel (1638)..... 62, 51  
 HALLOWELL, Benjamin (1733), 458, 403, 454, 467, 468, 473  
 HALSEY (Halsall), George (1650) ..... 170, 168  
 James (1716)..... 395, 394, 403, 414  
 HAMMOND, Lawrence (1666), 207, 98, 205, 209, 214, 220, 265, 267, 484  
 HANCOCK, Rev. John..... 444  
 HANSETT, John (1647)..... 162, 161  
 HARDIER, John (1641)..... 114, 112  
 HARDING, Richard (1646)..... 158, 156  
 (Hardinge), Robert (1637) .. 41, 7, 12, 68, 279, 480, 482, 485  
 HARLAKENDEN, Roger..... 57, 94, 99, 110  
 HARRIS, Anthony (1644)..... 141, 136  
 HARRISON, John (1638) .. 62, 9, 51, 63, 286, 485  
 Richard (1646) ..... 158, 156  
 HARVARD COLLEGE GRADUATES..... 482, 483  
 HASEY, William (1652)..... 173, 9, 172, 174, 234  
 HATCH, Estes (1711)..... 376, 373, 391, 454, 465  
 HAUGH, Samuel (1711)..... 376, 373, 380, 384  
 HAWKINS, James (1680) ..... 261, 260  
 Thomas (1638), 63, 9, 51, 66, 119, 124, 135, 137, 143, 144, 201, 214, 305  
 Thomas (1649) ..... 168, 9, 63, 64, 65, 167, 181  
 HAYES, Rutherford B. .... 28  
 HAYNES, John (1639)..... 90, 91, 212, 481  
 (Haines), Walter (1639)..... 90, 85, 91  
 HAYWARD, John (1673), 224, 222, 249, 251, 260, 483  
 HELYER, John (1727)..... 428, 425, 439, 445, 486  
 HENCHMAN, Daniel (1675), 237, 11, 13, 25, 206, 220, 233, 234, 235, 238, 243, 248, 268, 284, 299, 381, 487  
 Daniel (1712), 381, 294, 322, 371, 380, 382, 386, 391, 421, 444, 453, 465, 467, 473, 477, 480, 483, 487  
 Hezekiah (1692)..... 294, 291, 381  
 HEWES (Hughes), Joshua (1637), 29, 12, 30, 47, 64, 125, 161, 165, 175, 176, 182, 483  
 HIGGINSON, Rev. John..... 199  
 HILL, James (1677), 248, 223, 228, 244, 249, 252, 274, 279, 283, 379, 481, 487  
 James (1717) ..... 398, 397, 408, 410, 414, 486  
 John (1643)..... 130, 9, 125, 485  
 John (1647)..... 162, 45, 161, 248  
 Joseph (1691)..... 285, 282, 486  
 Valentine (1638), 64, 51, 107, 173, 285, 480, 485



- HILLER, Benjamin (1714), 389, 368, 386, 392, 396, 414  
 Joseph, Jr. (1709), 368, 367, 380, 384, 389, 394, 400, 401
- HILLIER, Hugh ..... 28
- HINSDALE, Robert (1645) ..... 150, 149
- HOBART, David (1674) ..... 230, 227  
 Joshua (1641) .. 114, 112, 115, 169, 230, 234, 482  
 Rev. Nehemiah ..... 277, 263  
 Rev. Peter ..... 179, 114, 230, 277
- HOBBY, Charles (1702), 340, 282, 331, 334, 335, 341, 348, 353, 379, 384, 428  
 John (1727) ..... 428, 425, 430
- HODGDON, Nathaniel (1727) ... 428, 425, 430, 433, 486
- HOLMAN, John (1637) ..... 41, 12, 42
- HOLMES, Nathaniel (1693) ..... 298, 234, 308
- HOLYOKE, Rev. Edward ..... 407  
 John (1714) ..... 389, 386, 400, 414  
 Samuel (1714), 389, 386, 390, 391, 401, 425, 432, 433, 434, 442, 444, 445, 446, 447, 452
- HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY OF LONDON, 3, 4, 5, 8, 216
- HOUGH, Atherton (1643) .. 131, 125, 147, 480, 481, 485
- HOWARD, Nathaniel (1641) ..... 115, 112  
 William (1661) ..... 195, 196, 202, 485
- HOWCHIN (Houchin), Jeremiah (1641) .. 115, 97, 112, 181, 201, 241, 480, 485
- HOWE (Haugh), Daniel (1637), 26, 8, 12, 27, 47, 81
- HUBBARD, Joseph (1707) (1717), 361, 360, 379, 397, 398, 401, 414, 474, 484  
 Mr. (see *Rev. Nehemiah Hobart*) ..... 276  
 Thomas (1732) ..... 450, 448, 466, 473, 477, 487
- HUCKENS (Huckins, Hutchins), Thomas (1637), 28, 12, 84, 136, 234
- HUDSON, William (1640), 103, 93, 95, 99, 104, 129, 130, 136, 154, 161, 165, 168, 170, 175, 179, 181, 188, 191, 195, 201, 236, 239, 263, 343, 482, 485
- HULL, John (1638) ..... 64, 51, 172, 193  
 John (1660), 193, 26, 64, 129, 181, 191, 194, 195, 199, 201, 202, 206, 211, 217, 233, 239, 244, 249, 258, 263, 391, 481, 483, 485, 487  
 Thomas (1666) ..... 207, 205
- HUMFKEY, John (1640), 104, 99, 105, 116, 117, 481, 483  
 John, Jr. (1641) ..... 116, 105, 112
- HUNLOCK, Edward (1682) ..... 270, 268
- HUNN, Nathaniel (1662) ..... 198, 197
- HUNNEWELL, Ambrose (1695) ..... 308, 376  
 Richard (1711) ..... 376, 373, 380
- HUNT, Ephraim (1717) ... 398, 275, 368, 386, 397, 401, 414, 482  
 Jabez (1727) .. 428, 425, 434, 439, 445, 448, 453  
 John (1709) .. 368, 275, 367, 384, 391, 404, 435, 473  
 Thomas (1685) .. 275, 9, 234, 274, 282, 308, 313, 323, 357, 368, 379, 398, 481, 486, 487
- HURD, John (1640) ..... 105, 99, 106, 485
- HUTCHINSON, Ann, 7, 10, 24, 32, 37, 42, 53, 54, 59, 64, 65, 66, 81, 126, 129, 169, 174, 192  
 Edward (1638), 64, 7, 51, 60, 65, 66, 86, 92, 112, 151, 176, 180, 181, 189, 194, 202, 214, 234, 279, 304, 327, 480, 482, 485  
 Edward (1702), 341, 305, 331, 334, 335, 342, 343, 346, 359, 372, 373, 380, 384, 392, 393, 396, 398, 399, 400, 402, 408, 415, 416, 425, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 439, 440, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 450, 452, 453, 454, 468, 472, 474, 477, 481, 482, 486
- HUTCHINSON, Elisha (1670), 214, 64, 93, 139, 215, 217, 226, 230, 231, 238, 240, 250, 254, 261, 269, 272, 280, 282, 288, 304, 310, 311, 314, 323, 331, 336, 341, 345, 348, 349, 353, 357, 364, 372, 373, 379, 481, 482, 484  
 John (1645) ..... 151, 149, 174  
 Samuel (1652) ..... 174, 151, 172, 181  
 Thomas (1694), 304, 215, 282, 302, 305, 306, 313, 315, 329, 330, 341, 342, 343, 353, 356, 359, 360, 364, 373, 383, 385, 393, 396, 400, 402, 440, 442, 448, 474, 481, 482, 483, 486  
 William (1703) 351, 349, 352, 357, 379, 409, 483  
 William ..... 24, 64, 121, 174
- IVORY, William (1703) ..... 352, 349
- JACKSON, Edmund (1646), 159, 129, 156, 182, 294, 485  
 John (1675) ..... 238, 235  
 Joseph (1738) ..... 422, 457  
 Samuel (1733) ..... 459, 454, 467, 477  
 Thomas (1692) ..... 294, 291, 395, 435, 481  
 Thomas (1716) ..... 395, 294, 394, 400, 414, 484
- JACOBS, John (1682) ..... 270, 234, 268
- JENCKS, Richard (1666) ..... 207, 205, 486
- JENNER, Thomas (1673) ..... 224, 222, 484
- JENNISON, William (1637) ..... 34, 8, 12, 35, 87
- JESSE, David (1700) ..... 325, 323, 359
- JESSON, Jacob (1673) ..... 224, 222, 484
- JOHNSON, Edward (1637), 45, 12, 46, 52, 58, 82, 92, 94, 98, 133, 199, 200, 482  
 Isaac (1645), 151, 52, 59, 134, 149, 205, 209, 233, 234, 235  
 James (1638), 65, 7, 51, 66, 68, 135, 181, 182, 184, 207, 485  
 John (1638) ..... 66, 47, 51, 67, 68, 84, 98, 151  
 Samuel (1675) ..... 238, 235, 290, 311, 314, 379
- JONES, Elnathan (1734) ..... 471, 468, 477
- Henry (1700) ..... 325, 323, 359  
 Robert (1679) ..... 256, 234, 252  
 Samuel (1725) ..... 420, 419, 421, 433, 439  
 Thomas (1643) ..... 131, 123, 125, 304, 375
- JOY, Samuel (1665) ..... 203, 186, 202  
 Thomas (1658) ..... 186, 181, 184, 203
- JULIEN HOUSE ..... 138
- KEAYNE (Mansfield) (Cole), Ann, 12, 20, 30, 68, 69  
 (Lane) (Paige), Anna (Hannah), 20, 67, 68, 69, 299, 333  
 (Cane, Kaine, Kayne), Benjamin (1638), 67, 12, 51, 68, 69, 75, 112, 136, 180, 181, 245, 299, 485  
 (Cane, Kaine, Kayne), Robert (1637), 12, 7, 9, 10, 11, 13, 14, 15, 16, 19, 20, 21, 22, 28, 30, 34, 40, 47, 49, 59, 57, 58, 59, 66, 67, 68, 69, 76, 81, 93, 112, 116, 161, 177, 178, 180, 181, 182, 186, 188, 199, 210, 212, 274, 279, 287, 299, 324, 328, 333, 353, 372, 421, 480, 482, 483, 485  
 (Dudley) (Pacy), Sarah ..... 67, 68, 245, 299
- KEECH, John (1692) ..... 294, 291, 301
- KEELING, Samuel (1699), 319, 315, 320, 323, 353, 359, 364, 370, 372, 392
- KEEN, William (1692) (1702), 342, 294, 291, 315, 334, 335, 343, 359, 374
- KELLEY (Kelly), David (1644) ..... 141, 136
- KENT, Richard ..... 8  
 William (1667) ..... 210, 9, 209, 217, 221
- KIRBY, Henry (1644) ..... 141, 136
- KILBY, John (1691), 285, 282, 286, 310, 315, 339, 356, 379, 487



- KILCUP, Dudson (1727) . . . 429, 390, 425, 439, 444  
 KILCUB, Roger (1684) . . . 273, 276, 298, 362, 429  
 KILHAM (Kilhen), Daniel (1645) . . . 151, 149  
 KING'S CHAPEL . . . 274, 276, 277  
 KNIGHT, Edmund (1700) . . . 325, 323, 359, 402  
 KOLDOM (Coldam), Clement (1645) . . . 151, 149  
  
 LAKE, Thomas (1653), 175, 111, 118, 130, 176, 181,  
 182, 184, 191, 195, 197, 202, 226, 234, 481, 483,  
 486  
 LANE (Keayne) (Paige), Hannah (Anna), 20, 67,  
 68, 69, 299, 333  
 LARKIN, Edward (1644) . . . 141, 136  
 LATIN SCHOOL . . . 20  
 LA TOUR, — . . . 24, 40, 63, 89, 119, 124, 125,  
 153  
 LECHFORD, Thomas (1640) . . . 106, 99, 107  
 LEE, William (1720) . . . 405, 403, 414  
 LEVERETT, Hudson (1658), 186, 92, 184, 187, 197,  
 215, 352, 354, 437  
 John (1639), 91, 22, 23, 50, 64, 65, 70, 85, 91, 92,  
 93, 95, 98, 103, 105, 107, 112, 119, 122, 123,  
 124, 129, 132, 136, 150, 160, 163, 172, 173, 176,  
 177, 185, 186, 199, 200, 202, 214, 227, 231, 232,  
 233, 240, 248, 249, 253, 317, 352, 354, 437, 480,  
 481, 482, 484, 485  
 John (1704), 354, 92, 187, 215, 282, 330, 349, 352,  
 355, 359, 414, 482, 483  
 Knight (1729) . . . 437, 435, 439, 475  
 Thomas (1703) . . . 352, 349, 354, 379, 437  
 LEWIS, Ezekiel (1707), 361, 273, 307, 360, 362, 363,  
 373, 379, 408, 418, 425, 429, 435, 468, 481, 482,  
 483, 487  
 LIDGET, Charles (1679) . . . 256, 93, 234, 252, 276,  
 279, 280  
 LILLEY, Samuel (1692) . . . 294, 291, 486  
 LITCHFIELD, Lawrence (1640) . . . 107, 99  
 LLOYD, Henry (1703) . . . 352, 334, 349, 359  
 LONG, John (1681) . . . 266, 264, 487  
 Robert (1639) . . . 93, 85, 96, 266, 484  
 LONG TAVERN . . . 266  
 LONG WHARF . . . 320, 366, 454  
 LOOKER (Loker, Lucar), Henry (1640) . . . 107, 99  
 LORING, Jonathan (1704) . . . 355, 354, 359, 370, 481  
 Joshua (1722) . . . 412, 411, 414  
 LOTHROP, Rev. Samuel K. . . . 21  
 Thomas (1645) . . . 152, 149, 151, 233, 234  
 LOVE, Bennet (1727) . . . 429, 425, 439  
 LOWDER, William (1708), 365, 364, 370, 372, 379,  
 414  
 LOWELL (Lowle), Ebenezer (1711), 376, 218, 373,  
 377, 380  
 LOWLE (Lowell), John (1671) . . . 218, 217, 485  
 LUDKIN, William (1651) . . . 171  
 LUSCOMB, Humphrey (1678) . . . 249, 250, 256, 276  
 LUSHER, Eleazer (1638) . . . 70, 45, 51, 56, 92, 134,  
 135, 148, 154, 155, 161, 481, 484  
 LYALL (Lyle), Francis (1640), 107, 54, 99, 109, 122,  
 126, 136, 209, 211, 485  
 Joseph (1668) . . . 211  
 LYDE, Edward (1702) . . . 343, 335, 379  
 LYMAN, Caleb (1732), 450, 386, 448, 451, 466, 473,  
 480, 481, 486  
 LYNDE, Joseph (1681), 266, 165, 264, 268, 290, 482,  
 484  
 Samuel (1691) . . . 286, 276, 282, 346, 372  
 Simon (1658) . . . 187, 93, 159, 184, 188, 212, 234,  
 266, 286  
 LYON, William (1645) . . . 152, 149  
  
 MACCARTY, Thaddeus (1681) . . . 266, 264, 276, 365  
 MAKEPEACE, Thomas (1638) . . . 71, 51, 182  
 MALLARD, Thomas (1685) . . . 275, 274, 276  
 MANNING, John (1641) . . . 116, 112, 163  
 MANWARRING, Nathaniel (1644) . . . 141, 136  
 MARION, Edward (1727) . . . 429, 425, 434, 439, 473  
 John, Jr. (1691), 286, 62, 219, 282, 287, 301, 364,  
 378, 402, 408, 416, 418, 481  
 Samuel (1691), 287, 282, 286, 290, 298, 301, 308,  
 310, 311, 313, 315, 323, 330, 334, 429  
 MARSHALL, Christopher (1724) . . . 416, 425, 430  
 Samuel (1685), 275, 274, 282, 313, 323, 366, 481  
 Thomas (1640) . . . 108, 7, 99, 136, 181, 482, 485  
 MARTYN, Edward (1702), 343, 335, 344, 349, 370,  
 373, 379, 380, 391, 393, 486  
 MASON, David (1727) . . . 429, 425, 439, 448  
 Robert (1680) . . . 261, 260  
 Stephen (1686) . . . 277, 276, 486  
 MATHER, Rev. Cotton, 289, 93, 112, 180, 250, 263,  
 278, 280, 290, 310, 313, 315, 340, 353, 357, 363,  
 370, 386  
 Rev. Increase, 204, 152, 164, 176, 180, 243, 250,  
 263, 273, 289, 290, 295, 313, 323, 354, 370, 372  
 Rev. Richard . . . 180, 83, 204, 212  
 MAUDSLEY (Moseley), Henry (1643), 131, 125, 220  
 MAVERICK, Elias (1654) . . . 178, 141, 177, 184  
 Samuel (1658) . . . 187, 184, 89, 94, 111, 155  
 MAY, George (1661) . . . 196, 195, 485  
 MAYO, Rev. John . . . 189  
 MCDANIEL, Hugh (1729) . . . 437, 435, 439, 448  
 MEADER, John (1676) . . . 242, 241  
 MESSINGER, Henry (1658), 187, 182, 184, 188, 238  
 Simeon (1675) . . . 238, 188, 235  
 MICO, John (1702) . . . 344, 315, 335, 359, 462  
 MILAM (Milan), John (1641) . . . 116, 9, 112, 485  
 MILITARY OFFICERS OF THE COLONY . . . 481  
 MILITARY OFFICERS OF THE PROVINCE . . . 481, 482  
 MILLER, Samuel (1728) . . . 433, 439, 448  
 MILLS, John (1665) . . . 203, 202  
 MITCHELSON, Edward (1638) . . . 71, 51, 72, 269  
 MOODY, Rev. Joshua . . . 232, 275, 327  
 MOORE, John (1638) . . . 72, 51  
 John (1675) . . . 238, 235, 260, 485  
 MORE, John (1692) . . . 294, 291  
 MORRILL, Abraham (1638) . . . 72, 51, 73, 117  
 Isaac (1638) . . . 73, 51, 134, 205, 206  
 MORRIS (Maurice), Richard (1637) . . . 35, 7, 9, 12,  
 36, 37, 38, 39, 88, 167, 170, 485  
 MORSE, Ephraim (1675) . . . 238, 235  
 Francis (1673) . . . 224, 222  
 John (1671) . . . 218, 184, 211, 217, 221, 226, 232,  
 233, 234, 235, 240, 244, 487  
 MORTIMER, Richard (1727) . . . 429, 425, 439  
 MOSELEY (Maudsley), Samuel (1672), 220, 25, 131,  
 145, 173, 218, 221, 229, 233, 234, 235, 244  
 MOUNTFORT, Benjamin (1679), 256, 252, 276, 312,  
 461, 486  
 John (1697) . . . 312, 256, 311, 321, 379, 396, 461  
 Napoleon B. (1826) . . . 312  
 MOUSALL, John (1641) . . . 116, 112, 484  
 MUSSELWHITE, John (1639) . . . 94, 85  
 MYNGS, Christopher (1701) . . . 333, 332, 334, 379  
  
 NEALE, Walter . . . 4  
 NELSON, John (1680), 262, 260, 263, 270, 276, 279,  
 352  
 NEW NORTH CHURCH . . . 386, 390  
 NEWGATE, Nathaniel (1646), 159, 76, 139, 146, 156  
 NEWTON, John (1641) . . . 116, 112, 117, 205

- NEWTON, Thomas (1702) (1703), 344, 291, 335, 345, 349, 352, 359, 364, 379  
 NICHOLS, John (1675) ..... 238, 235, 487  
     John (1702) ..... 345, 335, 379  
     William (1727) ..... 429, 425, 430, 434  
 NORMAN, Thomas (1670) ..... 215, 214  
 NORTH BATTERY ..... 179, 202, 353, 357  
 NORTON, David (1692) ..... 294, 291, 486  
     Francis (1643), 132, 7, 45, 64, 125, 135, 148, 161, 166, 168, 172, 178, 231, 266, 484  
     Rev. John ..... 148, 19, 181, 190  
 NOWELL, George (1662) ..... 198, 197  
     Rev. Samuel ..... 250, 251  
 NOYES, John (1676) ..... 242, 241, 249, 314, 319  
     John (1698), 314, 313, 315, 320, 325, 331, 353, 356, 379, 487  
     Oliver (1699), 319, 242, 314, 315, 320, 325, 330, 340, 357, 360, 363, 364, 366, 367, 379, 380, 392, 402, 435, 481, 483, 487  
 OAKES, Edward (1700), 325, 323, 349, 353, 356, 359  
     Samuel (1712) ..... 383, 380, 413  
     Thomas (1684) ..... 273, 247, 274, 383, 482  
     Rev. Urian ..... 221, 200, 204, 273, 365  
 ODLIN, see *Audlin*.  
 OFFLEY, David (1638) ..... 73, 51, 74  
 OLD SOUTH CHURCH ..... 211, 487  
 OLD TOWN-HOUSE ..... 16, 181, 182, 372  
 OLIVER, Brattle (1709) .... 368, 333, 367, 391, 487  
     Henry K. (1837) ..... 414  
     James (1640), 108, 28, 65, 99, 109, 154, 163, 165, 170, 175, 179, 181, 199, 200, 205, 212, 224, 233, 234, 235, 244, 480, 483, 485  
     John (1637), 28, 7, 12, 29, 47, 65, 66, 84, 108, 132, 159, 165, 221, 279, 480, 482, 485  
     John (1680) ..... 263, 28, 225, 260, 486  
     Nathaniel, Jr. (1701), 333, 270, 319, 332, 334, 347, 349, 350, 359, 368, 379, 396, 398, 402, 483  
     Peter (1643), 132, 28, 65, 109, 125, 146, 159, 165, 170, 179, 181, 184, 194, 203, 210, 211, 212, 242, 314, 319, 320, 333, 368, 480, 483, 485, 487  
     Samuel (1648) .. 165, 28, 65, 102, 132, 163, 164, 170, 485  
 ORY, Ralph (1640) ..... 109, 99  
 OTLEY, Adam (1641) ..... 117, 112  
 OWEN, Thomas (1639) ..... 94, 85  
 OXENBRIDGE, Rev. John ..... 216  
  
 PADDY, William (1652), 174, 20, 172, 173, 179, 181, 182, 426, 428, 480, 485  
 PAGE, Edward (1661) ..... 196, 195, 483  
 PAIGE (Keayne) (Lane), Anna (Hannah), 20, 67, 68, 69, 299, 333  
     Nicholas (1693), 299, 20, 25, 69, 93, 234, 276, 295, 298, 308, 333  
 PAINE, John (1666) ..... 208, 205, 234, 483  
     Moses (1644), 141, 136, 168, 173, 209, 211, 244, 487  
     Stephen (1649) ..... 168, 167  
     Stephen (1724) ..... 417, 416, 430, 486  
     (Payne), William (1691), 287, 282, 288, 295, 310, 373, 380, 392, 403, 406, 480, 483, 486  
 PALMER, Abraham (1638) ..... 74, 51, 66, 484, 485  
     George (1641) ..... 117, 112  
     Thomas (1702), 345, 315, 335, 342, 346, 351, 352, 379, 448, 468, 481, 482  
 PAPER, CURRENCY ..... 288  
 PARISH, Thomas (1641) ..... 117, 112  
 PARKE, William (1638) ..... 74, 51, 68, 75  
 PARKER, Richard (1638), 75, 9, 51, 116, 181, 208, 480, 483, 485  
 PARKES, Henry (1645) ..... 152, 149  
 PARKMAN, William (1711), 377, 373, 380, 386, 396, 468  
 PARNELL, Francis (1713), 385, 384, 391, 400, 403, 408, 483, 485  
 PARSONS, Joseph (1679) ..... 256, 252  
     William (1646) ..... 159, 156, 485  
 PATTEN, William (1642) ..... 121, 119  
 PAYSON, Giles (1647) ..... 162, 161  
 PEABODY, Rev. Oliver ..... 452, 453  
 PEASE, John (1661) ..... 196, 195, 202, 485  
 PECKER, Daniel (1720), 405, 395, 403, 411, 414, 434, 468, 474  
     James (1720) ..... 406, 403, 414, 425  
     John (1733) ..... 459, 386, 406, 454  
 PELHAM, Herbert (1639) ..... 94, 85, 98, 481  
 PELL, Edward (1714), 390, 386, 392, 396, 410, 414, 423, 431, 432, 445, 446, 447, 454  
     John (1680) ..... 263, 260  
     William (1716) ..... 396, 390, 394, 401, 403, 414  
 PEMBERTON, Benjamin (1707), 362, 334, 360, 363, 391, 487  
     Rev. Ebenezer ..... 334, 330, 331, 362, 369, 391  
 PENDLETON, Brian (1646) ..... 159, 42, 91, 156, 160  
     Joseph (1637) ..... 42, 12  
 PENNYMAN, James (1673) ..... 224, 222  
 PEPPER, Michael (1642) ..... 121, 119  
 PERKINS, William (1638) ..... 75, 9, 51, 76, 118  
 PERRY, Arthur (1638), 76, 47, 48, 51, 77, 84, 97, 112, 119, 124, 129, 135, 139, 146, 148, 154, 161, 163, 168, 198  
     Seth (1662), 198, 76, 197, 199, 201, 202, 205, 211, 234, 274, 485, 487  
 PHILLIPS, Gillam (1714) .... 390, 300, 386, 391, 392  
     Henry (1640) ..... 109, 9, 99, 182, 299, 485  
     John (1680) ... 263, 260, 264, 268, 272, 274, 288, 289, 481, 482  
     John (1725), 421, 315, 371, 419, 422, 434, 439, 473  
     Samuel (1693), 299, 298, 300, 302, 315, 322, 332, 367, 390, 487  
     Rev. Samuel ..... 239, 240  
     Thomas (1644) ..... 142, 136  
     Thomas (1694) ..... 306, 302, 373, 379  
     Thomas (1711) ..... 377, 333, 373, 380  
     William (1644) (1676) .. 142, 93, 110, 136, 178, 179, 180, 200, 234, 241, 243, 484  
     William (1762) ..... 421, 462  
     Zechariah (1660) ..... 194, 191, 234  
 PHIPS, Solomon (1681) .... 266, 234, 264, 373, 484  
 PIERCE, Nathaniel (1673) ..... 225, 222, 234  
     Nehemiah (1671) ..... 218, 217  
 PIERPONT, Ebenezer (1682) ..... 270, 268  
 PLYMPTON, John (1643) ..... 133, 125, 234  
 POLLARD, Benjamin (1726), 424, 257, 326, 399, 423, 439, 440  
     Jonathan (1700), 326, 257, 309, 323, 331, 349, 359, 385, 392, 398, 399, 424, 440, 442  
     William (1679) ..... 257, 234, 252, 424  
 POMEROY, Joseph (1733) ..... 459, 454  
 FORDAGE, John (George) (1681) .... 266, 264, 276  
 PORTER, Abel (1680) ..... 263, 260, 485  
     Joseph (1674) ..... 230, 227  
 POWNING, Daniel (1691), 288, 282, 295, 298, 339, 364, 366, 379, 400, 481  
     Henry (1677) ..... 248, 182, 244, 288  
 PRATT, Samuel (1734) ..... 472, 459, 468  
     Thomas (1733) ..... 459, 454, 477

- PRATT, Timothy (1691).....288, 282, 486  
 PRESTON, Edward (1646).....160, 156  
 PRICE, Richard (1658).....188, 9, 184  
 PRINCE, Rev. Thomas .....410, 391  
 PRITCHARD, Hugh (1643).....133, 125  
 PROCTOR, Edward (1669), 320, 315, 321, 359, 386, 473, 486  
     Edward (1756).....320  
     Obadiah (1722).....412, 321, 380, 411  
     Richard (1699) ....321, 315, 332, 333, 359, 372  
     Robert (1722).....413, 411, 414  
 PROUT, Joseph (1674), 230, 227, 351, 364, 367, 393, 481  
 PROVINCE HOUSE.....251, 393  
  
 QUEENOICAULT, Isaac (1703) .....352, 349, 359  
 QUINCY, Daniel (1675) .....238, 235, 239, 487  
  
 RAINSBURROW, William (1639) ..95, 28, 31, 55, 85, 87, 91, 96, 103, 118, 119, 136  
 RAND, Samuel (1720), 406, 390, 403, 414, 435, 445, 447, 488  
     William (1732) ....451, 406, 448, 466, 468, 474, 483, 488  
 RANDOLPH, Edward ..101, 150, 160, 206, 240, 241, 247, 250, 260, 262, 264, 268, 274, 278, 279  
 RASHLEY, Thomas (1645) .....152, 149, 485  
 RATCLIFF, John (1667) .....210, 209  
 RAVENSCROFT, Samuel (1679) ..257, 252, 268, 276, 279, 280  
 RAWLINS, Thomas (1642) .....121, 119, 122  
 RAWSON, Edward ....137, 173, 181, 184, 195, 214, 235, 253, 273  
     Rev. Grindall .....353  
 READ, John (1644).....142, 136, 143  
 RECORDS OF THE COMPANY, 314, 323, 329, 334, 348, 353, 356, 359, 363, 365, 369, 371, 379, 384, 385, 391, 392, 396, 398, 401, 402, 407, 410, 414, 415, 418, 423, 424, 430, 434, 439, 444, 445, 452, 467, 472, 474, 477, 479  
 RED LYON INN .....44  
 REYNOLDS, Nathaniel (1658) ...188, 182, 184, 234, 411, 485  
     Nathaniel (1681) .....267, 264, 411  
 RICHARDS, John (1644), 143, 64, 124, 136, 175, 184, 191, 198, 199, 202, 209, 214, 232, 236, 246, 256, 264, 265, 268, 279, 281, 283, 291, 306, 387, 481, 482, 484, 486  
     Thomas (1648) .....165, 164  
 RICHARDSON, Rev. John .....267, 268  
 ROBBS, Rev. Nathaniel .....342  
 ROBERTS, Thomas (1644) .....144, 136  
 ROBIE (Roby), William (1684), 274, 273, 282, 290, 298, 301, 308, 310, 486  
 ROBINSON, George (1694) ..306, 302, 311, 370, 486  
     George (1710) .....370, 306, 391, 476  
     William (1643) .....133, 9, 125  
 ROCK, Joseph (1658) ...188, 57, 93, 137, 184, 198, 210, 211, 485, 487  
 ROGERS, Simeon (1722).....413, 411, 430  
 RUGGLES, John (1646).....160, 156, 234, 485  
 RUSSELL, James (1669), 212, 85, 213, 220, 481, 482, 484  
     Joseph (1699).....321, 315, 379, 413  
     Joseph (1722).....413, 411, 418, 430  
     Richard (1644), 144, 114, 136, 199, 212, 213, 481, 482, 483, 484  
 RUTLAND ARTILLERY FARM ...399, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 452, 480  
  
 SALE, Ephraim (1674).....230, 227, 251, 274, 485  
     John (1704) .....355, 354, 380, 386, 401  
 SALTER, Jabez (1674) ....230, 227, 272, 437, 488  
     John (1727).....429, 425, 439, 444  
     Sampson (1729) ...437, 435, 438, 466, 475, 486  
     Thomas (1704).....355, 354, 372, 380, 488  
     William (1733) ....459, 454, 455, 405, 467, 473  
 SALTONSTALL, Henry (1639).....96, 85, 482  
     Peter (1644) .....144, 136  
     Richard (1733), 459, 144, 454, 460, 467, 477, 483  
     Robert (1638) .....77, 51, 62  
 SAMPSON, Robert (1639) .....96, 85  
 SANDERS, Lovet (1702).....346, 335, 359  
 SANDFORD, Thomas (1699).....322, 315  
 SANDYS, John (1673) .....225, 222  
 SANFORD (Sandford), Robert (1661), 196, 195, 322, 485  
     Thomas (1666) .....208, 205  
 SAUNDERS, Robert (1638) .....77, 51  
 SAVAGE, Arthur (1738) .....203, 322, 460  
     Benjamin (1682) .....270, 25, 230, 268, 322  
     Ebenezer (1682), 270, 25, 26, 169, 203, 230, 268, 322  
     Ephraim (1674), 230, 24, 26, 203, 227, 231, 234, 244, 249, 252, 254, 260, 271, 275, 320, 322, 366, 368, 372, 373, 481, 482, 488  
     Habijah (1665), 203, 24, 123, 149, 202, 228, 229, 230, 300, 322, 482  
     Habijah (1699) (1711) ..322, 203, 300, 315, 330, 347, 366, 372, 373, 378, 380, 384, 393, 398, 399, 403, 408, 425, 431, 432, 439, 440, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 452, 460, 481, 483, 488  
     Habijah (1733).....460, 322, 454, 467, 483  
     John (1694).....306, 25, 302, 322, 483  
     Thomas (1637) ..24, 7, 12, 25, 26, 65, 66, 84, 96, 97, 98, 112, 113, 119, 148, 153, 169, 170, 181, 189, 192, 203, 211, 218, 230, 232, 234, 237, 242, 257, 260, 268, 270, 271, 306, 322, 384, 426, 480, 481, 482, 485, 487  
     Thomas (1665) ..203, 24, 26, 153, 202, 226, 230, 234, 264, 276, 300, 322, 376, 379  
     Thomas (1693), 300, 298, 301, 322, 323, 330, 331, 349, 353, 356, 379, 385, 386, 481, 488  
     Thomas (1739) .....322  
 SAYWELL, David (1664).....201, 211, 236  
 SCARBOROUGH, John (1643) .....133, 125, 134  
 SCOTT, Robert (1638) .....77, 51, 148, 485  
 SCOTTOW, Joshua (1645) ..152, 149, 153, 168, 170, 180, 181, 197, 203, 207, 211, 234, 242, 249, 481, 485, 487  
 SECOND CHURCH IN BOSTON .....52, 168, 486  
 SEDGWICK, Robert (1637), 21, 7, 10, 11, 12, 22, 23, 40, 64, 88, 89, 92, 93, 98, 122, 132, 148, 152, 163, 167, 176, 192, 208, 231, 328, 483, 484  
     Robert (1674).....231, 23, 227  
     William (1666).....208, 23, 205  
 SELECTMEN OF BOSTON .....480, 481  
 SELLING (Seeley), Robert (1642) ...122, 119, 234  
 SERGEANT MAJOR-GENERALS (1641-86) ..483, 484  
 SERGEANT MAJORS (1644-89) .....484  
 SEVERNE (Severance), John (1641) (1654) ...117, 112, 177, 178  
 SEWALL, Jonathan (1718), 401, 400, 403, 407, 414, 423  
     Rev. Joseph.....391, 259, 334, 410  
     Samuel (1679), 257, 108, 120, 152, 193, 230, 242, 252, 258, 260, 261, 263, 271, 281, 291, 293, 297, 309, 310, 312, 323, 324, 330, 334, 348, 353, 354, 356, 358, 364, 366, 367, 369, 372, 373, 380, 389, 391, 401, 407, 444, 481, 482, 483, 488



- SEWALL, Samuel (1720), 407, 327, 401, 403, 414, 453, 468, 473, 477, 488
- SHAW, John (1646) ..... 160, 9, 156
- SHEAFE, Jacob (1648), 165, 20, 164, 166, 172, 181, 220, 481, 485
- SHEPARD, Samuel 1640) ..... 110, 71, 99, 136  
Rev. Thomas ..... 200, 80, 99, 239  
William (1642) ..... 122, 119
- SHERBURNE, Joseph (1745) ..... 473
- SHIPPEN, Edward (1669) ..... 213, 212
- SHRIMPTON, Jonathan (1665) ..... 203, 202, 210, 215  
Samuel (1670) ..... 215, 80, 92, 104, 182, 203, 214, 216, 219, 220, 221, 239, 251, 279, 280, 295, 301, 309, 310, 386, 425, 482  
Samuel, Jr. (1695) ..... 309, 308
- SIMPKINS, Nicholas (1650) .. 170, 35, 88, 167, 168, 430  
Thomas (1727) ..... 430, 425, 439, 444
- SIMPSON, Benjamin (1702), 346, 335, 359, 366, 488
- SMITH, Benjamin (1643) ..... 134, 125  
Edward (1682) .... 270, 244, 249, 251, 260, 264, 268, 271, 272, 274, 276  
James, Jr. (1709) ..... 369, 367, 391  
John (1643) ..... 134, 125  
John (1644) ..... 144, 9, 136, 155, 485  
John (1706) ..... 358, 359  
John (1727) ..... 430, 425, 486  
Lawrence (1642) ..... 122, 119  
Ralph (1725) ..... 423, 419, 433, 439, 486  
Seth (1696) ..... 310  
Thomas (1678) ..... 250, 249, 347  
Thomas (1679) ..... 259, 252  
Thomas (1702) .... 347, 335, 356, 379, 384, 391, 393, 399, 410, 430, 440, 442, 488
- SNAWSELL, Thomas (1666) ..... 208, 205, 214
- SOAMES, John (1702) ..... 347, 335, 359
- SOLDIERS IN KING PHILIP'S WAR ..... 234
- SOUTH BATTERY ..... 202, 279, 353, 453, 454
- SPARHAWK, Rev. John ..... 356, 363
- SPEAKERS OF HOUSE OF DEPUTIES ..... 482
- SPENCER, Isaac (1702) ... 347, 335, 359  
John ..... 8  
William (1637) .. 40, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 57, 66, 150, 328
- SPRAGUE, Ralph (1638), 78, 51, 74, 79, 267, 484, 485  
Richard (1638) .... 78, 51, 74, 79, 154, 172, 189, 202, 267, 484, 485  
Richard (1681) ..... 267, 78, 264, 271, 483, 484
- SQUIRE, Thomas (1648) ..... 166, 164, 485
- STANLEY, Christopher (1640) .... 110, 99, 142, 485
- STEVENS, Erasmus (1720) .. 407, 386, 403, 414, 415  
Rev. Joseph ..... 392
- STILEMAN, Elias (1645) ..... 153, 149
- STITSON (Stetson), William (1648) .. 166, 141, 164
- STODDARD, Anthony (1639) ... 96, 24, 85, 97, 119, 124, 135, 154, 161, 163, 168, 181, 239, 385, 480, 483, 485  
Rev. Sampson ..... 385  
Simeon (1675) .... 239, 235, 251, 281, 309, 347, 354, 359, 361, 385, 393, 414, 434, 481, 482, 488  
Simeon, Jr. (1702) .. 347, 309, 335, 359, 385, 488
- STORER, Ebenezer (1732) ..... 451, 448, 452, 473  
John (1739) ..... 452
- STOUGHTON, Ezekiel ..... 8  
Israel (1637) ..... 31, 12, 42, 55, 95, 96, 103, 119, 131, 136, 153, 154, 334, 383, 481, 483  
Israel (1645) ..... 153, 31, 149, 383
- STOWE, John (1638) ..... 79, 51  
Thomas (1638) ... 79, 9, 51
- STOWERS, Richard (1642) ..... 123, 119, 484
- STRAWBRIDGE, Thomas (1638) ..... 80, 51
- SUMNER, Thomas W. (1792) ..... 259  
William (1679) ..... 259, 252  
William H. (1819) ..... 216, 259
- SUNDERLAND, John (1658) ..... 189, 184, 485
- SUTTON, William (1695) ... 309, 308, 323, 326, 379
- SWAN, Ebenezer (1733) ..... 460, 454, 467
- SWEETING (Sweet), John (1673) .... 225, 222, 263
- SWEETSER, Wigglesworth (1700), 326, 323, 359, 396
- SWIFT, Rev. John ..... 424, 425  
Samuel (1724) ..... 417, 416, 424, 430  
Samuel (1746) ..... 417
- SYLVESTER, Giles (1682) ..... 271, 268
- SYMMES, Andrew (1734) ..... 472, 460, 468  
John (1733) ..... 460, 454, 467, 472, 488  
Rev. Thomas ..... 408, 407, 460, 472
- TAILER (Tailler), William (1712), 383, 92, 112, 249, 337, 341, 343, 380, 481, 482
- TAY, John (1678) ..... 250, 249
- TAYLOR, Daniel (1682) ..... 271, 268  
John (1665) (1673) ..... 204, 202, 222, 225
- TEDD, Joshua (1644) ..... 145, 136, 484
- TEMPLE, John (1675) ..... 239, 235, 485
- THACHER, Rev. Peter (Milton) ..... 309, 218, 384  
Rev. Peter (Weymouth) .... 384, 218, 385, 402  
Rev. Thomas, 178, 168, 214, 218, 219, 243, 309, 384  
Thomas, Jr. (1671) .. 218, 217, 226, 232, 384, 485
- THAXTER, Samuel (1728) ..... 433, 373, 482
- THAYER, Rev. Ebenezer ..... 418  
Nathaniel (1734) ..... 472, 413, 468  
Zachariah (1722) ..... 413, 411, 414, 435, 472
- THOMAS, Evan (1653) ..... 176, 175, 485
- THOMPSON, Robert (1639) ..... 97, 85, 94
- THORNBURY, James (1692) ..... 295, 291
- THORNTON, Ebenezer (1716) ... 396, 289, 394, 414, 468, 481  
Timothy (1691), 288, 282, 289, 343, 373, 396, 486
- THREE CRANES (Great House) ..... 93
- THURSTON, Benjamin (1675) ... 239, 211, 234, 235, 244, 485, 487
- THWING, Benjamin (1678) ..... 250, 249, 475, 488  
Nathaniel (1736) ..... 475, 388, 403, 477
- TIDCOMB (Titcomb), William (1710), 370, 371, 391
- TILESTON, James (1711), 378, 373, 380, 384, 406, 414, 417  
Thomas (1724) ..... 417, 378, 416, 418, 430
- TILLEY, William (1706) ... 358, 310, 359, 451, 488
- TITTERTON, Samuel (1643) ..... 134, 125
- TOMLINS, Edward (1637) ..... 42, 12, 43, 52, 243  
William (1676) ..... 243, 241
- TORREY, Antipas (1701) ..... 334, 332, 359  
Rev. Samuel ..... 213  
William (1641) ..... 117, 112, 118, 213
- TOWERS, William (1680) ..... 263, 260
- TOWNSEND, James (1679) ..... 259, 252, 396, 485  
John (1641) ..... 118, 112  
Penn (1674), 231, 123, 173, 215, 224, 227, 230, 232, 238, 239, 244, 248, 251, 259, 263, 264, 275, 281, 282, 288, 302, 310, 313, 318, 323, 326, 329, 349, 353, 354, 355, 357, 364, 365, 366, 372, 373, 379, 414, 435, 481, 482, 485  
Penn, Jr. (1700) ... 326, 232, 282, 323, 379, 483  
Samuel (1716) ..... 396, 394, 414
- TUCKER, Daniel (1733) ..... 461, 415, 454
- TURELL, Daniel (1660), 194, 124, 182, 191, 197, 205, 232, 240, 288, 289



- TURELL, Daniel, Jr. (1674), 232, 194, 227, 228, 481, 486
- TURNER, Ephraim (1663), 200, 111, 202, 205, 209, 212, 233, 234  
Joseph (1664) ..... 201  
Nathaniel (1637) ..... 33, 8, 12, 34, 87, 105  
Robert (1640) (1643) .. 111, 42, 93, 99, 125, 134, 177, 181, 189, 195, 197, 200, 201, 485
- TUTTLE, John (1644) ..... 145, 86, 136, 312  
Simon (1651) ..... 171  
(Tuthill), Zechariah (1697), 312, 311, 315, 323, 334, 348, 379
- TYNG, Edward (1642), 123, 14, 69, 80, 119, 150, 154, 181, 203, 211, 216, 243, 480, 481, 483, 484  
Edward, Jr. (1668), 211, 88, 93, 123, 212, 229, 234, 485  
Jonathan (1670) ..... 216, 80, 123, 203, 214  
William (1638), 80, 8, 51, 64, 87, 98, 116, 123, 200, 236, 244, 313, 436, 480, 481, 485
- UNDERHILL, John (1637) ... 31, 1, 7, 9, 12, 32, 33, 35, 39, 41, 59, 87, 480, 485
- UPSHALL, Nicholas (1637) ... 43, 12, 44, 115, 157, 189, 228, 274, 312, 347, 356, 486
- USHER, Hezekiah (1638), 80, 51, 81, 101, 180, 181, 182, 199, 201, 204, 210, 211, 216, 225, 250  
Hezekiah (1665), 204, 80, 93, 202, 221, 226, 481, 483, 487  
John (1673) ..... 225, 80, 222, 262, 280
- VAIL, Edward (1733) ..... 461, 454, 467
- VANE, Sir Henry, 7, 10, 26, 27, 30, 36, 37, 105, 126, 187
- VARNEY, James (1711) . . . . . 378, 373, 413
- VENNER, Thomas (1645) . . . . . 154, 149
- VINCENT, Ambrose (1703), 352, 349, 353, 359, 366
- WADSWORTH, Rev. Benjamin ... 330, 289, 329, 415  
Timothy (1691), 289, 282, 310, 321, 330, 379, 486
- WAINWRIGHT, Francis (1709) .. 369, 358, 367, 379, 380, 483
- WAITE, John (1673) ..... 226, 222, 260, 276, 482  
Return (1662) ..... 199, 81, 93, 197  
Richard (1638), 81, 7, 51, 127, 176, 182, 199, 486
- WAKEFIELD, Samuel (1676) (1685), 243, 241, 274, 275
- WALDRON, Richard (1659) ..... 190, 189, 234  
Rev. William ..... 432, 423, 430
- WALE, William (1645) ..... 154, 149
- WALKER, Ezekiel (1711) ..... 378, 373, 380, 488  
Isaac (1644) ..... 145, 136, 243, 486  
Isaac (1676) ..... 243, 145, 181, 241, 488  
Richard (1638) ..... 81, 8, 9, 51, 82, 113  
Robert ..... 8
- WALLEY, Abiel (1710), 371, 370, 372, 391, 474, 488  
John (1671) ... 218, 217, 219, 228, 240, 242, 243, 248, 249, 250, 251, 260, 281, 288, 315, 316, 329, 334, 359, 371, 379, 391, 473, 482, 483, 488
- WALTER, Rev. Nehemiah ..... 313, 354, 379, 415
- WARD, Rev. John ..... 196  
William (1724) ... 417, 399, 416, 430, 440, 442
- WARE, Robert (1644) ..... 145, 136  
William (1643) ..... 134, 125
- WARNER, William (1733) ..... 461, 454, 473
- WATKINS, Thomas (1666) ..... 208, 205, 211
- WATERHOUSE, David (1679) ... 259, 252, 279
- WATTS, Daniel (1636) ..... 476, 475  
Samuel (1733) ..... 461, 454, 402, 473
- WAY, Richard (1642) ..... 123, 119, 207, 212, 217
- WEBB (Evered), John (1643), 134, 9, 125, 135, 181, 486  
John (1655) ..... 179, 178, 191  
Rev. John ..... 402
- WELCH, John (1736) ..... 476, 473, 475
- WELD, Joseph (1637) .. 23, 12, 24, 47, 89, 96, 119, 133
- WELLS, Thomas (1644) ..... 146, 135, 136  
Thomas (1725) ..... 423, 419, 430
- WELSTEAD, Rev. William ..... 443, 440, 442
- WENDELL, Jacob (1733) .. 462, 327, 368, 398, 400, 401, 404, 421, 438, 448, 453, 454, 463, 464, 465, 466, 468, 473, 474, 477, 482, 483  
John (1733) ... 464, 435, 454, 465, 466, 468, 474  
John, Jr. (1735) ..... 474
- WENTWORTH, Samuel (1693) ..... 301, 298, 488
- WESTGATE, John (1641) ..... 118, 112, 486
- WHARTON, John (1699) ..... 322, 315, 353
- WHEELER, Henry (1727) ..... 430, 425  
Nathaniel (1711) ..... 378, 373, 380, 486
- WHEELWRIGHT, Rev. John ... 7, 37, 38, 55, 78, 88, 112, 126, 128, 129, 151, 177, 186, 197  
John (1714) ..... 390, 386, 391, 473
- WHITCOMB, William (1707) ..... 363, 360
- WHITE, Benjamin (1722) ..... 413, 411, 414, 486  
Isaac (1733) ..... 465, 453, 454, 466, 467, 468  
Joseph (1722) ..... 413, 411, 425, 430, 486  
William (1678) ... 250, 249, 256, 276, 279, 280
- WHITING, Rev. Samuel (Lynn) ..... 194, 271  
Rev. Samuel, Jr. (Billerica) ..... 271
- WHITTINGHAM, John (1638) ..... 82, 51  
Thomas ..... 8
- WHITTINGTON (Withington), Richard (1646), 161, 156
- WIGGLESWORTH, Rev. Michael ..... 311
- WILCOX, William (1638) ..... 82, 51
- WILLARD, Rev. Samuel ... 243, 258, 323, 334, 354
- WILLIAMS, Hugh (1644) ... 146, 76, 136, 139, 486  
Jonathan (1711), 378, 372, 373, 379, 380, 384, 385, 433, 438, 474, 481  
Jonathan, Jr. (1729), 438, 378, 379, 435, 439, 474, 475  
Michael (1682) ..... 271, 268  
Nathaniel (1644), 146, 136, 164, 176, 181, 210, 347, 362, 481, 486  
Nathaniel (1667), 210, 146, 203, 209, 234, 240, 272, 281, 282, 298, 347, 362, 481, 488  
Oliver (1702) ..... 347, 331, 335, 357, 359  
Robert (1644) ..... 146, 9, 136, 147, 486  
Roger (1647) ..... 162, 161  
Sendall (1738) ..... 379, 438  
William (1733) ... 466, 454, 467, 475, 479, 483  
Rev. William ..... 480, 451, 479
- WILLIS, Experience (1674) ..... 232, 227, 486  
Thomas (1691) ..... 289, 282
- WILLOUGHBY, Francis (1639), 98, 85, 97, 124, 208, 481, 483, 484
- WILSON (Willson), Rev. John, 83, 15, 19, 49, 57, 69, 81, 129, 162, 180, 188, 210, 212, 324, 448  
Rev. John, Jr. .... 19, 212, 353
- WINCHESTER, John (1638) ..... 83, 51
- WING, John (1671), 219, 103, 211, 217, 221, 243, 244, 249, 260, 268, 281, 284, 298, 486, 487
- WINSHIF, Edward (1638) ..... 83, 51
- WINSLOW, Edward (1700), 326, 282, 295, 323, 327, 334, 359, 372, 385, 399, 424, 431, 432, 434, 439, 440, 445, 446, 447, 452, 453, 468, 481, 488  
John (1692) ..... 295, 255, 279, 291, 327, 488
- WINSOR, Joshua (1676) ..... 243, 241

WINTHROP, Adam (1642), 124, 64, 119, 143, 147, 279, 280, 295, 306, 480, 486	WISWALL, Thomas (1724).....418, 416, 430
Adam (1692), 295, 124, 266, 282, 288, 291, 303, 306, 313, 364, 393, 433, 468, 481, 482, 486	WOODBIDGE, John (1644) ..... 147, 136
Adam, Jr. (1694), 306, 282, 295, 302, 307, 334, 348, 350, 353, 356, 357, 369, 383, 416, 483, 486	WOODCOCK, Richard (1658)..... 189, 184
Deane (1644)..... 147, 136	WOODDE, John (1642)..... 124, 119
John, 5, 6, 7, 9, 10, 11, 13, 20, 23, 27, 30, 31, 35, 37, 40, 41, 42, 45, 47, 50, 51, 53, 57, 77, 83, 87, 88, 89, 93, 95, 96, 104, 112, 113, 118, 120, 121, 124, 126, 136, 141, 143, 147, 151, 163, 164, 166, 169, 170, 295, 296, 306	Richard (1642), 124, 119, 178, 182, 197, 209, 212, 244, 488
Joseph (1692) .... 295, 291	WOODMAN, Edward.....8
Robert C. (1830).....288	George .....8
Stephen (1641), 118, 24, 67, 89, 95, 112, 119, 136, 486	WORDEN, Samuel (1681)..... 267, 264
Wait (1692) ..296, 220, 270, 279, 280, 282, 290, 291, 297, 354, 400, 481, 482, 488	WRIGHT, James (1715) ..... 392, 414, 476
	James (1736).....476, 392, 475
	Robert (1643)..... 135, 9, 66, 125
	WYER (Ware, Weare, Wier), Peter (1700)...327, 323, 379
	YALE, David (1640), 111, 89, 96, 99, 155, 163, 186, 213

This book is a preservation photocopy.  
It is made in compliance with copyright law  
and produced on acid-free archival  
60# book weight paper  
which meets the requirements of  
ANSI/NISO Z39.48-1992 (permanence of paper)

Preservation photocopying and binding  
by  
Acme Bookbinding  
Charlestown, Massachusetts



2003









BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 04988 482 6



